







£1-25

G. F. & M. Haden

Kington, Aug/Sept 1880









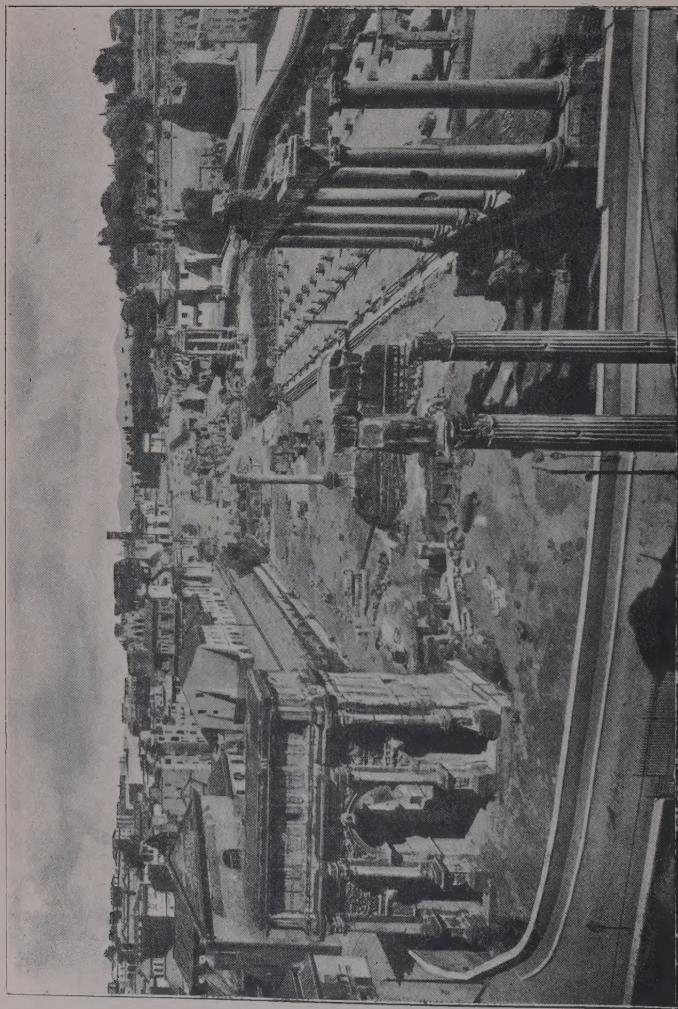


A HISTORY OF ROME









THE ROMAN FORUM, LOOKING EAST.

*Frontispiece.*



# A HISTORY OF ROME

FROM THE EARLIEST TIMES TO THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE EMPIRE, WITH CHAPTERS ON THE HISTORY OF LITERATURE AND ART

By HENRY G. LIDDELL, D.D.,  
LATE DEAN OF CHRIST CHURCH, OXFORD

A NEW EDITION  
THOROUGHLY REVISED AND IN PART RE-WITTEN

By P. V. M. BENECKE, M.A.,  
FELLOW AND TUTOR OF MAGDALEN COLLEGE, OXFORD

WITH MANY NEW MAPS AND ILLUSTRATIONS

THIRD IMPRESSION



MEDAL COMMEMORATING THE FOUNDATION OF ROME.

LONDON  
JOHN MURRAY, ALBEMARLE STREET, W.

1909



## PREFACE

DR. LIDDELL'S History of Rome was originally published in two volumes (1856). An abridged form in one volume was shortly afterwards prepared by the author, in order to make it range with Sir William Smith's History of Greece. The present volume is a new edition of the smaller work, which, under the name of *The Student's Rome*, has been familiar to and valued by many readers. Considerable changes were introduced by Dr. Liddell after its first publication, but no important alterations were made by him after 1871. It has therefore been felt that the time has now come when the book should once more be subjected to a revision, if it is to be as useful in the future as it has been in the past. The editor has endeavoured to remember throughout that his work is only one of revision, and to insert as little of his own as possible. The general form of the book, the selection of topics, and the comparative scale of their treatment remain unaltered. Details have occasionally been added, as well as some notes on the principal ancient and modern authorities; references have been frequently given to passages in standard works where the subjects under discussion are treated at greater length or the grounds set out for the view adopted in the text. Other alterations have sometimes been introduced which do not come exactly under any of these heads; but changes have for

the most part only been made with the object of expressing Dr. Liddell's opinions in a form in accordance with the results of recent research.

Nearly all the illustrations, as well as the maps, have been specially prepared for this edition. Most of the illustrations are accompanied by a reference to a standard authority: these references indicate, not the source of the illustration, but a place where a full description of it can be found.

P. V. M. B.

*December, 1900.*

# CONTENTS

## INTRODUCTION

### SECTION I

#### PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY OF ITALY

	PAGE		PAGE
Relation of Italy to Roman History . . . . .	I	Rivers . . . . .	4
Geographical features . . . . .	2	Lakes and marshes . . . . .	6
The coast . . . . .	3	Climate and productions . . . . .	7
		Beauty of scenery . . . . .	8

### SECTION II

#### EARLY POPULATION OF ITALY

	PAGE		PAGE
Constant invasions of Italy . . . . .	9	The Etruscans and Greeks . . . . .	12-13
Subdivision among numerous tribes . . . . .	10	The Latins not a mixed nationality . . . . .	14
The name Italia . . . . .	10	but one of the "Italian" races . . . . .	15
Iapygians and Messapians . . . . .	11	Roman legends . . . . .	15
The "Italian" races—(1) Umbrians, (2) Volscians, (3) Sabines, (4) Sabellians . . . . .	11-12	NOTES—A. Northern boundary of Italy. B. The Oscans . . . . .	15-16

## BOOK I

### ROME UNDER THE KINGS

#### CHAPTER I

##### ORIGIN OF ROME—ROMULUS AND NUMA

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Legends about the foundation of Rome . . . . .	(1) Social—Patrons and Clients . . . . .	25
	Aeneas . . . . .	(2) Political—Tribes, Curies, Comitia, Senate . . . . .	25
	Romulus and Remus . . . . .	(3) Military . . . . .	26
753	Foundation of Rome . . . . .	Interregnum . . . . .	26
	Sabine Wars . . . . .	716-673 Numa Pompilius . . . . .	26
	Joint rule of Romulus and Titus Tatius . . . . .	Religious institutions . . . . .	27
	Caelus Vibenna . . . . .	The calendar . . . . .	29
	Death of Romulus . . . . .		
	institutions of Romulus . . . . .		

## CHAPTER II

TULLUS HOSTILIUS AND ANCUS MARTIUS, THE THIRD AND  
FOURTH KINGS

B. C.	PAGE	B. C.	PAGE
673-641	Tullus Hostilius . . . 30		Destruction of Alba . . . 32
	War with Alba . . . 30	641-617	Ancus Martius . . . 33
	Horatius— <i>Duumviri</i> <i>perduellionis</i> . . . 31		Latins settled in Rome . . . 34

## CHAPTER III

TARQUINIUS PRISCUS AND SERVIUS TULLIUS, THE FIFTH AND  
SIXTH KINGS

B. C.	PAGE	B. C.	PAGE
617-579	Tarquinius Priscus . . . 35		Proposal to admit the Plebeians to full citizenship . . . 41
	The Patricians . . . 36		<i>Comitia Centuriata</i> . . . 42
	The <i>gentes</i> —The Ple- beians . . . 37		The Servian Tribes . . . 45
	Reforms of Tarquinius . . . 38		The Servian Wall— Situation of Rome . . . 46
	His wars and death . . . 39-40		Death of Servius . . . 49
579-535	Servius Tullius . . . 41		

## CHAPTER IV

## TARQUINIUS SUPERBUS, AND THE BEGINNINGS OF THE REPUBLIC

B. C.	PAGE	B. C.	PAGE
535-510	Tarquinius Superbus . . . 51		First attempt to restore Tarquin . . . 57
	Foreign alliances . . . 51		Second attempt . . . 58
	Temple on the Capi- toline . . . 52		Valerius Poplicola . . . 58
	Capture of Gabii . . . 53	508	Third attempt—Por- sena—Horatius Cocles —Mucius—Cloelia . . . 59
510	Brutus—Lucretia— Expulsion of the Tarquins . . . 53	498	The Dictatorship . . . 61
509	Consuls— <i>Patres Con-</i> <i>scripti</i> . . . 56	496	Fourth attempt . . . 61
			Battle of Lake Regillus . . . 62

## CHAPTER V

## OBSERVATIONS ON THE HISTORY OF ROME UNDER THE KINGS

PAGE	PAGE
Nature of Greek and Roman legends . . . 64	fact . . . 67
Ancient and modern criticism of Roman legends—Niebuhr . . . 66-67	Family legends of the early Republic . . . 71
Relation of the stories of the Roman kings to historical	NOTE C.—Relation of recent criticism to that of Niebuhr . . . 71



BOOK II

ROME UNDER THE PATRICIANS

CHAPTER VI

DECLINE OF ROMAN POWER AFTER THE EXPULSION OF THE  
TARQUINS—GEOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF THE NEIGHBOURHOOD  
OF ROME

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
509	Treaty between Rome and Carthage . . . 74	495	Number of Tribes raised to 21 . . . 76
	Rome subject to Et- ruria . . . 75		The Claudii . . . 76
	Rome no longer head of Latium . . . 76		Rome and the neigh- bourhood . . . 76

CHAPTER VII

THE TRIBUNATE

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Sufferings of the Ple- beians . . . 79		Fable of Menenius Agrippa . . . 84
494	Secession of the Ple- beians . . . 83	494	Tribunes of the Plebs . 85
			Plebeian Aediles . . 85

CHAPTER VIII

AGRARIAN LAW—THE ELECTION OF THE TRIBUNES BY THE  
PLEBEIANS.

B.C.		PAGE	B.C.		PAGE
486	Spurius Cassius and his agrarian law	87	471	His law that the Plebeians should elect the Tribunes	90
	Increased boldness of the Tribunes—Murder of Genucius	89	470	Five Tribunes elected	90
	Volero Publilius	89	NOTE D.—The Publilian Law of Volero		91

CHAPTER IX

WARS AND FOREIGN AFFAIRS FROM THE BATTLE OF LAKE  
REGILLUS TO THE DECENVIRATE (TO 451 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Great decrease of Ro- man power . . . 92	458	Cincinnatus and the Aequians . . . 96
488?	Coriolanus and the Volscians . . . 92	477	The Fabii and the Veientes . . . 99
		493, 486	Leagues of Sp. Cassius 100

## CHAPTER X

CONTINUED STRUGGLE BETWEEN THE ORDERS—THE  
DECEMVIRATE (470-449 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Progress of the Plebeians . . . . .	451	The first Decemvirate . . . . .
468	Colony at Antium . . . . .	450	The second „ . . . . .
470	Impeachment of the younger Appius . . . . .	449	The Decemvirs continue in office . . . . .
463	Great pestilence . . . . .		Siccius Dentatus — Virginia . . . . .
462	Proposal of Terentilius Harsa . . . . .	449	Second Secession of Plebeians . . . . .
457	Ten Tribunes elected . . . . .		Valerius and Horatius, Consuls . . . . .
454	Triumvirs sent to Greece . . . . .	—	Their Laws . . . . .
	Division of the Aventine . . . . .		The Twelve Tables . . . . .
452	Return of Triumvirs . . . . .	NOTE E.—The Valerio-Hortian Law on Plebiscita . . . . .	

## CHAPTER XI

SEQUEL OF THE DECEMVIRATE—MILITARY TRIBUNATE—  
GENERAL HISTORY TO THE WAR WITH VEII. (448-407 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Question of <i>conubium</i> . . . . .	421	The Quaestorship: it is opened to Plebeians . . . . .
445	Proposal of Canuleius . . . . .		Progress of the Plebeians . . . . .
—	Third secession of Plebeians . . . . .	439	Spurius Maelius and Servilius Ahala . . . . .
444	Appointment of Military Tribunes with Consular power . . . . .		Severity of the Postumii . . . . .
443	The Censorship . . . . .		

## CHAPTER XII

## WARS SINCE THE DECEMVIRATE—SIEGE OF VEII. (448-391 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Successes against Aequians and Volscians . . . . .		Overflow of the Alban Lake . . . . .
	Etruscan Wars . . . . .	395	Fall of Veii . . . . .
405	Veii—the siege begun . . . . .	394	Surrender of Falerii . . . . .
396	Camillus Dictator . . . . .	391	Exile of Camillus . . . . .
			His character . . . . .

## CHAPTER XIII

## THE GAULS. (390 B.C.)

B.C.		PAGE	B.C.		PAGE
	The Gauls . . .	132		Blockade of the Capitol	137
390 <sup>1</sup>	Origin of quarrel between Rome and the Gauls . . .	134		Return of Camillus .	138
	Battle of the Allia .	135		Falsehood of the Roman tradition .	138
	Sack of Rome . .	136	361	Manlius Torquatus .	138
			350	Valerius Corvus .	139

<sup>1</sup> On this date, see Lewis, ii. 356.

## CHAPTER XIV

## SEQUEL OF THE GALLIC WAR—LICINIAN LAWS—FINAL EQUALISATION OF THE TWO ORDERS. (389-367 B.C.)

B.C.		PAGE	B.C.		PAGE
389	Rebuilding of Rome .	140		Licinian Rogations .	143
	Condemnation of M. Manlius . . .	141	367	Passing of „ .	146
387	Four new Tribes added (making the total 25) . . .	142	366	First appointment of a Praetor and of Curule Aediles .	147
376	Licinius and Sextius, Tribunes . . .	143		Union of the Orders .	147

## BOOK III

## ROME CONQUEROR OF ITALY

## CHAPTER XV

## SEQUEL OF THE LICINIAN LAWS—CIVIL HISTORY TO THE FIRST SAMNITE WAR (B.C. 366-344)—WARS FROM 389 TO 344

B.C.		PAGE	B.C.		PAGE
	Social reformation .	148		The Latin League broken up .	153
	Pestilence and earthquake—M. Curtius	148	382	War with Praenesté .	153
357, 347,	Attempts to limit rate of interest . .	149	362	War with Hernicans .	153
342	Evasion of agrarian law	150	361	Renewed inroads of the Gauls . . .	153
355-343	Setting aside of law as to a Plebeian Consul	150	358	Renewal of Latin League . . .	153
	Further successes of the Plebeians .	151	—	War with Tarquinii .	154
	Plebeian honours limited to a few families	151	356	C. Marcius Rutilus, first Plebeian Dictator . . .	154
389	Wars with Aequians, Volscians, Etruscans	151		War with Caeré .	154
358	Two new Tribes added (making 27 in all) .	152	351	Peace restored .	154
			348	Second treaty with Carthage (?) .	154

## CHAPTER XVI

## FIRST SAMNITE WAR. (B.C. 343-341)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Origin of the Samnites . . . 156	342	Mutiny of Roman legions in Campania . . . 160
	Geographical position . . . 157	—	Laws for improving the position of soldiers and reliev- ing debtors . . . 161
	Causes of first Samnite war . . . 158		
343	Battle of Mt. Gaurus. . . 159		
341	Peace concluded . . . 159		

## CHAPTER XVII

## GREAT LATIN WAR. SUBJECTION OF LATIUM. (B.C. 340-338)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Relations between Rome and Latium . . . 163	—	Battle of Trifanum . . . 168
340	Proposal of the Latin cities for a union with Rome . . . 164	338	Conclusion of war . . . 168
—	The Consuls march into Campania . . . 165	—	Territory acquired by Rome . . . 168
	The Roman Army . . . 165	339	Publius Philo, Dic- tator . . . 168
340	Manlius condemns his son to death . . . 167		Treatment of Latins . . . 169
—	Battle of Mt. Vesuvius . . . 167	332	Two new Tribes added (making 29 in all) . . . 170
			Settlement of Cam- pania . . . 171

## CHAPTER XVIII

## EVENTS LEADING TO SECOND SAMNITE WAR. (337-327 B.C.)

## SECOND OR GREAT SAMNITE WAR. (326-304)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
338-327	Twelve years of rest . . . 172		Papirius Cursor and Q. Fabius . . . 176
332	Alliance with Alexan- der of Epirus . . . 172	321-315	2nd period of the war . . . 177
318	Two new tribes added (making 31 in all) . . . 172	321	The Caudine Forks . . . 177
338-329	Colonies at Cales, Fre- gellae, Anxur, An- tium . . . 173	314-304	3rd period of the war . . . 179
			New Colonies formed . . . 180
327	Dispute with Palae- opolis . . . 173	311	Etruscans declare war . . . 180
326	Publius Philo, the first Pro-consul, cap- tures Palaepolis . . . 174	309	Victory of Papirius . . . 180
	Outbreak of Second Samnite War . . . 174	310-309	Fabius defeats the Etruscans . . . 180
	Leading men at Rome . . . 174	308	Peace with Etruscans . . . 181
326-322	1st period of the war . . . 175	305	Fall of Bovianum . . . 181
		304	Peace with Samnium . . . 181
			Hernicans and Aequi- ans reduced . . . 181
		299	Two new tribes added (making 33 in all) . . . 181

CHAPTER XIX

THIRD SAMNITE WAR. (298-290 B.C.)

B. C.	PAGE	B. C.	PAGE
	Hollowness of the peace 182	295	Fabius and Decius again Consuls . 184
299	War with Etruscans, Umbrians, & Gauls 183	—	Great efforts of Rome —Defeat of Scipio . 185
298	The Third Samnite War begins . . 183	—	Battle of Sentinum . 185
—	Victories of the Con- suls, Scipio and Fulvius . . . 183	293	Battle at Aquilonia . 186
297	Victories of the Con- suls, Fabius and Decius . . . 184	292	Defeat of Fabius Gurges . . . 187
296	Success of Gellius Eg- natus . . . 184	—	Victory of Fabius and his father . . 187
		291	Colony at Venusia . 187
		290	Peace with Samnium —Execution of C. Pontius . . . 187

CHAPTER XX

CIVIL HISTORY DURING THE TIME OF THE SAMNITE WARS

B. C.	PAGE	B. C.	PAGE
	Remnants of jealousy between the Orders 189		slaves and freedmen 191
296	Chapel to Pudicitia Plebeia . . . 189	312	Ap. Claudius Censor . 191
314	C. Maenius puts down political clubs . 190	—	Enfranchisement of the freedmen . . 193
300	Ogulnian Law on the priesthoods . . 190		Cn. Flavius publishes the calendar . . 193
	Increasing number of		Via Appia, Aqua Appia 194
		304	Censorship of Fabius and Decius . . 195

CHAPTER XXI

EVENTS BETWEEN THE THIRD SAMNITE WAR AND THE  
LANDING OF PYRRHUS. (289-282 B.C.)

B. C.	PAGE	B. C.	PAGE
290	M'. Curius Dentatus subdues the Sabines 196	301?	Treaty between Rome and Tarentum . 202
	Agrarian law of Curius 197		Intrigues of Tarentum against Rome . 202
286?	Laws of the Dictator Hortensius . . 197	283	Thurii assisted by Rome against Lu- canians . . . 202
	Intercourse of Rome with Greece . . 198	—	General rising against Rome — Metellus cut off in Etruria . 202
	Snake of Aesculapius brought to Rome . 198	—	Dolabella extirpates the Senones . . 203
	Magna Graecia and Sicily . . . 198		Battle of Lake Vadimo—Colony at Sena Gallica . . 203
	Syracuse . . . 200		
289	Messana occupied by Mamertines . . 200		
	Tarentum . . . 201		



CHAPTER XXI—*continued.*EVENTS BETWEEN THE THIRD SAMNITE WAR AND THE  
LANDING OF PYRRHUS. (289-282 B.C.)

B.C.		PAGE	B.C.		PAGE
282	Fabricius raises the siege of Thurii .	204	—	Sack of Thurii— Roman envoys in- sulted .	204
—	Roman ships assaulted in Bay of Tarentum	204	280	Pyrrhus in Italy	205

## CHAPTER XXII

## PYRRHUS IN ITALY. (280-275 B.C.)

B.C.		PAGE	B.C.		PAGE
	Early life of Pyrrhus .	207	—	Embassy of Fabricius	211
280	Pyrrhus at Tarentum .	208	279	Battle of Asculum in Apulia .	212
—	Roman prepara- tions .	208	278	The Consuls inform Pyrrhus of his physi- cian's treachery .	213
—	Battle of Heraclea .	209	278-276	Pyrrhus in Sicily .	213
—	Locri joins Pyrrhus— Rhegium declared independent .	210	276	Return of Pyrrhus to Italy .	214
—	Cineas and Appius Claudius .	210	275	Battle of Beneventum	214
—	Pyrrhus marches into Latium .	211		Fate of Pyrrhus	215

## CHAPTER XXIII

## FINAL REDUCTION AND SETTLEMENT OF ITALY. (274-264 B.C.)

B.C.		PAGE	B.C.		PAGE
274	Milo left in command at Tarentum .	216	268-266	Submission of Piceni- ans and Umbrians	217
272	Final reduction of Samnites and south- ern Italians .	216	264	Surrender of Vulturni Settlement of Italy .	218
—	Surrender of Taren- tum .	216		Isolation and self- government .	219
273	Embassy from Pto- lemy Philadelphus .	217		Prefectures .	219
271-270	The Campanians of Rhegium punished	217		Municipal towns .	220
266	Sallentines and Mes- sapi submit .	217		Colonies .	221
244	Colony at Brundisium	217		<i>Ius Latii</i> .	222
				Free and Confederate states: Italian towns	223
				Policy of Rome .	224

BOOK IV

ROME AND CARTHAGE

CHAPTER XXIV

CARTHAGE. EVENTS LEADING TO FIRST PUNIC WAR

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Good fortune of Rome in her wars . . . 225	264	The Romans assist the Mamertines against Hiero . . . 229
	Carthage; constitution and army . . . 226-227	—	Victories of Romans . . . 229
	Attempts upon Sicily . . . 228	263	First Punic War—its general character . . . 229
270	Hiero made king of Syracuse . . . 229		

CHAPTER XXV

FIRST PUNIC WAR. (263-241 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
263-257	First period of war — Success of the Romans . . . 231	255-254	Loss of two Roman fleets—The Romans give up the sea . . . 236
	Hiero joins the Roman side . . . 231	251	Victory of Metellus at Panormus . . . 237
262	Agrigentum taken . . . 232		Embassy of Regulus . . . 238
260	First Roman Fleet . . . 232	249-241	Third period of war . . . 239
—	Defeat of Cn. Cornelius . . . 233		Third Roman fleet—Siege of Lilybaeum . . . 240
—	Victory of C. Duilius at Mylae . . . 233	249	Defeat of P. Claudius at Drepana . . . 240
	Carthage loses great part of Sicily . . . 234	—	Destruction of fleet under L. Junius . . . 241
256-250	Second period of war . . . 234		Hamilcar Barca . . . 241
256	Battle of Ecnomus—Invasion of Africa . . . 234	241	Fourth Roman fleet—Battle of the Aegæan Islands . . . 242
—	Proposals for peace . . . 236	—	Conclusion of peace—Results and prospects . . . 243
—	Xanthippus. Defeat of the Romans . . . 236		

CHAPTER XXVI

EVENTS BETWEEN THE FIRST AND SECOND PUNIC WARS

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
240-238	Mercenary War at Carthage . . . 245	235	The Temple of Janus closed . . . 247
238	Ungenerous conduct of Rome—Cession of Sardinia . . . 246	241	Two new Tribes added (making 35 : the final number) . . . 247
238?	Hamilcar goes to Spain . . . 246	229	Illyrian War—Demetrius of Pharos . . . 248

CHAPTER XXVI—*continued.*

## EVENTS BETWEEN THE FIRST AND SECOND PUNIC WARS

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Honour paid by Greeks to Romans . . . 248	219	Second Illyrian War . . . 251
232	Agrarian law of Flam- inius . . . 249	229?	Hannibal's oath . . . 251
	Revolt of the Gauls— Great preparations at Rome . . . 249	226?	Death of Hamilcar in Spain . . . 252
225	Battle of Telamon . . . 250	226?	Treaty between the Romans and Has- drubal in Spain . . . 252
224	Campaign of Flamin- ius against the Gauls . . . 250	221	Death of Hasdrubal — Hannibal takes command in Spain . . . 252
222	Peace with the Gauls . . . 251	219	Siege of Saguntum . . . 253
220	Colonies at Cremona and Placentia—Via Flaminia . . . 251		Debate at Carthage . . . 253
			Character of Hannibal . . . 254

## CHAPTER XXVII

## SECOND PUNIC WAR: FIRST PERIOD (218–215 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Divisions of Second Punic War . . . 256	—	Dismay at Rome—Q. Fabius Maximus, Dictator . . . 266
219-218	Hannibal's prepara- tions—His march to the Rhone . . . 257	—	Escape of Hannibal from Campania . . . 268
	Preparations of the Romans—P. Scipio and Tib. Sempron- ius Longus, Consuls . . . 258	—	Discontent with Fab- ius at Rome—Minu- cius . . . 268
218	Revolt in Cisalpine Gaul . . . 258	216	Varro and Paullus, Consuls . . . 269
—	Scipio at Massilia— Hannibal crosses the Rhone . . . 259	—	Hannibal seizes Can- nae . . . 270
—	Cavalry skirmish near the Rhone . . . 260	—	Battle of Cannae . . . 272
—	P. Scipio returns to Italy: Cn. Scipio sent to Spain . . . 260	—	Measures taken by the Senate . . . 274
—	Hannibal crosses the Alps . . . 260	—	Hannibal enters Capua . . . 275
—	Skirmish by the Ticinus . . . 262	—	Mago sent to Carthage . . . 276
—	Battle of the Trebia . . . 263	—	The Scipios in Spain . . . 276
217	Flaminius and Ser- vilius, Consuls . . . 264	216	Victory of the Scipios at Ibera . . . 277
—	Hannibal's march through Etruria . . . 265	—	Prospects of Hannibal . . . 277
—	Battle of Lake Trasi- mene . . . 265	215	Postumius cut off by the Gauls . . . 277
			Negotiations between Hannibal and Philip of Macedon . . . 278
			Oppian Law . . . 278

CHAPTER XXVIII

SECOND PUNIC WAR : SECOND PERIOD. (215-211 B.C.).

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	The leading men at Rome . . . 279	213	Marcellus takes Leon- tini—Syracuse de- clares war . . . 284
215	Successes of Gracchus and Marcellus . . . 280	213-212	Siege of Syracuse— Archimedes . . . 285
214	Fabius sets aside the Consular elections . . . 281	211	Ovation of Marcellus . . . 287
—	Gracchus's victory at Beneventum . . . 281	210	Laevinus subduces Sicily . . . 287
—	Hannibal fails at Tarentum . . . 282	212	Hannibal surprises Tarentum—Romans besiege Capua . . . 287
213	Uncertainty of Hanni- bal's position . . . 282	—	Death of Gracchus— Defeats of Centenius and Fulvius . . . 288
—	War with Macedon— Insurrection in Sar- dinia . . . 282	211	Hannibal's march on Rome . . . 289
214	Death of Hiero— Anarchy in Syra- cuse—Revolt of Leontini . . . 283	—	Surrender of Capua . . . 290
		212-211	Defeat and death of the Scipios in Spain . . . 291

CHAPTER XXIX

SECOND PUNIC WAR : THIRD PERIOD. (210-207 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
210	Laevinus and Mar- cellus, Consuls . . . 292		and Crispinus, the Consuls . . . 297
214-210	Extraordinary finan- cial measures at Rome . . . 293	—	March of Hasdrubal from Spain . . . 298
209	Twelve Latin colonies decline to contri- bute any further to the war . . . 296	207	Nero and Livius, Con- suls . . . 298
—	Recovery of Tarentum by Fabius . . . 296	—	Hasdrubal's message to Hannibal intercep- ted—March of Nero . . . 300
208	Death of Marcellus	—	Battle of the Metaurus . . . 302
		—	Hannibal retreats into Bruttii . . . 303

CHAPTER XXX

SECOND PUNIC WAR : FOURTH AND LAST PERIOD. (206-201 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
211	P. Scipio the younger accepts the Roman command in Spain . . . 305	208	Battle of Baecula— Hasdrubal eludes Scipio . . . 308
	His character . . . 306	206	Battle of Silpia or Elinga . . . 309
209	Scipio seizes New Carthage . . . 307	—	Scipio's designs on

CHAPTER XXX—*continued*

## SECOND PUNIC WAR : FOURTH AND LAST PERIOD. (206-201 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Africa — His visit to Syphax—Revolt in Spain . . . . .		armies of Syphax and Hasdrubal destroyed by treachery . . . . .
—	Mutiny quelled by Scipio . . . . .	—	Further successes of Scipio . . . . .
—	Spain entirely Roman —Return of Scipio . . . . .		Carthaginian success at sea—Mago in Italy . . . . .
205	Scipio elected Consul . . . . .		Hannibal leaves Italy . . . . .
204	Pleminius at Locri— Attacks on Scipio . . . . .	203	Battle of Zama . . . . .
—	Scipio sails for Africa . . . . .	202	Conditions of peace . . . . .
204-203	Siege of Utica—The		

## CHAPTER XXXI

## GOVERNMENT, CONSTITUTIONAL CHANGES, AND FINANCES, UP TO THE CLOSE OF THE HANNIBALIC WAR

	PAGE		PAGE
Disappearance of severance between Patricians and Plebeians . . . . .	321	Its power . . . . .	327
Decay of <i>Comitia Curiata</i> . . . . .	322	Reform of <i>Comitia Centuriata</i> . . . . .	328
Regulations for holding office . . . . .	322	Plebeian Assembly in Tribes . . . . .	329
Duties of officers . . . . .	323	Power of Tribunes . . . . .	329
Importance of wealth—Short tenure of office—Republican nature of the system . . . . .	323	Relation between the Assemblies . . . . .	330
The Senate—Qualifications for membership . . . . .	325-6	The Provinces—Sicily . . . . .	333
		Principles of Taxation . . . . .	334
		Revenue and expenditure . . . . .	335
		Extraordinary war-tax . . . . .	336
		Taxation in the Provinces . . . . .	337

## CHAPTER XXXII

## SOCIAL AND INTELLECTUAL CONDITION OF THE PEOPLE, MANNERS—RELIGION—LITERATURE—ART

	PAGE		PAGE
The Golden Age of Rome . . . . .	338	Beginnings of Roman literature . . . . .	344
Towns and country districts of Italy . . . . .	338	Livius Andronicus—Naevius . . . . .	345
Colonies, to relieve over-population . . . . .	339	Ennius . . . . .	346
Slavery . . . . .	339	Historians of Rome . . . . .	347
The freedmen . . . . .	341	Art—Coinage . . . . .	347
Family life . . . . .	341	Mechanical arts — House-building . . . . .	353
Religion—Its influence on morality . . . . .	342	Agriculture . . . . .	353
Formation of Latin language . . . . .	344	Architecture — Roads — The arch . . . . .	354
		Sanitary rules . . . . .	355
		Tunnels . . . . .	355



BOOK V

ROME AND THE CONQUEST OF THE WORLD

CHAPTER XXXIII

INTRODUCTORY: STATE OF THE EASTERN WORLD

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	The East and West		Aetolian League . . . 362
	brought into relation 357	220	The Aetolians attack
	Successors of Alex-		Peloponnesus . . . 363
	ander the Great . . . 357		Successes of Philip of
	Egypt—Syria . . . 358		Macedon against the
	Pergamus—Rhodes—		Aetolians . . . 363
	Macedonia . . . 359	215	Demetrius of Pharos—
	Athens—Sparta . . . 360		Philip and Hanni-
	Achaean League—		bal in alliance . . . 363
	Aratus . . . 361		

CHAPTER XXXIV

FIRST AND SECOND MACEDONIAN WAR: SETTLEMENT OF GREECE BY FLAMININUS. (214-194 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Conduct of Philip . . . 365	199	Fruitless campaign of
211	Alliance between Rome		Galba . . . 369
	and the Aetolians . . . 365	198	Villius attempts to
	The Romans capture		enter Thessaly . . . 370
	Anticyra and Aegina . . . 366	—	Flamininus, Consul . . . 370
205	Peace of Phoenice . . . 366	—	The Achaean League
	Philip helps Hannibal		joins Rome . . . 371
	at Zama . . . 367	197	Conference at Ther-
205	Bargain between		mopylae . . . 372
	Philip and Anti-	—	Battle of Cynosce-
	ochus as to Egypt . . . 367		phalae . . . 373
	Tyranny of Philip . . . 367	—	Arrogance of Aetoli-
201	Philip in Asia . . . 367		ans—Terms offered
—	Embassy from Rome		to Philip . . . 374
	to Philip . . . 368	196	Freedom of Greece
200	Difficulty of declaring		proclaimed . . . 375
	war against Philip—	—	Envoys from Anti-
	The Centuries give		ochus arrive . . . 375
	a second vote . . . 368	195	Tyranny of Nabis—
—	Siege of Abydos . . . 369		Siege of Sparta . . . 376
—	Romans seize Chalcis	194	Policy of Flamininus—
	—Philip at Athens . . . 369	●	He leaves Greece . . . 376

## CHAPTER XXXV

WAR WITH ANTIOCHUS, AND SETTLEMENT OF EASTERN AFFAIRS.  
(196-188 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
196	Antiochus ordered to quit Europe . . . 379	191	Battle of Thermopylae . 382
	Hannibal attempts to reform the Cartha- ginian constitution . 379	—	Advice of Flamininus . 383
	Flight of Hannibal to Antiochus . . . 380	190	Battle of Myonnesus . 384
192	Intrigues of Aetolians . 380	—	Battle of Magnesia . 385
—	Flamininus sent to Greece . . . 381	—	Terms of peace with Antiochus . . . 385
—	Antiochus enters Eu- rope . . . 381	189	Fulvius Nobilior re- duces the Aetolians . 386
		—	Manlius Vulso attacks the Galatians . . 386
		—	Asiatic arrangements of Rome . . . 387

## CHAPTER XXXVI

WARS IN THE WEST CONTEMPORANEOUS WITH THE MACEDONIAN  
AND SYRIAN WARS. (200-175 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
200?	Trouble in N. Italy . 388	195	Cato, Consul, in Spain . 390
179	Conquest of Ligurians . 389	179	Gracchus in Spain . 392
187	Via Aemilia . . . 389	177	Gracchus subdues the Sardinians . . . 392
	Colonies founded . . 389	183	Marcellus conquers Istria . . . 393
197	Formation of Spanish Provinces . . . 390		

## CHAPTER XXXVII

CIVIL HISTORY DURING THE MACEDONIAN AND SYRIAN WARS :  
CORRUPTION OF MANNERS : SENATORIAL PREDOMINANCE :  
SCIPIO AND CATO. (200-172 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Desire at Rome for war; changed char- acter of Roman armies . . . 394	180	Charges of poisoning State of parties— Scipio and Cato . 398
	Effects of war on Roman character . 395		Attacks on the Scipios . 400
	New Nobility of wealth . 395	183	Death of Scipio and Hannibal . . . 402
	Decay of morals . . 395	184	Censorship of Cato . 403
186	Bacchanalian con- piracy . . . 396		Character of Cato . 404

CHAPTER XXXVIII

THE THIRD MACEDONIAN WAR, OR WAR OF PERSEUS.  
(185-167 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Policy of Philip . . . 406	170	Failure of Hostilius Mancinus . . . 411
	Demetrius as hostage at Rome . . . 406	169	Campaign of Philippos . . . 411
	Perseus . . . 407	168	Aemilius Paullus, Consul—Great preparations . . . 412
181	Death of Demetrius . . . 408	—	Battle of Pydna . . . 413
179	Death of Philip—Perseus king . . . 408	—	Surrender of Perseus—Settlement of Macedonia . . . 414
172	Eumenes accuses Perseus—Attempt to murder Eumenes . . . 409	167	Massacre in Epirus . . . 415
171	War declared against Perseus . . . 409	—	Triumph of Paullus . . . 415
—	Fraud of Philippos—Failure of Crassus . . . 410		Increase of revenue . . . 416
			Fate of Perseus . . . 417

CHAPTER XXXIX

GENERAL HISTORY BETWEEN THE WAR WITH PERSEUS AND  
THE LAST WARS WITH GREECE AND CARTHAGE. (183-149 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Roman diplomacy . . . 418	161, 155	Policy of Cato—Expulsion of philosophers from Rome—Embassy from Athens . . . 423
170	Popillius and Antiochus Epiphanes . . . 418	171	Trial of three Spanish governors . . . 423
167	Achaean prisoners taken to Rome . . . 419	154?	Outbreak of war in Spain . . . 424
—	Treatment of Rhodes . . . 419	152	Scipio elected a legionary tribune . . . 424
	Intrigues against Eumenes—Servility of Prusias . . . 420	151	Treachery of Lucullus . . . 425
168?	Maccabaeans rising . . . 420	150	Treachery of Galba . . . 425
161	Treaty between Rome and the Jews . . . 421	149	Trial of Galba . . . 425
	Low state of Egypt . . . 421		Scipio Aemilianus and Polybius . . . 426
166-155	Wars in southern Gaul and Dalmatia . . . 421		
159	Death of Aem. Paullus . . . 422		

## CHAPTER XL

THE LAST WARS WITH MACEDON AND GREECE: FALL OF  
CORINTH. (151-145 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
151	Liberation of the Achæan captives . . . 428	147	Negotiations between Rome and Achæans . . . 430
	Anti-Roman policy in Greece . . . 429	146	Defeat of Critolaus at Scarpheia . . . 430
149	Appearance of Andri- scus in Macedonia . . . 429	—	Defeat of Diaeus— Sack of Corinth . . . 431
148	The Achæan league attacks Sparta . . . 429	—	Settlement of Greece— Services of Poly- bius—Macedonia a Province . . . 431
—	Metellus defeats An- driscus . . . 429		

## CHAPTER XLI

## THIRD PUNIC WAR. FALL OF CARTHAGE. (150-146 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	State of Carthage . . . 434		Death of Masinissa— Desertion of Himil- co Phameas . . . 440
	Encroachments of Masinissa . . . 434	148	Second campaign— Failure of Piso . . . 440
157	Commission headed by Cato . . . 434	147	Scipio, as Consul, sails for Africa . . . 441
149	Romans declare war on Carthage . . . 435	—	Capture of Megara . . . 441
—	Treachery of Romans . . . 436	—	Progress of the siege of Carthage . . . 442
—	Desperate prepara- tions in Carthage . . . 437	146	Sack of Carthage . . . 442
	Site of Carthage . . . 438		Fate of Carthage . . . 444
149	First campaign—The Consuls unsuccessful . . . 439		

## CHAPTER XLII

## SPANISH WARS: FALL OF NUMANTIA. (149-133 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Viriathus . . . 445	139	Murder of Viriathus . . . 446
143-142	Celtiberian War—Suc- cess of Metellus . . . 445	137	The treaty of Mancin- us . . . 447
137	Surrender of Hostilius Mancinus . . . 445	138-136	Junius Brutus conquers Gallaecia . . . 447
141	Lusitanian War—De- feat of Fabius Ser- villianus—Viriathus recognised as the ally of Rome . . . 446	142	Scipio as Censor—His popularity . . . 448
140	Treachery of Servilius Caepio . . . 446	134	Scipio elected to a second Consulship . . . 449
		133	Siege and destruction of Numantia . . . 449

CHAPTER XLIII

THE FIRST SLAVE WAR IN SICILY. (134-131 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Increase of slaves . . . 452	—	Defeat of a Praetor— Failure of Fulvius Flaccus. . . . 455
	Grazing displaces agri- culture in Italy . . . 452	133	Calpurnius Piso re- covers Messana . . . 455
	Sicily — Damophilus of Enna . . . . 454	132-131	Rupilius finishes the war—Settlement of Sicily . . . . 456
134	Outbreak of the revolt —Capture of Enna. 454		
—	Successes of the in- surgents . . . . 455		

CHAPTER XLIV

THE CONDITION OF ROME AND HER PEOPLE AT THE CLOSE  
OF THE PERIOD OF CONQUEST

	PAGE		PAGE
The new Nobility . . . . 458		Growth of <i>latifundia</i> and of slave labour . . . . 462	
Power of the Purse in the hands of the Senate . . . . 458		Distinction between town and country Tribes . . . . 462	
Growth of a wealthy non-Sena- torial class . . . . 459		Influence of the Nobility in the <i>Comitia</i> . . . . 463	
The <i>Equites</i> . . . . 460			
Decay of rural population . . 461			

CHAPTER XLV

MANNERS AND MORALS : LITERATURE AND ART

	PAGE		PAGE
Vain attempts to check im- morality by law . . . . 465		Caecilius and Afranius— Tragedians . . . . 470	
Decay of religion—Want of public opinion . . . . 466		Ill-success of the drama at Rome . . . . 471	
Ennius . . . . 466		Satire—Lucilius . . . . 472	
Comedy—Plautus and Terence 467		Prose-writers—Law—Rhetoric 473	



## BOOK VI

## FIRST PERIOD OF CIVIL WARS

## CHAPTER XLVI

## TIBERIUS GRACCHUS (133 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Need of reform . . . 477	--	Unconstitutional proposal of Gracchus as to the bequest of Attalus . . . 482
	Cornelia . . . 477		Gracchus seeks re-election . . . 483
133	Tiberius Gracchus, Tribune . . . 478	--	Death of Gracchus . . 484
--	His agrarian proposal . 479		His character . . . 485
--	Veto of M. Octavius . 480		
--	Octavius deposed from office . . . 481		

## CHAPTER XLVII

## RETURN AND DEATH OF SCIPIO THE YOUNGER. (133-129 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Prevalence of moderate party in the Senate . . . 486	130	Death of Crassus . . 488
132	Commission to try the adherents of Gracchus . . . 486	129	M <sup>r</sup> . Aquillius settles the Province of Asia . 488
--	Return of Scipio—His policy . . . 487	--	Activity of the agrarian commissioners . . . 489
131	Crassus appointed to command in Asia . 488	--	Scipio undertakes the cause of the Italians --Land assignments cease . . . 489
--	Two Plebeian Censors . 488		Death of Scipio . . 490
			His character . . . 491

## CHAPTER XLVIII

## GAIUS GRACCHUS AND HIS TIMES

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	General calm after Scipio's death . . 492	123	C. Gracchus, Tribune . 494
126	Alien Act of Julius Pennus . . . 493		Measures against his brother's enemies . . 495
126-124	C. Gracchus, Quaestor in Sardinia . . . 493		Measures to improve the condition of the people . . . 496
125	Reform Bill of Fulvius Flaccus . . . 493		Measures directed against the Senate . 497
124-123	Flaccus in Gaul . . 494		Objects and results of his legislation . . 498
124	Revolt of Fregellae . 494		

CHAPTER XLVIII—*continued*

GAIUS GRACCHUS AND HIS TIMES

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
122	Gracchus re-elected Tribune . . . 499	—	Proposal to enfranchise Italians . 500
—	Livius Drusus outbids Gracchus . . . 499	—	Colony at Carthage . 501
		121	Fate of Gracchus . 501

CHAPTER XLIX

JUGURTHA AND HIS TIMES. (120-104 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
120	Indictment of Opimius 505	—	The Consul Bestia accused of taking bribes — Jugurtha summoned to Rome 509
	Suicide of Carbo . 505		
	The Metelli—Scaurus 506	110	Aulus Albinus defeated by Jugurtha . . 510
123, 119	Subjugation of Balearic Isles: and of Dalmatian revolt . 507	109	Metellus assumes the command in Africa 510
122	Foundation of Aquae Sextiae . . . 507		Early life of Marius . 510
121	Great victory of Fabius over the Allobroges 507	109	Metellus' 1st campaign 511
118	Foundation of Narbo Martius — Transalpine Gaula Province 507	108	Marius elected Consul 512
—	Partition of the kingdom of Numidia . 508	—	Metellus' 2nd campaign . . . 512
	Jugurtha, Hiempsal, and Adherbal . 508	—	African command transferred to Marius . 513
112	Jugurtha captures Ciria 509	107	Marius in Africa—Sulla . . . 514
111	War declared against Jugurtha . . . 509	106	Capture of Jugurtha . 515
		104	Triumph of Marius—Death of Jugurtha . 515

CHAPTER L

THE CIMBRIANS AND TEUTONS. (113-101 B.C.): SECOND SLAVE-WAR IN SICILY. (103-100 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	The Cimbrians . . . 517		Marius—Ill-success of Catulus—Marius joins Catulus . 522
113, 109, 107	Defeat of three Consular armies . 518	—	Battle of Vercellae . 523
105	Great defeat of Mallius and Caepio . . . 518	—	Triumph of Marius and Catulus . . 524
104-102	2nd, 3rd, 4th Consulships of Marius . 519	103-100	Second slave-war in Sicily . . . 524
102	Battles of Aquae Sextiae . . . 520	101-100	M'. Aquillius crushes the revolt . . . 525
101	5th Consulship of		

## CHAPTER LI

FROM THE SIXTH CONSULSHIP OF MARIUS TO THE DEATH  
OF M. LIVIUS DRUSUS. (100-91 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Moderate party in the Senate . . . . . 527	93	Praetorship of Sulla . 534
104	Condemnation of Caepio . 527		The equestrian law-courts—M'. Aquilius and Rutilius Rufus . . . . . 534
	Judicial laws . . . . . 528	91	Livius Drusus the younger, Tribune . 535
	Leading men of the time 528		His measures put to the vote together . 536
100	6th Consulship of Marius — Saturninus, Tribune : Glau- cia, Praetor . . . . . 530		The Italian franchise proposal . . . . . 537
	Agrarian law—Banish- ment of Metellus . 531	—	Death of Drusus— Law of Varius . 537
—	Death of the agitators : decline of Marius' power . . . . . 533		

## CHAPTER LII

## THE SOCIAL WAR. (90, 89 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
90	Outbreak at Asculum in Picenum . . . . . 538	—	Successes of Sulla and Pompeius Strabo . 541
	Organisation of the Italian League . 538	—	Capture of Bovianum and Asculum . 542
—	Death of the Consul, Rutilius Lupus . 539		Lex Plautia Papiria—Latin rights granted by Pompeius to the Transpadane Gauls 543
—	Lex Julia on the franchise . . . . . 540	—	Method of admission of the new citizens. 544
89	Death of the Consul, Cato . . . . . 541		

## CHAPTER LIII

## FIRST CIVIL WAR. (88-86 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
88	Sulla, as Consul, appointed to command against Mithridates 546	88	Measures of Sulla . 551
—	Murder of the Praetor Asellio . . . . . 546	87	Cinna deprived of the Consulship . . 552
—	Sulpicius Rufus, Tribune . . . . . 547		The army at Nola declares for Cinna—Rise of the Italians—Return of Marius 553
—	Sulla's march on Rome 548		Blockade of Rome . 554
—	Marius outlawed—Death of Sulpicius 549	—	The Marian massacre 555
87-86	Adventures of Marius 550	86	Seventh consulship of Marius—His death 556

CHAPTER LIV

FIRST MITHRIDATIC WAR. (88-84 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	State of Asia Minor . . . 558	87	Sulla in Greece—Siege of Peiraeus and Athens . . . 561
	Kingdom of Pontus . . . 558	86	Battle of Chaeroneia . . . 562
	Mithridates . . . 559	—	Battle of Orchomenos . . . 563
88	His successes in Asia . . . 560	—	Flaccus and Fimbria . . . 563
	Death of Aquillius—Massacre of Italians . . . 561	85	Peace with Mithridates . . . 564
—	Greece joins Mithridates . . . 561	84	Death of Fimbria . . . 565

CHAPTER LV

RETURN OF SULLA: CIVIL WAR RENEWED. (83, 82 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
86-84	Rome after Marius' death—Cinna, Consul . . . 557	—	Success of Pompey in Picenum . . . 571
84	Death of Cinna—Carbo, sole Consul . . . 568	82	Carbo and young Marius, Consuls . . . 571
—	Popular measures passed by the Marian leaders . . . 569	83	Burning of the Capitol . . . 572
83	Scipio and Norbanus, Consuls—Sulla lands in Italy . . . 569	82	Battle of Sacriportus—Marius besieged in Praenesté . . . 572
—	Metellus, Crassus, Pompey join Sulla . . . 570	—	Massacre in Rome . . . 572
—	Defeat of Norbanus—Scipio deserted by his troops . . . 570	—	Sulla enters Rome—Advance of Samnites . . . 573
		—	Northern Italy conquered by the Sullans . . . 574
		—	Battle of the Colline Gate . . . 574

CHAPTER LVI

SULLA'S DICTATORSHIP AND DEATH. (82-78 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
82	Sulla and his enemies—Proscription—Scenes in Italian cities . . . 576		Criminal reform . . . 583
—	Sulla Dictator . . . 578		Sulla's indifference to power . . . 583
—	Treatment of Ofella . . . 578		Pompey, Caesar, and Murena . . . 583
81	Triumph of Sulla . . . 579	81	Cicero's defence of S. Roscius . . . 584
	Military colonies . . . 580	79	Retirement, death, and character of Sulla . . . 584
	The Cornelian citizens . . . 581		
	Measures for increasing the Senate's power . . . 581		

## BOOK VII

## SECOND PERIOD OF CIVIL WARS

## CHAPTER LVII

REVOLUTIONARY ATTEMPT OF LEPIDUS: SERTORIUS: SPARTACUS:  
FIRST CONSULSHIP OF POMPEY AND CRASSUS. (78-70 B.C.)

B.C.		PAGE	B.C.		PAGE
78	Catulus and Lepidus, Consuls . . .	589	72	Spartacus master of Italy	593
77	Revolutionary attempt of Lepidus . . .	589	71	Crassus defeats Spar tacus . . .	593
	Sertorius in Spain . . .	590	—	Pompey and Crassus illegally elected Consuls . . .	594
77	Pompey sent to rein- force Metellus in Spain . . .	591	70	First Consulship of Pompey and Crassus	595
72	Murder of Sertorius . . .	591	—	Cicero's accusation of Verres . . .	596
71	End of the war in Spain	592		Jealousy between Pompey and Crassus	597
73	Outbreak of the gladia- torial war . . .	592			

## CHAPTER LVIII

THIRD OR GREAT MITHRIDATIC WAR: POMPEY IN THE  
EAST. (74-61 B.C.)

B.C.		PAGE	B.C.		PAGE
84-82	Second Mithridatic War . . .	599	67	Defeat of Triarius . . .	603
74	Bithynia bequeathed to Rome . . .	599	67	The Cilician pirates . . .	603
—	Third Mithridatic War — Lucullus in com- mand — Siege of Cyzicus . . .	600	—	Gabinian law . . .	604
73-70	Advance of Lucullus — Order restored in Province of Asia . . .	601	—	Success of Pompey against the pirates . . .	605
69	War with Armenia— Capture of Tigrano- certa . . .	601	66	Manilian law—Pom- pey commands against Mithridates . . .	605
68	Advance upon Ar- taxata—Capture of Nisibis . . .	602	—	Flight of Mithridates . . .	606
—	Mutiny in the Roman army . . .	602	—	Treaty with Parthia . . .	607
			65	Reduction of Pontus . . .	607
			64	Pompey in Syria and Judaea . . .	607
			63	Death of Mithridates . . .	608
			63-62	Pompey completes his arrangements in Asia . . .	608
			61	Pompey arrives at Rome . . .	609

CHAPTER LIX

FROM FIRST CONSULSHIP OF POMPEY AND CRASSUS TO RETURN  
OF POMPEY FROM THE EAST : CAESAR : CICERO : CATILINE.  
(69-61 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
	Early life of Caesar . 610	—	Second conspiracy of Catiline. . . 617
	Widespread discontent in Italy. . . 612	—	Cicero's speeches against Catiline — The Allobroges . 618
65	First conspiracy of Catiline. . . 613	—	Debate on the fate of the conspirators . 620
63	Cicero and Antonius, Consuls. . . 614	—	Trial of Murena . 620
—	Agrarian proposal of Rullus . . . 615	62	Battle of Pistoria . 621
—	Trial of Rabirius . 616		Relation of Crassus and Caesar to the con- spiracy. . . 621
—	Caesar elected Ponti- fex Maximus. . 617		

CHAPTER LX

POMPEY'S RETURN : FIRST TRIUMVIRATE : CAESAR'S CONSUL-  
SHIP : CLODIUS. (62-58 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
62	Cicero and Pompey— Metellus Nepos . 623	—	Other measures of Caesar . . 627
61	Return of Pompey— His relations to Crassus and Cicero. 624	—	Vatinian law—Trans- alpine Gaul added by the Senate to Caesar's Province . 628
60	Afranius and Metellus Celer, Consuls . 625	61	Trial of Clodius . 629
—	Agrarian proposal of Flavius . . 625	59	Clodius made a Ple- beian and elected Tribune . . 630
61	Caesar as Pro-praetor in Spain . . 625	58	Piso and Gabinius, Consuls . . 630
60	The First Triumvirate 626	—	Exile of Cicero . 630
59	Caesar and Bibulus, Consuls. . . 626	—	Cato sent to Cyprus . 631
—	Agrarian law of Caesar . . . 626	—	Democratic measures of Clodius . . 632

CHAPTER LXI

CAESAR IN GAUL : BREACH BETWEEN POMPEY AND CAESAR.  
(58-50 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
58	Caesar defeats the Helvetii . . 633	57	Conquest of the Belgae 634
—	Defeat of Ariovistus . 633	56	Continued success of Caesar in Gaul . 634

CHAPTER LXI—*continued*CAESAR IN GAUL: BREACH BETWEEN POMPEY AND CAESAR.  
(58-50 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
—	Conference at Luca . 637	—	sus leaves Rome . 642
58	Quarrel between Pompey and Clodius . 637	—	The Parthians . 642
57	Recall of Cicero . 638	53	Battle of Carrhae . 643
—	Pompey made controller of the market	55	Caesar's bridge over the Rhine—His first invasion of Britain . 643
—	—Question as to Ptolemy Auletes . 638	54	Second invasion of Britain . 644
55	Second Consulship of Pompey and Crassus	53-52	Final conquest of Gaul . 645
—	—Trebonian law . 640	52	Death of Clodius—Pompey sole Consul
56	Cicero and Triumvirs . 641	—	—His measures and policy . 646
54	Death of Julia—Cras-		

## CHAPTER LXII

## SECOND CIVIL WAR: DEATH OF POMPEY. (51-48 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
51	Caesar and the Senate . 649	—	Successes of Pompeians — Defeat of Curio . 655
50	Curio as Tribune supports Caesar . 649	—	Hesitation of Cicero . 655
—	Caelius; Mark Antony . 650	—	Plan of Pompey . 656
49	Flight of Antony and Cassius . 651	49-48	Caesar lands in Epirus . 656
—	Confidence of Pompey . 651	48	Antony joins Caesar . 657
—	Advance of Caesar—Capture of Corfinium . 652	—	Caesar blockades Pompey — Defeat of Caesar . 658
—	Pompey leaves Italy . 653	—	Caesar retreats to Thessaly . 659
—	Siege of Marseilles—Caesar's campaign in Spain against Afranius and Petreius . 653	—	Battle of Pharsalia . 660
—	Caesar's first Dictatorship . 654	—	Flight and murder of Pompey . 661
			Character of Pompey . 663

## CHAPTER LXIII

## ABSOLUTE RULE OF CAESAR. (48-44 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
48	Caesar follows Pompey to Egypt . 664	—	Plans of the Pompeians . 665
48-47	Caesar blockaded in Alexandria . 664	48-47	Caesar's second Dictatorship . 666
		47	Battle of Zela . 666

CHAPTER LXIII—*continued*

ABSOLUTE RULE OF CAESAR. (48-44 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
—	Mutiny in Campania . 667	—	Treatment of the Senate . . . 672
46	Battle of Thapsus— Death of Cato . 668	—	Reform of <i>iudicia</i> . 673
—	Settlement of Africa— Caesar's triumphs— General amnesty . 669	—	Military and civil colonies . . 673
45	Battle of Munda . 670	—	Social reforms . 673
—	Brief time in which Caesar's legislation was completed . 671	—	Reform of the calendar 674
—	Revision of corn-list . 671	—	Caesar's desire to be king . . . 676
—	Extension of franchise —Imperial projects 671	44	Conspiracy against Caesar . . . 677
		—	Death and character of Caesar . . 680

CHAPTER LXIV

FROM THE DEATH OF CAESAR TO THE BATTLE OF PHILIPPI.  
(44-42 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
44	Sequel to Caesar's murder 683	—	Octavius elected Con- sul—Caesar's mur- derers condemned— The Second Trium- virate — The pro- scription . . 692
—	Caesar's will and funeral . . . 685	—	Death and Character of Cicero . . 693
—	Policy of Antony— Arrival of Octavius 686	—	Successes of Sextus Pompeius . . 695
—	Cicero — The First Philippic . . 688	—	Brutus and Cassius in Asia Minor . . 696
43	Hirtius and Pansa, Consuls . . . 689	42	The battles at Philippi 697
—	The Philippics . . 690	—	Character of Brutus . 699
—	Battles near Mutina— Death of the Consuls 690		
—	Antony joins Lepidus in Gaul . . . 691		

CHAPTER LXV

FROM THE BATTLE OF PHILIPPI TO THE FINAL ESTABLISH-  
MENT OF IMPERIAL MONARCHY. (42-30 B.C.).

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
—	Real end of the Re- public . . . 701	—	Cleopatra . . . 701
42	New division of the Roman world . 701	—	Octavian's difficulties in Italy . . . 702
		41	Perusine War . . 702



CHAPTER LXV—*continued*

## FROM THE BATTLE OF PHILIPPI TO THE FINAL ESTABLISHMENT OF IMPERIAL MONARCHY. (42-30 B.C.)

B.C.	PAGE	B.C.	PAGE
—	Successes of Parthians . . . . .	37	Meeting of Octavian and Antony at Tar- entum . . . . .
40	Antony invades Italy —Peace of Brundisium . . . . .	36	Death of Sext. Pompeius . . . . .
39	Sext. Pompeius recognised by the triumvirs . . . . .		Antony and Cleopatra . . . . .
39-38	Victories of Ventidius Bassus . . . . .		Conduct of Octavian . . . . .
38-37	Agrippa's preparations . . . . .	33	Quarrels between Antony and Octavian . . . . .
36	Campaign against Sext. Pompeius . . . . .	32	Declaration of war . . . . .
—	Lepidus ceases to be triumvir . . . . .	31	Battle of Actium . . . . .
		30	Death of Antony and of Cleopatra . . . . .
			Rule of Octavian . . . . .

## CHAPTER LXVI

## STATE OF THE EMPIRE: LITERATURE, ART, MANNERS, AND RELIGIOUS FEELING

	PAGE		PAGE
Acquiescence of Rome in despotism . . . . .	715	Cicero . . . . .	723
Events leading to Octavian's rule . . . . .	716	The drama—The mime . . . . .	724
His method of disguising his power . . . . .	717	Lucretius . . . . .	725
Condition of Italy and the Provinces . . . . .	718	Catullus . . . . .	727
Condition of Rome . . . . .	719	Minor poets . . . . .	728
Oratory—Education . . . . .	720	Virgil . . . . .	729
Historical works . . . . .	721	Horace . . . . .	730
Sallust and Livy . . . . .	722	Art . . . . .	732
Grammar and philology . . . . .	722	Engineering works . . . . .	732
		Public buildings . . . . .	735
		Corruption of manners . . . . .	736
		Superstition . . . . .	737
		Preparation for Christianity . . . . .	737

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

---

<p>The Roman Forum, looking East . . . . .</p> <p>Medal commemorating the foundation of Rome . . . . .</p> <p>Lake Nemi . . . . .</p> <p>The Wolf of the Capitol . . . . .</p> <p>Romano - Campanian coin of third century. Head of Heracles and wolf with twins . . . . .</p> <p>Brass of Antoninus Pius, showing <i>ancilia</i> . . . . .</p> <p>Mouth of Cloaca Maxima, the so-called Temple of Vesta, and the Ruins of the Palace of the Caesars in the back-ground . . . . .</p> <p>Rome in the time of Servius . . . . .</p> <p>Tomb of the Tarquins . . . . .</p> <p>Cinctus Gabinus, an old form of Roman military dress . . . . .</p> <p>B. G. Niebuhr . . . . .</p> <p>Wall of Servius . . . . .</p> <p>View of the Campagna . . . . .</p> <p>Coin of the Fannian <i>gens</i>, showing head of Ceres and Plebeian Aediles . . . . .</p> <p>The Tarpeian Rock . . . . .</p> <p>Coins alluding to the Porcian Law . . . . .</p> <p>Coin representing monument to Minucius, who reduced the price of corn . . . . .</p> <p>Coin of Brutus, with heads of Ahala and of Brutus, the first consul . . . . .</p> <p>Emissary of the Alban Lake . . . . .</p> <p>Gallic warriors (from bronzes in the British Museum) . . . . .</p> <p>Coin of Carthage, 4th century B.C. . . . .</p> <p>Samnite Warriors (from a mural painting at Paestum) . . . . .</p>	<p style="text-align: right;"><i>Frontispiece</i></p> <p style="text-align: right;"><i>Title-page</i></p> <p>Roman Soldiers (from the base of the Column of Aurelius) . . . . .</p> <p>Coin alluding to capture of Privernum . . . . .</p> <p>Tomb of Scipio Barbatus . . . . .</p> <p>The Appian Way, with the tomb of Caecilia Metella . . . . .</p> <p>Coin of Epidaurus, with snake . . . . .</p> <p>Coin of Tarentum . . . . .</p> <p>Coin of Pyrrhus, with head of Dodonean Zeus . . . . .</p> <p>Coin struck during the Social War, showing Samnite Bull-goring Roman Wolf . . . . .</p> <p>Romano - Campanian Stater, 3rd century B.C. . . . .</p> <p>Coin of Carthage, 2nd century B.C. . . . .</p> <p>As, with head of Janus : ship's prow on reverse . . . . .</p> <p>Coin of Metellus Scipio . . . . .</p> <p>Coin of Nero, showing temple of Janus closed. . . . .</p> <p>Coin of Marcellinus, bearing head of Marcellus, and showing <i>spolia opima</i> . . . . .</p> <p>Helmet found on the battle-field of Trasimene . . . . .</p> <p>Coin of M. Acilius Glabrio with triumphal car . . . . .</p> <p>Lictors . . . . .</p> <p><i>Aes signatum</i> (reverse). An old form of Roman bronze money . . . . .</p> <p><i>Aes signatum</i> (obverse) . . . . .</p>
--	--

Coin of Ptolemy Philadelphus . . . . .	357	Coin of Sulla . . . . .	576
Coin of Philip V. of Macedon . . . . .	365	Caesar (from the bust in Berlin) . . . . .	588
Coin showing Lepidus crowning Ptolemy of Egypt . . . . .	368	Pompey, from the statue in the Palazzo Spada at Rome . . . . .	598
Coin of Flaminius . . . . .	378	Coin of Tigranes . . . . .	599
Coin of Antiochus the Great . . . . .	379	Slab from the Arch of Titus, representing the spoils of Jerusalem borne in triumph . . . . .	608
Coin of Graccus in Spain, which changed its name from Ilurcis in honour of Tib. Sem- pronius Gracchus . . . . .	388	Cicero (from a bust in the pos- session of the Duke of Wel- lington) . . . . .	610
<i>S. C. de bacchanalibus</i> . . . . .	397	Cistophorus of B.C. 58-7 . . . . .	623
Coin of Perseus . . . . .	406	Coin of Arsaces X. of Parthia . . . . .	633
Coin of Lepidus, representing Paullus triumphing over Perseus and his children . . . . .	417	Plan of a Roman Camp . . . . .	635
Coin of Eumenes II. of Pergam- us, bearing head of Philetæ- us, the founder of the dynasty . . . . .	418	Coin of Augustus, commemor- ating the capture of Egypt . . . . .	649
Coin of the first of the <i>four</i> <i>districts</i> of Macedonia, which existed from 167 to 146 B.C. . . . .	428	Coin with heads of Caesar and Antony . . . . .	664
Denarius of the Cassia family, alluding to the Cassian <i>lex</i> <i>tabellaria</i> . . . . .	445	Brutus, from the bust in the British Museum . . . . .	678
Coin of P. Crassus, showing the <i>recognitio equitum</i> . . . . .	458	Coin struck on the death of Caesar . . . . .	681
Medallion of Terence . . . . .	465	Mark Antony, from the bust in the Vatican . . . . .	683
Roman Forum, looking west . . . . .	476	Augustus (Octavius), from a cameo in the British Museum . . . . .	687
Roman wearing toga . . . . .	492	Coins of the triumvirs. (1) Antony and Octavian; (2) Octavian and Lepidus . . . . .	700
Coin representing Jugurtha surrendering to Sulla . . . . .	505	Coin of Antony and Cleopatra . . . . .	701
Gaius Marius . . . . .	517	Agrippa, from the head in the Capitoline Museum . . . . .	706
Coin of the Italian nations join- ing in an oath of federation . . . . .	538	Bronze figure-head of a Roman galley, found near Actium . . . . .	711
Coin of the Confederates . . . . .	545	Coin of Antony and Cleopatra . . . . .	714
Coin bearing the head of Nicomedes II. of Bithynia . . . . .	558	Medal of Sallust, the historian . . . . .	715
Silver coin of Mithridates and Aristion, struck in Athens, B.C. 88 . . . . .	565	Rome in the time of Augustus . . . . .	733
Coin showing head of Jupiter and temple of Jupiter Capitolinus . . . . .	567	Gold coin of Augustus, bearing the words "Civibus ser- vateis" . . . . .	738
		Coin of Agrippa, with head of Augustus . . . . .	739

## LIST OF MAPS AND PLANS

Rome and surrounding Country . . . . .	To face page	I
Plan of Syracuse . . . . .	page	284
Plan of Carthage . . . . .	"	438
Plan of Roman Camp at Hofheim . . . . .	"	635
Italy at the beginning of the First Punic War, 264 B.C. . . . .	To face page	244
Italy in the First Century, B.C., after the Social War (91-88), and before the Battle of Actium (31) . . . . .	At the end	

## ABBREVIATIONS

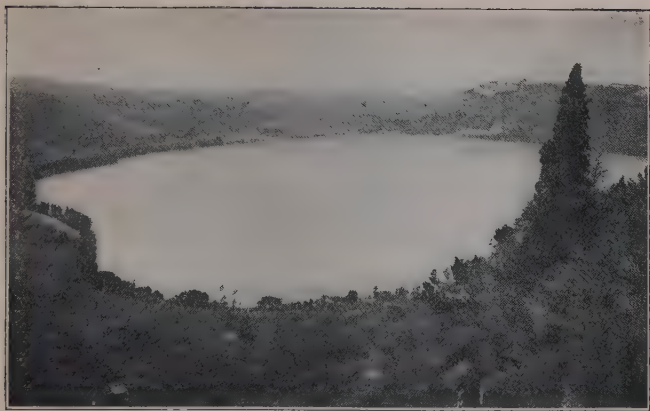
<i>B. M. C.</i> represents		British Museum Guide to the principal gold and silver Coins of the Ancients.
Head	..	B. V. Head, <i>Historia Numorum</i> , 1887.
Herzog	..	E. Herzog, <i>Geschichte und System der römischen Staatsverfassung</i> (Leipzig, 1884-91).
Ihne	..	W. Ihne, <i>History of Rome</i> (English version, 5 vols., 1871-82).
Lewis	..	Sir G. C. Lewis, <i>Credibility of Early Roman History</i> (2 vols., 1855).
Long	..	G. Long, <i>Decline of the Roman Republic</i> (5 vols., 1864-74).
Mommsen	..	Th. Mommsen, <i>History of Rome</i> (English translation by the Rev. W. P. Dickson, new edition, 5 vols., 1894).
Niebuhr	..	B. G. Niebuhr, <i>History of Rome</i> (English translation, 1842-8).
Stevenson	..	S. W. Stevenson, C. Roach Smith and F. W. Madden, <i>Dictionary of Roman Coins</i> , 1889.
Teuffel	..	W. S. Teuffel, <i>History of Roman Literature</i> (English translation by G. C. W. Warr).

A. represents	.	.	.	Aulus	M <sup>o</sup> . represents	.	.	.	Manius
Ap.	..	.	.	Appius	P.	..	.	.	Publius
C.	..	.	.	Gaius	Q.	..	.	.	Quintus
Cn.	..	.	.	Gnaeus	Ser.	..	.	.	Servius
D.	..	.	.	Decimus	Sp.	..	.	.	Spurius
L.	..	.	.	Lucius	T.	..	.	.	Titus
M.	..	.	.	Marcus	Tib.	..	.	.	Tiberius









Lake Nemi (pp. 6, 77)

# HISTORY OF ROME

## INTRODUCTION

### SECTION I

#### PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY OF ITALY

THE History of Rome is properly the history of a city, or rather a civic community, which gradually extended its sway, first over all Italy, then over all the countries bordering upon the Mediterranean Sea. It was, according to the common reckoning, nearly five centuries before the citizens of Rome became lords of Italy,<sup>1</sup> and in another century they had become the sovereign power of the civilised world.<sup>2</sup> It is difficult, therefore, in attempting a geographical sketch for the purpose of elucidating Roman History, to determine where we ought to begin and where to end. For during a long period we are hardly carried out of sight of the Capitol; and at the close of that period we are

*Relation of  
Italy to Ro-  
man History.*

<sup>1</sup> 753-264 B.C.

<sup>2</sup> 264-133 B.C.



hurried with startling rapidity into the heart of every country from the Atlantic to the mountains of Asia Minor, from the ridges of the Alps to the plains that lie beneath Mount Atlas. But since the origin and composition of the people whom we call Romans depend upon the early state and population of Italy at large, and since in course of time all Italians became Romans, it will be well to follow the usual custom, and begin with a geographical sketch of the Italian Peninsula.

This Peninsula, the central one of the three which stretch boldly forward from the southern coasts of Europe, lies nearly between the parallels of north latitude  $38^{\circ}$  and  $46^{\circ}$ . *Length of Italy.* Its length, there, measured along a meridian arc, ought to be about 630 miles. But since, unlike the other two Mediterranean Peninsulas, it runs in a direction nearly diagonal to the lines of latitude and longitude, its real LENGTH, measured from Mont Blanc to Cape Spartivento, is rather more than 700 miles.

To estimate the BREADTH of this long and singularly-shaped Peninsula, it may be conveniently divided into two parts by a line drawn across from the mouths of the Po to the northern point of Etruria. *Breadth.* Below this line the average breadth of the leg of Italy does not much exceed 100 miles. Above this line both coasts trend rapidly outwards, so that the upper portion forms an irregularly shaped figure, which lies across the top of the leg, being bounded on the north and west by the Alpine range from Illyria to the mouth of the Var, on the south by the imaginary line before drawn, together with the Gulf of Genoa, and on the east by the head of the Adriatic Sea. The length of this figure from east to west is not much less than 350 miles; while from north to south it measures, on the average, more than 120 miles.

The SURFACE of the whole Peninsula, including both the leg of Italy and the irregular figure at the top, is estimated at rather more than 90,000 square miles, or an area somewhat larger than the surface of Great Britain. *Extent of surface.* But a very large proportion of this surface is unproductive, and a great part even incapable of tillage.

The GEOGRAPHICAL features are simple. No deep gulfs and inlets are to be expected; for these are only found when mountain-chains jut out into the sea, and maintain themselves as headlands, while the lower land between is eaten out and washed away by the ceaseless action of the waves. Such phenomena are presented by Greece, and by the western coasts of Scotland, Wales, and Ireland. *Geographical features.* But in Italy there is but one mountain-chain, running with

more or less regularity down the length of the Peninsula. This chain is attached to the Alps above Genoa, and strikes in an easterly direction across the leg of Italy, till it nearly touches the Adriatic near Ariminum *The Apennines.* (*Rimini*). Here the range takes a turn to the south-east, and spreads across the Peninsula in an irregular mass of mountains, the highest of which (*il gran Sasso*) attains the height of nearly 10,000 feet. But shortly the dimensions of the chain again contract, and its elevations fall, and it runs down to Lucania almost parallel to the coast of the Adriatic. After this it forks off into two branches; one, the loftier and more rugged, running towards the toe of the Peninsula, the other of less elevation forming the heel. The low lands between these two ranges have been scooped out by the waves, and here has been formed the great Gulf of Tarentum, a vast *The coast.* expanse of sea, measuring from point to point no less than 80 miles. But except this great gulf, the coasts of the Peninsula are indented by comparatively gentle curves. On the northern side the single inequality is presented by the projecting mass of Mount Garganus, which forms with the lower coast what is now called the Gulf of Manfredonia. On the sole of the foot, below the Gulf of Tarentum, we find the Gulf of Squillace (*Sinus Scylleticus*). After passing the straits of Messina occurs the Gulf of S. Eufemia (*Sinus Vibonensis*), which is separated from that of Squillace by a neck of land less than 20 miles in breadth. A little higher up we come to a wide sweep in the coast known by the name of the Gulf of Policastro.

Then follows the most irregular part of the coast, being that which bounds the mountainous district of the centre; and it is this part which deserves particular attention from the student of Roman History. Between ancient Lucania and Cape Circello (*Circeii*) in Latium, a distance of about 120 miles, the coast-line is broken into three fine bays; the Gulf of Paestum or Salerno on the south, the Gulf of Gaëta on the north, and between them the smallest but most famous and most beautiful of the three—the Bay of Cumæ or Naples. From Cape Circello, which forms the northern horn of the Bay of Gaëta, the coast-line runs onward to Genoa, unbroken save by the headlands of Argentaro and Piombino in Tuscany. But these do not project far enough to form any recess worthy to be named. The little Bay of Spezzia, just north of Tuscany, forms a good harbour, but is otherwise not deserving of mention as a geographical feature.

The same circumstance which prevents Italy from abounding in deep bays and bold headlands also generally prevents its

coasts from being studded with ISLANDS, which are but relics of projecting mountain-chains. If we omit Sicily, which is in fact a continuation of the Peninsula, separated by a channel two or three miles broad, the islands of Italy are insignificant. Capreae (*Capri*) is a fragment of the headland that forms the southern horn of the Bay of Naples. Igilium (*Giglio*) and Ilva (*Elba*) stand in a similar relation to the headlands of Argentaro and Piombino. Prochyta (*Procida*) and Pithecusa (*Ischia*) are, like the Lipari islands, due to volcanic action. Besides these may be named Pontiae (*Ponza*), Pandataria (probably *Vendotena*) with a few more barren rocks off the bay of Gaëta, and a few even less important on the coast of Tuscany.

Except in Northern Italy, which abounds in noble RIVERS, the narrowness of the Peninsula forbids the existence of really large streams. Yet the Apennine range, which on its lower side is broken into long parallel valleys, enables the numerous torrents and rills which descend towards the south to swell into rivers of not inconsiderable size. Such especially are the Arno and the Tiber. Their waters are separated by the hills which terminate in the headlands of Argentaro and Piombino, so that the Arno flows upward, and enters the sea on the northern frontier of Tuscany, after a course of about 160 miles; while the Tiber runs in a southerly direction, receiving the waters of the Clanis (*Chiana*) from the west, and those of the Nar and Velinus from the east, till its course is abruptly turned by the Sabine hills. The entire length of its channel is about 200 miles. These two well-known rivers, with their affluents, drain most of Etruria, the Sabine country, and the Campagna of Rome.

Similar in their course, but on a smaller scale, are the Anio (*Teverone*) and the Liris (*Garigliano*). They both rise in the Aequian hills, the Anio flowing upward to swell the stream of the Tiber a little above Rome: the Liris, joined by the Trerus (*Sacco*) from the west, running southward so as to drain southern Latium and northern Campania, till it turns abruptly towards the sea, and enters it near the middle of the Bay of Gaëta, after a course of about 80 miles.

The Volturnus and the Calor run down opposite valleys from the north and south of the Samnite territory, till they join their streams on the frontier of Campania, and fall into the Bay of Gaëta only a short distance below the Liris. Both of these streams measure from their sources to their united mouth not much less than 100 miles.

The only other notable river on the southern coast is the

Silarus (*Sele*), which descends by a channel of about 60 miles from the central Apennines of Lucania into the bay of Paestum. In the foot of Italy the mountains come down so close to the sea that from the mouth of the Silarus to the lower angle of the Gulf of Tarentum the streams are but short and rapid torrents. Of these it is said that no fewer than eighty may be enumerated between Paestum and the straits of Messina. The Gulf of Tarentum receives some streams of importance. The Bradanus and Casuentus (*Basento*) enter the gulf within five miles of each other after a course of about 60 miles. The Aciris (*Agri*) is to the south of these. The Siris (*Sinno*) is notable as the scene of the first battle between Pyrrhus and the Romans. The Galesus is worth mention only as the stream upon which Tarentum stands.

The northern or Adriatic coast is broken into abrupt gorges at right angles to the main chain, and therefore has few considerable streams. The Aufidus (*Ofanto*) in Apulia, renowned in Roman history from the fact that the fatal battle of Cannae took place upon its banks, rises on the opposite side of the same range from which the Calor flows, and runs a course of rather more than 80 miles. The Sagrus (*Sangro*) stands in the same relation to the Vulturnus as the Aufidus to the Calor, and, descending from the Aequian hills through Samnium, finds its way to the sea by a nearly similar length of channel. But the most considerable river of this side is the Aternus (*Pescara*), which finds its way from the Sabine hills into a valley parallel to the main range; and being joined by a number of smaller streams, it attains a considerable volume of water before it reaches the sea at a point where the Marrucian coast abuts on that of Picenum.

The whole coast from Mount Garganus northward is ploughed by numberless torrents which descend in rapid course down steep mountain gorges. Of these we need but name the Aesis between Picenum and Umbria; the Metaurus, in Umbria, famous for the defeat of Hasdrubal; the Rubicon, which formed the boundary of Roman Italy on the northern side in the time of Caesar, as did the Macra (*Magra*) on the opposite coast.<sup>1</sup>

The limestone mountain-tract of the Apennines, which occupies the whole narrow Peninsula from the great valley of the Po downwards, is often too steep, bare, and rugged to be capable of cultivation. There are, *Plains.* however, many rich PLAINS of limited extent, among which

---

<sup>1</sup> For the vexed question of the identification of the Rubicon, see *Dict. Geog.* "RUBICO."

Campania ranks first, with many narrow but fertile vales, in which nature rewards labour with bountiful returns ; and the upland valleys afford good summer pasture for the flocks, when the vegetation of the plains is burnt up by the sun. Even in the present day, though Italy is distinctively an agricultural country, there is a great deal of available arable land which has not yet been laid under proper cultivation.

In speaking of LAKES, we must resume our two-fold division of the Peninsula. On the Alpine slopes of the great valley of the

*Lakes.* Po, the granitic and ancient limestone rocks break into vast chasms at right angles to their general direction, in which the waters of the rivers that flow downwards to join the Po accumulate and form those lakes so well known to all lovers of natural beauty—Benacus (*Lago di Garda*) formed by the waters of the Mincio, Larius (*Lago di Como*) by those of the Adda, Verbanus (*Lago Maggiore*) by those of the Ticino, not to mention the lakes of Lugano, Orta, and others, smaller indeed, but not less beautiful.

But Apennine Italy, considering the great extent of its mountain districts, does not present many considerable lakes. Nor are these formed by the accumulated waters of rivers flowing through them, like the lakes of northern Italy or Switzerland. For the most part, like the lakes of Greece, they have no visible outlet, but lose their waters partly by evaporation, partly by underground fissures and channels. Such are the Fucine lake in the Aequian hills, the celebrated lake of Trasimene in Etruria, and the “great Volsinian Mere” in the same country ; such are many smaller lakes, as the lakes of Alba, Nemi, Amsanctus,<sup>1</sup> and Avernus. These, in fact, are the craters of extinct volcanoes. Roman history contains legends which relate to the artificial tapping of these caldrons ; and some of the tunnels cut through their rocky basins still remain.<sup>2</sup>

The abundance of water which is poured over the hills is apt to accumulate in marshy swamps in the low districts towards the sea. Such is the case along the lower course of the Po, on the coast-lands of Tuscany, and in the lower part of the Campagna of Rome. Mantua, which stands a little above the junction of the Mincio with the Po, is surrounded by marshes ; and the whole coast between Venice and Ravenna is a swamp.

---

<sup>1</sup> See Virg., *Aen.*, vii. 563, *sqq.*

<sup>2</sup> See p. 127.

To keep the Po and its tributaries within their channels, embankments have been raised on either side of the stream. But these embankments caused the rivers to deposit the whole of the mud with which they are charged within their channels, and the quantity thus deposited is so great that it is necessary to raise the embankments continually. Hence, in the course of centuries, the bottoms of the rivers have been elevated considerably above the plains ; so that the streams of Lombardy in their lower course are in fact carried along huge earthen aqueducts. In time, human industry may not be equal to keep up these embankments in sufficient strength, and a deluge will ensue more fearful than those which the poet of Mantua seems to have witnessed.<sup>1</sup>

*Embankments  
in Lombardy.*

The CLIMATE of Italy, like its physical structure, is extremely different in the northern and in the southern part of the peninsula. In the valley of the Po the winters are sometimes extremely severe ; once, towards the close of the last century, all the olive-trees in that district were killed by the frost. On the south of the Apennines the climate is much milder in the winter, though in spring the winds are often very cold. Snow is rarely seen lying in the Campagna of Rome or in the neighbourhood of Naples at the present day, though in the times of the ancients it seems to have been not uncommon.<sup>2</sup>

*Climate.*

Italy is in general a healthy country. The men are active, vigorous, and well-grown ; the women, in their youth, handsome. Some districts, however, are afflicted by pestilential air (malaria), especially the lower part of Tuscany and the Campagna of Rome, while parts of Calabria also are extremely unhealthy. All the southern side of the Apennines suffers from the south-easterly wind, called the Sirocco, which comes charged with suffocating heat from Africa and Arabia.

The productions are those of the Temperate Zone in their highest perfection. Wherever there is a sufficiency of soil and water, as in the valleys leading to the plain of Lombardy, or descending to the sea from either side of the Apennines, grain of all kinds is produced in great abundance. In ancient days the plain of Lombardy, now so

*Productions.*

<sup>1</sup> " Non sic, aggeribus ruptis cum spumeus amnis  
Exiit oppositasque evicit gurgite moles,  
Fertur in arva furens cumulo, camposque per omnis  
Cum stabulis armenta tulit."

—Virg., *Aen.*, ii. 496 ; *cp. Georg.*, i. 322, *sq.*

<sup>2</sup> Lanciani, *Ruins and Excavations of Ancient Rome*, p. 8. Lewis (ii. 357) doubts the accuracy of the accounts.



highly cultivated, was thickly covered with oak forests, that furnished food to countless herds of swine. Many parts of the Apennines are still well clothed with chestnut trees, and the inhabitants of the upland valleys live on their fruit during the winter. Modern ingenuity and industry have fertilised many of the lower districts by the help of artificial irrigation.<sup>1</sup> On the southern slopes of the Apennines olives flourish, and the vine is cultivated largely in all parts of the Peninsula. For this last purpose the sunny terraces of the limestone mountains are especially suited. But want of care, in the treatment of the plant or in the manufacture of the wine, makes the wines of Italy very inferior in quality to those of France or of the Spanish Peninsula, though in ancient times the vineyards of northern Campania enjoyed a high reputation.<sup>2</sup> Every school-boy knows the names of the Massic hill, of the Falernian, Calene, and Formian vineyards. In the southern parts the date-palm is found in gardens, though this and other tropical plants are not natural to the climate, as they are in the south of the Spanish Peninsula which lies about two degrees nearer to the region of the vertical sun. The plains of Apulia were chiefly given up to pasturage—a custom which continues to the present day.

The natural beauty of Italy is too well known to need many words here. The lovers of the sublime will find no more *Beauty of magnificent mountain-passes than those which descend through the Alps to the plains of Lombardy.* scenery. In the valley of the Dora Baltea, from its source under Mont Blanc to Aosta and Ivrea, all the grandeur of Switzerland is to be found, enriched by the colours and warmth of a southern sky: the cold green and grey of the central chain here passes into gold and purple. In the same district is found the most charming lake scenery in the world, where the sunny hills and warm hues of Italy are backed by the snowy range of the towering Alps. Those who prefer rich culture may gratify their

---

<sup>1</sup> The practice of irrigation was known to antiquity, as appears from Virgil's well-known line (*Ecl.*, iii. 111):—

“Claudite iam rivos, pueri: sat prata biberunt.”

But that it was rude and imperfect appears from the beautiful description in *Georg.*, i. 106, *sqq.*:—

“Deinde satis fluvium inducit rivosque sequentis,  
Et, cum exustus ager morientibus aestuat herois,  
Ecce supercilio clivosi tramitis undam  
Elicit: illa cadens raucum per sevia murmur  
Saxa ciet, scatebrisque arentia temperat arva.”

It may, indeed, be observed that this description is partly borrowed from *Iliad*, xxi. 257, *sqq.*

<sup>2</sup> *Cp.* Mommsen, i. 241.

utmost desires in the lower vale of the Po about Lodi and Cremona, or across the Apennines in the valley of the Arno and in Campania. If we follow the coast, probably the world presents no lovelier passages than meet the traveller's eye as he skirts the Maritime Alps where they overhang the sea, cornice-like, between Nice and Genoa ; or below Campania, where the limestone of the Apennines strikes out into the sea between the bays of Naples and Salerno. The Romans, who became lords of all Italy and of the civilised world, sprang up in one of the least enviable portions of the whole Peninsula.<sup>1</sup> The attractions of modern Rome are less of nature than of association. The traveller would little care to linger on the banks of the Tiber if it were stripped of its buildings and its history.

AUTHORITIES.—See *Encycl. Brit.*, "ITALY"; *Dict. Geogr.*, "ITALIA"; Duruy, *History of Rome* (Eng. Trans.), Introduction.

## SECTION II

### EARLY POPULATION OF ITALY

IT is a common remark that mountains are the chief boundaries of countries, and that races of men are found in their purest state when they are separated by these barriers from admixture with other tribes. Italy forms an exception to this rule. It was not so much the "fatal gift of beauty," of which the poet speaks,<sup>2</sup> as the richness of its northern plain, that attracted successive tribes of invaders over the Alps. From the earliest dawn of historic knowledge, we hear of one tribe after another sweeping like waves over the Peninsula, each forcing its predecessor onward, till there arose a power strong enough to drive back the current, and bar aggression for many an age. This power was the Roman Empire, which forced the Gauls to remain on the northern side of the Apennines, and preserved Italy untouched by the foot of the foreigner for centuries. No sooner was this power weakened than the incursions again began, and the

*Constant in-  
vasions of  
Italy.*

<sup>1</sup> Cp. Mommsen, i. 57.

<sup>2</sup> Theanzas of Filicaja are well known from their version in *Childe Harold* (iv. 42):

"Italia, oh Italia! . . . that thou wert . . .  
Less lovely or more powerful," etc.



fairest provinces of the Peninsula have but lately succeeded in escaping from foreign rule.

But if the northern barriers of the Peninsula failed to check the lust of invaders, its long, straggling shape, intersected by mountains from top to bottom, materially assisted in breaking it up into a number of different nations. Except during the strength of the Roman Empire, Italy has, till recent times, been parcelled out into a number of small states. In the earliest times it was shared among a number of tribes differing in race and language. Great pains have been taken to investigate the origin and character of those primæval nations. But some of the details still remain uncertain, and it is not our purpose to dwell on intricate questions of this kind. We will here only give results so far as they seem to be established.

It is well known that it was not till towards the closing years of the Republic that the name of Italy was employed by the ancients as we now employ it, to designate the whole Peninsula from the Alps to the Straits of Messina. The term *Italia*, borrowed from the name of a primæval tribe who occupied the southern portion of the land,<sup>1</sup> was gradually adopted as a generic title in the same obscure manner in which most of the countries of Europe, or (we may say) the continents of the world, have received their appellations. In the remotest times the name only included Oenotria proper (Lower Calabria);<sup>2</sup> from these narrow limits it gradually spread upwards, till about the time of the Punic Wars its northern boundary, though hard to ascertain in detail, seems to have followed the course of the Aesis (just north of Ancona) on the east, and of the Arno on the west; by the time of Caesar the Rubicon and the Macra had taken the places of the Aesis and the Arno respectively.<sup>3</sup>

When we speak of Italy, therefore, in the Roman sense of the word, we must dismiss from our thoughts all that fertile country which was at Rome entitled the provincial district of Gallia Cisalpina and Liguria, and which is nearly equivalent to the territory now included in the Compartments of Piedmont, Lombardy, Venetia, and Emilia.

But under Roman rule even this narrower Italy wanted that

<sup>1</sup> *Italos* is said to have been the same as *vitulus*, so that *Italy* might mean *cattle land*. Samnite coins struck during the Social War bear the inscription *Vitelu* for *Italia*.

<sup>2</sup> Properly only the toe of Italy, from the Bay of Squillace to that of S. Eu'emia; *Arist., Pol., vii. (iv.) 10.*

<sup>3</sup> See Note A. p. 15.

unity of race and language which we are now accustomed to attribute to the name. Within the boundaries just indicated there were at least four distinct races, *Races inhabiting Italia.* some, no doubt, more widely separated, but all marked by strong national characteristics. These were the Iapygians, the Italians proper, the Etruscans, and the Greeks.

Some of the tribes in southern Italy are generally admitted to be separable from the other inhabitants of the Peninsula. Their names are of a half-Hellenic character. Such were, in the heel of Italy, the Daunians and Peucetians, *Iapygians and Messapians.* (reputed to be of Illyrian origin), the Messapians, the Iapygians (compare the Iapydes in Illyria), and the Sallentines (whose name recalls the town of Salluntum in Dalmatia); to the south of the Gulf of Tarentum, the Chonians (Chaonians are found in Epirus); and in the toe, the Oenotrians, who once gave name to all southern Italy.<sup>1</sup> Mommsen holds these tribes to be the remnants of the oldest Aryan inhabitants of Italy, who had been gradually pushed towards the south by the "Italian" races. But Helbig is of opinion that they represent a later immigration, which came in either by land from the north along the east coast of Italy, or direct by sea from the opposite coast of northern Greece, the latter view being perhaps more probable. Recent researches are tending to show that these tribes are cognate to those which peopled the shores of Epirus and Greece; but it is better, in the present uncertain state of our knowledge, to call them by the name of IAPYGIANS than by that of Pelasgians, which is in itself somewhat ambiguous.<sup>2</sup>

The ITALIAN races proper spoke languages which, though they varied considerably in detail, show a close *The "Italian" races.* relationship to each other. They are nearly allied to the Greek, and, according to some philologists, still more nearly to the Celtic dialects.

The UMBRIANS are held to have been the oldest of the Italian races.<sup>3</sup> The Umbrians proper were in historical times confined within a scanty territory between the Rubicon, the *(1) The Umbrians.* Aesis, and the Tiber, while in the fourth century B.C. they lost the sea coast to the Senones, a Gallic tribe. But at one time they possessed dominion over great part of central Italy. Inscriptions in their language remain which show that they spoke a tongue not alien to the Latin.

The language of the VOLSCIANS seems to have been very

<sup>1</sup> Virgil, *Aen.*, i. 532.

<sup>2</sup> See *Hermes*, xi. 257; *The Student's Greece*, p. 13.

<sup>3</sup> Pliny, *N.H.*, iii. 19.

like that of the Umbrians, and it survived long after the political independence of the Volscians had been lost. With  
(2) *The* them should probably be classed the Auruncans or  
*Volscians.* Ausonians of lower Latium, who once gave name to central Italy,<sup>1</sup> and perhaps also the AEQUIANS and HERNICANS.

We come next to the SABINES, who are said by tradition to have been the progenitors of the Picenians, Vestinians, Marsians,  
(3) *The* Marrucinians, and Pelignians. They seem to have  
*Sabines.* been a very ancient people, who descended from the mountains near the sources of the Aternus and the Velinus to the plains between Umbria and Latium, settling very near Rome, on which they are supposed to have exercised great influence in early times. Tradition calls them a branch of the Umbrians, and the evidence of language is in favour of treating them as an intermediate link between the Umbrians and the Sabellians.

Of the SABELLIAN races the most important branch were the Samnites. In their mountains and in Campania the "Oscan"  
(4) *The* language (spoken by the Samnites) was preserved  
*Sabellians.* to a late period in Roman history, and inscriptions still remain, which show a strong affinity with Latin.<sup>2</sup> Pushing gradually along the central range of the Apennines, these mountaineers penetrated downwards towards the Gulf of Tarentum; and as their population became too dense to find support in their native hills, bands of warrior youths issued forth to settle in the richer plains below. There they mingled with the nations of the south and west, and formed new tribes, known by the names of Apulians, Lucanians, and Campanians. These more recent tribes, in turn, threatened the great Greek colonies on the coast, of which we shall speak presently.

We now come to the ETRUSCANS, the most singular people of the Peninsula. This people called themselves Rasena, or  
*The* Rasenna—a name that reminds us (if both forms  
*Etruscans.* are correct) of the Etruscan surnames Porsena, Vibenna, Sisenna. At one time they possessed not only the country known to the Romans as Etruria (that is, the country

<sup>1</sup> Virgil, *Aen.*, x. 54, etc. For their identity, see Niebuhr, *Hist.*, i. 69. Aristotle (*l.c.*) says that the Opicans were formerly called Ausones; by Opicans he, in common with many other Greek writers, means Italians generally (Schwegler, *R.G.*, i. 182), a usage which is explained by Mommsen (i. 168) as due to the fact that Cumae was the oldest Greek settlement in Italy, and that the "Opici" (see Note B., p. 16) were consequently the first Italian race with which the Greeks came into contact.

<sup>2</sup> See Note B., p. 16.

bounded by the Macra, the central Apennine ridge, and the Tiber), but also occupied a large portion of Liguria and Cisalpine Gaul;<sup>1</sup> and they had also settlements in Campania.<sup>2</sup> In early times they possessed a powerful navy, and in the primitive Greek legends Tyrrhenians are represented as infesting the Mediterranean with their piratical galleys.<sup>3</sup> They seem to have been driven out of their Trans-Apennine possession by early invasions of the Gauls; and their naval power never recovered the blow which it received in the year 474 B.C., when Hiero, king of Syracuse, defeated their navy, combined with that of Carthage, off the coast of Cumæ.

But who this people were, or whence they came, baffles conjecture. One well-known legend represents them as Lydians, who fled by sea from Asia Minor to avoid the terrible presence of famine. Another indicates that they came down over the Alps; their name, Rasena, may be connected with Rhaetia, and the Rhaetians spoke a corrupt form of Etruscan in the time of Livy. On the former supposition, Etruria was their earliest settlement, and, pushing northward, they conquered the plain of the Po; on the latter, they first took possession of this fertile plain, and then spread southward over the Apennines.

Their language, if it could be interpreted, might help to solve the riddle. But though we have numerous inscriptions in their tombs, though the characters in which these inscriptions are written bear close affinity to the letters of the Greek and Roman alphabets, though names of Italian and Greek origin have been discovered in them, yet the native tongue of this remarkable people has as yet baffled the deftest efforts of philology.

Of the Greek settlements that studded the coast of Lower Italy, and gave to that district the name of Magna Græcia, little need here be said. Most of them were not planted till after the foundation of Rome. Many of them, *The Greeks.* indeed, attained to great power and splendour; and the native population of the south became their subjects or their serfs. Sybaris alone, in the course of two centuries, is said to have

<sup>1</sup> Allusion is made to this in Virgil (*Æn.*, v. 198-206), where the Etruscan chief Ocnus, the son of *Manto*, is said to have founded *Mantua* ("muros matrisque dedit tibi, *Mantua*, nomen"), and to have brought his troops from the Lago di Garda.

<sup>2</sup> Conway, *Italic Dialects*, 99, 459.

<sup>3</sup> See the pretty Hymn to Dionysos, attributed to Homer, in which Tyrrhenian pirates take the god prisoner, and are punished in a strange fashion for their audacity. The names Tyrrhenian and Tuscan (Etruscan) are the same, though it is of course possible that this story may not refer to the Italian Etruscans.

become mistress of four nations and twenty-five towns, and to have been able to raise a civic force of 300,000 men. Croton, her rival, was even larger in extent. Greek cities appear as far north as Campania, where Naples still preserves in a corrupt form her Hellenic name Neapolis. The Greek remains discovered at Canusium (*Canosa*), in the heart of Apulia, attest the extent of the Hellenic dominion. But the Greeks seem to have held aloof from mixture with the native Italians, whom they considered as barbarians. Rome is hardly mentioned by any Greek writer before the time of Philip of Macedon (about 360 B.C.).<sup>1</sup>

What, then, is the relation of the LATINS to these various nations? From the foregoing sketch it will appear that Latium

*Relation of the  
Latins to the  
other nations  
of Italy. The  
Latins not a  
mixed national-  
ity.*

formed a kind of focus in which all the different races that in past centuries had been thronging into Italy converged. The Etruscans bordered on Latium to the west; the Sabines, with the Umbrians behind them, to the north; the Aequians and

Volscians, with the Samnites behind them, to the north-east and east. But there is no reason to suppose that the LATINS, however much they may have been influenced by their neighbours at different times, were ultimately a mixed nationality.

(1) Tradition can only give us very uncertain help in this matter. It reaches us in the shape, not of genuine national legends, but of a composite structure, arranged by the antiquaries of the last century of the Republic (notably Varro) in such a way as to smooth over and conceal inconsistencies, and borrowed from them, not always intelligently, by writers like Dionysius of Halicarnassus. Even in its final form it is full of contradictions, and it may therefore be neglected.

(2) At one time it was thought that Latin was a mixed language, composed of a Greek or "Pelasgian," and a non-Greek or "Oscan" element. But this hypothesis is now generally given up. As regards the former element, it is true that Latin belongs to the Indo-Germanic group of languages to which Greek also belongs, but it is doubtful whether Latin is more closely related to Greek than to Teutonic or Celtic; in fact, many philologists are now of opinion that Latin is nearer to Celtic than to Greek, and this view is perhaps easier to understand geographically. As regards the "non-Greek element," Latin and Oscan belong to the same subdivision of the Indo-Germanic languages, and the one is no more and no less "non-Greek" than the other.

---

<sup>1</sup> See Mommsen, ii. 109, 112.

In the absence, then, of any reliable tradition, we must follow the evidence of language, and treat the LATINS as one of the "Italian" races, on a level with the Umbrians, the Sabines, and the Sabellians.

*The Latins  
one of the  
Italian races.*

We will now pass on to the legends in which is preserved the early History of Rome. It may be observed that no people is so rich in legendary history as the Romans. Their patriotic pride preserved the stories of their ancestors from generation to generation till they were, so to say, embalmed by poets who lived in the times of the Punic Wars. These poems indeed have, with the exception of a few fragments, perished; but we learn from Cicero how highly they were esteemed in his day, and in the epic poem of Virgil, with the scarcely less poetic prose of Livy's early history, they still live. From these great writers chiefly are derived those famous legends which are now to be recounted for the hundredth time.

*Roman  
legends.*

#### NOTE A.—THE NORTHERN BOUNDARY OF ITALY

(1) EAST SIDE.—The Aesis, which was in old times the boundary between Picenum and the land of the Senones (Livy, v. 35) and under the Empire between the fifth and sixth Augustan "Regions," was at one time considered the boundary of Italy proper, and was afterwards superseded in this capacity by the Rubico. See Strabo (v. 217, 227) and Pliny (*N.H.*, iii. 19, 20). We cannot say for certain when the latter change was made, though we have good reason for knowing that the Rubico was the boundary in Caesar's time. The most plausible conjecture is that of Mommsen (iv. 122), who connects it with Sulla, for reasons which are striking if not convincing. Others have thought that the frontier may have been carried forward at the time of the destruction of the Senones in 283 B.C., but it is not easy to see how, on this view, the Aesis would ever have come to be spoken of as a boundary of Italy, since the conception of a united Italy could hardly have arisen before the time at which this destruction took place (*cf.* Mommsen, ii. 59).

(2) WEST SIDE.—The Macra is treated as the boundary between Etruria and Liguria by Pliny (*N.H.*, iii. 7) and Strabo (v. 222). But Livy shows, by his account of the contests with the Apuani (xxxix. 32, xl. 41), that this would not be true of the year 180 B.C., and some striking evidence has been adduced to show that the Arnus was at one time treated as a boundary (Nissen, *Italische Landeskunde*, i. 71). We may therefore suppose that the Aesis and Arnus represent the earlier, the Rubico and Macra the later frontier.

The country between the northern boundary of "Italia" and the Alps was inhabited by the Ligurians on the west, the Veneti on the east, and the Gauls. For the two former see *Encycl. Brit.*, "ITALY";



Schwegler, *R.G.*, i. 170; Mommsen, i. 143, 156; Boyd Dawkins, *Early Man in Britain*, p. 322. For the Gauls see chap. xiii.

#### NOTE B.—THE OSCANS (OPICANS)

The language spoken by the Samnites is called Oscan by ancient writers, although the Samnites themselves are never called Oscans. On the other hand, we do certainly hear of the Oscans as a people (e.g. Arist., *Pol.* vii. (iv.) 10; Dionys., i. 72; Pliny, *N.H.*, xxix. 7). It has therefore been suggested that the Oscans may not have belonged to the "Italian" stock, but may have been an older nation who were subdued in Campania by the invading Samnites, and whose language the Samnites then adopted, just as the Lombards adopted Latin (Schwegler, *R.G.*, i. 183). But the Oscan language, so far as it is known to us, appears to be an organic unity, and evidently belongs to the same family as the Latin and the Umbrian, so that we should still have to suppose that the Oscans, if a separate tribe, were at least nearly related to the Samnites. This is possible, but there appears in any case to be no sufficient reason for separating the Oscans from the "Italian" races.

The group of peoples whom we have described above as Sabellian is often called Oscan, but this seems undesirable in view of our small amount of knowledge about the Oscans as a people. For a justification of the term Sabellian in this sense (which is in accordance with the usage of Niebuhr), see *Classical Review*, xi. 339, xii. 305.

AUTHORITIES.—Conway, *Italic Dialects*, (cp. his *Verner's Law in Italy*, p. 54); *Encycl. Brit.*, "ITALY, ETRURIA, EUGUBINE TABLES"; Schwegler, *Römische Geschichte*, b. 3, 4; Mommsen, b. i. ch. ii., iii., viii., ix. For the Greeks in Italy, see *The Student's Greece*, b. ii. ch. xii.; Holm, *History of Greece* (Eng. Trans.) i. 300. For the Etruscans, K. O. Müller, *die Etrusker* (new edition by Deecke); and the works of W. Deecke and Carl Pauli.



The Wolf of the Capitol.

## BOOK I

# ROME UNDER THE KINGS

(B.C. 753?—510?)

---

### CHAPTER I

#### ORIGIN OF RÔME—ROMULUS AND NUMA

IN the last centuries of the Republic, it was the pride of the Romans to believe that they were descended from the ancient nations to the east of the Mediterranean Sea, and to trace a connection with Greece and Troy. The legends regarding the foundation of Rome have reached us in very many different forms, and if there is any real historical fact underlying them, it is impossible now to discover it:<sup>1</sup> but their importance does not depend upon their truth as

*Legends about  
the foundation  
of Rome.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Some historians actually omitted all mention of Aeneas (see Lewis, i. 300). For the date of the general acceptance at Rome of the story of Aeneas, see Lewis, i. 341.



history. With this preface we proceed to the legends themselves.

Virgil has told the tale of the flight of Aeneas, and every one knows how he escaped from the flames of Troy, bearing his father Anchises on his shoulders, and leading his  
*Aeneas.* boy Ascanius by the hand, to seek a new home in Hesperia, the Land of Promise in the West. His piety or reverential affection<sup>1</sup> was not confined to his own family. He rescued also the gods of his father's household from the flames, and he was rewarded by the favour of Heaven. Mercury, or Hermes, guided his steps from the burning city; the star of his mother Venus led him safely to the shores of the western land.

Nor did the protection of the gods desert him when he had reached the long-sought shores of Italy. Omens and signs told him that he had reached the promised land, and that Latium was to be the cradle of the new people which was to spring from the loins of the Trojan settlers. A white sow farrowed near the coast, and gave birth to the prodigious number of thirty young.

But before the Trojans could obtain a fixed settlement, it was needful to come to terms with the people of the country. These  
*Lavinium.* were the Aborigines, or children of the soil.<sup>2</sup> Their king's name was Latinus, and their chief city Laurentum. They treated the newcomers kindly, and Latinus bestowed his daughter Lavinia in marriage on Aeneas, who therefore gave to the town, which he built on the spot where the white sow had farrowed, the name of Lavinium.

This agreement, however, had not come to pass without bloodshed. Lavinia had been betrothed to Turnus, the young chief of the Rutulians of Ardea. He, wrathful with disappointment, made war upon the strangers. Aeneas sought the aid of Evander, the Arcadian,<sup>3</sup> who had founded a city on the Palatine Hill, which afterwards became Rome: he was also befriended by the Etruscans of Caeré, who had revolted against their barbarous chief Mezentius, "the despiser of the gods." The Trojans prevailed, and Turnus fell. But three years after, a new war arose,<sup>4</sup> and Aeneas disappeared amid the waters of Numicius, a small river between Lavinium and Ardea. It was said that the gods had taken him, and a temple was raised to

<sup>1</sup> Lat. *pietas*, a feeling of reverence and love towards parents and gods.

<sup>2</sup> Some spell the word Aberrigines, as if from *aberro*, to wander away. See Lewis, i. 279.

<sup>3</sup> Lewis, i. 283.

<sup>4</sup> Virg., *Aen.*, i. 263-66.

him on the spot, in which he was worshipped under the name of Pater Indiges, or the "God of the Country."<sup>1</sup>

Ascanius, who was also called Iulus, from the *youthful down* (ῥουλος) upon his cheeks, was warned by signs from Heaven that Lavinium was not to be the abiding-place of the new people. After thirty years, therefore, *Ascanius.* as foretold by the sign of the thirty young swine, he removed to the ridge of a hill, about fifteen miles to the south-east of Rome, and here he built a new city, which was afterwards famous under the name of Alba Longa, *Alba Longa.* or "the Long White City."<sup>2</sup> In time this city became the capital of Latium, and all the Latin tribes came up to worship at the Temple of Jupiter Latiaris on the top of the Alban Mount. Their chiefs also used to meet for the discussion of matters of state in the sacred grove by the spring of Ferentina on the side of the same mount.

Ascanius was succeeded by a son of Aeneas and Lavinia, named Silvius,<sup>3</sup> and the eleven kings of Alba who succeeded all bore the surname of Silvius.

The last of these kings, named Procas, left two sons, Numitor and Amulius. Amulius, the younger, seized the inheritance of his elder brother Numitor, who coveted not the crown. But he had a son and a daughter who *Rhea Silvia.* might hereafter be troublesome to the usurper. The son was put to death by Amulius; the daughter, Rhea Silvia by name,<sup>4</sup> was dedicated to the service of Vesta, which compelled her to live and die unwedded. But destiny is stronger than the will of man. The sacred virgin of Vesta was found to be with child by the god Mars, and she bore two boys at a birth. *Romulus and Remus.* The punishment of a vestal virgin for incontinence was dreadful: the law ordained that she should be buried alive. Amulius spared not his niece. The twins he ordered to be thrown into the Tiber. It chanced that at that time the river had overflowed its banks, and spread shallow pools over the ground afterwards famous as the Roman Forum. The shoal water shrank before the fated founder of Rome,

<sup>1</sup> Hence Virgil (*Aen.*, vii. 242) speaks of *vada sacra Numici*, although he ends his poem with the death of Turnus. *Cp.* Lewis, i. 339.

<sup>2</sup> *Aen.*, i. 267. In *Aen.*, viii. 47, the thirty years are reckoned from Aeneas' arrival.

<sup>3</sup> *Aen.*, vi. 761.

<sup>4</sup> Commonly identified with Ilia, though Ennius made Ilia the daughter of Aeneas. Here is a double legend—one in which the vestal priestess was sister of Iulus, one in which she was fourteen generations in descent from him (*cp.* Lewis, i. 407).

and the twins were left on dry ground near a wild fig-tree, which was long preserved with careful reverence under the



Romano-Campanian coin of third century. Head of Heracles and wolf with twins.

name of the Ficus Ruminalis. Here they grew to boyhood, being suckled by a wolf, and fed by the care of a woodpecker, creatures held sacred among the Latins.<sup>1</sup> Thus marvellously preserved, they were found by Faustulus, the herdsman of Amulius, who took them home to his wife, Acca Laurentia. So the twins grew up with the herdsman's children in his cot upon the Palatine, and were known by the names of Romulus and Remus.

The twins were distinguished among the young shepherds by their nobler form and bolder spirit. It chanced that the herdsman of Amulius, who dwelt on the Palatine Hill, were at feud with the herdsman of Numitor, who fed their flocks upon the Aventine. The latter took Remus prisoner by an ambush and brought him before Numitor, their master, who admired the stately figure of the youth and recognised in his features that which called back to his mind the memory of his unhappy daughter. Soon after, Romulus came up to ransom his brother, and his appearance confirmed Numitor in his suspicions. The accounts given of them by their foster-father Faustulus revealed to the youths their true descent. With prompt energy they attacked Amulius in his palace at Alba, and slew him there. Numitor, their good grandsire, was restored to the throne of the Silvii, his fathers.

Three hundred years had now passed since the foundation of

<sup>1</sup> "Lacte quis infantes nescit crevisse ferino,  
Et picum expositis saepe tulisse cibos?"

Ovid, *Fasti*, iii. 53.—Picus (the woodpecker) was a Latin god, being son of Saturnus, father of Faunus, and grandsire of Latinus.—*Aen.*, vii. 45-49.

Alba; and the twins determined to quit the city of Ascanius and build a new town on the bank of the Tiber, where they had been bred.<sup>1</sup> Now, as they knew not which of the two was the elder, a dispute arose with respect to the place and name of the projected city. Romulus wished to build upon the Palatine, Remus on the Aventine. To settle this question, they resolved to appeal to the gods. They were to watch, each on his chosen hill, from sunrise to sunset, and from sunset again to sunrise, and whoever was favoured by an ominous flight of birds was to be the founder. Remus first saw six vultures on his left. But at the moment that his messenger announced this success to Romulus, there appeared to Romulus a flight of twelve. Which, then, had the advantage—Remus who saw first, or Romulus who saw most? The quarrel was renewed, and in the fray Remus was slain by a chance blow.

Another legend says that Romulus began to build the city on the Palatine, when Remus scornfully leapt over the narrow trench, and Romulus in wrath slew him. Another attributes the fatal act not to the brother, but to Celer, the friend of Romulus.<sup>2</sup> And lastly, according to another legend still, there were two cities—Rome built by Romulus on the Palatine, and Remoria built by Remus, not on the Aventine, but on a hill three miles south of Rome.<sup>3</sup>

Young ROMULUS was now left alone to build his city on the Palatine. He carried a wall along the edge of the hill all round, leaving a space inside and outside the walls clear of all buildings. This space was accounted holy ground, and was called the *pomerium*; and the beginning of the great city of the Tiber was called *Roma quadrata*, or Square Rome, to distinguish it from that which enclosed all the seven hills within the circuit of its walls.

The common date for the foundation of Rome is 753 before the Christian era.<sup>4</sup>

The walls were built and the city ready, but men were

<sup>1</sup> *Aen.*, i. 272. Aeneas reigned 3 years; Ascanius  $3 \times 10 = 30$ ; the Silvii  $3 \times 100 = 300$ . The number 3 entered also into many of the Roman institutions. See below, pp. 25, 36.

<sup>2</sup> Ovid, *Fasti*, iv. 809, *sqq.*

<sup>3</sup> It will be observed that these legends are ignorant of the legend of Evander's city upon the Palatine, which is adopted by Virgil (*Aen.*, viii. 51).

<sup>4</sup> This is the date of Varro, followed by most authors. Cato placed it 432 years after the fall of Troy, *i.e.* in 752 B.C., Polybius in 751 B.C. See Dionys., i. 74; Niebuhr, *History*, i. 267.

wanting to people it. To supply this want Romulus set apart a place as a sanctuary or refuge for those who had shed blood, for slaves who had run away from their masters, and the like. Hence the city of Romulus, or a part of it, was called by the Greek name of the Asylum.

But though by this means men were supplied in plenty, they lacked wives, and the neighbouring cities held them unworthy to receive their daughters in marriage. Romulus therefore determined to compass by foul means what he could not obtain by fair. He invited the people of the Sabines and neighbouring Latin towns to witness the Consualia, or games to be celebrated in honour of the god Consus, and when they were intent upon the show, a number of Roman youths rushed in and seized all the marriageable maidens on whom they could lay hands. This was the famous Rape of the Sabine Women.<sup>1</sup>

The kindness of their Roman husbands soon reconciled the women, thus strangely wedded, to their lot : but their parents and kinsfolk took up arms to avenge the insult they had received. First came the men of Caenina, Crustumerium, and Antemnae; but Romulus defeated them all, and slew Acron, chief of the men of Caenina, in single combat, and offered up his arms as a trophy to Jupiter Feretrius. Trophies thus won by the leader of one army from the leader of the enemy were called *spolia opima*, and were only gained on two other occasions in the whole course of Roman history.

The war with the Sabines of Cures was more serious. They came with a large force under their chief, Titus Tatius by name, and advanced to the foot of what was then called the Saturnian Hill, the same that afterwards became famous under the name of the Capitoline. On the southern portion of this hill Romulus had made a citadel, which he committed to the care of his faithful follower Tarpeius. But Tarpeius had a daughter, the fair Tarpeia, less faithful than her sire, and she promised to admit the Sabines into the citadel "if they would give her what they wore upon their left arms," by which she meant their golden armlets. She opened the gates, but the Sabine soldiers threw upon her the heavy shields which they also "wore upon their left arms," and she was crushed to death—a meet reward for treachery.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Virg., *Aen.*, viii. 635.

<sup>2</sup> Hence, it is said, the hill received the name of the Tarpeian Rock. For other instances of a merely verbal fulfilment of a promise, see Lewis, i. 438.

The Romans and Sabines now lay over against each other, the former on the Palatine, the latter on the Saturnian Hill, with a swampy valley between them, the same in which the twins had been cast ashore, the same *Intervention of Janus.* which afterwards became so famous as the Forum. Here they fought day by day. Once the Sabines had forced their way up to the very *pomerium* of the Palatine, when, behold! the gates burst open, and the god Janus poured forth a flood of water and swept away the foe.

Another time, Mettus Curtius, a brave Sabine, forced his horse through the swamp, and pressed the Romans hard. Romulus invoked the aid of Jupiter Stator, or the *Mettus Curtius.* Stayer of Flight, and rallied his Romans.<sup>1</sup> Still the battle raged fiercely when the Sabine women, who were the cause of the war, rushed down from the Palatine, with dishevelled hair, and threw themselves between their Roman husbands and their Sabine kinsmen. Then a peace was *The Matronalia.* made; and in memory of the service done by the Sabine matrons, a festival called the Matronalia was celebrated on the Calends of March, at that time the first day of the new year.<sup>2</sup>

By the peace then made it was agreed that the people of Rome and Cures should form one community. Romulus and his Romans were to continue in possession of the Palatine Hill, while Titus and his Sabines were to *Joint rule of Romulus and Titus Tatius.* occupy the Quirinal.<sup>3</sup> The Saturnian also was left in possession of the Sabines. The two kings were to retain joint authority, and to debate on matters concerning the whole community: the burgesses of both nations were to assemble at the north-west corner of the valley which afterwards became the Forum, whence this place was called the Comitium, or Meeting-place. Moreover, Romulus assumed the Sabine name of Quirinus,<sup>4</sup> and all the burgesses, or citizens, were called by the Sabine title of Quirites, or Men of the Spear,<sup>5</sup> facts which plainly prove that in the union the Sabines had the lion's share of the spoil.

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* Livy, x. 37; Ihne, i. 11.

<sup>2</sup> Therefore Horace amuses himself with the wonder which his friends would feel at seeing him, a *bachelor*, preparing for festivities on the day of the *matrons'* fast:—

“*Martiis caelebs quid agam Kalendis,*” etc.—*Od.*, iii. 8. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Ovid, *Fasti*, vi. 217.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, vi. 93.

<sup>5</sup> From *Curis*, Sabine for a *spear*. Others derived these names from the town of Cures. Ovid (*Fasti*, ii. 477, 480) notes both derivations. See Mommsen, i. 69, 90.



At this time the Etruscans were powerful by land and sea. They had, as the legend relates, taken part in the war between *Caeles* Aeneas and the Rutu'ians ; and another legend *Vibenna.* mentions that Caeles Vibenna, one of their chiefs, had settled on the hill which lies to the south-east of the Palatine, and that from him this hill received the name of Caelian. This Caeles is said to have assisted Romulus in his war against the Sabines, and when peace was made his followers were allowed to become members of the new community. Thus four of the seven hills were combined into one city, the Palatine, Quirinal, and Caelian, with the Saturnian for the Citadel.<sup>1</sup>

Not long after the union, Titus Tatius, the Sabine king, was killed by the Latins, while sacrificing at Lavinium, in revenge *Death of Titus* for certain injuries which they had received from *Tatius.* some of his Sabine compatriots. Romulus now resumed the sole sovereignty, and ruled without a colleague. He is said to have reigned in all seven-and-thirty years, when *Death of* he came to a sudden and unexpected end. It *Romulus.* chanced, says the legend, that he was reviewing his army on the Field of Mars by the Goat's Pool, when there arose a fearful storm, and the darkness was so thick that no man could see his neighbour. When it cleared off, the king had disappeared. But it was revealed that he had been carried away in the chariot of his father Mars ;<sup>2</sup> and shortly after, one Julius Proculus related that, as he was returning from Alba, Romulus, the king, had appeared to him in celestial form, and told him that hereafter the people of Rome were to regard him as their guardian god jointly with Mars, and were to worship him by his Sabine name of Quirinus.

But in later days this legend seemed too marvellous, and a new one was adopted. It was said that the chief men—the Sabine nobles, we may presume—had murdered him in the confusion of the storm, had carried away his body piecemeal

---

<sup>1</sup> The "seven hills" of Rome are generally considered to include these four, together with the Aventine, Esquiline, and Viminal. This list is not given by any ancient author ; and we must bear in mind that the "seven hills" originally meant something very different (probably the Palatine, Cermalus, Velia, the three summits of the Esquiline, and the Subura) ; *cp.* Mommsen, i. 63, 139. But it would be pedantic to cease to speak of the "seven hills" in the more common sense.

<sup>2</sup> ——"Quirinus  
Martis equis Acheronta fugit."—Hor., *Od.*, iii. 3. 15.



under their gowns, and then had invented the miraculous story to conceal their crime.

To Romulus are attributed all the early institutions of Rome, social, political and military. *Institutions of Romulus.*

(1) To begin with the social regulations. The whole population were divided into two classes, the burgesses or citizens on the one hand, and on the other their clients or dependants. The burgesses were called patrons in relation to their clients. These patrons were expected, by law or custom, to defend their clients from all wrong or oppression on the part of others, while the clients were bound to render certain services to their patrons ; so that the relation of patron and client resembled that of Lord and Vassal in the feudal times, or that of Chief and Clansman in the Highlands of Scotland. The burgesses engrossed all political rights, and they alone made up what was at this time the *Populus Romanus* or Body Politic of Rome. The clients were at the mercy of their patrons, and had as yet no place in the state. *(1) Social—Patrons and Clients.*

(2) By the political institutions of Romulus the burgesses were formed into three tribes<sup>1</sup> — the Ramnes or Romans of Romulus, the Tities or Sabines of Titus, the Luceres or Etruscans of Caeles, who was a Lucumo, or nobleman, in his own Etruscan city. Then Romulus subdivided each Tribe into ten Curiae, and each Curia had a chief officer called its Curio, and a separate priest called its Flamen Curialis. In all, therefore, there were thirty Curiae, and they received names after thirty of the Sabine women who had brought about the union of the nations. The burgesses used to meet according to their Curiae in the Comitium to vote on all matters of state which the king was bound to lay before them, and their assembly was called the *COMITIA CURIATA*, or Assembly of the Curies, and every matter was decided by the majority of Curiae that voted for or against it. No law could be made except with their consent. Nor was the sovereign power of the king considered legally established till it had been conferred by a curiate law. By the sovereign power (*imperium*) so conferred, the king held chief command in war, and was supreme judge in all matters of life and death, and in token thereof he was attended by twelve *(2) Political—The Tribes and Curies. The Comitia Curiata.*

<sup>1</sup> The word *tribus* itself originally meant a *third part*. Compare the English words *Riding* (*Thriding*) and *Quarter*. The meanings of *Luceres* and of *Lucumo* are quite uncertain ; the statement of Festus (p. 120 M.) that *Lucumo* meant an *inspired person*, has not yet been confirmed from Etruscan sources.

lictors bearing bundles of rods with sharp axes projecting from the middle of them (*fascēs*).

Besides this large Assembly, in which all burgesses were entitled to vote, each in his own Curia, there was a select body for advising the king, called the SENATE or

*The Senate.*

Council of Elders. This consisted at first of 100 members; but when the Sabines were joined to the Romans, 100 more were added, so that the whole number consisted of 200.<sup>1</sup>

(3) For military purposes each Tribe was ordered to furnish 1000 men on foot and 100 on horseback, so that the army of the united burgesses consisted of 3000 foot and 300 horse, and was called by the name of "legion." The 300 horsemen were the noblest young men of the military age, and also served as a body-guard to the king. The horsemen of each Tribe were called a Century, and the three Centuries were known by the same names as their Tribes—Ramnes, Tities, and Luceres. The whole squadron was called by the joint name of Celeres, and was placed under three divisional leaders (*tribuni celerum*), while the foot-soldiers were commanded by three *tribuni militum*.

Romulus had left the earth, and there was no king at Rome. The Senators took the government into their own hands. For this purpose the whole Senate was divided into

*Interregnum.*

tens; each ten was called a Decuria, and the chief of each Decuria a Decurion. Every Decurion, with his nine compeers, held the sovereign power for five days. The Decurions, therefore, were called Inter-reges or Between-kings, and the time during which they ruled was an Interregnum.

When this state of things had continued for a year, the burgesses imperiously demanded that they should have a king.

The Senate yielded, and a Sabine named NUMA POMPILIUS was chosen, known as a just and holy man, famous for his wisdom in all matters of right and religion. He was elected by the Curies in their assembly, and himself proposed the law whereby he was invested with sovereign power.<sup>2</sup> His peaceful reign lasted for three-and-forty years, after which he was buried with the books of his laws on Mount Janiculum.<sup>3</sup>

*Numa  
Pompilius,  
the author of  
Roman  
religious  
institutions.*

As Romulus the Roman was held to be the framer of all

<sup>1</sup> See Ihne, i. 23, for various traditions as to the original numbers of the Senate.

<sup>2</sup> Cic., *Rep.*, ii. 13.

<sup>3</sup> Hor., *Od.*, i. 12. 33; Virg., *Aen.*, vi. 809; Ovid, *Fasti*, iii. 277; *Met.*, xv. 482.

regulations, social, political, and military, so Numa the Sabine, is the reputed author of all the religious and ecclesiastical institutions of Rome.<sup>1</sup>

According to the legend, he was instructed in all these things by Egeria, a Muse or (as the Latins called her) a Camena. To her sacred grove he was admitted, and even became her spouse. By her counsel he surprised the gods Picus and Faunus in their retreat under the Aventine, and kept them in duress till they had taught him how to draw forth Jupiter, the Father of the Gods, from heaven. Jupiter appeared in the form of lightning, and promised him a public sign of his favour.<sup>2</sup> Accordingly, next day, in the presence of the assembled burgesses, the *ancilē*, or sacred shield of Mars Gradivus, the father of

Egeria.

The Ancilia.



Brass of Antoninus Pius, showing *ancilia*. (Stevenson, "ANCILIA.")

Quirinus, fell from heaven amid lightning and thunder. To prevent this precious gift from being stolen, Numa ordered eleven others to be made of exactly the same substance, size, and shape, so that no man might know which was the true *ancilē*: and to take charge of these shields, twelve *Salii*, or dancing priests of Mars, were appointed, whose luxurious banquets afterwards became proverbial.<sup>3</sup>

Further, for the regulation of the worship of the gods, and to decide all questions of religion, he created four Pontiffs, with a

<sup>1</sup> Some fundamental religious institutions were occasionally attributed to Romulus, e.g. the taking of auspices (Cic., *Rcp.*, ii. 9, 10; *de Div.*, i. 2); *cp.* also Dionys., ii. 23, on the relation of Numa to Romulus in this respect.

<sup>2</sup> Ovid, *Fasti*, iii. 285.

<sup>3</sup> Hence Horace (*Od.*, i. 37), on receiving the news of the death of Cleopatra, breaks out:—

“Nunc est bibendum, nunc pede libero  
Pulsanda tellus; nunc Saliaribus  
Ornare pulvinar Deorum  
Tempus erat dapibus, sodales.”

And Cicero (*ad Att.*, v. 9. 1): “Cum epulati essemus Saliarem in modum.”

superior named the *Pontifex Maximus*.<sup>1</sup> These acted as a kind of ecclesiastical council, and the offices were usually held by the most distinguished men at Rome, for there was no clergy or class set apart for religious purposes. For the special service of the two great guardian gods of Rome, Mars and Quirinus, he appointed two Flamens, called respectively the Flamens of Mars and of Quirinus. With these was associated a third, who bore the name of *Flamen Dialis* and was devoted to the service of supreme Jupiter.

To consult the will of the gods by auguries and divinations he created four Augurs. And to keep alive the sacred fire of Vesta, which had been brought from the shrine of the goddess at Alba, the mother city of Rome, he ordained that there should be four Vestal Virgins. In honour of Vesta he built a temple on the north side of the Palatine, standing a little back from the Forum, with a dwelling for the Vestals. His own palace, the Regia, he placed next the Forum, in front of the temple of the goddess.<sup>2</sup>

To distinguish time of war from time of peace he is said to have built a temple to the god Janus, or the Double God, whose two faces looked different ways. During the whole of his reign the door of the temple was closed in sign of peace ; but from his time to the time of the Emperor Augustus it remained open in sign of war, except for a brief period after the first Punic War.<sup>3</sup>

Yet Numa willed not the Romans should offer costly sacrifices to the gods, but ordained that they should present corn and the fruits of the earth, and not any living thing ; for he was a lover of husbandry, and was anxious that this peaceful art should flourish. Therefore he took pains to secure each man in possession of his land, and fixed the bounds of each farm by landmarks (*termini*), which it was sacrilege to remove, for they were under the protection of the god Terminus ; and in honour of this god he established the yearly festival of the Terminalia. Moreover, he distributed all the lands of Rome into *pagi* or districts, and ordered the memory of this act to be kept alive by the feast of the Paganalia.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The meaning of the word Pontifex is doubtful (see *Dict. Ant.*, s.v.).

<sup>2</sup> Mommsen argues (i. 141) that these belong to the Servian city.

<sup>3</sup> Mommsen, *Res Gestae Divi Augusti* (ed. 2, p. 50).

<sup>4</sup> The city land was divided into *vici* or wards, with a corresponding festival called Compitalia.

Numa is also said to have divided the people into guilds, or companies, according to their trades and professions. He built a temple to Good Faith; he determined the *dies fasti* and *nefasti*, or common days and holidays; *The Calendar.* and lastly, he is said to have added to the year of Romulus (which consisted of ten months only, varying in their number of days) the months of January and February, and to have ordained that the year should consist of twelve lunar months and one day over, or in all of 355 days.<sup>1</sup>

AUTHORITIES.—See note to chap. iv. On the story of Aeneas, see Mommsen, ii. 107; H. Nettleship in Conington's *Virgil*, ii. p. xlv. On Roman religion and religious festivals, see W. W. Fowler, *Roman Festivals* (with the literature there cited).

---

<sup>1</sup> The Romans continued to reckon by the Lunar year, till it was superseded by a new Calendar introduced, probably, by the Decemvirs. In this Calendar the length of the year was left unaltered. It still consisted of 354, or rather 355 days, which were distributed into twelve months. But to bring it into agreement with the Solar year of  $365\frac{1}{4}$  days, a month called Mercedonius was intercalated every other year after the 23rd of February. This month consisted of 22 and 23 days alternately, so that if it had been added regularly, the year would have contained on the average  $366\frac{1}{4}$  days. But the business of intercalation was left to the Pontiffs, who executed it in a very arbitrary and uncertain manner. When, therefore, we hear of events taking place in any Roman month, it seldom happens that this month coincides with our own month of the same name; and this makes it extremely difficult to decide the exact time of most events in Roman History before the Julian era (see *Dict. Ant.*, "CALENDARIUM").

## CHAPTER II

### TULLUS HOSTILIUS AND ANCUS MARCIUS, THE THIRD AND FOURTH KINGS

FROM the reigns of Romulus and Numa, the reputed founders of Rome and all her early institutions, we pass to those of two kings, also a Roman and a Sabine, who swelled the numbers of the Roman people by the addition of large bodies of Latins, many of whom were transferred from their own cities by force or persuasion. These kings prepared the way for the more extensive political changes attributed to their successors.

An interregnum again ensued after the death of Numa. But in no long time the burgesses met, and chose to be their king, TULLUS HOSTILIUS, a Roman, whose grand-sire had been a captain in the army of Romulus. His reign of two-and-thirty years was as bloody and warlike as that of Numa had been calm and peaceful. The acts attributed to him are, first, the establishment of the Latins of Alba in Rome, and secondly, the creation of judges to try matters of life and death in place of the king, called *duumviri perduellionis*.<sup>1</sup> The famous legends which follow give the reasons for both these changes.

The chief war of Tullus was against the Albans. It broke out thus. The lands of Rome and Alba *marched* together—that is, they bordered one upon the other—and the borderers of both nations had frequent quarrels and plundered one another. King Tullus took up the cause of his people, and demanded restitution of the booty taken

---

<sup>1</sup> They must be distinguished from the *quaestores parricidii*, as the former were an extraordinary commission, the latter a standing magistracy. The number *two* suggests that the tradition has been modified in republican times. See Ihne (*Researches*, 75) on the one side; Mommsen (i. 321), Herzog (i. 79) on the other.



by the Albans, from Cluilius, the Dictator of Alba, who replied that his people had suffered to the full as much from the Romans as they of Rome from the Albans. Since, then, neither party would make satisfaction, war was declared. Cluilius first led out his army, and encamped within five miles of Rome, at a place afterwards called the Fossa Cluilia, where he died, and the Albans chose Mettus Fuffetius to be Dictator in his stead. Meanwhile Tullus, on his part, had marched into the territory of the Albans, and Mettus returned to give him battle. But when the two armies were drawn up ready to fight, Mettus proposed that the quarrel should be decided by the combat of champions chosen from each army, and Tullus agreed to the proposal. Now it chanced that *Horatii and Curiatii*. there were three brothers in each army, equal in age, strength, and valour. Horatii was the name of the three Roman brethren, Curiatii of the Alban.<sup>1</sup> These were chosen to be the champions, and an agreement was made, with solemn rites, that victory should be adjudged to that people whose champions should conquer in the strife. Then the two armies sate down opposite one another as spectators of the combat, but not like common spectators, for each man felt that the question at issue was whether Rome was to be mistress of Alba or Alba of Rome. Long and bravely fought the champions. At length all the Curiatii were grievously wounded; but of the Horatii, two lay dead upon the plain, while the third was yet untouched. So the surviving Horatius, seeing that, single-handed, he could not prevail, pretended to flee before his three opponents. They pursued him, each as he was able; the most vigorous was foremost, he that had lost most blood lagged behind. And when Horatius saw that they were far separate one from another, he turned about and smote the first pursuer, so likewise the second, and lastly he slew the third. Then the Romans were adjudged victorious.

But a sad event followed to damp their joy. Horatius was returning home with the spoils of the slaughtered three borne in triumph before him, when, outside the Porta Capena,<sup>2</sup> he met his sister. Alas! she had been betrothed to one of the Alban brethren, and now she beheld his bloody vestments adorning the triumph of her brother, and she wept aloud before all the army. But when Horatius saw this, he was so angered that he took his sword and stabbed her where she stood.

<sup>1</sup> In another form of the legend the names are reversed (Livy, i. 24).

<sup>2</sup> It may be noted that there was no Porta Capena till after the building of the walls of Servius Tullius (p. 48).



Now all, both Senate and people, were shocked at this unnatural deed; and though they owed so much to Horatius, *Duumviri* they ordered him to be tried before two judges *perduellionis*. appointed by the king. These judges found Horatius guilty, and condemned him to be "hanged with a rope," according to the law; nor had they power to lighten his punishment. But Horatius appealed to the people, and they pardoned him because he had fought so well for them, and because old Horatius, the father, entreated for him, and said that his daughter had been rightly slain, else he would himself have slain his son, as he had a right to do, because he was his father; for by the old Roman law the father had this terrible power over his children. But to atone for the bloodshed the father was ordered to make certain sacrifices at the public expense, and the heads of the Horatian *gens* continued to offer these sacrifices ever afterwards.

Thus it was that the Albans became subjects of King Tullus, and they were bound to assist him in war against his enemies; and he soon called upon them to follow him against *Mettus* the people of Veii and Fidenae. So *Fuffetius*. Mettus Fuffetius came to his aid with a brave army; but in the battle Mettus stood aloof upon a hill with his army, waiting to see which party should prevail. The Romans were so hard pressed that the king, to stay the alarm, vowed temples in case of victory to Paleness and Panic-fear (*Pallor et Pavor*). At length the battle was won, and then the Alban Dictator came down and pretended to be on their side. Tullus took no notice of his conduct, but summoned all the Albans to a public ceremonial next day. So they came, as to a peaceful festival, with no arms in their hands, when suddenly the Roman legion closed around them, and they could neither fight nor flee. Then Tullus rebuked the Albans, but said that he would punish only their chief, for that he was the most guilty. And he took Mettus and bound him by the arms and legs to two four-horsed chariots; and the chariots, being drawn different ways, tore the unhappy wretch asunder.<sup>1</sup>

Then Tullus gave orders that the city of Alba should be dismantled, and that all its burgesses with their clients should migrate to Rome. It was sad to leave their fathers' *Destruction of* homes and the temples of their fathers' gods. Yet *Alba*. was their new abode no strange city. Had not Rome been founded by Alban princes? and did not the Quirites keep up the eternal fire of Vesta and worship the Latin Jupiter? Nor

---

<sup>1</sup> Virg., *Aen.*, viii. 642.

did Tullus treat them as enemies, but gave them the Caelian Hill for their quarter; and he built a palace for himself on the same hill, and dwelt in the midst of them; he also made the heads of the chief Alban families burgesses of Rome, placed some of their chief men in the Senate, and doubled the number of the Knights by the addition of 300 Albans. *Albans transferred to Rome.*

After this he also made war against the Sabines; and in fulfilment of a vow, which he made in the stress of battle, he established the games of the Saturnalia and Opalia in honour of the Latin god Saturnus and the goddess Ops. *Saturnalia and Opalia.*

To Tullus Hostilius likewise is attributed the building of the Senate-house, called from him the Curia Hostilia. It stood on the edge of the Comitium facing the Palatine; and in a building erected on the same spot, and bearing the same name, the Senate continued to hold their ordinary meetings till the days of Julius Caesar. *Curia Hostilia.*

But amid his triumphs and successes Tullus rendered not meet reverence to the gods. The people of Rome were smitten by a plague, and the king himself fell ill of a lingering disease. Then he bethought him to seek counsel of Jupiter, after the manner of King Numa. But when he took his station upon the Aventine, and endeavoured to draw forth the father of the gods from Heaven, lightnings descended, as to Numa, but with destroying force, so that he himself was smitten and his house burnt down. *Death of Tullus.*

After a short interregnum, the burgesses chose ANCUS MARCIUS to be king, a Sabine noble, son of a daughter of King Numa. His reputation was worthy of his descent, and his first act was to order the laws of his venerated grandsire to be written out fair on a white board and set up for all to read in the Forum. He also made a prison for criminals in the rock beneath that side of the Saturnian Hill which overhangs the Forum: the same which was afterwards enlarged by King Servius Tullius, and called after him the Tullianum. *Ancus Marcius.*

Ancus was a lover of peace; but he did not shrink from war, when war was necessary to protect the honour of the Roman name. But even in matters of war he showed that reverence for law and order which was his ruling characteristic. For he ordained that the college of sacred Heralds, called Fetiales, should demand reparation for injuries in a regular and formal manner, and in case of refusal should declare war by hurling a spear into the enemy's land. *Fetiales.*

His chief wars were with the Latin cities of the neighbourhood. He took Politorium, and destroyed it; and reduced to subjection all the Latin shore, or that part of Latium which lies between Rome and the sea. The heads of families in these Latin cities, after the example set by Tullus Hostilius, were made Roman citizens; and to such as chose to settle in Rome, Ancus assigned Mount Aventine for a dwelling-place, so that thus a fifth hill was added to the other four. In this way the city of Rome was greatly increased, and large numbers added to its citizens; while by the wars of Tullus and Ancus the power of the Latins was proportionably diminished.

Cicero tells us that Ancus divided the lands taken in war among the citizens; and it may be this which induces Ennius and Lucretius to call him "bonus Ancus," and Virgil to speak of him as "too much rejoicing in popular favour."<sup>1</sup>

Other works of utility are attributed to Ancus Marcius. He is said to have made the first bridge over the Tiber; it was built of wooden piles (*publicae*), and hence was called the Pons Sublicius. In order to check the incursions of the Etruscans who lived on the other side of the Tiber, he fortified Janiculum, where his grandsire Numa lay buried. He also built the town of Ostia at the mouth of the river, which long continued to be the principal haven of the Roman people.<sup>2</sup>

He died in peace after a prosperous reign of four-and-twenty years.

<sup>1</sup> Cic., *Rep.*, ii. 18, 33; Lucr., iii. 1038; Virg., *Aen.*, vi. 816. On Niebuhr's hypothesis as to the institution of the plebeians by Ancus, see Ihne, i. 46.

<sup>2</sup> Mommsen holds (i. 59) that the Janiculum belonged to the original territory of Rome.



Mouth of Cloaca Maxima (p. 40), the so-called Temple of Vesta, and the Ruins of the Palace of the Caesars in the background. (This Temple must be distinguished from Numa's Temple of Vesta (p. 28): see Burn, *Rome and the Campagna*, 102, 290.)

### CHAPTER III

#### TARQUINIUS PRISCUS AND SERVIUS TULLIUS, THE FIFTH AND SIXTH KINGS

THE first trace of hereditary succession in the Roman monarchy appears with Ancus. He was grandson to Numa, and according to one legend conspired to take away the life of his predecessor Tullus. But the legends, after the death of Ancus, all make the notion of hereditary right an essential element in the succession. Ancus had left two sons, as yet boys. But when they grew up and found the throne occupied by a stranger, they took measures for asserting their right. It is of this stranger that we must now speak. He is known to all by the name of TARQUINIUS PRISCUS.

Tarquinius had been a citizen of Tarquinii, a city of Etruria.

But it was said that his father was a Greek nobleman of Corinth, Demaratus by name, who had fled from his native land because power had been wrested from the great family to which he belonged. The son had become a Lucumo or chief at Tarquinii, had gained great wealth, and married a noble Etruscan lady, Tanaquil by name. Both himself and his wife were eager for power and honour ; and, as they could not satisfy their desires at home, they determined to try their fortune in the new city on the Tiber, where their countryman Caeles Vibenna and his followers had already settled. Therefore they set out for Rome ; and when they had reached the Mount Janiculum, in full view of the city, an eagle came down with gentle swoop and took the cap from off the head of Tarquin, and then, wheeling round him, replaced it. His wife Tanaquil, skilled in augury, like all the Etruscans, interpreted this to be an omen of good. "The eagle," she said, "was a messenger from heaven ; it had restored the cap as a gift of the gods ; her husband would surely rise to honour and power." Thus it was that he came to settle in Rome, probably among his countrymen on the Caelian Hill. He took the Latin name of Lucius Tarquinius Priscus, and by his riches and his cleverness and goodwill he gained the favour of King Ancus, and was made guardian of his children.

But he used the power so gotten in his own favour ; and the people chose him to be their king. Thereupon he chose 100 fresh members into the Senate, so that now the Senate consisted of 300. He also increased the number of Vestal Virgins to six.<sup>1</sup>

But he designed to make other alterations in the state, larger and more important. To explain these we must go back to the institutions attributed to Romulus. The whole body of the people had been divided (as we saw) into two great classes, patrons and clients. The clients, or vassals, being wholly dependent upon their patrons, had no part in the Body Politic, nor had they the right of *conubium* (as it was called), that is, the right of intermarrying with their patrons. The patrons alone, therefore (we repeat), made up the Populus or Body Politic of Rome. These patrons or lords also took the name of *patricii*,

<sup>1</sup> Niebuhr held that the new Senators and Vestal Virgins represented the Luceres, to whom Tarquinius himself belonged. Ancient tradition does not say this, and the three Tribes are too uncertain a basis on which to found a speculation. Cf. Volquardsen in *Rh. Mus.*, N.F., vol. xxxiii. p. 547.

Patricians, because they were connected by family with the *patres*, Fathers or Senators.<sup>1</sup>

The Patricians were divided into certain private associations, called *gentes*, which we may translate Houses or Clans. All the members of each *gens* were called *gentiles*, and they bore the same name, which always ended in *Gentes.* *ius*: as, for instance, every member of the Julian *gens* was a Julius, every member of the Cornelian *gens* was a Cornelius, and so on. Now, in every *gens* there were a number of *familiae* (families), which were distinguished by a name added to the name of the *gens*. Thus the Scipios, Sullas, Cinnas, Cethegi, Lentuli were all families of the Cornelian *gens*. Lastly, every person of every family was denoted by a name prefixed to the name of the *gens*. The name of the person was, in Latin *praenomen*; that of the house, *nomen*; that of the family, *cognomen*. Thus Gaius Julius Caesar was a person of the Caesar family in the Julian *gens*; Lucius Cornelius Scipio was a person of the Scipio family in the Cornelian *gens*; and so forth. Their *praenomen*, or fore-name, was Gaius, Lucius, etc.; their *nomen* or name, Julius, Cornelius, etc.; their *cognomen* or surname, Caesar, Scipio, etc. These *gentes* may be compared to the Scottish Clans, in which there are many families, as in the Clan Campbell there are the great families of Argyle and Breadalbane and others.<sup>2</sup>

Whether the *gentes* were originally connected by blood or not is hard to say. But they were bound together by certain private sacred rites called *sacra gentilicia*, of which we have seen one example in the case of the Horatian *gens*.<sup>3</sup>

The patrons, or Patricians, then, alone belonged to *gentes*, and these only might intermarry with each other. If a Patrician married a client, their issue could not take the Patrician rank, or become a member of his parent's house; because the clients had not the *conubium*, or right of marriage with their patrons.

But as time went on there arose a third class of freemen at Rome, who were neither patrons nor clients—neither lords over vassals, nor vassals dependent upon lords. These *Plebeians.* were called Plebeians, and their general name was Plebs, or the Commonalty. They were like the clients, in that

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen (*Röm. Forsch.*, i. 227) shows that the term *patres*, as used in old definitions, excludes non-senatorial patricians as well as senatorial plebeians.

<sup>2</sup> *Dict. Ant.*, "NOMEN."

<sup>3</sup> P. 32.



they had no part in the government, in that they were excluded from the Patrician houses and could not intermarry with the Patricians. But they were unlike the clients, in that they were quite free and independent, subject to no lord except to the king and the law.<sup>1</sup>

Now comes the question—How did the Plebs or Commons come into being? How came there to be Plebeians in the time of Tarquinius Priscus whereas there were at all events but few in the time of Romulus?

It is probable that at the first settlement of the city there were a number of people previously dwelling about the Seven Hills who were made subject without becoming clients. These were the original Plebeians—that is, freemen without political rights. Their numbers were afterwards much increased in various ways. First, a patron might marry a client's daughter, or a client might marry a Patrician lady, and then the children would be neither Patricians nor clients. Again, a patron might die and leave no heirs, and then all his clients would become independent, having no lord. But the third class was mainly formed by the addition of Latins, who were not powerful enough to gain admittance into the Patrician *gentes* and Tribes. Tullus, we remember, brought the Albans to Rome, and admitted their chief families into the Patrician order. But there were many families that were not so admitted. Another increase of this kind took place when King Ancus peopled the Aventine with Latins, and conquered the country between Rome and the sea. All new settlers who did not, like the Albans, contribute members to the ranks of the burgesses, and all the burgesses of conquered towns who continued to dwell at home, swelled the number of the Plebeians or Commons of Rome. But they had no part in the state; they lived like strangers at Rome, subject to no lord, as the clients were, and yet, like them, without any rights or power as citizens.

Now, Tarquinius Priscus saw that, sooner or later, these families of the Commons must gain power in the state. Many of them were rich; many of them had been noble in the old Latin cities from which they had been brought to Rome, or in those which had become subject to Rome. Tarquin therefore determined to raise a certain number of these Plebeian families to Patrician rank, just as Tullus had raised many of the Alban

*Proposal to  
raise certain  
Plebeians to  
Patrician  
rank.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen thinks that all the Plebeians were originally clients: but see *Dict. Ant.*, "PLEBES."



families. He proposed to do this by doubling the number of the Patrician Tribes, so that they should be six instead of three. The three new Tribes were to be made up of Plebeian *gentes*, and were to be called after himself and his chief friends.

But the citizens opposed this new plan most fiercely. There was a famous augur, called Attus Navius, who came forward and plainly forbade the whole thing in the name of the gods. The story goes that Tarquin laughed at the augur, and bade him tell by his auguries whether what he then had in his mind was possible to be done. And when the augur said it was possible, then said the king: "I was thinking that thou shouldst cut this whetstone asunder with a razor: now let me see whether thy auguries will help thee." Whereupon Attus took the razor and cut the whetstone asunder. At this the king greatly marvelled, and promised that he would not disobey the gods.

But though Tarquin no longer thought of making new Patrician Tribes with new names, he did what in reality came to the same thing, for he added his favourite Plebeian *gentes* to each of the three Tribes, so that each Tribe consisted of two parts—the Old Ramnes and the New, the Old Tities and the New, the Old Luceres and the New (*Ramnes primi et secundi*, etc.), and there were in reality six Patrician Tribes, though they bore only three names as before; and the new Patricians were called the Fathers of the Younger Clans (*patres minorum gentium*). *Augmentation of Patrician gentes.*

Thus the chief Plebeians were numbered among the Patrician families, and became part and parcel of the Populus or Body Politic of Rome; and were entitled to vote in the Comitia Curiata. But the mass of the Plebeians remained, as of old, excluded from all share in the State.

Tarquinius is also said to have doubled the centuries of Knights. If they had previously been doubled by Tullus, they must already have amounted to two hundred in each century, or to six hundred in all, and after the addition made by Tarquinius to twelve hundred. But probably there was only one doubling, and the number of Knights remained six hundred down to the time of Servius Tullius.<sup>1</sup>

When Tarquin had thus attached the Plebeians to the state, by raising some and giving hopes to all, he led forth his army against the Sabines. He conquered them, and took their town Collatia, which he gave in charge to his nephew Egerius (the Needy), who was so *Wars of Tarquinius Priscus.*

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen, iii. 8.

called because he was left a destitute orphan in the charge of his uncle Tarquin. The son of Egerius took the name of Collatinus.

He also made war against the cities of Latium, which had not been conquered by Ancus Marcius, and he was so successful in his wars and treaties that all the old Latin communities submitted to Rome as their sovereign state.

His authority was also recognised by many of his Etruscan compatriots; and he is said to have first introduced at Rome the Etruscan ensigns of royal dignity, the golden crown and sceptre, the ivory chair, and the robe striped with violet colour.<sup>1</sup>

But what made the reign of Tarquinius Priscus most famous were the great works by which he improved the city. The

*Buildings in Rome.* bounds of the Roman Forum had already been fixed in part by the buildings of Numa and Tullus Hostilius. But Tarquin completed them, on the southern side

*Circus Maximus.* at least, by building booths or shops along that side. And in the valley between the Palatine and Aventine he formed the Circus Maximus, or great racecourse, for the celebration of the Roman or Great Games.

He also vowed a temple to Jupiter on the Saturnian Hill, and *Temple of Jupiter.* began to level the ground for its foundation. But this great building was reserved for another to complete.

One remarkable work remains to be mentioned, which even to the present day preserves the memory of Tarquin. This is the Cloaca Maxima, which ran from the valley of the Circus Maximus and the Forum, and joined the Tiber below the island. The purpose of this great drain was to carry off the waters which collected in stagnant pools in the ground to the west of the Palatine Hill, which was known by the name of the Velabrum. Its size and execution bear witness to the power and greatness of the monarch who planned it. It is formed in a semi-circular vault, measuring nearly fourteen feet in diameter, and consists of three concentric arches, each composed of hewn blocks of hard volcanic stone.<sup>2</sup>

The legend of Tarquin's death is one of the most famous in the early Roman annals. It runs thus: He had a favourite *Death of Tarquin.* called Servius Tullius, a young man who some said was born of a female Latin slave taken at Cornicu-

<sup>1</sup> Marquardt, *Röm. Staatsverw.*, iii. 29; Lewis, i. 472.

<sup>2</sup> Lanciani, *Ruins and Excavations*, p. 29. Mommsen (i. 139) considers the Cloaca to be of republican date; see *Dict. Ant.* "CLOACA." Similar works are found in the ruins of old Etruscan cities. See Dennis, *Cities and Cemeteries of Etruria*, i. 433.

lum ; whereas others said he was no Latin, but an Etruscan called Mastarna, who had come to Rome, like Tarquin himself, and assumed a Latin name. Servius had the same plans as Tarquin himself, and afterwards (as we shall see) executed much which that king was unable to perform, whence we may perhaps conclude that he was a member of one of the houses which had lately been raised to Patrician rank. Now it was thought that this young man would most likely be chosen king when Tarquinius was dead. Whereupon the sons of Ancus Marcius resolved that they would seize the crown ; and possibly they were urged on by the members of the older *gentes*, who could not bear that another upstart should be king. So they procured two countrymen, who pretended to have a quarrel, and came before the king as if to seek for judgment ; and while one of them was speaking, the other smote the king on the head with an axe, so that he fell dead.<sup>1</sup> But the lictors seized the murderers, and Tanaquil, the queen, shut up the palace, and gave out that the king was not dead, but only wounded. Then she sent for Servius Tullius, and exhorted him to assume the royal robe, and go forth with the lictors in kingly state to judge causes in the king's name. Thus Tarquinius Priscus died after a reign of eight-and-thirty years. And after a time his death was made known, and Servius Tullius became king in his place.

SERVIUS TULLIUS was the best and wisest of all the kings, and his reign is a history of the greatest changes that took place among the Roman people during the whole *Servius Tullius* time of the kingly government. His wars were few, though we hear that he overcame the people of Veii and other Etruscan cities. His chief glory came from his institutions for the government of the people, which completed what Tarquinius Priscus had begun.

We have already spoken of the growth of the Plebs or Commons, a third class, belonging neither to the Patricians nor the clients, and shown how Tarquinius raised the richest and most powerful houses of this class to be members of the Patrician Tribes. But the mass of the Plebs continued to live upon the Aventine, without having art or part in the affairs of the Roman People. The *Populus*, or Body Politic, still consisted only of Patricians ; but the Plebeians were every day increasing in numbers and wealth, and if they were much longer shut out from all part in public affairs they might rise against the

*Proposal to admit the Plebeians to full citizenship.*

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* the story of the assassination of Jason of Phærae.

Patricians and take by force what they could not get as a free gift, and so the Aventine would become the chief place of Rome instead of the Palatine. Servius took measures to guard against this danger by admitting the Plebeians into full citizenship, and made them in great measure equal to their Patrician brethren.

It was not proposed to raise the Plebeian families to Patrician rank and make them members of the Curiae, but to create a new popular Assembly which was to include all the citizens, Patricians and Plebeians alike. The whole form, divisions, and nature of this Assembly were military. It was called the *exercitus*; it met in the Field of Mars outside the city; the members of it appeared in the arms of their respective divisions, and gave their votes in the same manner. But it was not all free Romans who were admitted even into this Assembly. A distinction was made between those who had independent means of living (*locupletes* or *assidui*),<sup>1</sup> and those who had no sufficient property (*proletarii*). The former must have at least 11,000 *asses* worth of land or house property, and these alone were (strictly speaking) included in the new Assembly of Servius.

The *locupletes* appeared in the Assembly in five great Classes, or armed bodies, which were distinguished by their Census or amount of rateable property in land, the richest formed the First Class, the next richest the Second Class, and so on. Then each of the five Classes was subdivided into a number of *centuriæ* or companies, of which one half consisted of *iuniores*, or men within the age of military service (17 to 45), the other half of *seniores*, or men between 45 and 60. The First Class appeared in full armour, offensive and defensive; the Second Class was less completely armed, and so on till we come to the Fifth Class, which wore no defensive armour, and served as light troops, slingers, archers, and the like.

At the head of the five Classes stood the Horsemen or Knights (*equites*). Servius found six Centuries of Knights already existing, and all these six Centuries were Patricians, as has been shown.<sup>2</sup> To these Servius added twelve Centuries more, the members of which were chosen from the best

---

<sup>1</sup> *Assiduius* is said by Cicero (*Top.* 2, 10) and others, to be derived *ab asse dando*, because all who were included in the Classes had to pay taxes, but more probably it means "those settled on the land," *i.e.* freeholders.

<sup>2</sup> Mommsen has, however, shown (*Röm. Forsch.*, i. 135) that these *sex suffragia* did not remain exclusively Patrician in later times.

Plebeian families. These were the horsemen of the army, amounting probably in all to 1800 men.<sup>1</sup>

They were allowed a horse at the public expense, with a certain yearly sum for maintaining it.

Besides these there were two Centuries of carpenters and smiths (*fabri tignarii et aerarii*) for engineering purposes, with three of supernumeraries, trumpeters, and horn-blowers. The former, being skilful workmen, were thought worthy of being associated with the first Class ; the latter belonged to the fifth.

<sup>1</sup> The completion of this number is by others attributed to Tarquinius himself (see *Dict. Ant.*, i. 754).

<sup>2</sup> The subjoined table will make it easy to perceive these arrangements at a glance, as they are given by Livy :—

Classes.	Census or Rate-able Property in Land.	Centuries.	Arms.	
			Defen- sive.	Offen- sive.
	<i>Equites</i> . . .	6 Patrician + 12 Plebeian = 18		
1st Class }	{ All having 100,000 <i>asses</i> and upwards }	40 Seniores + 40 Juniores = 80	{ Helmet, round shield ( <i>clipeus</i> ), greaves, cuirass. }	{ Sword and spear. }
	{ <i>Fabri</i> . . . }	. . . . . 2		
2nd Class }	{ 75,000 <i>asses</i> and upwards }	10 Seniores + 10 Juniores = 20	{ Helmet, long shield ( <i>scutum</i> ), greaves. }	{ Sword and spear. }
3rd Class }	{ 50,000 <i>asses</i> and upwards }	10 Seniores + 10 Juniores = 20	{ Helmet, long shield. }	{ Sword and spear. }
4th Class }	{ 25,000 <i>asses</i> and upwards }	10 Seniores + 10 Juniores = 20	None.	{ Spear and javelin. }
5th Class }	{ 11,000 <i>asses</i> and upwards (or, 12,500 as Dionysius says) }	15 Seniores + 15 Juniores = 30	None.	Slings, etc.
	{ Supernumeraries, etc. }	. . . . . 3		

The whole number of Centuries, therefore, exclusively of the *proletarii*, was 193 ; and in the First Class alone, with the Knights, there were more than half. On the differences between Livy, Dionysius, and Cicero, see Lewis, i. 489.

The *proletarii* seem to have been also called *capite censi*, because they were counted by the head, and not rated by their property. Afterwards, however, the *proletarii* and *capite censi* were distinguished, the former being those who possessed appreciable property of a certain amount, the latter those who had no appreciable property (Gell., xvi. 10 ; Niebuhr, *Hist.*, i. 451).

Such was the celebrated assembly known by the name of the COMITIA CENTURIATA, or General Assembly of the Centuries.

The Census or assessment of property in the above military classification was made solely with regard to land and all that we call real property. No account was taken of slaves, cattle, precious metals, furniture, and all that we call personalty, till a much later period.

*Census.*

The purpose of this Census was two-fold ; first, to raise a *tributum*, or tax for military expenses, of which we shall speak on a future page ; and secondly, to serve certain political ends, of which we will speak here. It is manifest

*Influence of property.*

that Servius, when he admitted the Plebeians to political power, did not contemplate anything like the equality of a democracy. He intended that all the citizens of the Classes should have votes, but that their votes should avail in proportion to their landed property. The wealthy were sure to have the preponderance ; for if the Centuries of the Knights, and the Centuries of the first Class, even without the *fabri*, agreed together, they could outvote the Centuries of all the other Classes put together. Moreover, great weight was given to

*Weight given to age.*

age. It is certain that in each Class the *seniores*, or those between the age of 45 and 60, must have been far less numerous than the *iuniores* ; yet in each Class they formed an equal number of Centuries. The number of *seniores* in each of the 40 Centuries of the first Class must have been few.

But though safeguards so many and so great were provided in favour of property, the new assembly of Servius conferred a great and positive boon on the Plebeians. It must be remembered that before his time they were outside the Populus or Body Politic altogether. They

*Political effect of the Comitia Centuriata.*

may still have been excluded from the Comitia Curiata.<sup>1</sup> But in reality the Plebs became members of the Populus, for the new Centuriate Assembly slowly but surely assumed to itself all the political rights which had formerly belonged to the Curiate Assembly alone ; and though all laws proposed in the former may at first have had to receive the sanction of the latter (as bills brought forward in the House of Commons must pass through the House of Lords), and had also to be authorised by

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen has shown (*Röm. Forsch.*, i. 141) that the Plebeians were members of the *curiæ* in later times, and we do not know at what date they were admitted for religious and for political purposes, or whether these two changes occurred together. But Herzog has pointed out (i. 107) that, owing to the peculiar constitution of the *comitia curiata*, the question of those privileged to vote in it ceased to be an important one as soon as another assembly of the people existed.



the Senate, which was at this time exclusively Patrician, yet in time these checks were removed, and the Centuriate Assembly became the supreme legislative body of the state.<sup>1</sup>

But Servius was not satisfied with giving the Plebeians a place in the Body Politic. He made regulations which related to their well-being, without reference to the Patricians.<sup>2</sup>

By the conquests of the preceding kings, Rome had gained large acquisitions of territory in Latium, and some probably on the Etruscan side of the Tiber. Numa had divided the original lands of the state into *pagi*. But these *The Servian Tribes.* had become quite unequal to the altered condition of things; and Servius now distributed the whole Roman territory, as he found it, into a number of Tribes. These Tribes of Servius, then, were divisions of the soil, like cantons, parishes, or townships, and we must take especial care not to confound them with the Tribes of Romulus.<sup>3</sup> The Tribes of Romulus were three in number, those of Servius were at least twenty.<sup>4</sup> The members of each of the Tribes of Romulus held their place in virtue of their relationship, real or fictitious, independently of their place of habitation; those who belonged to one of the Tribes of Servius belonged to it because they had what we might call their "settlement" in some particular place. In one point only they were alike. A person who once belonged either to a Romulian Tribe of birth, or a Servian Tribe of place, always remained a member of that Tribe, to whatever place he might remove his dwelling. It is probable, indeed, that there were means by which the members of the Servian Tribes might change their "settlement," but nothing is known upon this subject. In each Tribe there were Presidents, whose business it was to keep the list of the Tribe; but they were not empowered to remove the name of any person on the list simply because he had ceased to reside in the district belonging to the Tribe.

Of these Tribes four were in the city and the rest outside

<sup>1</sup> It is, of course, impossible to say whether this political result was contemplated when the change was introduced, or was merely a later consequence of it. The change may be compared with that wrought by Solon at Athens (see *The Student's Greece*, p. 102).

<sup>2</sup> For Servius Tullius as the benefactor of the Plebeians, *cp.* Ovid, *Fasti*, vi. 581, 781. Zonaras (vii. 9) and Servius (*Jen.*, i. 426) even say that he included Plebeians in the Senate.

<sup>3</sup> For the relation between the two, *cp. Dict. Ant.*, "TRIBUS."

<sup>4</sup> We do not know at what dates the number of these tribes was completed; probably only the four city tribes were formed at first, the rest being added gradually. But it is convenient to describe them all as the tribes of Servius.



the limits of the city. The four city tribes were, (1) the Suburan *The Four City Tribes.* answering to the Caelian with its neighbouring valleys, (2) the Palatine, (3) the Esquiline, (4) the Colline, answering to the Quirinal and Viminal Hills, which, together with the Esquiline, were now added to the city. It will be observed that neither the Saturnian Hill or Capitoline, nor the Aventine, was included within these Tribes. Probably the former was omitted because it was, as it were, consecrated to military and religious purposes, the latter because it was not yet included within the sacred limits of the *pomerium*.

The Country Tribes were all named after Patrician *gentes*. The names of sixteen are preserved as existing just after the *The Country Tribes.* expulsion of the kings.<sup>1</sup> The first Tribe which bore a name not derived from a noble house was the Crustumine, which was added under the Republic, and made the twenty-first Tribe. No doubt the noble Houses which bore the same name with these Tribes consisted of the chief persons in the districts, just as in England great noblemen took their titles from those counties in which their families once possessed almost sovereign power.

To Servius Tullius also is attributed the great work of enlarging the *pomerium* of Romulus. But while the original *The Servian Wall.* *pomerium* of the Palatine or Roma Quadrata was the same as its wall or line of defence, this rule was not observed by Servius. His new *pomerium*, which surrounded the four Tribes of the city, included only five of the seven hills; for the Capitoline and Aventine were not admitted within the sacred enclosure; but his wall, or line of fortification, ran round all the Seven Hills.<sup>2</sup>

This will be a convenient opportunity to give some account of the city of Rome. Ancient Rome stood on the left bank of the *Situation of Rome.* Tiber. A little to the north of the ancient city the river makes a sudden bend westward, till it is stopped and turned to the south-east again by the high ground

<sup>1</sup> These were, 1. Aemilia; 2. Cornelia; 3. Fabia; 4. Horatia; 5. Menenia; 6. Papiria; 7. Sergia; 8. Veturia; 9. Claudia; 10. \*Camilia; 11. \*Galeria; 12. \*Lemonia; 13. \*Pollia; 14. \*Pupinia; 15. \*Romulia; 16. \*Voltinia. The names of the first nine of these Tribes are familiar as the names of Patrician *gentes*; and it may be presumed that the seven names less known (marked with asterisks) represent *gentes* that afterwards became extinct (*cp.* Mommsen, *Röm. Forsch.* i. 107). On the Claudii, see p. 76.

<sup>2</sup> The Emperor Claudius was the first to include the Aventine; its connection with Remus may have led to its being regarded as unlucky. There is no evidence when the Capitoline was included.

The four Regions of Servius are marked thus:..... I, II.

# ROME

in the time of Servius.

Scale of Roman Feet  
0 500 1000 2000 3000

Scale of Yards  
0 100 500 1000

## Reference.

- a. *Porta Mugonia*
- b. *Porta Romana*
- c. *Scalae Caci (Steps of Cacus)*
- d. *Casa Romuli (Hut of Romulus)*
- e. *Lupercal*
- f. *Ara Maxima Herculis*
- g. *Templum Vestae*
- h. *Templum Jani*
- i. *Templum Jovis Statoris*
- j. *Curia Hostilia*
- k. *Carcar*
- l. *Templum Jovis*
- m. *Templum Martis Matutae*
- n. *Templum Fortunae Virilis (?)*
- o. *Regia*



Rome in the time of Servius.

W. Walter & Cocherell sr.

sloping downwards from the Vatican Hill. Between these two reaches of the river is enclosed a plain, anciently called the Campus Martius, on which stands the greater part of modern Rome. At the lower extremity of this plain, where the stream forms an island, called the Insula Tiberina, its course is again arrested and turned towards the south-west. This turn is caused by the abrupt rise of the eminence, called in old times the Saturnian Hill, and still renowned under its later name of "the Capitol"; and this shall be taken as the point from which we will survey the ancient city.

The city, as bounded by the wall of Servius, may be likened to a fan, of which the Capitol forms the pivot. To this point, *Shape of the city.* converge, on the north, the Quirinal, Viminal, and Esquiline; then the Caelian and the Palatine, lying in the same line, nearly south-east; and due south, abutting upon the river, the Aventine. The Quirinal, Viminal, and Esquiline run out like so many promontories towards the Capitol; but they soon unite, and sink gradually into the plain towards the east.

Across the slope formed by the union of the Quirinal, Viminal, and Esquiline, a great earth-bank and trench were carried, *The Servian agger.* of which traces still remain. In its original state this embankment of Servius Tullius is said to have been 60 feet high, and its base 50 feet broad, while the foss outside it was 100 feet wide and 30 deep. The rest of the circuit was defended by walls, which were entered by many gates, of which the most famous were the Carmental between the Capitol and the river, the Colline at the northern extremity of the *agger*, and the Capenatian to the south of the Caelian Hill. As above stated, there was a bridge over the river called the Pons Sublicius, or Bridge of Piles.

The whole circuit, exclusively of the Trans-Tiberine district, measures nearly six miles, and it remained without alteration for many centuries. Great suburbs grew up, and as Rome needed no fortifications till the times of the later emperors, the walls of Servius were suffered to decay, and no new line of fortification was formed till the days of Aurelian and Probus (A.D. 270-82).

Besides enlarging and strengthening the city, Servius also endeavoured to form an enduring alliance with the whole Latin *Alliance with Latins.* nation, who had been weakened by wars with the former kings.<sup>1</sup> He built a temple to the great

---

<sup>1</sup> Dionysius tells us that he engraved the charter of confederation on a bronze tablet, extant in the historian's lifetime (see *Ihne*, i. 70).

Latin goddess Diana upon the Aventine, and here were to be held sacrifices and festivals common both to Rome and Latium. The Sabines also desired to share in this alliance and in this common worship. There was, so runs the legend, a cow of noble form and surpassing beauty, which belonged to a Sabine householder; whoever, said the soothsayers, sacrificed this animal in the new-built temple of Diana, should raise the state to which he belonged to sovereign power. The Sabine owner brought his cow to offer her on the Aventine. But the Roman sacrificing priest bade him first purify himself by bathing in the Tiber, and then cunningly himself completed the sacrifice.

It remains to add the famous legend of the death of the good King Servius.

He had assumed kingly power in an irregular way: according to Livy, he reigned at first without the people's consent; according to Dionysius, it was the Senate that was hostile to him throughout. It is said that when he *Death of Servius.* had finished his reforms he had it in mind to resign the sovereignty, and leave his great Assembly to elect two chief magistrates to govern in his stead. But he continued to reign till he was murdered, like King Tarquinius before him.

From the two sons of King Ancus there was nothing to fear. But Tarquinius Priscus had also two sons, Lucius and Aruns, and Servius had two daughters. So he married these two daughters to the two young Tarquins, that they might become his successors, and might not be jealous of a stranger sitting in their father's seat. Now Lucius Tarquinius was a proud and violent youth, but his brother Aruns was mild and good. So also the elder daughter of King Servius was gentle, but her sister was ambitious and cruel.<sup>1</sup> Servius therefore took care that Lucius, the violent brother, should be married to the good sister, and Aruns, the good brother, to the bad sister, for he hoped that the good might prevail over the evil. But the lamb will not lie down with the wolf, nor the hawk couple with the dove. Lucius and the younger Tullia conspired together; and Lucius murdered his wife, and Tullia murdered her husband, and then the two wicked ones were free to marry and work their will.

Lucius Tarquin resolved to make an end of King Servius. So he conspired with the Patricians, and chiefly with those of the new *gentes*, whom his father had raised, and then, passing through the Forum, he took his seat upon the throne in front

---

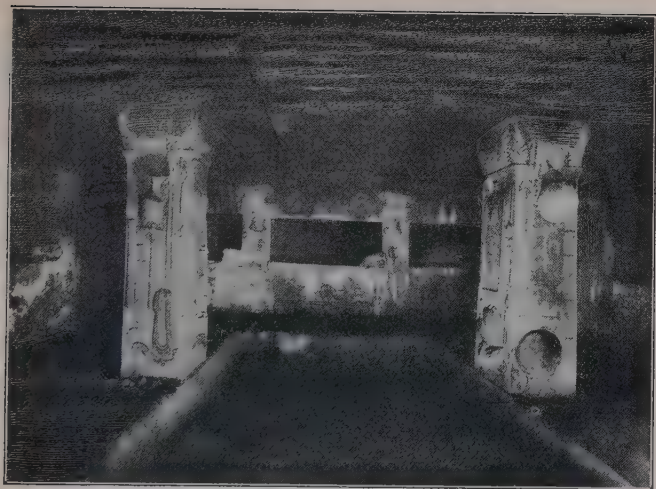
<sup>1</sup> Ovid, *Fasts*, vi. 585.

of the senate-house, and summoned the Patricians to attend on "King Tarquinius." But when King Servius heard of it he came forth and asked how any one dared sit on the throne while he was alive. But Lucius said it was his father's throne, and that it was his own by right. Then he seized the old man and cast him down the steps of the senate-house, and entered himself into the house. Servius, when he saw that all were against him, endeavoured to escape homewards, but certain men, sent by Lucius, slew him, and left his body lying in the way.

And when Tullia heard what was done, she mounted her chariot, and drove to the Forum, and saluted her husband king. But he bade her go home, for such scenes were not fit for women. And she came to the foot of the Esquiline Hill, to the place where the body of her father lay in the way. And when the charioteer saw it, he was shocked, and pulled in his horses that he might not drive over the body. But his wicked mistress chid him angrily, and bade him drive on. So she went home "with her father's blood upon her chariot-wheels"; and that place was called the Wicked Street ever after.

So King Servius died when he had reigned four-and-forty years, and Lucius Tarquinius the Proud reigned in his stead.

AUTHORITIES.—On the topography of Rome and its neighbourhood, see Lanciani, *Ruins and Excavations of Ancient Rome*; Burn, *Rome and the Campagna*; and the literature cited in those works. See also notes to chaps. iv. and v.



Tomb of the Tarquins.

## CHAPTER IV

### TARQUINIUS SUPERBUS, AND THE BEGINNINGS OF THE REPUBLIC

TARQUIN made himself king without any legal forms, and he ruled by force, putting many of the citizens to death, surrounding himself with a body-guard, and managing *Tarquinus* all the affairs of the state himself, like a Greek *Superbus*. tyrant. He abrogated the Assembly of the Centuries, and the other popular reforms of King Servius ; but neither did he pay any regard to the Curiate Assembly or to the Senate, so that even those who had helped him to the throne repented them of the deed. The name of Superbus, or the Proud, testifies to the general feeling against the despotic rule of the second Tarquin.

It was by foreign alliances that he calculated on supporting his despotism at home. The Etruscans were his friends, and among the Latins he sought to raise a power which might counter-balance the Senate and People of Rome.

*Alliance with  
Etruscans and  
Latins.*



The wisdom of Tarquinius Priscus and Servius had so united all the Latin name to Rome that Rome had become the sovereign city of Latium. The last Tarquin drew those ties still closer. He gave his daughter in marriage to Octavius Mamilius, chief of Tusculum, and favoured the Latins in all things. But at a general assembly of the Latins at the Grove of Ferentina, beneath the Alban Mount, where they had been accustomed to meet of olden time to settle their national affairs, Turnus Herdonius of Aricia rose and spoke against him. Then Tarquinius accused him of high treason, and brought false witness against him; and the Latins condemned their countryman to be drowned in the Ferentine water, and obeyed Tarquinius in all things.

With them he made war upon the Volscians, and took the city of Suessa, wherein was a great booty. This booty he applied to the execution of great works in the city, in emulation of his father and King Servius. The elder Tarquin had built up the side of the Tarpeian Hill, and levelled the summit to be the foundation of a temple of Jupiter, but he had not completed the work. Tarquinius Superbus now removed all the temples and shrines of the old Sabine gods which had been there since the time of Titus Tatius; but the goddess of Youth and the god Terminus kept their place, whereby was signified that the Roman people should enjoy undecaying vigour, and that the boundaries of their empire should never be drawn in.<sup>1</sup> Here he built a magnificent temple, to be dedicated jointly to the three great gods of the Latins and Etruscans, Jupiter, Juno, and Minerva; and this part of the Saturnian Hill was ever after called the CAPITOL, or the Chief Place, while the other part was called the ARX, or Citadel. He brought architects from Etruria to plan the temple, but he forced the Roman people to work for him without hire.

One day a strange woman appeared before the king, and offered him nine books to buy; and when he refused them she went away and burnt three of the nine books, and brought back the remaining six, and offered to sell them at the same price that she had asked for the nine; and when he laughed at her, she went as before and burnt three more books, and came back and asked still the same price for the three that were left. Then the king, struck by her pertinacity, consulted his augurs what this might be, and they bade him by all things buy the three, and said he had done wrong not to buy the nine, for these were the books of the

*Temple on  
Capitoline.*

*Sibylline  
Books.*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Livy, v. 54.



Sibyl, and contained great secrets. So the books were kept underground in the Capitol in a stone chest, and two men (*duumviri*) were appointed to take charge of them, and consult them when the state was in danger.

The only Latin town that defied Tarquin's power was Gabii, and Sextus, the king's youngest son, promised to win this place also for his father. So he fled from Rome

*Capture of  
Gabii.*



Cinctus Gabinus, an old form of Roman military dress (see *Dict. Ant.* "TOGA," and Mommsen, i. 125).

and presented himself at Gabii; and there he made complaints of his father's tyranny and prayed for protection. The Gabians believed him and took him into their city, and they trusted him, so that in time he was made commander of their army. Now his father suffered him to conquer in many small battles, and the Gabians trusted him more and more. Then he sent privately to his father and asked how he should subdue the Gabians. King Tarquin gave no answer to the messenger, but as he walked up and down his garden, he kept cutting off the heads of the tallest poppies with his staff. At last the messenger was tired, and went back to Sextus and told him what had passed. But Sextus understood what his

father meant, and he began to accuse falsely all the chief men, and some of them he put to death, and some of them he banished. So at last the city of Gabii was left defenceless, and Sextus delivered it up to his father.<sup>1</sup>

While Tarquin was building his temple on the Capitol, a snake came forth and devoured the sacrifices he was offering. Dismayed by this portent, the king sent persons to consult the famous oracle of the Greeks at Delphi, and the persons he sent were his two sons Titus and Aruns, and his sister's son, L. Junius, a young man who, to avoid his uncle's jealousy, feigned to be without common sense, wherefore he was called Brutus, or the Dullard. Having executed their commission, they asked further, "to which of the three the chief power in Rome should belong?"; and the oracle replied, "to him who should

*The Oracle at  
Delphi con-  
sulted.*

*Brutus.*

<sup>1</sup> It is well known that this legend occurs in Herodotus, who relates that Babylon was betrayed to Darius Hystaspis in a similar manner (iii. 154, *seq.*). A story like that of the poppies also occurs in Herodotus (v. 92). The record of the treaty between Rome and Gabii is said by Dionysius (iv. 58) to have been preserved at Rome in his time.

first kiss his mother." Then the two sons of King Tarquin agreed to draw lots which of them should do this as soon as they returned home. But Brutus, perceiving that the oracle had another sense, fell down as if he had stumbled, and kissed the earth, for she (he thought) was the true mother of all mortal things.

When the sons of Tarquin returned with their cousin Brutus, they found the king at war with the Rutulians of Ardea. Being *Siege of* unable to take the place by storm, he sate down *Ardea.* before it; and during the blockade, the young men used to amuse themselves at night with wine and wassail. One night there was a feast given by Sextus, the king's third *Sextus.* son, at which was present Collatinus (son of Egerius, the king's cousin), who had been made governor of Collatia. So they began to dispute about the worthiness of their wives; and when each maintained that his own wife was worthiest, "Come, gentlemen," said Collatinus, "let us take horse and see what our wives are doing; they expect us not, and so we shall know the truth." So they galloped to Rome, and there they found the wives of all the others feasting and revelling; but when they came to Collatia; they found *Lucretia.* Lucretia, the wife of Collatinus, not making merry like the rest, but sitting in the midst of her hand-maids carding wool and spinning; so all allowed that Lucretia was the worthiest.<sup>1</sup>

Now Lucretia was the daughter of a noble Roman, Spurius Lucretius, Prefect of the City, for it was the custom, when the kings went out to war, to leave a chief man at home to govern in the king's name, and he was called Prefect of the City.<sup>2</sup>

But it chanced that Sextus, the king's son, when he saw the fair Lucretia, was smitten with lustful passion; and a few days after he came again to Collatia, and Lucretia entertained him hospitably as her husband's cousin and friend. But at midnight he came with stealthy steps to her bedside, and, holding a sword in his right hand, and laying his left hand upon her breast, he bade her yield to his wicked desires; for, if not, he would slay her and one of her slaves beside her, and would declare that he had taken them in adultery. So, for shame, she consented to that which no fear would have wrung from her; and Sextus, having wrought this deed of shame, returned to the camp.

<sup>1</sup> Ovid, *Fasti*, ii. 739, *sqq.*

<sup>2</sup> See Tacitus, *Ann.*, vi. II, with Furneaux' notes; *Dict. Ant.*, "PRAEFECTUS URBI."

Then Lucretia sent to Rome for her father, and to the camp at Ardea for her husband. They came in haste. Lucretius brought with him P. Valerius, and Collatinus brought L. Junius Brutus, his cousin. And they came in and asked if all were well. Then she told them what was done. "But," she said, "my body only has suffered the shame, for my will consented not to the deed. Therefore," she cried, "avenge me on the wretch Sextus. But though my heart has not sinned, I can live no longer. Lucretia will not set an example of living in unchastity." So she drew forth a knife and stabbed herself to the heart.

When they saw that, her father and her husband cried aloud, but Brutus drew the knife from the wound, and, holding it up, spoke thus: "By this pure blood I swear before the gods that I will pursue L. Tarquinius the Proud and all his bloody house with fire, sword, or in whatsoever way I may, and that neither they nor any other shall hereafter be kings in Rome."<sup>1</sup> Then he gave the knife to Collatinus and Lucretius and Valerius, and they all swore likewise, much marvelling to hear such words from L. Junius, the Dullard. And they took up the body of Lucretia, and carried it into the Forum, and called on the men of Collatia to rise against the tyrant. So they set a guard at the gates of the town to prevent any news of the matter being carried to King Tarquin; and they themselves, followed by the youth of Collatia, went to Rome. Here Brutus called the people together,<sup>2</sup> and he told them what had been done, and called on them by the deed of shame wrought by Sextus, by all that they had suffered from the tyrants, by the abominable murder of good King Servius, to assist them in taking vengeance on the Tarquins. So it was hastily agreed to banish Tarquinius and his family. The youth *Expulsion of the Tarquins.* declared themselves ready to follow Brutus against the king, and the seniors put themselves under the rule of Lucretius, the Prefect of the City. In this tumult the wicked Tullia fled from her house, pursued by the curses of all men, who prayed that the avengers of her father's blood might be upon her.

When the king heard what had passed, he set off in all haste for the city. Brutus also set off for the camp at Ardea; and he turned aside that he might not meet his uncle the king. So he came to the camp at Ardea, and the king came to Rome.

<sup>1</sup> Cp. Virg., *Aen.*, vi. 819.

<sup>2</sup> According to Livy and Dionysius he held the office of *tribunus celerum*: but see Lewis, i. 520; Mommsen, i. 90, 317.

And all the Romans at Ardea welcomed Brutus, and joined their arms to his, and thrust out all the king's sons from the camp. But the people of Rome shut the gates against the king, so that he could not enter. And King Tarquin, with his sons Titus and Aruns, went into exile, and lived at Caeré, in Etruria. But Sextus fled to Gabii, where he had before held rule, and the people of Gabii slew him in memory of his former cruelty.

So L. Tarquinius Superbus was expelled from Rome, after  
*Regifugium.* he had been king five-and-twenty years (B.C. 510).

And in memory of this event was instituted a festival called the Regifugium, or Fugalia, celebrated every year on the 24th day of February.<sup>1</sup>

To gratify the Plebeians, the Patricians consented to restore, in some measure at least, the popular institutions of King

*Consuls* Servius; and it was resolved to follow his supposed

intention with regard to the supreme government—that is, to have two magistrates elected every year, who were to have the same power as the king during the time of their rule. These were in after days known by the name of CONSULS, but in ancient times they were called Praetors or Judges (*iudices*).<sup>2</sup> They were elected at the great Assembly of the Centuries; and they had sovereign power (*imperium*) conferred upon them by the Assembly of the Curies. They wore a robe edged with violet colour, sat in chairs of state, called curule chairs, and were attended by twelve lictors each. These lictors carried *fasces*, or bundles of rods, out of which arose an axe, in token of the power of life and death possessed by the Consuls as successors of the kings. But only one of them at a time had a right to this power; and, in token thereof, his colleague's *fasces* had no axes in them. Each retained this mark of sovereign power (*imperium*) for a month at a time.

The first Consuls were L. Junius Brutus and L. Tarquinius Collatinus.

The new Consuls filled up the Senate to the proper number of three hundred; and the new Senators were called Conscripti,

*Patres Con-* while the old members retained their old name of  
*scripti.* Patres.<sup>3</sup> So after this the whole Senate was addressed by speakers as "Patres, Conscripti" (*i.e.* Patres et Con-

<sup>1</sup> Ovid, *Fasti*, ii. 685. See, however, W. W. Fowler, *Roman Festivals*, 327.

<sup>2</sup> *Dict. Ant.*, "CONSUL."

<sup>3</sup> These new Senators were Plebeians, not Patricians (see Mommsen, *Röm. Forsch.*, i. 251). According to tradition, the new Senators were at once in a majority (164 to 136). Mommsen thinks that they ob-

scripti). But in later times it was forgotten that these names belonged to different sorts of persons, and the whole Senate was addressed as by one name, "Patres Conscripti."

The name of king was hateful. But certain sacrifices had always been performed by the king in person; and, *Rex Sacrorum.* to keep up the form, a person was still chosen, with the title of Rex Sacrorum or Rex Sacrificulus, to perform these offerings.<sup>1</sup>

After his expulsion, King Tarquin sent messengers to Rome to ask that his property should be given up to him, and the Senate decreed that his prayer should be granted. But the king's ambassadors, while they were in Rome, stirred up the minds of the young men and others who had been favoured by Tarquin, so that a plot was made to bring him back. Among those who plotted were Titus and Tiberius, sons of the Consul Brutus; and they gave letters to the messengers of the king. But it chanced that a certain slave overheard them plotting; and he came and told the thing to the Consuls, who seized the messengers with the letters upon their persons, authenticated by the seals of the young men. The culprits were immediately arrested, but the ambassadors were let go because their persons were regarded as sacred. And the goods of King Tarquin were given up for plunder to the people.

Then the traitors were brought up for judgment, and the sight was such as to move all beholders to pity; for among them were the sons of L. Junius Brutus himself, the liberator of the Roman people. And now all men saw how Brutus loved his country, for he bade the lictors put all the traitors to death, and his own sons first; and men could mark in his face the struggle between his duty as Consul and his feelings as a father. And while they praised and admired him, they pitied him yet more.<sup>2</sup>

Then a decree of the Senate was made that no one of the blood of the Tarquins should remain in Rome. And since

---

tained only the right of voting, not that of speaking (*pedarii senatores*), and that the Patrician Senators always retained the right (1) of appointing the *interrex*, when one was required; (2) of confirming or rejecting as constitutional or unconstitutional the resolutions adopted by the community (*patrum auctoritas*). See *Dict. Ant.*, "SENATUS," and the literature there referred to; also F. Zühlke, *Mommsen und Willems in ihrer Auffassung der Sonderstellung der Patricier im Senat* (Insterburg, 1891).

<sup>1</sup> Cp. *The Student's Greece*, p. 97; Strabo, xiv. 633.

<sup>2</sup> Virg., *Aen.*, vi. 821.

Collatinus, the Consul, was by descent a Tarquin,<sup>1</sup> even he was obliged to give up his office and retire to Lavinium, and P. Valerius was chosen in his stead.

This was the first attempt to restore Tarquin the Proud.

When Tarquin saw that the plot at home had failed, he prevailed on the people of Tarquinii and Veii to make war with him against the Romans. But the Consuls came out against them, Valerius commanding the main army, and Brutus the cavalry. And when Aruns, the king's son, who led the cavalry of the enemy, saw Brutus, he spurred his horse against him, and Brutus declined not the combat. So they rode straight at each other with levelled spears, and so fierce was the shock that they pierced each other through from breast to back, and both fell dead.

Then, also, the armies fought, but the battle was neither won nor lost. But in the night a voice was heard proclaiming authoritatively that the Romans were the conquerors. So the enemy fled by night, and when the Romans arose in the morning there was no man to oppose them. Then they took up the body of Brutus, and departed home, and buried him in public with great pomp; and the matrons of Rome mourned him for a whole year, because he had avenged the injury of Lucretia.

So fared it with the second attempt to restore King Tarquin.

After the death of Brutus, Publius Valerius ruled the People alone; and he began to build himself a house upon the ridge called Velia, which looks down upon the Forum. So the People thought that he was going to make himself king. But when he heard this, he called an Assembly of the People, and appeared before them with his *fusces* lowered, and with no axes in them; whence the custom remained ever after, that no consular lictors bore axes within the city, and no consul had power of life and death except when he was in command of his legions abroad. And he pulled down his house upon the Velia, and built it below that hill. Also he passed laws that every Roman citizen might appeal to the People against the judgment of the chief magistrates. Wherefore he was greatly honoured by the People, and was called *Poplicola* or *Friend of the People*.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Brutus, however, also shared the blood of the Tarquins, but by his mother's side.

<sup>2</sup> Schwegler regards the dictatorship of Valerius as a transitional stage from the monarchy to the republic. (*Cp. Ihne, Researches*, 58).



After this Valerius called together the great Assembly of the Centuries, and they chose Sp. Lucretius, father of Lucretia, to succeed Brutus. But he was an old man, and in not many days he died. So M. Horatius was chosen in his stead.

The Temple on the Capitol which King Tarquin began had never yet been consecrated. Then Valerius and Horatius drew lots which should be the consecrator, and the lot fell on Horatius. But the friends of Valerius murmured; and when Horatius was now saying the prayer of consecration, with his hand upon the doorpost of the temple, there came a messenger, who told him that his son was just dead, and that one mourning for a son could not rightly consecrate the temple. But Horatius kept his hand upon the doorpost, and told them to see to the burial of his son, and finished the rites of consecration.

*Consecration  
of Capitoline  
Temple.*

In the next year Valerius was again made Consul, with T. Lucretius; and Tarquinius, despairing of aid from his friends at Veii and Tarquinii, went to Lars Porsena of Clusium, a city on the river Clanis, which falls into the Tiber.<sup>1</sup> Porsena appears at this time to have

*Third attempt  
to restore  
Tarquin.*

been chief of the twelve Etruscan cities; and he assembled a powerful army and came to Rome. He came so quickly that he reached the Sublician Bridge before there was time to destroy it; and, if he had crossed it, the

*Porsena.*

city would have been lost. Then a noble Roman, called Horatius Cocles, with two friends—Sp. Lartius and T. Herminius—posted themselves at the far end of the bridge, and defended it against all the Etruscan

*Horatius  
Cocles.*

host, while the Romans were cutting it off behind them. When it was all but destroyed, his two friends drew back, and Horatius was left alone to bear the whole attack of the enemy. Well he kept his ground till the last beams of the bridge fell crashing into the river, when he prayed, saying: "Father Tiber, receive me and bear me up, I pray thee." Then he plunged in, and reached the other side safely; and the Romans honoured him greatly; they put up his statue in the Comitium, and gave him as much land as he could plough round in a day, and every man at Rome subscribed the cost of one day's food to reward him.

Then Porsena, disappointed in his attempt to surprise the city, occupied Janiculum, and encamped beside the Tiber, so that the people were greatly distressed by hunger.

*Mucius.*

But C. Mucius, a noble youth, resolved to deliver his country. So he armed himself with a dagger, and went to

<sup>1</sup> Virg., *Aen.*, viii. 646.



the place where the king was used to sit in judgment. It chanced that the soldiers were receiving their pay from the king's secretary, and as this man seemed to be chief in authority, Mucius thought that this must be the king; so he stabbed him to the heart. Then the guards dragged him before the king, who was greatly enraged, and ordered them to burn him alive if he would not confess the whole affair. But Mucius stood before the king, and said: "See how little thy tortures can avail to make a brave man tell the secrets committed to him"; so saying, he thrust his right hand into the fire burning on an altar, and held it in the flame with unmoved countenance. Then the king marvelled at his courage, and ordered him to be spared and sent away in safety: "For," said he, "thou art a brave man, and hast done more harm to thyself than to me." Then Mucius replied: "Thy generosity, O king, prevails more with me than thy threats. Know that three hundred Roman youths have sworn thy death. My lot came first. But all the rest remain prepared to do and suffer like myself." So he was let go, and was called Scaevola, or *the Lefthanded*, because his right hand had been burnt off.

King Porsena was greatly moved by the danger he had escaped, and perceiving the obstinate determination of the Romans, he offered to make peace. The Romans gladly gave ear to his words, for they were hard pressed; and they consented to give back all the land which they had won from the Etruscans beyond the Tiber. And they gave hostages to the king in pledge that they would obey him as they had promised, ten youths and ten maidens. But one of the maidens, *Cloelia*, named Cloelia, had a man's heart, and she persuaded all her fellows to escape and swim across the Tiber. At this King Porsena was much amazed, even more than at the deeds of Horatius and Mucius. So when the Romans sent back Cloelia for they would not break faith with the king—he bade her return home, and told her she might take whom she pleased of the youthful hostages; and she chose those who were yet children, and restored them to their parents.

So the people gave lands to Mucius, and set up an equestrian statue to Cloelia at the top of the Sacred Way. And King Porsena returned home; and the third attempt to bring back Tarquin failed.

When Tarquin now found that he had no hopes of further assistance from Porsena and his Etruscan friends, he went and dwelt at Tusculum, where Octavius Mamilius, his son-in-law, was still chief. Then the thirty Latin cities combined together, and made this Mamilius their Chief,

and bound themselves to restore Tarquin to the sovereignty of Rome.<sup>1</sup>

P. Valerius, called Poplicola, was now dead, and the Romans looked about for some chief worthy to lead them against the Latins. Poplicola had been made Consul four *The Dictatorship.* times, and his compeers acknowledged him as their chief, and all men submitted to him as to a king. But now the two Consuls were jealous of each other; nor had they power of life and death within the city, for Valerius had taken away the axes from the *fasces*. Now this was one of the reasons why Brutus and the rest made two Consuls instead of one king; for they said that neither one would allow the other to become tyrant; and since they held office only for one year, they might be called on to give account of their government when their year was at an end.

Yet though this was a safeguard of liberty in times of peace, it was hurtful in time of war; for the Consuls chosen by the People were not always skilful generals; or, if they were so, they were obliged to lay down their command at the year's end.

So the Senate determined, in cases of great danger, to call upon one of the Consuls to appoint a single chief, who should be called Dictator, or Master of the People. He had sovereign power (*imperium*) both in the city and out of the city, and the *fasces* were carried before him with the axes in them, as before the king. He was appointed only for six months, but at the end of the time he had to give no account; so that he was free to act according to his own judgment, having no colleague to thwart him at the present time, and no accusation to fear for the future. He was general-in-chief, and he appointed an officer to command the knights, who was called Master of the Horse.<sup>2</sup>

And now it appeared to be a fit time to appoint such a chief to take the command of the army against the Latins. So the first Dictator was T. Lartius, and he made Spurius Cassius his Master of the Horse.

But the Latins did not declare war for two years after. Then the Senate again ordered the Consul to name a Dictator; and he named A. Postumius, who appointed T. Aebutius (one of the Consuls of the year) to be his Master of the Horse. So they led out the Roman *Fourth attempt to restore Tarquin.* army against the Latins, and they met at the Lake Regillus, in the land of the Tusculans.<sup>3</sup> King Tarquin and his

<sup>1</sup> Dionysius (v. 61) gives a list of these towns: but see Ihne, i. 96.

<sup>2</sup> *Dict. Ant.*, "DICTATOR."

<sup>3</sup> *Dict. Geogr.*, "REGILLUS LACUS."

sons were in the host of the Latins ; and that day it was to be determined whether Rome should be again subject to the tyrant.

King Tarquin himself, old as he was, rode in front of the Latins in full armour ; and when he descried the Roman Dictator marshalling his men, he rode at him ; but *Battle of Lake Regillus.* Postumius wounded him in the side, and he was rescued by the Latins. Then also Aebutius, the Master of the Horse, and Mamilius, the chief of the Latins, charged one another ; and Aebutius was pierced through the arm, and Mamilius wounded in the breast. But the Latin chief, nothing daunted, renewed the battle, followed by Titus, the king's son, with his band of exiles ; and they charged the Romans furiously, so that they gave way. But when M. Valerius, brother of the great Poplicola, saw this, he spurred his horse against Titus : and when Titus turned away and fled, Valerius rode furiously after him into the midst of the Latin host, and a certain Latin smote him in the side as he was riding past, so that he fell dead, and his horse galloped on without a rider. So the band of exiles pressed still more fiercely upon the Romans, and they began to flee. Then Postumius, the Dictator, lifted up his voice and vowed a temple to Castor and Pollux, the great twin heroes of the Greeks, if they would aid him : and behold there appeared beside him two horsemen, taller and fairer than the sons of men, and their horses were white as snow. And they led the Dictator and his guard against the exiles and the Latins, and the Romans prevailed ; and T. Herminius, the friend of Horatius Cocles, ran Mamilius, the Dictator of the Latins, through the body, so that he died ; but when he was stripping the arms from his foe, another ran him through, and he was carried back to the camp, and he also died. Then also Titus, the king's son, was slain, and the Latins fled, and the Romans pursued them with great slaughter, and took their camp and all that was in it. Now Postumius had promised great rewards to those who first broke into the camp of the Latins, and the first who broke in were the two horsemen on white horses ; but after the battle they were nowhere to be seen nor found, nor was there any sign of them left, save on the hard rock there was found the mark of a horse's hoof.

But at this very time two youths on white horses rode into the Forum at Rome, covered with dust and sweat and blood, like men who had fought long and hard, and their horses also were bathed in sweat and foam ; and they alighted near the Temple of Vesta, and washed themselves in a spring that gushes out hard by, and told all the people in the Forum how the battle by

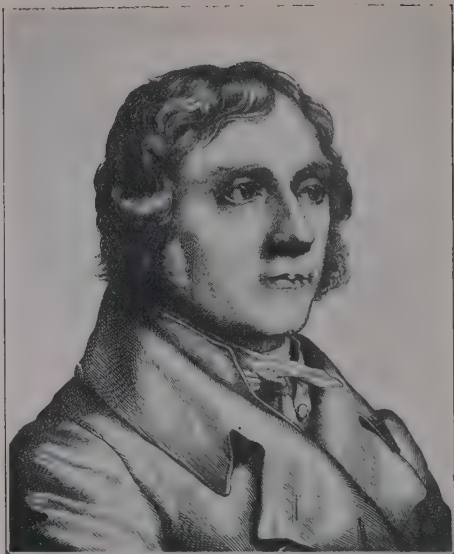
the Lake Regillus had been fought and won. Then they rode away, and were seen no more.

But Postumius knew that these were Castor and Pollux, the great twin brethren of the Greeks, and that it was they who fought so well for Rome at the Lake Regillus. So he built them a temple, according to his vow, over the place where they had alighted in the Forum. And they were worshipped as the patron gods of the Knights to the latest ages of the city.

This was the fourth and last attempt to restore King Tarquin. After the great defeat of Lake Regillus, the Latin cities made peace with Rome, and agreed to refuse shelter to the old king. He had lost all his sons, and, accompanied by a few faithful friends, who shared his exile, he sought a last asylum at the Greek city of Cumæ, on the Bay of Naples, at the court of the tyrant Aristodemus. Here he died, four years after his last battle, fourteen years after his expulsion.

*Death of  
Tarquin at  
Cumæ.*

AUTHORITIES. — A full summary of the original authorities for the incidents dealt with in chaps. i.-iv., together with references and criticisms, is given in Lewis' *Credibility of Early Roman History*. Livy, Dionysius, and Zonaras are the writers from whom our knowledge of most of the legends is derived, but very numerous additions can be made from a large number of other sources. For the dates of these writers and what is known of their methods of working, see the material collected by Schaefer, *Abriss der Quellenkunde der griechischen und römischen Geschichte*, Abt. 2 (second edition by Nissen).



B. G. Niebuhr.

## CHAPTER V

### OBSERVATIONS ON THE HISTORY OF ROME UNDER THE KINGS

THE early history of Rome, like that of all nations, begins with legendary tales. Such legends are not to be regarded as mere romances—that is, fictions invented for the purpose of giving amusement. Among all early nations *Nature of* tales will be found current which pass from mouth to mouth without suspicion that they are not absolutely true. They date from times when writing is unknown, and the mere fact of their being repeated by word of mouth causes a perpetual variation in the narratives. The same original story being handed down traditionally by two different tribes will in a short time assume extremely different forms. Names and circumstances<sup>1</sup> may have been changed, and yet the origin may be the same.

Among the Greeks such legendary lore is chiefly connected

---

<sup>1</sup> See, e.g., pp. 21, 31.

with religious ideas. The legends or *μῦθοι* of that lively race may mostly be traced to that sort of awe or wonder *Greek legends.* with which simple and uneducated minds regard the changes and movements of the natural world. When the attention is excited by the regular movements of sun and moon and stars, by the alternations of day and night, by the recurrence of the seasons, by the rising and falling of the seas, by the ceaseless flow of rivers, by the gathering of clouds, the rolling of thunder, and the flashing of lightning, by the operation of life in the vegetable and animal worlds, in short, by any exhibition of an active and motive power—it is natural for uninstructed minds to consider such changes and movements as the direct work of divine Persons. Thus, in the early Greek legends, everything is referred to the immediate operation of a god. “Cloud-compelling” Zeus is author of the phenomena of the air; “Earth-shaking” Poseidon of all that happens in the water under the earth; Nymphs are attached to every spring and tree; Demeter, or Mother Earth, for six months rejoices in the presence of Proserpine, the green herb, her daughter, and for six months regrets her absence in dark abodes beneath the earth.

This tendency to deify the powers of nature is due partly to a bright and sunny climate, which inclines a people to live in the open air in close communion with all that nature offers to charm the senses, partly to the character of the people, partly to the poets who in early times wrought these legendary tales into beautiful verse. Among the Greeks all these conditions were found existing. They lived, so to say, out of doors; their powers of observation were extremely quick, their imagination singularly vivid; and their ancient poems are the most noble specimens of the old legendary tales that have been preserved in any country.<sup>1</sup>

But among the Romans we find few traces of this religious

<sup>1</sup> Compare the beautiful passage in the fourth book of Wordsworth's *Excursion*:—

“The lively Grecian, in a land of hills,  
Rivers, and fertile plains, and sounding shores,  
Under a cope of variegated sky,  
Could find commodious place for every god,” etc.

“The traveller slaked  
His thirst from rill or gushing fount, and thanked  
The Naiad. Sunbeams, upon distant hills  
Gliding apace, with shadows in their train,  
Might, with small help from fancy, be transformed  
Into fleet Oreads sporting visibly.  
The Zephyrs, fanning, as they passed, their wings,  
Lacked not, for love, fair objects, whom they wooed  
With gentle whisper,” etc.



legend. The climate of Italy is as bright as that of Greece, and no doubt the ancient Italians had their religious legends. But before a Latin literature was formed, the Latin poets adopted the mythology of Greece, and transferred to Sabine and Latin deities the attributes and actions of the Hellenic gods, so that we read of Italian divinities disporting themselves on the hills and in the valleys of Thessaly or Arcadia. If, however, there is not much of the native religious legend among the Romans, there is found another kind of legend in great fulness and beauty—the historic.

We are thus brought to a distinction between the religious legend, of which we have briefly spoken, and the heroic or historical, of which we have now to speak. The religious legend pretends to explain the history of the universe; the heroic legend seeks to determine the early history of a particular people. As the poetic fancy of the Greek inclined him to the former kind, so the practical character of the Roman loved to dwell upon the fortunes of his own great city.

It is well known that the legends of Roman history were long regarded as sober historic truths. Some keen-sighted critics were induced to examine them, and they proved that they had no claim to be so regarded.<sup>1</sup> Impossibilities were pointed out, discrepancies of time and fact noted, variations of the same story brought forward. The miraculous nature of the Greek and Roman legends was a stumbling-block even to the ancient annalists, who escaped the difficulty by retaining the statements of the legends, but explaining them away. The Golden Fleece was a ship in which Medea and Jason escaped; the Bull was a ship in which Europa was carried off by Jove; and so forth.

But the modern critics of the ancient legends took a different

---

<sup>1</sup> Among the first of these critics was Perizonius, a Dutchman. But his work (*Animadversiones Historicae*) was written in Latin, and addressed only to the learned. Vico, an Italian of extraordinary genius, mixed up his historical speculations with so much of mysticism that they also produced but little effect. (See his life by Prof. Flint in "Philosophical Classics for English Readers"). The person who most shook the credit of the old Roman history was the Frenchman Beaufort in his essay, *Sur l'incertitude des cinq premiers siècles de l'Histoire Romaine*. It is said that he was stimulated to his investigations by national pique. He was indignant at the tale that the brave Gauls of Brennus were defeated by Camillus, and his successful confutation of this legend led him on to more adventurous flights.



course. It was not the supernatural incidents that attracted their notice ; for, after all, there are not many such in Roman annals. It was the manifest falsehood of many of the early stories which attracted notice—the exaltation of individual heroes, the concealment of defeats and losses. The most striking among these inventions, as we shall show below, are the stories of Porsena and Camillus. The immediate effect of these discoveries was, that for a time the early annals of Rome were passed over in almost contemptuous silence. It was then that Niebuhr arose.<sup>1</sup> He acknowledged the sagacity of the critics, and conceded that the early history, regarded as an actual narrative of facts, was wholly unreal ; but he refused to throw it all aside as arbitrary fiction. He showed that the early history of Rome, like that of all nations, was legendary, containing a poetical account of the first ages of the city, and not plain matter of fact ; but the legendary traditions of the Roman people are, he contended, so rich and so beautiful that they give an insight into the early genius of the people which would never have been divined from the imitative literature which has been handed down as Roman. Moreover, mingled with the poetic legends, there are accounts of laws and institutions which undeniably existed, such as the regulations attributed to Romulus and Numa, and the reforms attributed to the elder Tarquin and Servius Tullius. There are also great works remaining to the present day, of which these legends tell—such as the Cloaca Maxima, the substructions of the Capitol, the Agger of Servius Tullius. Here we have realities which cannot be put aside as children's tales.

At present we have to estimate the relation which the chronicles of Regal Rome bear to actual historical fact.

The reigns of the seven kings have been thrown into four chapters purposely, since each presents a legendary character of its own. The accounts of Romulus and Numa differ from those of Tullus and Ancus ; both one and the other differ widely from the chronicle of the first Tarquin and of Servius ; while the story of the last Tarquin brings us into the atmosphere of mere romance.

The reigns of Romulus and Numa are in the realm of pure mythology. Romulus, like Aeneas, is the son of a god ; Numa, like Anchises, is the favoured lover of a goddess. Romulus is the man of force, for Roma (ῥώμη)

*By modern authors.*

*Niebuhr.*

*Relation of the stories of the Roman kings to actual historical fact.*

*Romulus and Numa.*

<sup>1</sup> See the Preface to Niebuhr's *History of Rome*. Cp. Note C., p. 71.

signifies *strength and vigour*.<sup>1</sup> Numa is the man of law, for *numus* (*νόμος*) signifies *law*.<sup>2</sup> Under these typical names is embodied the origin of the social, political, and religious institutions of Rome; and under the mythical story of these reigns we may clearly discern historical truth. We see in them a continual struggle between the Latin influence and the Sabine. Romulus the Roman founds the city on the Palatine, and is obliged to admit into partnership Titus the Sabine, who occupies both the Quirinal and Saturnian Hills. Then Titus is slain by Latins, and the Roman king regains ascendancy. But he is carried miraculously away, is worshipped under a Sabine name, and a Sabine king succeeds. Here we trace the marks of Sabine conquest. The admission of Sabines into the city suggests this; their occupation of the stronghold on the Saturnian Hill confirms it; the assumption of a Sabine name by the Roman king, and the appellation of Quirites given to the united citizens, prove it.<sup>3</sup>

Indeed, the relation of patrons and clients suggests a conquering and a conquered people. After the conquest it may be supposed that the chief families of the subdued native population were admitted to equality with the conquerors; while the mass of the natives sank into the condition of clients. But in the course of years, these clients became free, and at length formed one people with the patrons.

Something similar occurred after the conquest of England by William the Norman. The great Saxon families were favoured by the Conqueror till a widespread rebellion convinced him that he could not retain his power but by fear; a few years later the French wars promoted equality between the Norman lords and the Saxon chiefs, while the mass of the nation remained in a state of serfdom; but at length the Norman element was almost wholly absorbed by the Saxon.

We may say, then, that the reigns of Romulus and Numa represent a period of Sabine supremacy, during which institutions of Sabine origin were moulded and modified to suit the

<sup>1</sup> Lewis, i. 406.

<sup>2</sup> Ihne, i. 31.

<sup>3</sup> Mommsen, though he denies that the name Quirites is Sabine (i. 69, 90), admits that "a mixture of different nationalities certainly took place," and that "it is probable that the intruding Titus compelled the older Romans to accept the *synoikismos*" (cp. Volquardsen, in *Rh. Mus.*, N.F., xxxiii. 557). At the same time, we must bear in mind Mommsen's caution that "the two peoples were at that time far less sharply contrasted in language, manners, and customs than were the Roman and the Sabine of a later age."

genius of the combined people, and that slowly, but surely, the spirit and genius of the Latin people prevailed over their Sabine conquerors, just as the spirit and genius of the Anglo-Saxons gradually overpowered the Norman influence.

The reigns of Tullus and Ancus present, in some measure, a repetition of those of Romulus and Numa. The Roman king dies by a strange and sudden death; the Sabine *Tullus and* succeeds. But the miraculous has disappeared. *Ancus.*

The kings are ordinary mortals, not the sons and spouses of divinities; there is little even of heroic legend; but there are a few naked facts which have no doubt a historical basis—such as the destruction of Alba by Tullus,<sup>1</sup> the conquest of the Latins by Ancus, and the rapid growth of an independent Commonalty by the side of the patrons and their clients. There are, however, few signs of hostility between Latins and Sabines. The reigns of Tullus and Ancus seem to denote a period in which the two nations were going through a rapid process of fusion.

With the elder Tarquin and Servius the scene changes suddenly. The former is commonly represented as an Etruscan emigrant, though a legend has been preserved which calls him a Latin; the latter is generally *Tarquinius* regarded as a Latin, but one legend represents *Priscus and* him as an Etruscan chief, named Mastarna. It *Servius* seems likely that they were Etruscans who had made a successful raid on Rome.<sup>2</sup> *Tullius.*

It is very probable that, under these kings, Rome became the centre of a considerable monarchy, extending its sway over lower Etruria and all Latium. This is shown not only by the legends, but by the great works which still remain to attest the power and wealth of those who executed them, the great Cloaca of Tarquin, the fortifications of Servius, the large extent of ground enclosed by them, and the plan of the Capitoline Temple.

Further, under these kings the old oligarchical constitution was in great measure superseded. The first kings had been the chiefs in war, and were, in theory, supreme in peace also; but, practically, they recognised the duty of taking the Senate's advice, and of consulting the people on specially important points.<sup>3</sup> But Tarquin admitted great numbers of new burgesses to leaven the oligarchy, and Servius remoulded the whole population into a new political frame. It cannot be doubted

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen, i. 126.

<sup>2</sup> Cp. Pelham, *Outlines of Roman History*, p. 28.

<sup>3</sup> See Pelham, *l.c.* p. 21.

that with the decrease in the power of the oligarchy, the power of the kings increased. The reigns of Tarquin the Elder and Servius represent a period in which the old oligarchy gave way before the royal power supported by the common people, just as



Wall of Servius.

in England the Commons were called to Parliament by the Plantagenet kings to counterbalance the overwhelming power of the feudal aristocracy.

The reign of the last Tarquin represents the consummation of this work. Royalty is now absolute. The Plebeians, having served the purpose of lowering the oligarchy, are cast aside, and a despotic monarchy overrules both alike. As the reigns of Tullus and Ancus, of the elder Tarquin and Servius are almost empty of legendary tales, so the accounts of the last Tarquin are nothing but a series of romantic legends, beginning with the death of Servius, and closing with the great battle of Lake Regillus. We collect from these legends that Tarquin the Despot was a powerful monarch, a man of ability and energy, who acknowledged no political rights except those of the monarch. No sooner was his fall achieved than the disunion of the Patrician and Plebeian Orders disclosed itself, just

as in England the enmity of Churchmen and Puritans, who had combined for a moment against the Stuarts, broke out with double fury after their fall.

In the History of Rome under the Patricians, which forms the subject of our next Book, we have still to deal with legendary narrative. But it is of a different kind to that which meets us in the chronicle of Regal Rome. There the legends are mostly national, and here they will be personal. There they refer to dynasties and the changes which arose from feuds between conquerors and conquered; here they relate chiefly to foreign wars and the prowess of patrician heroes.<sup>1</sup>

*Family  
legends of  
the early  
Republic.*

### NOTE C.

Niebuhr effected a great revolution in Roman History, and no subsequent writer can afford to neglect his work. At first his influence was universal; it is enough to refer to the great work of Schwegler and to the first volumes of Dr Arnold's *History*. At present he seems almost to have fallen into neglect; all know Niebuhr's name, but few read his writings.

It may be worth while to indicate very briefly the subsequent course of critical Roman History.

One of the points on which Niebuhr laid chief stress was the difference in probability (and, as he added, also in attestation) between the accounts that have come down to us of the political and of the constitutional details of early Roman History.

The stories of the early wars of Rome are, he admitted, a mass of inconsistency and legend, coloured by family and national pride, and bearing no real relation to historical probability; very little knowledge is to be gained by a study of them. The constitutional history, on the other hand, could, Niebuhr thought, be recovered. It is true that Livy, Dionysius, and others, misunderstood, or did not care about it, but the authorities on whom they drew, especially Fabius Pictor and Julius Gracchanus, preserved, according to Niebuhr, valid and reliable traditions. The problem, therefore, is to find in our extant writers the traces of this true tradition; and only one method is available for this purpose—namely, historical divination.

Niebuhr possessed the gift of historical divination to a remarkable degree, yet his discoveries did not always carry conviction, and they rested, even when most plausible, on a merely subjective basis.

Rubino (*Untersuchungen*, 1839) argued further that Niebuhr was wrong in supposing that there is any discoverable difference between the account of Livy or Dionysius and their earlier authorities; all the authors who give us information about Roman constitutional history, while differing in a good many details, agree substantially in their main story, which is on the whole consistent and intelligible. We ought then to suppose that, whatever may be the case with the political history, constitutional history at least has come down to us in the form of a

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* Ihne, i. 280.



genuine and unbroken tradition. On these principles Rubino proceeded to work out the early constitutional history of Rome by copying the statements of our ancient authorities, and only altering them so far as was necessary to bring them into harmony. This procedure was part of a conservative reaction against the whole work of Niebuhr, which threatened at one time even to extend as far as the details of the early Roman wars, and to try to force its disciples to believe that true history is to be found even in narratives obviously inspired by mere family pride.

It remained to be pointed out that even though the whole constitutional tradition be substantially one, this fact does not prove it to be necessarily true. We cannot trace the tradition back farther than the time of Fabius Pictor, and there is an interval of nearly three centuries between the expulsion of the kings and this date. Sir G. C. Lewis (*The Credibility of Early Roman History*, 1855) accordingly argued that no certainty is to be arrived at with regard to any event before the time of the war with Pyrrhus, and he proceeded to discourage, as unprofitable, the study of early Roman history, while dwelling on the great practical advantage to be gained from the investigation of the later Republic and the Empire.

If literary tradition were our only source of information, probably Sir G. C. Lewis' conclusion would be valid. Fortunately, we are able to supplement and correct the notices of ancient writers by the study of Roman constitutional law and of archaeological remains; to have utilised these materials to the fullest extent is one of the many merits of Mommsen.

A few illustrations of their value may be given here. The constitutional practices of later times bear witness to the existence of the kingship (*cp. Dict. Ant.*, "INTERREX, REX SACRORUM, DICTATOR") to the powers of the patricians ("AUCTORITAS PATRUM, COMITIA"), and the ancient authority of the senate ("SENATUS"); while the existence of the *comitia curiata* and the *comitia centuriata*, the former of which was reduced to a mere form in historical times, tends to confirm the tradition as to the Servian reform; and the original union of three tribes in Rome is abundantly illustrated from surviving institutions (*cp. p. 21*).

Archaeology has revealed to us the original city and fortification of the Palatine, as well as the walls and ramparts of a later date, which are connected in tradition with the origin of the *comitia centuriata* and with the name of Servius Tullius;<sup>1</sup> a careful study of our extant material has also told us something about the "hill city" on the Quirinal (Mommsen, i. 66). Further additions to our knowledge will be made from the same sources, law and archaeology, and perhaps also from literary materials interpreted in the light of hints derived from them.

It will be noticed that it is the constructive and not the destructive side of Niebuhr's work which his successors have felt bound to set aside (*cp. Arnold's History of Rome*, i. 219).

Many may feel that in the latter part of the preceding chapter too much weight has been attached, after the manner of Niebuhr,

---

<sup>1</sup> Some recent writers argue that the "Walls of Servius Tullius" do not belong to the kingly period at all, but to the fourth century B.C. (see *Hermes*, xxx. 13). This view cannot be held to be established yet; but if it be adopted, the relation between the *pomerium* and tribes of Servius Tullius on the one hand, and his walls on the other (p. 46), becomes simpler.

to tradition interpreted by criticism. The story of the general sequence of the Roman monarchy has no claim to acceptance except its plausibility, for the evidence taken alone is certainly too weak to carry conviction. But even a weakly-attested tradition should not be neglected when its content, far from being unintelligible, seems in itself probable.

AUTHORITIES.—Development of critical Roman History: Lewis, ch. i.; Schwegler, *R.G.*, b. 2; Herzog, i. Introduction.

Detailed criticism of the legends of the kings: Lewis, ch. xi.; Schwegler, *R.G.*, vol. i.; Ihne, *History of Rome*, b. i.; *Early Rome*.

Constitution of Rome under the Kings: Mommsen, i. ch. v., vi.; Herzog, i. b. i.

For Niebuhr's theory as to the origin of early Roman History in popular poems, see Macaulay, *Lays of Ancient Rome*, Preface; and Lewis' criticism (i. 202). (It has been revived by Nitzsch, *Römische Annalistik*, 245.)





View of the Campagna.

## BOOK II

# ROME UNDER THE PATRICIANS

(B.C. 510?-367)

## CHAPTER VI

DECLINE OF ROMAN POWER AFTER THE EXPULSION OF THE  
TARQUINS—GEOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF THE NEIGHBOUR-  
HOOD OF ROME.

POLYBIUS tells us that, in the first year of the Republic, a sort of commercial treaty was made between Rome on the one part and Carthage on the other.<sup>1</sup> The very fact of a great trading city like Carthage thinking it worth while to enter into such a treaty, leads us to look on Rome with very different eyes from those of the early annalists. It is evident that she must have occupied an important position in the Mediterranean. The impression raised

<sup>1</sup> For arguments in support of this date, see Strachan-Davidson, *Selections from Polybius*, Proleg. vii.

by the mere existence of such a treaty is much strengthened by its articles, so far as we gather from the account given of them. It appears that the Carthaginians, on their part, bound themselves to make no settlement on the coast of Latium, while the Romans, on their part, covenanted not to sail along the African coast westward of the Bay of Tunis.<sup>1</sup> This jealousy of maritime interference on the side of Carthage shows that Rome must have been in possession of a considerable naval force. Again, the Latins are in the treaty expressly called "subjects" of Rome, which confirms the statements of the Roman annalists, that all Latium owned the sovereignty of the Tarquins.

It is probable, then, that the Tarquins and Servius ruled a considerable kingdom, which included all Latium, and probably also a great part of Etruria. It is certain, as will appear from what follows, that this dominion fell with the monarchy.

*Roman power falls with the monarchy.*

The war with Porsena and the Etruscans shows that Etruria was no longer subject to Rome : nay, there is evidence to prove that the Romans themselves became for a time subject to the Etruscan yoke. We have heard the legend of Porsena as it has come down to us.

*Rome subject to Etruria for a time.*

But it is certain that the truth has been much distorted. The tales of Horatius, of Mucius, of Cloelia, are noble poetry, and stir the youthful heart with no ungenerous fire. Yet we must confess that Porsena conquered Rome, and held it for a time at least under an iron rule. Tacitus, the greatest of Roman historians, lets drop the fact that "the city itself was surrendered" to the Etruscan monarch :<sup>2</sup> another writer tells us that the war lasted three years :<sup>3</sup> the legend itself confesses that Rome at this time lost its Trans-Tiberine *pagi*, and it adds that Porsena was honoured by the present of an ivory throne, a sceptre, a crown of gold, and a robe of state, the very marks of Etruscan monarchy introduced at Rome by the elder Tarquin : lastly, Pliny expressly cites the treaty concluded with Porsena, by which it appears that he forbade the Romans to use any iron except for implements of husbandry.<sup>4</sup>

But this dominion of the Etruscans over Rome did not con-

<sup>1</sup> For this interpretation of the treaty, which does not agree with the view of Polybius, see Strachan-Davidson, *l.c.* p. 68.

<sup>2</sup> "Dedita urbe," Tac., *Hist.*, iii. 72.

<sup>3</sup> Orosius, ii. 5.

<sup>4</sup> *N.H.*, xxxiv. 39. With this may be compared the treatment of the Israelites by the Philistines (1 Sam. xiii. 19-22).

tinue long, for, soon after, their army was defeated before the Latin city of Aricia.<sup>1</sup>

So also, notwithstanding the triumph of Lake Regillus, it is certain that Rome no longer was the head of Latium. Even the Latin cities, Tusculum, Lanuvium, Corioli, and others, within twenty miles of the Forum, asserted their independence, not to speak of Tibur, Praenesté, and others, which were more remote. The Sabine tribes also in proximity to Rome seem to have supported the Latins in their revolt. But a powerful chief, of the name of

*Rome no longer  
head of  
Latium.*

*Attus Clausus.*

Attus Clausus, with a following of no less than five thousand clients, became a Roman under the name of Appius Claudius, and was settled in a Sabine district beyond the Anio, which was constituted as a local Tribe.<sup>2</sup> Rome, therefore, now appears as mistress only of a small territory on the left bank of the Tiber. The next century and a half of her history is occupied in reconquering what she had lost; and though the narrative is still much mixed up with legendary tales, yet the lands which she wins are real and substantial things, and remain in her possession for ever. Here, then, it will be instructive for the student to pause and take a geographical survey of the Roman territory and its adjacent lands.

The city of Rome stands in the midst of a long tract of volcanic country, which stretches from the Pontine Marshes on the south to Acquapendente, a town of modern Tuscany, on the north. The land along the coastline of this tract, from Civita Vecchia, the port of modern Rome, to Cape Circello, is flat and low. But the land gradually rises inland, till at Rome the general level is considerably above the sea. To one standing upon the Capitol, the view towards Tuscany is immediately bounded by a ridge of hills, which skirt the Tiber on the west. The height directly west of the Capitol is Mount Janiculum; northward, and facing the Campus Martius, is the Vatican hill; while still further north appears the considerable eminence now called Monte Mario. Due north, the view up the valley of the Tiber is closed by the noble mass of

<sup>1</sup> Ihne (*R. G.*, i.<sup>2</sup>, 101) thinks that a national revolt against the Etruscans started from Campania under Aristodemus of Cumae, Rome taking only a secondary part in this. See also Lewis, ii. 44, 521.

<sup>2</sup> Virgil (*Aen.*, vii. 706) implies that the Claudii belonged to the original Sabine contingent in Rome, and Suetonius (*Tib.* 1) mentions a view that they came under Romulus; the traditions, though inconsistent, all agree as to the Sabine origin of the Claudii. About this time the Crustumine tribe, the first that bore a local name, raised the number to twenty-one (above, p. 46).

the Soracté. From this point round to the sea, that is on the north-east, east and south, the eye ranges over a plain, popularly called the *Campagna di Roma*.

A little to the south of east the plain is interrupted by a beautiful range of hills, which rise abruptly, and by themselves, from its surface. This is the volcanic range so well known as the *Alban Hills*. The highest peak, measuring about 3000 feet, was anciently crowned by the Temple of Jupiter Latiaris, the common sanctuary of the Latin nation; and on the ridge, of which it forms the culminating point, once lay the town of Alba Longa. In two hollows to the south-west are found the Alban Lake and the Lake of Nemus, being both of them formed by accumulations of water in the craters of extinct volcanoes. On a separate ridge to the north lay Tusculum (*Frascati*), one of the Latin cities which threw off the Roman yoke on the expulsion of the Tarquins: Corioli and Lanuvium were situated on similar eminences to the south.

A line, drawn along the map of Italy from below Narnia down the Tiber, then across the Sabine country to Tibur, and so past Praenesté and Signia to Tarracina, marks the edge of a continuous chain of hills which bound the plain of Latium. At Praenesté the ridge sinks and lets the eye into the valley of the Trerus (*Sacco*), which runs eastward to join the Liris. Praenesté (*Palestrina*) itself stands on a bold, projecting limestone eminence, in the gap formed by the sinking of the hills. Now, this natural division of the range, which we call the Lower Apennines, corresponds to its political division at the time of which we speak. The range between the right bank of the Trerus and Tarracina was the hill country of the Volsci, who stretched across the Liris to Sora and Arpinum. The upper part, from the Anio northwards, was the country of the Aequians, reaching beyond Carseoli and Alba Fucensis, and including the Fucine lake (*Lake of Celano*), the largest piece of water in the Apennine range. Between these two tribes—that is between the Trerus and the Anio—lay wedged, in their upland valley, the Hernicans.<sup>1</sup> The mountains to the north-east about Reaté up to Amiternum, are the ancient homes of the Sabines, and from these mountains descended the first occupants of Rome and Latium. Close above Amiternum rises the wild mass

<sup>1</sup> On the Volsci, see above p. II. Of the affinities of the Aequi and Hernici we know very little: they may perhaps have been more closely allied to the Latins than were the Volsci.

of Monte Corno, and the highest peaks of the Apennine range. For six months of the year the central ridge may be distinguished by its snow-capt summits.

Beyond the ridge, which has been described as barring all view towards ancient Etruria on the west and north-west, lay what we may call Lower Etruria. The district *Lower Etruria.* lying between the lower valley of the Tiber and the sea, is separated from Upper Etruria by a range of volcanic hills, which strike across the country nearly at right angles to the Apennine range. They formed an unfrequented tract, then called the Ciminian Forest, beyond which no Roman for many years after dared to penetrate. It is from the edge of this range above Viterbo that the traveller from Florence used, in the days before railways, to obtain his first view of the Campagna.

*Veii.* Below these hills was the country occupied by the Veientes ; and beyond Veii were the cities of Sutrium, Nepeté, and Falerii ; while towards the sea lay the low lands of Caeré (*Cervetri*), a city which plays a considerable part in the history of Rome. Veii was not more than twelve miles distant from the walls of Rome.

With this geographical sketch, which should be verified by comparison with the map, all the progress of Rome in foreign conquest may readily be followed for the next century and a half. Her arms, in that period, seldom travelled further than twenty miles from Rome ; generally their action took place in a much more circumscribed sphere.

AUTHORITIES.—See note to chapter iii.

## CHAPTER VII

### THE TRIBUNATE

IN the following chapters of this Book we shall have to record not only the slow steps by which the Romans recovered dominion over their neighbours, but also the long-continued and patient struggle by which the Plebeians raised themselves to a level with the Patricians, who had again become the dominant caste at Rome. To an Englishman this history ought to be especially dear, for more than any other it resembles the long-enduring constancy and noble self-control with which the Commons of his own country secured their rights. It was by a struggle of this nature that the character of the Roman people was moulded into that form of strength and energy which threw back Hannibal to the coasts of Africa, and made their city mistress of the Mediterranean.

There can be no doubt that the wars which followed the expulsion of the Tarquins, with the loss of territory that accompanied these wars, must have reduced all orders of men at Rome to great distress, but the Plebeians most of all. The Plebeians consisted entirely of landholders and husbandmen; for in those times the practice of trades and mechanical arts was considered unworthy of a free-born man.<sup>1</sup> Some of the Plebeian families were as wealthy as any among the Patricians; but the mass of them were petty yeomen, who lived on their small farms, and were solely dependent for a living on their own thrift and industry. Most of them lived in the villages and small towns, which in those times were thickly sprinkled over the slopes of the Campagna.

---

<sup>1</sup> Even if this was not so in the earliest days of Rome, the Servian organisation would have the effect of practically disfranchising all non-landholders (*cf.* Mommsen, i. 248).



The Patricians, on the other hand, resided chiefly within the city. If slaves were few as yet, they had the labour of their clients available to till their farms; and through their clients also they were enabled to derive a profit from the practice of trading and crafts, which personally neither they nor the Plebeians would stoop to pursue. Besides these sources of profit, they had at this time the exclusive use of the Public Land, a subject on which we shall have to speak more at length hereafter. At present, it will be sufficient to say, that the Public Land had been the Crown Land or Regal Domain, which had been forfeited to the state. The Patricians, being in possession of all actual power, engrossed possession of it, and paid a small quit-rent to the Treasury for this great advantage.

Besides this, the necessity of service in the army, or militia (as it might more justly be called), acted very differently on the rich landholder and the small yeoman. The latter being called out with sword and spear for the summer's campaign, as his turn came round, was obliged to leave his farm uncared for, and his crop could only be reaped by the kind aid of neighbours; whereas the rich proprietor had his clients and his labourers, and could render military service in person without robbing his land of labour. Moreover, the territory of Rome was so narrow, and the enemy's borders so close at hand, that any night the stout yeoman might find himself reduced to beggary by seeing his crops destroyed, his cattle driven away, and his homestead burnt in a sudden foray. The Patricians and rich Plebeians were, it is true, exposed to the same contingencies. But wealth will always provide some defence; and it is reasonable to think that the Patricians and their clients, together with the wealthy Plebeians, might escape the storm which destroyed the isolated yeoman.

For some time after the expulsion of the Tarquins it was necessary for the Patricians to treat the Plebeians with liberality.<sup>1</sup> The institutions of "The Commons' King," King Servius, suspended by Tarquin, were, partially at least, restored: it is said even that one of the first Consuls was a Plebeian,<sup>2</sup> and that several Plebeians were admitted into the Senate. But when the fear of the Tarquins ceased, the Patricians no longer thought it necessary to court popularity. The Consuls were elected by the Centuriate Assembly, but all real power was in the hands of the Senate, and that body, in spite of its Plebeian members,

*All power  
gradually  
resumed by  
Patricians.*

<sup>1</sup> Cp. Mommsen, i. 341.

<sup>2</sup> Niebuhr (*Hist.*, i. 522); but his evidence is not conclusive.



acted steadily in the interests of the Patricians.<sup>1</sup> All the names of the early Consuls, except in the first year of the Republic, are Patrician. And if by chance a Consul displayed popular tendencies, it was in the power of the Senate to suspend his power by the appointment of a Dictator. Thus, practically, the Patrician burgesses again became the *Populus* or Body Politic of Rome.

It must here not be forgotten that this dominant body was an exclusive caste; that is, it consisted of a limited number of noble families, who allowed none of their members to marry with persons born out of the pale of their own Order. The child of a Patrician and a Plebeian, or of a Patrician and a client, was not considered as born in lawful wedlock; and, however proud the blood which it derived from one parent, the child sank to the condition of the parent of lower rank. This was expressed in Roman language by saying there was no right of *conubium* between Patricians and any inferior classes of men.

*Patricians, an exclusive caste.*

*Conubium.*

The Plebeians might long have submitted to this state of social and political inferiority, had not their personal distress, and the severe laws of debtor and creditor, driven them to seek relief, by claiming to be recognised as members of the body politic. If a Roman borrowed money, he was expected to enter into a contract with his creditor to pay the debt by a certain day;<sup>2</sup> and if on that day he was unable to discharge his obligation, he was summoned before the Patrician judge, who was authorised by the law to assign the defaulter as a bondsman to his creditor;<sup>3</sup> that is,

*Severe laws of debtor and creditor.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Some of the most important duties of the Senate were actually confined to its Patrician members (p. 56). It is a disputed point how long this continued to be the case, but there can be little doubt as to the period of which we are now speaking.

The *comitia curiata* retained the right of conferring the *imperium* upon officers elected by the *comitia centuriata*; but this right, of which some use was made for factious purposes in the last days of the Republic (*cp.* Cic. *ad Fam.*, i. 9. 25; Dio., xxxix. 19; etc.), was a mere formality, and the *comitia curiata* may henceforth be neglected, whether with Niebuhr we regard it as exclusively aristocratic and Patrician (*Hist.*, i. 333), or with Mommsen (i. 329) as democratic and predominantly Plebeian.

<sup>2</sup> A contract of this kind was in Roman language called *nexum*, and persons bound by contract were *nexi* (*Dict. Ant.*, s.v.).

<sup>3</sup> The technical word was *addixit*. Hence persons delivered over as bondsmen were *addicti*; and the word *addictus* came to mean generally *bound to do a thing*, as in the phrase "Nullius addictus iurare in verba magistri" (Hor., *Ep.*, i. 1. 14).

the debtor was obliged to pay by his own labour the debt which he was unable to pay in money. Or if a man incurred a debt without such formal contract, the rule was still more imperious ; for in that case, after a lapse of thirty days without payment of the debt, the creditor was empowered to arrest the person of his debtor, to load him with chains, and feed him on bread and water for sixty days and more ; and then, if the money still remained unpaid, he might put him to death or sell him as a slave to the highest bidder ; or, if there were several creditors, they might hew his body in pieces and divide it. And in this last case the law provided with scrupulous providence against the evasion by which the Merchant of Venice escaped the cruelty of the Jew ; for the Roman law said, that "whether a man cut more or less [than his due], he should incur no penalty." These atrocious provisions, however, defeated their own object ; for there was no more unprofitable way in which the body of a debtor could be disposed of.<sup>1</sup>

It was, by the common reckoning, fifteen years after the expulsion of the Tarquins, that the Plebeians were roused to take the first step in the assertion of their rights. The *Oppression and discontent.* Plebeians had reason to expect some relaxation of the law of debt, in consideration of the great services they had rendered in the war against the Tyrant. But none was granted. The Patrician creditors began to avail themselves of the severity of the law against their Plebeian debtors, and the discontent that followed was great.

In this threatening state of affairs, news came that the Volscians were approaching the city, and the Senate met to take measures for defence. The Consuls of the *Appius Claudius.* year were Appius Claudius, the proud Sabine nobleman who had lately become a Roman, and who now led the high Patrician party with all the unbending energy of a chieftain whose will had never been disputed by his obedient clansmen,<sup>2</sup> and P. Servilius, who represented the milder and more liberal party of the Fathers.

While preparations were being made to repel the Volscian foe, an aged man rushed into the forum, loaded with chains, clothed with a few scanty rags, his hair and beard long and

<sup>1</sup> Ihne (i. 147) and Nitzsch (*Röm. Ann.*, 46, 334) have raised difficulties about this question of debt. They both think that the story in its present form is a late invention, Nitzsch attributing it to Calpurnius Piso (consul in 133 B.C.), who wished to oppose the Gracchan policy of re-establishing the *plebs rustica*, by magnifying the evils of the old days. See Herzog (i. 145) for a criticism of these views.

<sup>2</sup> On the traditional policy of the Claudii, see Mommsen, i. 495.

squalid, his whole appearance ghastly, as of one oppressed by long want of food and air. He was recognised as a brave soldier, the old comrade of many who thronged the forum. He told his story, how that in the late wars the enemy had burnt his house and plundered his little farm; that to replace his losses he had borrowed money of a Patrician; that his cruel creditor (in default of payment) had thrown him into prison,<sup>1</sup> and tormented him with chains and scourges. At this sad tale the passions of the people rose high. Appius was obliged to conceal himself, while Servilius undertook to plead the cause of the Plebeians with the Senate.

It was in vain, however, that the Consuls proclaimed a levy. The stout yeomen, one and all, refused to give in their names and take the military oath, till Servilius proclaimed by edict that no citizen should be imprisoned for debt so long as the war lasted, and that at the close of the war he would propose an alteration of the law. The Plebeians trusted him, and the enemy was driven back. But when the popular Consul returned with his victorious soldiers, he was denied a triumph; and the Senate, led by Appius, refused to make any concession in favour of the debtors.

This breach of faith brought on a renewal of troubles. In the next year again news came that the enemy were ravaging the lands of Rome, and the Senate, knowing that the Consuls would be unable to raise an army, appointed a Dictator to lead the citizens into the field. But to make the act popular they named M'. Valerius, a kinsman of the great Poplicola. The same scene was repeated over again. Valerius protected the Plebeians against their creditors while they were at war, and promised them relief when war was over. But when the danger was gone by, Appius again prevailed, the Senate again refused to make concessions, and the Dictator laid down his office, calling gods and men to witness that he was not responsible for this breach of faith.

The enemy had been repelled, but the term during which the Plebeians were bound by their military oath had not yet expired, and the Senate ordered the Consuls to take the command of the army. The soldiers, however, set at naught the authority of their leaders, and proceeded to elect as generals two of their own number, L. Junius

*Breach of  
faith by  
Patricians.*

*M'. Valerius,  
Dictator.*

*Renewed  
breach of  
faith.*

*Secession of  
Plebeians.*

<sup>1</sup> Such prisons were called *ergastula*, and afterwards became the places for keeping slaves in.

Brutus and L. Sicinius Bellutus by name. Under their command they occupied the hill which lies at the junction of the Tiber and the Anio, at a distance of about three miles from Rome.<sup>1</sup> Their purpose was to bring the Patricians to terms by threatening to form a new city. But the Patricians were not willing to lose the best of their soldiery, the cultivators of the greater part of the Roman territory, and they sent embassies to persuade the seceders to return. They, however, turned a deaf ear to all promises, for they had too often been deceived. Appius now urged his compeers to leave the Plebeians to themselves; the Nobles and their clients, he said, could well maintain themselves without such base aid.

But wiser sentiments prevailed. T. Lartius and M'. Valerius, both of whom had been Dictators, with Menenius Agrippa, a Patrician of popular character, were empowered to treat with the people; and Menenius addressed them in the famous fable of the Belly and the Members:

"In times of old," said he, "when every Member of the body could think for itself, and each had a separate will of its own, they all, with one consent, resolved to revolt against the Belly. They knew no reason, they said, why they should toil from morning till night in its service, while the Belly lay at its ease in the midst of all, and indolently grew fat upon their labours. Accordingly, they agreed to support it no more. The feet vowed they would carry it no longer; the hands that they would give it no more food; the teeth that they would not chew a morsel of meat, even were it placed between them. Thus resolved, the Members for a time showed their spirit and kept their resolution; but soon they found, that instead of mortifying the Belly, they only undid themselves; they languished for awhile, and perceived too late that it was owing to the Belly that they had strength to work and courage to mutiny."<sup>2</sup>

The moral of this fable was plain. The people readily applied it to the Patricians and themselves, and terms of agreement were arranged between the Plebeian chiefs and the Patrician messengers. It was required that the debtors who could not pay should have their debts cancelled, and that those who had been given up into slavery (*addicti*) should be restored to freedom.<sup>3</sup> This for the

<sup>1</sup> According to the annalist Piso, this secession was to the Aventine (see Lewis, ii. 75).

<sup>2</sup> Cp. Shakespeare's *Coriolanus*, Act I, Scene i.

<sup>3</sup> Dionysius, vi. 83. Livy and Cicero say nothing about this.

past. And as a security for the future, it was demanded that two Plebeians should be appointed for the sole purpose of protecting the people from the Patrician magistrates. These two officers were to be called Tribunes of the Plebs.<sup>1</sup> Their persons were to be sacred and inviolable during their year of office, whence their office is called "sacrosancta potestas." They were never to leave the city for a night except when their presence was required at the *Feriae Latinae*. Their houses were to be open continually, that all who needed their aid might demand it without delay.

Afterwards, the number of the Tribunes was increased to five, and eventually to ten. They gained the privilege of attending all sittings of the Senate, though they were not considered members of that famous body. Above all, they acquired the great and perilous power of the Veto, by which any one of their number might stop any law, impede the action of any magistrate, or arrest any decree of the Senate, without cause assigned. This right of Veto was called the right of intercession. Of their right of assembling the Plebeians, we shall speak in the next chapter.

On the spot where this treaty was made, an altar was built to Jupiter, the Causer and Banisher of fear, for the Plebeians had gone thither in fear and returned from it in safety. The place was called Mons Sacer, or the Sacred Hill, for ever after, and the laws by which the sanctity of the tribunitian office was secured were called the *Leges Sacratae*.

The Tribunes were not properly magistrates, for they had no express functions or official duties to discharge. They were representatives and protectors of the Plebs, not officers of the whole people. At the same time, however, with the institution of these protective officers, the Plebeians were allowed the right of having two Aediles chosen



Coin of the Fannian gens, showing head of Ceres, and Plebeian Aediles (Stevenson, "AEDILES PLEBIS").

from their own body. The original duty of these officers was

<sup>1</sup> For the origin of this name, see *Dût. Ant.*, "TRIBUNUS"; also E. Meier in *Hermes*, xxx. i.

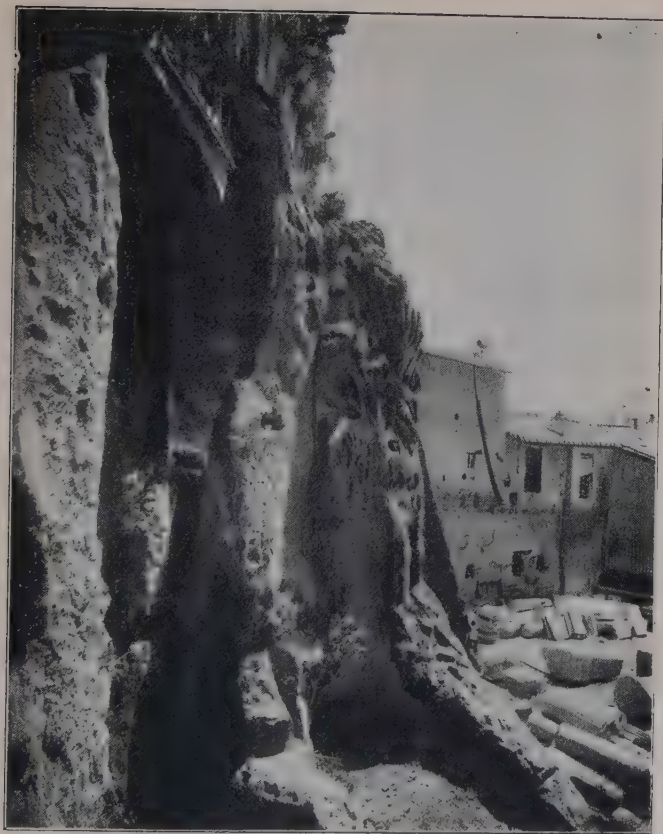
to take care of the temple *ædes* of the goddess Ceres : in later times, they had charge of the public buildings generally, repaired the roadways, preserved order in the streets, and discharged other functions, partly belonging to police-officers, and partly to commissioners of public works.<sup>1</sup>

AUTHORITIES.—Livy, ii. 28-33. and Dionysius, vi. 34-90. are the most important. Lewis' work contains a full criticism of all the ancient notices for the period covered by ch. vii.-xxi. Schwegler's *Römische Geschichte* and Pais' *Storia di Roma* are even more exhaustive. The *Histories* of Mommsen and Ihne should be consulted throughout : and for constitutional points, Mommsen's *Römisches Staatsrecht* (French translation by P. F. Girard) and Herzog's *Gesch. u. Syst. d. röm. Staatsverfassung*. See also Ramsay, *Manual of Roman Antiquities* (ed. 16, 1898).

---

<sup>1</sup> *Dict. Ant.*, "AEDILES" ; see also below, p. 147.





The Tarpeian Rock.

## CHAPTER VIII

### AGRARIAN LAW—THE ELECTION OF THE TRIBUNES BY THE PLEBEIANS

THE small beginning of political independence which the Plebeians had gained by the institution of the Tribunate seemed likely to be much furthered by the unexpected appearance of a patron of their Order in the ranks of the Patricians themselves. This was Spurius Cassius, a

*Spurius  
Cassius.*



notable man, who was three times Consul.<sup>1</sup> A remarkable act of his third Consulship (486 B.C.) was the proposal of the first AGRARIAN LAW.

Great mistakes formerly prevailed on the nature of the Roman laws familiarly termed Agrarian.<sup>2</sup> It was supposed that by these laws all land was declared common property, and that at certain intervals of time the State resumed possession of them, and made a fresh distribution to all citizens, rich and poor. But no such law as this ever existed at Rome. The lands which were to be distributed by Agrarian laws were not private property, but the property of the State. They were originally those Public Lands which had been the Domain of the Kings; and which were increased whenever any city or people was conquered by the Romans, because it was an Italian practice to confiscate the lands of the conquered, in whole or in part, to the use and benefit of the conquering people. The Patrician burgesses had occupied the greater part, if not all, of this Public Land. Now, as this land chiefly consisted of pasturage, it was manifest that if the Plebeians could add to their small farms, which were mostly in tillage, the right of feeding cattle upon it, their means would be much increased, and they were likely to become much less dependent upon the rich Patrician burgesses.

Sp. Cassius proposed a law to distribute this land, or a part of it, among the Plebeians. His services to the state had been great; his official power was great. The remembrance of the Secession to the Sacred Mount was yet fresh, and the Agrarian Law was suffered to pass. The Patrician burgesses calculated that it would be more easy to thwart the execution of the law than to prevent its being passed. And they calculated rightly.

But though the Patricians had yielded thus far, they only waited for an opportunity of vengeance. When Sp. Cassius laid down his Consulship that opportunity arrived. It was said that in the Leagues formed with the Latins and Hernicans, of which we shall speak in the next chapter, he had granted terms too favourable to these people, and was seeking to make himself despotic lord of Rome by means of foreigners, as Tarquin had done. But whether his views were simply ambitious, or whether they were directed to the true interests of the community, the accusation was enough to ruin him: for the very name of KING had become hateful to

<sup>1</sup> For his foreign policy, see below, p. 100.

<sup>2</sup> *Cp.* Niebuhr, *Hist.*, ii. 130.

Roman ears. Sp. Cassius was indicted by the Quaestores Parricidii,<sup>1</sup> L. Valerius, and Kaeso Fabius, the latter a leading man in one of the most powerful Patrician *gentes*. He was tried before the people, found guilty, and condemned to die the death of a traitor. He was scourged and beheaded, and his house razed to the ground.

The Patricians were successful in impeding the execution of the Agrarian law of Cassius. But three years after, a Tribune named Maenius declared that he would prevent the militia from being called out to take the field against the Volscian foe till this grievance was redressed. He offered, that is, in virtue of his protective powers, to secure any Plebeian soldier against the power of the Consul should he refuse to obey the order to give in his name for active service. This first essay of the Tribunician power was the origin of that tremendous intercessory force which in later times was so freely exercised. At present the attempt proved an empty threat. The Consuls held their levy outside the walls of the city, where they possessed power of life and death, and where the Tribunes' protective power availed not. Another attempt of the Plebeian chiefs was more successful. The Tribunes of the year 476 B.C. publicly indicted the ex-Consul Menenius, son of him who had done good service to the state at the Secession, for suffering the Fabian *gens* to be overpowered by the Veientes,<sup>2</sup> and Menenius was condemned to pay a fine. At length, three years after (473), matters were brought to issue by the Tribune Genucius, who impeached the Consuls of the previous year for preventing the execution of the Agrarian law. Consternation prevailed among the Patricians. The condemnation of Menenius filled them with dismay; and they resolved on striking a blow calculated to prevent such attempts in future. On the day of trial the Tribune appeared not. His friends sought him at home. He was found murdered in his chamber.

But the effect produced was contrary to expectation. The flame, which the Patricians expected to smother, was fanned to greater violence. The Consuls ordered a levy to take the field, confidently expecting tame submission. But when one Volero Publilius, who had served as a

---

<sup>1</sup> These officers were probably appointed at the beginning of the Republic, the two Quaestors corresponding to the two Consuls. But according to Julius Gracchanus they already existed under the Kings. *Cp. Tac., Ann., xi. 22*, with Furneaux' notes; above, p. 30.

<sup>2</sup> See below, p. 100.

centurion, was called out as a private soldier, he appealed to the Tribunes for protection. They hung back, terrified by the fate of Genucius. But Volero threw himself among his compatriots, a tumult arose, and the Consuls were obliged to take refuge in the Senate-house.

Volero Publilius was chosen one of the Tribunes for the ensuing year (472 B.C.), and he straightway proposed a law by which it was provided that the Tribunes of the Plebs should be elected by the Plebeians themselves at their Assembly of Tribes. This is usually called the Publilian law of Volero.<sup>1</sup>

For a whole year the Patricians succeeded in putting off the law. But the Plebeians were determined to have it. Volero was re-elected Tribune; and C. Laetorius, a man of great resolution, was chosen with him—facts which show that in seasons of excitement the Plebeians were able to elect their own friends even before the time of the law of Volero.

The more violent among the Patricians now prepared to prevent this measure from being accepted by any means. App.

*Appius  
Claudius con-  
tinues his  
father's  
policy.*

Claudius, son of him whose haughty opposition had provoked the Secession to the Sacred Mount, had succeeded his father as the bitterest enemy of the Plebs, and was chosen Consul by his party. The law was again brought forward by the new Tribunes; and the Consul, attended by his lictors, appeared at the Assembly of the Plebeians to interrupt the proceedings. Laetorius ordered him to withdraw; and a general riot followed, which was only stopped by the intervention of the other Consul. But the Tribunes were resolved to carry their law, and by a sudden movement they occupied the Capitol itself, and defied all the attacks of the Patricians. Appius, with the usual spirit of his family, opposed all compromise; but the milder counsels of his colleague prevailed, and the Patricians (by the authority of the Senate) passed the Publilian law (471 B.C.).

For the next year (470 B.C.) five Tribunes were elected by the Plebeians themselves, without let or hindrance from the Patrician burgesses.<sup>2</sup> Thus, no doubt, these officers became real protectors of their brethren. But their powers were too large and unrestricted, and the fruits of the absolute veto which they afterwards learned

*Five Tribunes  
elected by the  
Plebeians.*

<sup>1</sup> See Note D, p. 91.

<sup>2</sup> For the original number of the Tribunes, and their subsequent increase, see *Dict. Ant.*, "TRIBUNUS." The statements in the text are those of Livy.

to exercise, will amply appear in the course of our subsequent narrative.

NOTE D.—THE PUBLILIAN LAW OF VOLERO.

The precise effect of this law has been much disputed. It would seem to have had two results:—(1) the meetings of the Plebeians under the presidency of their Tribunes were now for the first time officially recognised by the Patricians: (2) those meetings were given the right of electing the Tribunes.

(1) The Plebeians may previously have been in the habit of meeting in the Forum on market days (*nundinae*) to settle their own affairs. Such a meeting was called *concilium plebis tributum*,<sup>1</sup> because the Plebeians gave their votes according to their tribes, as in the *comitia curiata* votes were given according to *curiae*, and in the *comitia centuriata* according to *centuriae*; for it was an established custom at Rome not to vote in a mass; but first the voters were distributed into smaller bodies, and then, in all cases, questions were determined by the majority of these bodies. But before the Law of Volero, these meetings had no official status.<sup>2</sup> From this time forward, the Assembly of the Plebeian Tribes gradually engrosses power to itself, till at length it becomes the chief legislative body of the state.

(2) The Tribunes were henceforth elected by the *concilium plebis tributum*. But the manner in which they were elected before the Publilian Law is so doubtful that it is hard to estimate the effect of the change. Niebuhr thought that they were elected by the *comitia centuriata* (Livy, iii. 30; Asc., in *Corn.* 1); but Dionysius (vi. 89, ix. 41) and Cicero (*pro Corn.* 1. 24) speak of *comitia curiata*. Mommsen (*Röm. Forsch.*, i. 182) understands this of a curiate assembly of Plebeians only, but we have no direct evidence of the existence of such a body. Ihne (i. 185) thinks that the election had always been by tribes, the effect of the Publilian Law being to exclude the Patricians from taking part in these elections. Herzog (*Glaubwürdigkeit d. Gesetze*, 14) holds that the Publilian Laws of 471 B.C., and of 339 B.C., have been confused.

AUTHORITIES.—For Spurius Cassius: Livy, ii. 41; Dionys., viii. 68-81; other references in Lewis, ii. 135. (For modern criticism: see Mommsen (*Röm. Forsch.*, ii. 164), who holds the whole story to be an invention of the Sullan Age; and, on the opposite side, Ihne, *R.G.*, i.<sup>2</sup> 167). For Genucius: Livy, ii. 54; Dionys., ix. 37-38. For Volero Publilius: Livy, ii. 54-58, 60; Dionys., ix. 40-49; see also Note D.

<sup>1</sup> An assembly which includes the Plebeians only must be described as *concilium*, not as *comitia*, for the Plebeians are only a part of the people (Gell., x. 20), and an assembly in which only part of the people are allowed to vote is a *concilium* (Gell., xv. 27). Whether, in addition to the *concilium plebis tributum*, there was also a *comitia tributa* (i.e. an assembly of the whole people in tribes) is a much-disputed question. The main arguments in support of this view are two:—(1) We know that the minor magistrates (quaestors, curule aediles, and military tribunes) were elected in the tribes (see, e.g. Cic., *ad Fam.*, vii. 30; Gell., xiii. 15. 4; Varro, *de re rustica*, iii. 17. 1; Sall., *Jug.*, 63). Now these officers have to do with the state, not with the *plebs* as such: how, then, could they be elected by an exclusively plebeian assembly? (2) The consul and the praetor could summon the people in tribes, if they desired (see, e.g. the title of the *Lex Quinctia de aquaeductibus* in Bruns, *Fontes Juris Romani*, where the words *in foro* show that the *comitia centuriata* cannot be meant, since the latter met in the Campus Martius). The consul and praetor had nothing to do with the *plebs* as such, and could hardly, therefore, have presided over a purely plebeian assembly. See, on the whole subject, the literature cited in Herzog, i. 1128.

<sup>2</sup> Unless this status was given to them by the Icilian Law, passed, according to Dionysius (vii. 17), in 492 B.C.

## CHAPTER IX

### WARS AND FOREIGN AFFAIRS, FROM THE BATTLE OF LAKE REGILLUS TO THE DECENVIRATE. (TO 451 B.C.)

WHILE the two Orders were thus engaged in struggling for rights and privileges in the city they were hard pressed upon their frontiers by the Volscians and the Aequians.

Nothing can show the decrease of Roman power more than the facts which are incidentally disclosed by this history. It appears that soon after the secession, the Volscians, descending from their hills, had taken not only the remote Latin cities of Circeii, Antium, Satricum, and others, but had also captured Lavinium, Corioli, Lavici, Pedom, and other places almost within sight of Rome. The Aequians also pressed on from the north-east; at one time they were in possession of the citadel of Tusculum, and shut up the Roman Consul within the Roman territory. At the same time, the Etruscans of Veii, who had recovered the lands taken from them by Rome under the later kings, continually appeared in force upon the opposite banks of the Tiber, and threatened the Janiculum.

There are some famous legends connected with these three-fold wars, which cannot be omitted by any writer of Roman history. These are the legends of Coriolanus, of Cincinnatus, and of the Fabian *gens*. The exact times to which they refer are uncertain, nor is it material to determine this.

#### *Legend of Coriolanus and the Volscians.*

Gaius Marcius<sup>1</sup> was a youth of high Patrician family, being of the blood of the Sabine king, Ancus Marcius; and he was brought up by his mother Volumnia, a true Roman matron, noble and generous, proud and stern, implacable towards enemies, unforgiving towards

*Coriolanus  
and the  
Volscians.*

---

<sup>1</sup> His name is Gaius in Dionysius and Plutarch: Niebuhr and Mommsen write Gnaeus, following the majority of the manuscripts of Livy and Zonaras.

the faults of friends. Gaius grew up with all the faults and virtues of his mother, and was soon found among the chief opponents of the Plebeians. He won a civic crown of oak for saving a fellow-citizen at the battle of Lake Regillus when he was seventeen years of age. But he gained his chief fame in the Volscian wars. For the Romans, being at war with this people, attacked Corioli, a Latin city which then had fallen into the hands of the Volscians. But the assailants were driven back by the garrison, when Gaius Marcius rallied the fugitives, turned upon his pursuers, and, driving them back in turn, entered the gates along with them; and the city fell into the hands of the Romans. For this brave conduct he was named after the city which he had taken, Gaius Marcius Coriolanus.

Now it happened, soon after this, that there was a great dearth at Rome, and that Gelon, the Greek king of Syracuse, sent ships laden with corn to relieve the distress of the citizens. It was debated in the Senate how this corn should be distributed. Some were for giving it away to the poorer sort; some were for selling it at a low price; but Coriolanus, who was greatly enraged at the concessions that had been made to the Plebeians, and hated to see them protected by their new officers, the Tribunes, spoke vehemently against these proposals, and said: "Why do they ask us for corn? They have got their Tribunes. Let them go back to the Sacred Hill, and leave us to rule alone. Or let them give up their Tribunes, and then they shall have the corn." This insolent language wrought up the Plebeians to a height of fury against Gaius Marcius, and they would have torn him in pieces; but their Tribunes persuaded them to keep their hands off, and then cited him before the Comitia to give account of his conduct. The main body of the Patricians were not inclined to imperil themselves by supporting Coriolanus; so, after some violent struggles, he declined to stand his trial, but left Rome, shaking the dust from off his feet against his thankless countrymen (for so he deemed them), and vowing that they should bitterly repent of having driven Gaius Marcius Coriolanus into exile.

He made his way to Antium, another Latin city which had become the capital of the Volscians, and going to the house of Attius Tullius, one of the chief men of the nation, he seated himself near the hearth by the household gods, a place which among the Italian nations was held sacred. When Tullius entered, the Roman rose and greeted his former enemy: "My name (he said) is Gaius Marcius; my surname Coriolanus—the only reward now remaining for all my services. I am an exile from Rome, my country; I seek refuge in the house of my



enemy. If ye will use my services, I will serve you well ; if you would rather take vengeance on me, strike, I am ready."

Tullius at once accepted the offer of the "banished lord," and determined to break the treaty which there then was between his people and the Romans. But the Volscians were afraid to go to war. So Tullius had recourse to fraud. It happened that one Atinius, a Plebeian of Rome, had been warned in a dream to go to the Consuls and order them to celebrate the Great Games over again, because of some defect in their first celebration. But he was afraid and would not go. Then his son fell sick and died ; and again he dreamt the same dream ; but still he would not go. Then he was himself stricken with palsy ; and so he delayed no longer, but made his friends carry him on a litter to the Consuls. And they believed his words, and the Great Games were celebrated again with increased pomp ; and many of the Volscians, being at peace with Rome, came to see them. Upon this Tullius went secretly to the Consuls, and told them that his countrymen were thronging to Rome, and he feared they had mischief in their thoughts. Then the Consuls laid this secret information before the Senate, and the Senate decreed that all Volscians should depart from Rome before sunset. This decree seemed to the Volscians to be a wanton insult, and they went home in a rage. Tullius met them on their way home at the fountain of Ferentina, where the Latins had been wont to hold their councils of old ; and he spoke to them, and increased their anger, and persuaded them to break off their treaty with the Romans. So the Volscians made war against Rome, and chose Attius Tullius their countryman and Gaius Marcius the Roman to be their commanders.

The army advanced against Rome, ravaging and laying waste all the lands of the Plebeians, but letting those of the Patricians remain untouched. This increased the jealousy between the Orders, and the Consuls found it impossible to raise an army to go out against the enemy. Coriolanus took one Latin town after another, and even the Volscians deserted their own general to serve under his banners. He now advanced and encamped at the Cluilian Foss, within five miles of the city.

Nothing was now to be seen within the walls but consternation and despair. The temples of the gods were filled with suppliants ; the Plebeians themselves pressed the Senate to make peace with the terrible Coriolanus. At length this great council agreed to send five men, chiefs among the Patricians, to turn away the anger of their countryman. He received them with the utmost sternness ; said that he was now general of the



Volscians, and must do what was best for his new friends ; that if they wished for peace they must restore all the lands and places that had been taken from the Volscians, and must admit these people to an equal league and put them on an equal footing with the Latins.<sup>1</sup> The deputies could not accept these terms, so they returned to Rome. The Senate sent them back to ask for milder terms, but the haughty exile would not suffer them to enter his camp.

Then went forth another deputation, graver and more solemn than the former—the Pontiffs, Flamens, and Augurs, all attired in their priestly robes, who besought him, by all that he held sacred, by the respect he owed to his country's gods, to give them assurance of peace and safety. He treated them with grave respect, but sent them away without relaxing any of his demands.

It seemed as if the glory of Rome were departing, as if the crown were about to be transferred to the cities of the Volscians. But not so was it destined to be. It chanced that as all the women were weeping and praying in the temples, the thought arose among them that they might effect what Patricians and Priests had alike failed to do. It was Valeria, the sister of the great Valerius Poplicola, who first started the thought, and she prevailed on Volumnia, the stern mother of the exile, to accompany the mournful train. With them also went Virgilia, his wife,<sup>2</sup> leading her two boys by the hand, and a crowd of other women. Coriolanus beheld them from afar, as he was sitting on a raised seat among the Volscian chiefs, and resolved to send back them also with a denial. But when they came near, and he saw his mother at the head of the sad procession, he sprang from his seat, and was about to kiss her. But she drew back with all the loftiness of a Roman matron, and said : “ Art thou Gaius Marcius, and am I thy mother? or art thou the general of the Volscian foe, and I a prisoner in his camp? Before thou kissest me, answer me that question.” Gaius stood silent, and his mother went on : “ Shall it be said that it is to me—to me alone—that Rome owes her conqueror and oppressor? Had I never been a mother, my country had still been free. But I am too old to feel this misery long. Look to thy wife and little ones ; thou art enslaving thy country, and with it thou enslavest them.” The fierce Roman's heart sunk before the indignant words of her whom he had feared and respected from his childhood ; and when his wife and children

---

<sup>1</sup> For the Latin League, see p. 100.

<sup>2</sup> These are the names given by Plutarch, whom Shakespeare follows.

hanging about him added their soft prayers to the lofty supplications of his mother, he turned to her with bitterness of soul, and said : " O my mother, thou hast saved Rome, but destroyed thy son ! "

So he drew off his army, and the women went back to Rome and were hailed as the saviours of their country. And the Senate ordered a temple to be built on the spot where Coriolanus had yielded, and dedicated to " Woman's Fortune " (Fortuna Muliebris) ; and Valeria was the first priestess of the temple.<sup>1</sup>

But Coriolanus returned to dwell among the Volscians ; and Tullius, who had before become jealous of his superiority, excited the people against him, saying that he had purposely spared their great enemy, the city of Rome, even when it was within their grasp. So he lost favour, and was slain in a tumult, and the words he had spoken to his mother were truly fulfilled.

### *Legend of Cincinnatus and the Aequians.*

In the course of the Aequian wars, Minucius, one of the Consuls of the year 458 B.C., suffered himself to be cut off from Rome in a narrow valley of Mount Algidus, and it seemed as if hope of delivery there was none. *Cincinnatus and the Aequians.* However, five horsemen found means to escape and report at Rome the perilous condition of the Consul and his army. Then the other Consul referred the matter to the Senate, and it was agreed that the only man who could deliver the army was L. Quinctius Cincinnatus. Therefore this man was named Dictator, and deputies were sent to acquaint him with his high dignity.

Now this Lucius Quinctius was called Cincinnatus because he wore his hair in long curling locks (*cincinni*) ; and, though he was a Patrician, he lived on his own small farm, like any Plebeian yeoman. This farm was beyond the Tiber in the Vatican district, and here he lived contentedly with his wife, Racilia.

Three years before, he had been reduced to poverty by the necessity of paying the bail-money forfeited by his son Kaeso, a wild and insolent young man, who despised the Plebeians and hated their Tribunes, like Coriolanus. Like Coriolanus, he was impeached by one of the Tribunes for acts of insolence and violence against the people. His father interceded for him, and was likely to have prevailed, when one Volscius Fictor

<sup>1</sup> That of Fortuna *Virilis* had been built by Servius Tullius (Dionys., iv. 27) on its site, see Burn. *l.c.*, 288.

alleged that his brother, an old and sickly man, had been attacked by Kaeso and a party of young Patricians by night in the Subura, and had died of the treatment then received. The indignation of the people rose high, and Kaeso, again like Coriolanus, fled from Rome. Next year all Rome was alarmed by finding that the Capitol had been seized by an enemy during the night. This enemy was Appius Herdonius, a Sabine, and with him was associated a band of desperate men, exiles and runaway slaves. The Consul, P. Valerius, collected a force, and took the Capitol; but he was himself killed in the assault, and L. Quinctius Cincinnatus, father of the banished Kaeso, was chosen to succeed him. When he heard the news of his elevation he turned to his wife and said: "I fear, Racilia, our little field must remain this year unsown." Then he assumed the robe of state, and went to Rome. Kaeso may have been concerned in the desperate enterprise that had just been defeated.<sup>1</sup> Perhaps he fell in the assault on the Capitol; at all events, he is heard of no more. His father was very bitter against the Tribunes and their party, to whom he attributed his son's disgrace, and he used all the power of the Consulate to thwart the Tribunes. At the end of his year of office, however, when the Patricians wished to continue him in the consulship, he warned them against setting an example of violating the constitution, and returned to his rustic life as if he had never left it.

It was two years after these events that the deputies of the Senate, who came to invest him with the ensigns of dictatorial power, found him working on his little farm. He was clad in his tunic only; and, as the deputies advanced, they bade him put on his toga, that he might receive the commands of the Senate in seemly guise. So he wiped off the dust and sweat, the signs of labour, and bade his wife fetch his toga, and asked anxiously whether all was right or no. Then the deputies told him how the army was beset by the Aequian foe, and how the Senate looked on him as the saviour of the state. A boat was provided to carry him over the Tiber; and when he reached the other bank he was greeted by the Senate, who attended him to the city, while he himself walked in state, with his four-and-twenty lictors.

Next day Cincinnatus chose L. Tarquinius as his Master

---

<sup>1</sup> This is a hypothesis by Niebuhr (*Hist.*, ii. 296), in which he is followed by Nitzsch (*Ges. d. röm. Rep.*, i. 66). Livy (iii. 25) represents Kaeso as dying in exile, Cicero (*pro Domo*, 32, 86) as recalled by the people.

of the Horse. This man was a Patrician, but, like the Dictator himself, was poor—so poor that he could not afford to keep a horse, but was obliged to serve among the foot-soldiers.

That same day the Dictator and his Master of the Horse came down into the Forum, ordered all shops to be shut, and all business to be suspended. All men of the military age were to meet them in the Field of Mars before sunset, each man with five days' provisions and twelve stakes; the elder men were to see to the provisions, while the soldiers were preparing the stakes. Thus all was got ready in time; the Dictator led them forth, and they marched so rapidly that by night they had reached Mount Algidus, where the army of the Consul was hemmed in.

Then the Dictator, when he had discovered the place of the enemy's army, ordered his men to put all their baggage down in one place, and then to surround the enemy's camp. They obeyed, and each one raising a shout, began digging the trench and fixing his stakes, so as to form a palisade round the enemy. The Consul's army, which was hemmed in, heard the shout of their brethren, and flew to arms: and so hotly did they fight all night that the Aequians had no time to attend to the new foe, and next morning they found themselves hemmed in on all sides by the trench and palisade, so that they were now between two Roman armies. They were thus forced to surrender. The Dictator required them to give up their chiefs, and made their whole army pass under the yoke, which was formed by two spears fixed upright in the ground, and a third bound across them at the top.

Cincinnatus returned to Rome amid the shouts and exultation of the rescued soldiers: they gave him a golden crown, in token that he had saved the lives of many citizens: and the Senate decreed that he should enter the city in triumph.

So Cincinnatus accomplished the purpose for which he had been made Dictator, in twenty-four hours. One evening he marched forth to deliver the Consul, and the next evening he returned victorious.

But he would not lay down his high office till he had avenged his son Kaeso. Accordingly he summoned Volscius Fictor, the accuser, and had him tried for perjury. The man was condemned, and went into exile; and then Cincinnatus once more returned to his wife and farm.

*Legend of the Fabian Gens and the Veientes.*

It has already been related that, after the final expulsion of the Tarquins, the Patricians withdrew from the Plebeians those rights which they had originally obtained from King Servius, and which had been renewed and confirmed to them during the time that the Tarquins were endeavouring to return. And for a number of years it appears that the Fabii engrossed a great share of this power to themselves. For we find in the lists of Consuls that for seven years running (from 485 to 479 B.C.), one of the two Consuls was always a Fabius. Now, these Fabii were the chief opponents of the Agrarian Law; and Kaeso Fabius, who was three times Consul in the said seven years, had taken the chief part in procuring the condemnation of Sp. Cassius, the great friend of the Plebeians. This Kaeso, in his second Consulship, found himself a mark for popular hatred. His soldiers refused to fight against the enemy. But in his third Consulship, which fell in the last of the seven years, he showed an altered spirit, he and all his house. For the Fabii saw the injustice they had been guilty of towards the Plebeians, and the injury they had been doing to the state: and Kaeso himself came forward, and proposed that the Agrarian Law of Sp. Cassius should be carried into full effect. But the Patricians rejected the proposal with scorn. Then the Fabii determined to take upon themselves the dangerous duty of establishing a permanent body-guard in the enemies' territory.<sup>1</sup> So they assembled together on the Quirinal Hill, in all three hundred and six men, besides their clients and followers, and they passed under the Capitol, and went out of the city by the right-hand arch of the Carmental gate.<sup>2</sup> They then crossed the Tiber, and marked out a place on the little river Cremera, which flows past Veii and joins the Tiber a few miles above Rome. Here they fortified a camp, and sallied forth to ravage the lands of the Veientes and drive their cattle.

<sup>1</sup> That the Fabii intended to leave Rome altogether, in consequence of the rejection of the Agrarian proposal, is a hypothesis invented by Niebuhr (*Hist.*, ii. 193).

<sup>2</sup> Called the right *Janus* or *Janua*.<sup>\*</sup> So Ovid says (*Fasti*, ii. 201):—

“Carmentis Portae dextro via proxima Jano est.  
Ire per hanc noli, quisquis es; omen habet.

So they stood between Rome and Veii for more than a year's time, and the Romans had little to fear on that side, whereas the Veientes suffered greatly. But there was a certain day, the Ides of February,<sup>1</sup> which was always held sacred by the Fabii, when they offered solemn sacrifices on the Quirinal Hill to the gods of their *gens*. On this day, Kaeso led them forth for Rome; and the Veientes, hearing of it, laid an ambush for them, and they were all cut off. And the Plebeians greatly mourned the loss of their Patrician friends, and Menenius, the Consul, who was encamped near at hand but did not assist them, was accused by the Tribunes of treacherously betraying them, as has been above recorded.<sup>2</sup>

But one young Fabius, who was then a boy, had been left behind at Rome when the rest of his *gens* went forth to settle on the Cremera. And he (so it was said) was the father of the Fabii who were afterwards so famous in the history of Rome.

After this the men of Veii obtained a peace of forty years.

The Patrician minstrels who sang of Coriolanus and Cincinnatus left unnoticed the deeds of Sp. Cassius. But not the less may we be sure that it was he who, by the Leagues he formed with the Latins and Hernicans, saved Latium from the dominion of Aequians and Volscians. The first of these Leagues was made in his second Consulship (B.C. 493), the second in his third (B.C. 486). It was stipulated by the League with the Latins that the people of Rome and Latium should form a combined army for the purpose of repelling the invader; their legions were united under the same forms, and in like manner; and it is probable that in one year a Roman Consul, in another a Latin Dictator, took the supreme command. In both Leagues it seems to have been agreed that all lands taken from the enemy should be shared alike by the combined nations. These Leagues served to check the progress of the Volscians and Aequians, who had at one time overrun Latium. Antium and other places were recovered; and to Antium a colony was sent to secure it from attack.

The League formed by Sp. Cassius with the Latins, cemented by common interest and common danger, remained unaltered till the Gauls broke into Latium, and by their furious onslaught confounded all that existed

<sup>1</sup> Ovid, *Fasti*, ii. 195. Livy, however, places the disaster of the Cremera on the same day as that of the Allia, viz. 18th July (vi. 1).

<sup>2</sup> P. 89.



of order and association. The formation of an alliance which lasted unbroken for nearly a century, and which then gave way under the pressure of an unforeseen calamity, speaks of no ordinary foresight on the part of him who formed it. Yet this act was, as we have seen, turned into an article of impeachment against Spurius Cassius.<sup>1</sup>

AUTHORITIES.—Livy, ii. iii.; Dionys., vii.-xi.; Zonaras, vii. For Coriolanus: Plut., *Coriol.*; [Victor] *Vir. Ill.*, 19; Mommsen, *Röm. Forsch.*, ii. 113; Ihne, i. 159. On Cincinnatus: Niebuhr, *Hist.*, ii. 268.

---

<sup>1</sup> P. 88.

## CHAPTER X

### CONTINUED STRUGGLE BETWEEN THE ORDERS—THE DECEMVIRATE. (470-449 B.C.)

It has been shown how the Patrician burgesses endeavoured to wrest independence from the Plebs after the battle of Lake Regillus ; and how the latter, ruined by constant wars with the neighbouring nations, compelled to make good their losses by borrowing money from Patrician creditors and liable to become bondsmen in default of payment, at length deserted the city and returned only on condition of being protected by Tribunes of their own ; and how, lastly, by the firmness of Volero Publilius and Laetorius, they obtained the right of electing these Tribunes at their own assembly, voting by Tribes. It has also been shown that the great Consul, Spurius Cassius, endeavoured to relieve the commonalty by an Agrarian law, so as to better their condition permanently.

The execution of the Agrarian law of Sp. Cassius had been constantly evaded. But presently, after the conquest of Antium from the Volscians in the year 468 B.C., a Colony was sent thither ; and this was one of the first examples of a distribution of Public Land to poorer citizens, which answered two purposes—the improvement of their condition, and the defence of the place against the enemy.

Nor did the Tribunes, now altogether independent of the Patricians, fail to assert their power. One of the first persons who felt the force of their arm was the second Appius Claudius. This Sabine noble had been Consul in 471 B.C., and had led the opposition to the Publilian law. After that law was passed he took the field against the Volscians ; but his soldiers would not fight, and the stern commander put to death every tenth man in his legions. Next year he was foremost in opposing the

*Progress of  
Plebeians.*

*Colony at  
Antium.*

*Impeachment  
of the younger  
Appius.*

Agrarian law, and was brought to trial by the Tribunes. Seeing that condemnation was certain, the proud Patrician avoided humiliation by suicide.

Nevertheless, the border-wars still continued, and the Plebeians still suffered much. To the evils of debt and want were added about this time the horrors of pestilential disease. *Great pestilence.* In one year (B.C. 463) the two Consuls, two of the four Augurs, and the Curio Maximus, who was the head of all the Patricians, were swept off, a fact which implies the death of a vast number of less distinguished persons. The government was administered by the Plebeian Aediles, under the control of senatorial Interreges. The Volscians and Aequians ravaged the country up to the walls of Rome; and the safety of the city must be attributed more to the Latins and Hernicans, than to the men of Rome.

In the following year (462 B.C.) one of the Sacred College, by name C. Terentilius Harsa, came forward with a bill, of which the object was to give the Plebeians a surer footing in the state. This man perceived that, as long as the Consuls retained their almost despotic power and were elected by the influence of the Patricians, this Order had it in their power to thwart all measures which tended to advance the interests of the Plebeians. He therefore proposed that a commission of Ten Men (*decemviri*) should be appointed to draw up laws for regulating the future relations of the Patricians and Plebeians. *Proposal of Terentilius Harsa.*

The Reform Bill of Terentilius was, as might be supposed, vehemently resisted by the Patrician burgesses. But the Plebeians supported their champion no less warmly. For five consecutive years the same Tribunes were re-elected, and in vain endeavoured to carry the bill. This was the time which least fulfils the character which we have claimed for the Roman people—patience and self-control. To prevent the Tribunes from carrying their law, the younger Patricians thronged to the Assemblies, and interfered with all proceedings: Terentilius, they said, was endeavouring to confound all distinction between the Orders. Scenes occurred which show that both sides were prepared for civil war. *Violent scenes in Rome.*

In the year 460 B.C. the city was alarmed by hearing that the Capitol had been seized by a band of Sabines and exiled Romans, under the command of one Herdonius, as related in the preceding chapter. Who these exiles were is uncertain. But we have seen, in the legend of Cincinnatus, that Kaeso Quinctius, the son of that old hero, had been impeached and driven into exile for the violence of which he was at this very

time guilty. It has been inferred, therefore, that he and others, whom the Tribunes had succeeded in banishing from the city, had not scrupled to associate themselves with Sabines to recover their homes.<sup>1</sup> The Consul Valerius, aided by the Latins of Tusculum, levied an army to attack the insurgents, on condition that the law should be fully considered. The exiles were overpowered, and Herdonius was killed. But the Consul fell; and the Patricians, led by old Cincinnatus, who had succeeded Valerius as Consul, refused to fulfil his promises.<sup>2</sup>

Two years later followed the Aequian invasion, to which the legend of Cincinnatus, as given above, refers.

One of the historians tells us that in this period of seditious violence many of the leading Plebeians were assassinated, as the Tribune Genucius had been. It seemed as if Rome was to become the city of discord, not of law. Happily there were moderate men in both Orders. Now, as at the time of the Secession, their voices prevailed, and, after different attempts, a compromise was arranged.

The first attempt at compromise had ended in the consent of the Senate to increase the number of the Tribunes from five to *Ten Tribunes elected.* ten (457 B.C.); and now, after a struggle of three more years, a further concession was made. The Reform Bill was no longer pressed by the Tribunes. The Patricians, on the other hand, so far gave way as to allow three men *Delegation sent to report upon Laws in Greece.* to be appointed, who were to travel into Greece, and bring back a copy of the laws of Solon, as well as the laws and institutes of any other Greek states which they might deem good and useful. These were to be the groundwork of a new Code of Laws, such as should give fair and equal rights to both Orders, and restrain the arbitrary power of the Patrician Magistrates.

Another concession which had already been made by the Patrician Lords was a small instalment of the Agrarian law. *Patrician Plebeian Law on the Aventine.* L. Icilius, Tribune of the Plebs, proposed that so much of the Aventine Hill as was Public Land should be made over to the Plebs, to be their quarter for ever, as the other hills were occupied by the Patricians and their clients. After some opposition, the Patricians suffered this Icilian law to pass, in hopes of soothing

<sup>1</sup> P. 97.

<sup>2</sup> But Ilse's theory as to a special connection between the Valerian family and "Sabine" wars, see his *History*, i. 106, 169.

the anger of the Plebeians. The land was parcelled out into building sites. But as there was not enough to give a separate plot to every Plebeian householder that wished to live in the city, one allotment was assigned to several persons, who built a joint house in *flats* or storeys, each of which was inhabited (as in Edinburgh and in most foreign towns) by a separate family.<sup>1</sup>

The three men who had been sent into Greece returned, after two years' absence, in 452 B.C. They found the city free from domestic strife, partly from the concessions already made, partly from expectation of what now was to follow, and partly from the effect of pestilence, which had broken out anew.

So far did moderate counsels now prevail among the Patricians that after some little delay they agreed to suspend the ordinary government by the Consuls and other officers, and in their stead to appoint a Council of Ten, who were during their existence to be entrusted with all the functions of government.<sup>2</sup> But they were to have a double duty : they were to be not only an administrative, but also a legislative council. On the one hand, they were to conduct the government, administer justice, and command the armies. On the other, they were to draw up a Code of Laws, by which equal justice was to be dealt out to the whole Roman People, to Patricians and Plebeians alike, and by which especially the authority to be exercised by the Consuls, or chief magistrates, was to be clearly determined and settled.<sup>3</sup>

The supreme Council of Ten, or Decemvirs, was first appointed in the year 451 B.C. They were all Patricians. At their head stood Appius Claudius and T. Genucius, who had already been chosen Consuls for this memorable year. This Appius Claudius, the third of his name, was son and grandson of those two Patrician chiefs who had opposed the leaders of the Plebeians so vehemently in the matter of the Tribune. But he affected a different conduct from his sires. He was the most popular man of the whole council, and became, in fact,

<sup>1</sup> These houses, or blocks of houses, jointly occupied by several families, were in Roman phrase called *insulae* (the term *isola* is still so used), while the term *domus* was restricted to the mansion occupied by a single wealthy family.

<sup>2</sup> Even the right of *provocatio* was suspended (Livy, iii. 32. 6 : Cic., *Rep.*, ii. 31, 36).

<sup>3</sup> Livy (iii. 9) lays stress on the limitation of the Consul's power, Dionysius (x. 1) on the need of written laws.

the sovereign of Rome. At first he used his great power well ; and the first year's government of the Decemvirs was famed for justice and moderation.

They also applied themselves diligently to their great work of law-making, and before the end of the year had drawn up a Code of Ten Tables, which were posted in the Forum, that all citizens might examine them and suggest amendments to the Decemvirs. After due time thus spent, the Ten Tables were confirmed and made law at the *Comitia* of the Centuries. By this Code equal justice was to be administered to both Orders without distinction of persons.

At the close of the year the first Decemvirs laid down their office, just as the Consuls and other officers of state had been accustomed to do before. They were succeeded by a second set of ten, who for the next year were to conduct the government, like their predecessors (450 B.C.). The only one of the old Decemvirs re-elected was Appius Claudius. Even this was much objected to ; and to prevent his re-election Appius was himself appointed to preside at the new elections, for it was held impossible for a chief magistrate to return his own name when he was himself presiding. But Appius scorned precedents. He returned himself as elected, together with nine others, most of them men of no name, while two of the great Quinctian *gens* who offered themselves were rejected.

Of the new Decemvirs, it is certain that three, and it is probable that five, were Plebeians.<sup>1</sup>

The first Decemvirs had earned the respect and esteem of their fellow-citizens. The new Council of Ten deserved the hatred which has ever since cloven to their name. Appius now threw off the mask which he had so long worn, and assumed his natural character—the same as had distinguished his sire and grandsire of unhappy memory. He became an absolute despot. His brethren in the Council offered no hindrance to his will ; even the Plebeian Decemvirs, bribed by power, fell into his way of action, and supported his tyranny. They each had twelve lictors, who carried *fascēs* with the axes in them, the symbol of absolute power, as in the times of the kings ; so that it was said, Rome had now ten Tarquins instead of one, and 120 armed lictors instead of 12. All freedom of speech ceased. The Senate was seldom called together. The leading men,

<sup>1</sup> Sp. Oppius, Q. Poetelius, K. Duillius, certainly ; M. Rabuleius, T. Antonius Merenda, probably. See Niebuhr, *Hist.*, ii. 323.



Patricians and Plebeians, left the city. The outward aspect of things was that of perfect calm and peace ; but an opportunity only was wanting for the discontent which was smouldering in all men's hearts to break out and show itself.

Before the end of the year the Decemvirs had added two more Tables to the Code, so that there were now Twelve Tables. But these two last were of a most oppressive and arbitrary kind, devoted chiefly to restore the ancient privileges of the Patrician caste.

*Two Tables  
added to Code.*

It was, no doubt, expected that the second Decemvirs also would have held Comitia for the election of new magistrates, but Appius and his colleagues showed no such intention ; and when the year came to a close, they continued to hold office for the third year as if they had been re-elected.

*Decemvirs  
continue in  
office.*

In the course of this next year (449 B.C.) the border wars were renewed. On the north the Sabines, and the Aequians on the north-east, invaded the Roman country at the same time. The latter penetrated as far as Mount Algidus, as formerly when they were routed by old Cincinnatus. The Decemvirs probably, like the Patrician burgesses in former times, regarded these inroads not without satisfaction, for they turned away the mind of the Plebeians from their sufferings at Rome. Yet from these very wars sprung the events which overturned the power of the Decemvirs and destroyed themselves.

*Wars with  
Sabines and  
Aequians.*

Legions were levied by the Decemvirs to check the Sabines, and repel the advance of the Aequians. Appius and Oppius remained at home, with part of the troops levied, to administer the government and protect the city : two armies, one commanded by three Decemvirs, one by five, took the field against the enemy. But there was no spirit in the armies. They suffered defeats on both sides, and the legions opposed to the Aequians were compelled to take refuge within the walls of Tusculum.

Then followed two events, which are preserved in well-known legends, and which give the popular narrative of the manner in which the power of the Decemvirs was overthrown.

### *Legend of Siccius Dentatus.*

In the army sent against the Sabines, Siccius Dentatus was known as the bravest man. He had fought in 120 battles ; had slain eight champions in single combat ; had saved the lives of fourteen citizens ; had received five-and-

*Siccius  
Dentatus.*

forty wounds, all in front ; had followed in nine triumphal processions ; and had worn crowns and decorations without number. This gallant veteran had taken an active part in the civil contests between the two Orders, and was now suspected by the Decemvirs commanding the Sabine army of plotting against them. Accordingly, they determined to get rid of him ; and for this end they sent him out, as if to reconnoitre, with a party of soldiers, who were secretly instructed to murder him. Having discovered their design, he set his back against a rock, and resolved to sell his life dear. Many of his assailants fell, and the rest stood at bay around him, not venturing to come within a sword's length ; till one or two climbed up the rock behind, and crushed the brave old man with massive stones. But the manner of his death could not be kept hidden from the army, and the generals only prevented an outbreak by honouring him with a magnificent funeral.

Such was the state of things in the Sabine army.

### *Legend of Virginia.*

The other army had a still grosser outrage to complain of. In this there was a notable centurion, Virginius by name. His daughter Virginia, just ripening into womanhood, beautiful as the day, was betrothed to L. Icilius, the Tribune who had carried the law for allotting the Aventine Hill to the Plebeians. Appius Claudius, the Decemvir, saw her and lusted to make her his own. With this view he ordered one of his clients, M. Claudius by name, to lay hands upon her as she was going to her school in the Forum, and to claim her as a slave, born in his own house and stolen by Virginius. The man did so ; and when the cries of her nurse brought a crowd round them, M. Claudius insisted on taking her before the Decemvir, in order (as he said) to have his claim fairly tried. Her friends consented ; and no sooner had Appius heard the matter than he gave judgment that the maiden should be delivered up to the claimant, who should be bound to produce her in case her alleged father appeared to gainsay the claim. Now this judgment was directly against one of the laws of the Twelve Tables which Appius himself had framed, for therein it was provided that any person being at freedom should continue free till it was proved that such person was a slave. Icilius therefore, with Numitorius, the uncle of the maiden, boldly argued against the legality of the judgment ; and at length Appius, fearing a tumult, agreed to leave the girl in their hands, on condition of their giving bail to bring her before

him next morning, and then, if Virginius did not appear, he would at once (he said) give her up to her pretended master. To this Icilius consented ; but, on one pretence or other, he put off giving the required bail, and in the meantime messengers were riding with all speed to the camp on Algidus, to inform Virginius of what had happened. After long delay the bail was settled ; and Appius, having left the Forum, sent a letter to the Decemvirs in command of that army desiring them to refuse leave of absence to Virginius. This letter was delivered next morning, but Virginius was already in Rome, for the distance was not more than twenty miles, and he had started at night-fall.

In the morning Virginius entered the Forum leading his daughter by the hand, both clad in mean attire. A great number of friends and matrons attended him ; and he went about among the people entreating them to support him against the tyranny of Appius. So when Appius came to take his place on the judgment-seat he found the Forum full of people, all friendly to Virginius and his cause. But he inherited the boldness as well as the vices of his sires, and though he saw Virginius standing there, ready to prove that he was the maiden's father, he at once gave judgment against his own law, that Virginia should be given up to M. Claudius till it should be proved that she was free.<sup>1</sup> The wretch came up to seize her, under the protection of the lictors. Virginius, now despairing of deliverance, begged Appius to allow him to ask the girl's nurse whether she were indeed his daughter or no. "If," said he, "I find I am not her father, I shall bear her loss the lighter." Under this pretence he drew his daughter with her nurse aside to a spot upon the northern side of the Forum (afterwards called the *Novae Tabernae*), and here, snatching up a knife from a butcher's stall, he cried : "In this way only can I keep thee free" ; and, so saying, stabbed the maiden to the heart. Then he turned to the tribunal and said : "On thee, Appius, and on thy head be this blood." Appius cried out to seize the murderer, but the crowd made way for Virginius, and he passed through them holding up the bloody knife, and went out at the gate and made straight for the army. There, when the soldiers had heard his tale, they at once abandoned their decemviral generals,

---

<sup>1</sup> This was called *vindicias secundum servitutem dare*. *Vindiciae* was the *claim to possession*, pending the final decision. The opposite judgment was *vindicias secundum libertatem dare*. The person who claimed another as slave or free was said *asserere aliquem in servitutem* or *in libertatem* (*cp.* Ter., *Ad.*, 194). But *vindiciae* may perhaps be used by Livy here in a loose sense (*cp.* Lewis, ii. 209).

and marched to Rome. They were soon followed by the other army from the Sabine frontier, for to them Icilius had gone and Numitorius; and they found willing ears among men who were already enraged by the murder of old Siccius Dentatus. So the two armies joined their banners, and elected new generals; then, after halting on Mons Sacer, they passed through the city, and encamped upon the Aventine Hill, the quarter of the Plebeians.<sup>1</sup>

Meantime, the people at home had risen against the Decemvirs, and now joined their armed fellow-citizens upon the Aventine. There the whole body of the Commons, armed and unarmed, hung like a dark cloud ready to burst upon the city.

Whatever may be truth of the legends of Siccius and Virginia, there can be no doubt that the conduct of the Decemvirs had brought matters to the verge of civil war. At this juncture the Senate met, and, fortunately, moderate counsels prevailed. The Plebeians requested that M. Horatius Barbatus and L. Valerius Potitus might be sent to conduct negotiations, and the Senate complied. On the part of the Plebeians M. Duillius, a former Tribune, took the lead. But this attempt at negotiation failed, and a revolution seemed imminent. Then the remembrances of the great Secession came back upon the minds of the Patricians, and the Senate, observing the calm and resolute bearing of the Plebeian leaders, compelled the Decemvirs to resign, and sent back Valerius and Horatius to negotiate anew.

The leaders of the Plebeians demanded:—(1) That the Tribuneship should be restored, and the Assembly of the Plebs recognised as a power in the State. (2) That a right of appeal to the People against the power of the supreme magistrate should be restored, and that henceforth no magistrate should be appointed without appeal. (3) That full indemnity should be granted to the movers and promoters of the late Secession. (4) That the Decemvirs should be burnt alive.

Of these demands the deputies of the Senate agreed to the first three, but the fourth they put aside. It was indeed unworthy of a free people; it was a piece of tyranny, as bad as any of the worst acts of the late government; it was needless, because any one who had reason of complaint against the late Decemvirs might proceed against them

<sup>1</sup> So Cicero (*pro Corn.*, i. 25; *Rep.*, ii. 37). Livy (iii. 52) represents them as first occupying the Aventine, and then shifting their quarters to Mons Sacer.

according to law. The Plebeians listened to counsels of moderation, and withdrew their savage demand. The other three were confirmed by the Fathers, and the Plebeians returned to their quarters on the Aventine. Here they held an Assembly according to their Tribes, in which the Pontifex Maximus presided;<sup>1</sup> and they proceeded to elect Ten Tribunes—first Virginius, Numitorius, and Icilius, then Duillius and six others. So full were their minds of the wrong done to the daughter of Virginius; so entirely was it the blood of young Virginia that overthrew the Decemvirs, even as that of Lucretia had driven out the Tarquins.

The Plebeians had now returned to the city. It remained for the Patricians to redeem the remaining pledges given by their agents, Valerius and Horatius.

The first thing to settle was the election of the supreme magistrates. The Decemvirs had fallen, and the state was without any executive government.

It has been supposed that the government of the Decemvirs was intended to be perpetual.<sup>2</sup> The Patricians gave up their Consuls, and the Plebeians their Tribunes, on condition that each Order was to be admitted to an equal share in the new decemviral college. But the Tribunes were now restored, and it was but natural that the Patricians should insist on again occupying all places in the supreme magistracy. By common consent, as it would seem, the Comitia of the Centuries met, and elected to the Consulate the two Patricians who had shown themselves the friends of both Orders—L. Valerius Potitus, and M. Horatius Barbatus.

*Valerius and  
Horatius  
elected  
Consuls.*

Properly speaking, these were the first CONSULS, though (in accordance with common custom) this name has been used to designate the supreme magistrates from the beginning of the Republic. But we learn that before the year 449 B.C. these officers were known by the name of PRAETORS. Strictly speaking, therefore, Valerius and Horatius were the first Consuls.

<sup>1</sup> Usually, the Tribunes themselves conducted the business of the Plebeian Assembly. But at present there were no Tribunes.

<sup>2</sup> So Niebuhr (*Hist.*, ii. 323), whom Nitzsch (*Ges. d. röm. Rep.*, i. 67) follows. The Plebeians elected to the Decemvirate at the *comitia* would almost certainly be men of less independence than those elected to the Tribunate at the *concilium plebis*, and the compromise, while apparently conferring a great privilege on the Plebeians by rendering them eligible for the highest office in the state, would really result entirely in favour of the Patricians.

As soon as they were installed in office they proceeded to justify the confidence reposed in them by the Plebeians, by bringing forward popular laws, from them commonly called the VALERIO-HORATIAN LAWS.

(1) First, they solemnly renewed the old law of Valerius Poplicola, by which it was provided that every Roman citizen should have an appeal to the People against the power of the supreme magistrate. This had been sanctioned by the Ten Tables of the Decemvirs, and some remarks on the nature of the right will be found further on.

To the law proposed by the Consuls, the Tribune Duillius added another containing the terrible penalty already threatened to the Decemvirs that "whoso transgressed it should be burnt alive."

(2) Secondly, it was enacted that the Plebeian Assembly of the Tribes should receive legislative power, and their measures should, like the laws passed at the Centuriate Comitia, have authority over the whole body of citizens—Patricians and Plebeians. Hitherto the *Plebi-scita*, or Resolutions of the Plebs, had been made merely for regulating their own affairs, and had not the force of law. Henceforth they became laws binding on all the Body Politic.<sup>1</sup>

(3) Thirdly, the personal inviolability of the Tribunes, which had hitherto rested on religion, was secured to them by law, and punishment was threatened to any who might prevent the election of Tribunes.

The second of these laws soon showed itself in operation. It will be remembered that two armies had been sent by the Decemvirs to meet the Sabines and the Aequians in the field. When these armies marched to Rome to take vengeance upon Appius and his colleagues, the enemy were left to pursue their ravages unchecked, except by the Latins and Hernicans. The new Consuls now held a levy. Names were willingly given in, and they were soon ready to take the field at the head of men devoted to them for their good services. Victories were gained, but when Valerius and Horatius returned at the head of their troops, and halted in the Campus Martius (according to custom), that they might enter the city in triumphal procession, the Senate refused them this honour. Upon this, L. Icilius, Tribune of the Plebs, obtained a vote from the Plebeians assembled in their Tribes, by which it was ordained that the friends of the Plebs should enjoy their

*Triumph of  
the Consuls.*

<sup>1</sup> See Note E, p. 116.



triumph in despite of senatorial ill-will; and the Senate saw themselves compelled to give way.

Before this campaign, Virginius, now a Tribune, singled out Appius as the chief offender among the Decemvirs, and impeached him. The proud Patrician scorned sub-  
*Death of Appius.*  
mission, and descended into the Forum, surrounded by a crowd of young men of his own Order. Virginius ordered him to be arrested, and refused to hold him to bail unless he could prove "that he had not assigned Virginia into bondage till she was proved free." This was impossible, and he was thrown into prison to await his trial before the assembled people. But to such degradation he could not stoop, and, like his father, he put an end to his own life in prison.

Sp. Oppius also, the chief among the Plebeian Decemvirs, the friend and abettor of Appius, the Patrician, was also indicted, but before his trial he died in prison. The re-  
*Fate of the remaining Decemvirs.*  
maining eight sought safety in exile. The goods of all were confiscated. But when some of the Plebeian leaders would have gone on to exact penalties from all who had actively supported the Decemvirs, M. Duillius, the Tribune, came forward, and by his power of veto stayed all further proceedings. Happy the people which has leaders who can gain even greater honours by moderation in the heat of triumph than by the firmness displayed in the conduct of the struggle.

In all these proceedings no security had yet been taken for the election of Consuls favourable to Plebeian claims. The late refusal of the Senate to authorise the triumph of  
*Attempt to re-elect Consuls and Tribunes.*  
Valerius and Horatius, and the zeal of the young Patricians to obtain the acquittal of Appius, were not encouraging signs for future peace. The more ardent of the Plebeian leaders, therefore, proposed that the Consuls and Tribunes now in office should be continued without re-election for the succeeding year. But with the moderation that distinguished him, Duillius, whose lot it was to preside over the election of Tribunes, declared that he would not receive any votes tendered for himself or for any of his colleagues; and the Consuls, being called on to declare themselves, pronounced in favour of new candidates. Still, many of the Plebeians persisted in voting for the re-election of the existing Tribunes; and, in consequence, only five of the new candidates obtained votes sufficient for their election. These five then chose other five to complete the College of Ten. Thus closed the remarkable year in which the Decemvirs were overthrown and a new beginning of independence made for the commonalty of Rome.

But it will be proper to add a few words on the famous code of laws left by the Decemvirs ; for though they passed away and their government was forgotten, their laws endured for many ages.

The Twelve Tables were considered as the foundation of all law, and Cicero always mentions them with the utmost reverence.<sup>1</sup> But only fragments remain, and those *The Twelve Tables.* who have bestowed the greatest labour in examining these can give but an imperfect account of their original form and contents.

A few provisions only can be noticed here.

(1) The law of debt was left in its former state of severity. But the condition of borrowing money was made easier ; for it was made illegal to exact higher interest than ten per cent. For this is the meaning of *foenus unciarium*. *Uncia* (derived from *unus*) is one of the twelve units into which the *as* was divided, each being one-twelfth part of the whole.<sup>2</sup> Now  $\frac{1}{12}$  of the capital is  $8\frac{1}{3}$  per cent. ; but as the old Roman year was only of ten months, we must add two months' interest at the same rate ; and this amounts to ten per cent. for the year of twelve months.<sup>3</sup>

(2) No private law or *privilegium*—that is a law to impose any penalty or disability on a single citizen, similar in character to our bills of attainder—was to be made. *Privilegium.*

(3) There was to be an appeal to the People from the sentence of every magistrate, and no citizen was to be tried on a charge touching his life or civil rights except before the Comitia of the Centuries. *Provocatio.*

Laws of this kind had been frequent from the time of the first law of appeal passed by Valerius Poplicola. The right of appeal was one of the demands made on behalf of the Plebeians at the fall of the Decemvirs ; and one of the first acts of the new Consuls was to provide that there should be such appeal. All these laws were finally absorbed in the famous law of Porcius Laeca, “*de capite et tergo civium*,” by which it was enacted that no Roman citizen should be put to death or scourged, without trial before the Centuries (B.C. 197).<sup>4</sup> These laws may be compared to our Act of Habeas Corpus, which provides that no

<sup>1</sup> *E.g. Rep.*, ii. 36. *Cp. Livy*, iii. 34. 6 ; *Tac.*, *Ann.*, iii. 27.

<sup>2</sup> *Cp. Mommsen*, i. 265.

<sup>3</sup> See *Tacitus*, *Ann.*, vi. 16, with Furneaux' notes.

<sup>4</sup> This appeal was called *provocatio*. An appeal to the Tribunes for protection was *appellatio*. For the later history of these terms, see *Dict. Ant.* “*APPELLATIO*.”

man shall be imprisoned without having his person produced in open court and allowed a fair trial. And as in turbulent times this Act is sometimes suspended by the proclamation of



Coins alluding to the Porcian Law (see *Cl. Rev.*, x. 229 ; xi. 437).

military law, so at Rome the laws of appeal might be suspended. This was done in the earlier times by the appointment of a Dictator, and afterwards by a resolution of the Senate, "that the Consuls should see that the commonwealth suffered no injury."<sup>1</sup> By such a resolution the Consuls were invested with dictatorial power ; they possessed the *imperium* within the walls of the city, and might put any dangerous citizen to death. Thus it was that the Senate proceeded against C. Gracchus, against Saturninus, and against the Catilinarian conspirators.

But if the legislation of the first decemviral council really tended to introduce equal rights for the whole nation, there are some laws which had a directly contrary effect, and these are by Cicero attributed to the two last Tables of the Code.

(1) The old law or custom prohibiting all intermarriage (*conubium*) between the two Orders was now formally confirmed, and thus a positive bar was put to any equalisation of the two Orders. No such consummation could be looked for when the code of national law proclaimed them to be of different races, unfit to mingle one with the other. *Conubium.*

(2) To this may be added the celebrated law by which any one who wrote lampoons or libels on his neighbours was liable to be deprived of civil rights (*diminutio capitis*). By this law the poet Naevius was punished, when he assailed the great family of the Metelli. *Lampoons forbidden.*

<sup>1</sup> "Videant consules, ne quid detrimenti capiat respublica." See Willems, *Le Sénat*, ii. 247.

But notwithstanding these unequal laws, there can be no doubt that by the Code of the Twelve Tables the Plebeians gained a considerable step towards the adjustment of their differences with the Patrician lords. It was some eighty years before these differences were completely settled by the Licinian Laws, which admitted the Plebeians to the supreme offices of the state.

#### NOTE E.—THE VALERIO-HORATIAN LAW ON PLEBISCITA.

The terms of one of the Valerio-Horatian Laws, as given by Livy (iii. 55. 3), are “ut quod tributum plebes iussisset, populum teneret.” In the same way, Livy (viii. 12. 14) gives as the result of the Publilian Law of 339 B.C., “ut plebiscita omnes quirites tenerent.” And we hear that Q. Hortensius (dictator about 286 B.C.) “legem tulit ut eo iure, quod plebs statuisset, omnes quirites tenerentur.” (Laelius Felix in Gellius, xv. 27; Livy’s account of the Hortensian Law is not extant.)

What is the relation between these enactments?

(1) Are we to suppose that the same principle was re-affirmed three times? Perhaps the Patricians would not have been incapable of first granting a privilege and then evading its force; but yet, we cannot believe that the three laws covered the same ground. (a) The lawyers always cite the *Lex Hortensia*, never either of the earlier laws, as their justification for treating *plebiscita* as practically equivalent to *leges* (see e.g. Gell., xv. 27; Gaius, i. 3; Pomponius in *Dig.*, i. 2. 2, 8). (b) It is also highly unlikely that the Plebeians should, at so early a date as 449 B.C., have gained, even in theory, so vast and far-reaching a concession.

(2) Mommsen thinks that the laws of 449 and 339 B.C. refer, not to the *concilium plebis tributum*, but to the *comitia tributa* (that is to say, to the assembly of the whole people in tribes; see p. 91). But Livy’s language shows clearly that he supposed his authority to refer to the *concilium plebis*, as he lays emphasis on *all* the citizens being bound by the decisions of the *plebs*. If he is wrong in this supposition, the error of interpretation is such a serious one that Livy’s words cease to be of any value, and we are left in the region of pure conjecture.

(3) Another alternative is to regard these three measures as *stages* in the gradual emancipation of the *concilium plebis* from the control of the Patricians and of the Senate. The advantage of this view is that, while leaving the Hortensian Law in the important position given to it by the lawyers, it enables us to accept, as at least partially true, the traditions about the laws of 449 and 339 B.C. Perhaps, in 449, the consul was required, whenever a resolution was adopted by the *concilium plebis*, to consult the Senate on the desirability of bringing before the *comitia* a proposal in accordance with that resolution; in 339, the consul was required to bring such a proposal at once, without consulting the Senate; and in 286 (?), the *plebiscitum* was taken as equivalent by itself to a *lex*. As the people in *comitia* would be sure, in almost all cases, to agree with the action of the *concilium plebis*, the change introduced by the Hortensian Law becomes, on this theory, one rather of constitutional than of practical importance. But such a speculation is necessarily only conjectural.

On the whole subject, see Mommsen, *Röm. Forsch.* i. 163; Herzog, i. 190; Willen's, *Le Sénat*, ii. 74; Strachan-Davidson in *Eng. Hist. Rev.*, vol. i. p. 209.

AUTHORITIES.—Livy, iii.; Dionys., x. xi.; Diod., xii. 24; Cic., *Rep.*, ii. 37. Criticism of the History of the Decemvirate: Mommsen, *Röm. Forsch.*, i. 295; Herzog, i. 177. Twelve Tables: Bruns, *Fontes Juris Romani* (ed. Mommsen); Schwegler, *R.G.*, iii. 26; Wordsworth, *Fragments and Specimens of Early Latin*, 502; *Dict. Ant.*, "LEX" (Duodecim Tabularum).

## CHAPTER XI

### SEQUEL OF THE DECEMVIRATE—MILITARY TRIBUNATE— GENERAL HISTORY TO THE WAR WITH VEIL. (448-407 B.C.)

IN the first joy which followed the fall of the Decemvirs, there seems to have been a great disposition in the moderate men of both sides, such as the new Consuls and Duillius the most influential of the Tribunes, to confide in the good intentions of the opposite party. But the greater part of the Patricians, especially the young men, in whom the pride of blood was hottest, had only made concessions in the hope of recalling them on the first opportunity; whereas many of the Plebeians regarded their present gain only as a step towards complete political equality.

The greatest omission in the arrangement effected by the Consuls and Tribunes of the year 449 B.C. was, that they had not insisted on the repeal of the invidious law, *Question of* *conubium.* ratified lately by the Twelve Tables, by which the intermarriage of the Orders was prohibited. Four years after the deposition of the Decemvirs, an enterprising college of Tribunes made it fully understood that the claims of the Plebeians were yet unsatisfied. Nothing short of social and political equality would allay the contests, which had been raging and were sure to rage again, till the wall of severance raised up by oligarchical pride was broken down.

With these views, C. Canuleius, one of the Tribunes of the year 445 B.C., gave notice of a bill which should make the marriage of the two Orders legitimate. And at *Proposal of* *Canuleius.* the same time his colleagues brought forward a measure which should throw open the Consulship to Patricians and Plebeians alike.

Scenes of great violence followed the introduction of these bills, as before, when Terentilius Harsa was striving for his law. We know no particulars except that the Tribunes, despairing



of success, again led the Plebeians out of the city ; and in this third Secession they are said to have occupied the Janiculum.<sup>1</sup> If, they said, the Patricians deemed their fellow-citizens unworthy to marry with them, if their blood would not mingle, if they were different races of men, it were better that they should live apart. Here, however, as before, the Secession gave strength to the moderate party, and it was agreed by the Patricians to allow the Canuleian law to pass. This was in itself a revolution. It destroyed the existence of the Patricians as a caste. It was now conceded that the two Orders were equal in blood, and that children born of a mixed marriage were in law entitled to the same rank and privileges as those of pure Patrician descent. This change, more than anything, promoted that complete amalgamation of the two Orders which followed within the next eighty years.

The Canuleian bill had become law. The proposal of the nine Tribunes to open the Consulship remained. Against this the Patrician burgesses made a firmer stand. They had yielded the most dearly prized of their social privileges ; they resolved to maintain their political powers untouched. The Consuls, they argued, had sacred duties to perform ; it was their business to call together the Centuriate Assembly and preside over it, for none could take the auspices and perform the sacred duties associated with this business except those in whose veins ran pure Patrician blood. Thus was again raised the very question which ought to have been set at rest by the Canuleian law. The different nature, as it were, of Patricians and Plebeians was still made a reason for excluding the latter from the highest offices of state.

*Proposition to  
admit  
Plebeians to  
Consulship.*

After much altercation and long delays a compromise was agreed to, as in the case of the Terentilian law. The Consulship was, for the present at least, to be suspended, and the chief executive power committed to officers who bore the name of MILITARY TRIBUNES, or Tribunes with Consular authority.<sup>2</sup> They were to be elected, like the Consuls, by the Centuries, and Plebeians as well as Patricians were to be eligible. The regular number of these officers appears to have been six.<sup>3</sup>

*Compromise—  
Appointment  
of Military  
Tribunes with  
Consular  
Power.*

It seems, at first sight, as if by this concession the

<sup>1</sup> Florus, i. 25, compared with Ampelius, 25.

<sup>2</sup> Their proper title was *tribuni militares consulari potestate*, or *consulum imperio*. See *Dict. Ant.*, "TRIBUNUS" (4).

<sup>3</sup> The evidence on this point is inconsistent (*cp.* Lewis, ii. 259, 263).

Patricians had given up everything that was demanded by the nine Tribunes. The Tribunes asked for free admission to the Consulate; free admission to the Military Tribunate was conceded. However, on examination, it turns out that this apparent concession was more than balanced by other portions of the arrangement. The Patricians felt sure, by their influence in the Comitia of the Centuries, that they should secure most of the places in the new magistracy. But if this failed, the Senate had the power of suspending the Military Tribunate, and ordering an election of Consuls for any given year.

Further, in the very year after the establishment of Military Tribunes, two new officers of state, called Censors, were appointed. These must both be Patricians, and it can hardly be doubted that the cause of their creation was to take out of the hands of the Military Tribunes some of the most important functions which had hitherto belonged to the office of Consul. They chose the Senate, and held a census of all the citizens.<sup>1</sup> They were elected every five years, and at first they continued in office during the whole of this period (which was called a *lustrum*); but Mamercus Aemilius in his Dictatorship (434 B.C.) brought in a law by which the Censors were allowed eighteen months for the purpose of executing their business, and then were required to lay down their office.

It may be observed that it was not till the year 400 B.C. that even a single Plebeian obtained a place in the Military Tribunate. After this, however, the inferior Order commonly obtained their due share of places, and in one year at least they formed a majority.

It may be matter of surprise that the Plebeians were content with so little. No doubt, the first thing they looked to was their own personal well-being; as yet they cared little for political rights. All their movements had rather tended to security of person and property than to possession of power. They sought for Tribunes of the Plebs, to protect the poor debtors from the oppression of rich creditors. They demanded an equal code of laws, that they might have known rights, not dependent on the will of Patrician courts of law. They claimed the right of appeal from the judgment of the Consuls, that their persons might be secure from arbitrary power. The only exception would be the second Valerian Law,

<sup>1</sup> Above, p. 44. This view as to the origin of the Censorship is a plausible conjecture by Niebuhr: it is criticised by Lewis (ii. 265).

if by that enactment their Assembly obtained the power of making laws.<sup>1</sup> But for some time to come the laws in which they were interested had to do only with questions of persons and property; the Plebeians did not yet interfere with political matters, such as peace and war.

Even the Military Tribunate was not really established at this time, nor indeed till the siege of Veii, some forty years later. This seems to have been a period of provisional government, during which all public relations were extremely unsettled. The few events that are preserved by the annalists fully indicate this state of things. During the whole period of the Military Tribunate, the Patrician burgesses are evidently struggling hard to maintain their political supremacy. For several years Consulships are frequent; the very first election to the Military Tribunate was set aside by the augurs, and Consuls were elected in the place of the Tribunes: but at length consular years became rare, and after the beginning of the siege of Veii almost disappear.

And in the year 421 B.C. the Plebeians were admitted to another office of state hitherto confined to the Patricians, namely, the Quaestorship.<sup>2</sup> As time went on the duties of the Quaestors multiplied; and it was thought necessary to appoint four instead of two—two for home service and two to accompany the Consuls in the field. On this, the Tribunes of the Plebs demanded that the Plebeians should be eligible to the office, and this was conceded. In 267 B.C. the number of the Quaestors was again doubled;<sup>3</sup> and in later times they became indefinite in number, since every general and every governor of a province had a Quaestor attached to his staff.

Now it certainly was the custom in after-times to fill up vacancies in the Senate from those who had served as Quaestors, and this may have been so from the beginning. When, therefore, there were eight Quaestors, the Censors, at the commencement of each *lustrum*, would find forty

<sup>1</sup> See page 116.

<sup>2</sup> Above, p. 89. During the early years of the Republic the Consuls selected the Quaestors; from 447 B.C. onwards, the Quaestors were elected by the people (Tac., *Ann.*, xi. 22), not by the *comitia centuriata*, but by the *comitia tributa* (see p. 91).

<sup>3</sup> These new Quaestors were called *quaestores classici*, and were specially appointed in order to manage affairs connected with the fleet.

men, out of whom new Senators were to be chosen ; and as these forty had all been elected Quaestors by the People in their Tribes, it is plain that the Senate was indirectly chosen by the People. This regulation, whenever introduced, diminished very much the arbitrary power of the Censors in choosing new Senators. Moreover, it gave the Plebeians easy admission into the Senate. They were, however, already admitted into this great Council ; for we find P. Licinius Calvus spoken of as "an old senator" in the year 400 B.C., when, first of the Plebeians, he was elected Military Tribune.

Therefore, we see the Plebeians admitted to the Military Tribuneship by law in 445 B.C., and actually in 400 ; to the Quaestorship by law in 421, and actually in 409 ; and to the Senate at some previous time. The political disunion of the Orders was fast disappearing, and but for the Gallic invasion, which interrupted all peaceful reforms, would have ended sooner than was actually the fact.

Yet there remained many signs of discord and discontent, though of less violence than in the time of Terentilius.

The year 440 B.C. was long remembered as a season of dearth and scarcity. To relieve the distress of the poor a new office, called the Mastership of the Market (*praefectura annonae*), was created, and the Patrician, L. Minucius, was the first who held this office. But the poorer sort among the Plebeians, impatient with hunger, complained that his measures were slow and ineffectual, and their discontent was still further increased by

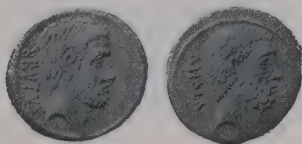
the suspicious liberality of Sp. Maelius, a wealthy Plebeian Knight. This man employed his money in buying up corn, which he distributed for little or nothing among the poorer citizens, and he was suspected by the Patricians of a wish to raise himself to kingly power. The unhappy man paid dearly for his ambition or generosity. One of the Consuls elect was T. Quinctius Capitolinus, a resolute Patrician, who determined to crush the attempts of Maelius. To this end he persuaded the Senate to create a Dictator ; and the person chosen was the old hero, L. Quinctius Cincinnatus, his kinsman, who now reappears for a moment upon the stage. The aged Dictator entered on his office with all the eagerness of youth ; he named C. Servilius Ahala his Master of the Horse ; during the night he occupied the Capitol and all the strong places in the city. Next morning he took his seat in the Forum, and sent Ahala to summon Maelius before his tribunal. Maelius knew that his case was desperate, for under the Dictator the right of appeal to the Centuries was for the time suspended. He therefore refused to obey the

summons ; and, on his refusal, Ahala struck him dead upon the spot. Then the Dictator gave judgment that the act was necessary and justifiable ; he treated Maelius as a condemned traitor, and ordered his house to be levelled with the ground. The place was called the *Aequimaelium*. His stores of corn were sold at a low rate to the poor Plebeians by Minucius.



Coin representing monument to Minucius, who reduced the price of corn (Stevenson, "MINUCIA.")

Cicero and the ancients always praise the conduct of Ahala, and represent him to have saved the commonwealth by his



Coin of Brutus, with heads of Ahala and of Brutus, the first consul (Stevenson, "AHALA.")

firmness and decision. On the other hand, the Plebeians of his own time considered Maelius as a martyr to their cause, and so great was their indignation that Ahala was obliged to leave Rome.

Still more angry feeling is indicated by two narratives relating to members of the haughty Postumian *gens*.

In the year 431 B.C., Rome was threatened by a combined attack from the Aequians and Volscians ; and to oppose it, A. Postumius Tubertus was named Dictator. He defeated the enemy, but only by enforcing the most *Severity of the Postumii.* rigorous discipline—so rigorous that he condemned his own son to death, because, though he gained a victory, he had presumed to attack without orders. This story of the severity of the Roman father is better known in the case of T. Manlius which occurred nearly a century later.

Again, in the year 414 B.C., M. Postumius Regillensis was Military Tribune, and warmly opposed an Agrarian law, by which it was proposed to divide among the poorer Plebeians

certain lands which had been taken from the Aequians. As commander of the army, he threatened to use his absolute power (*imperium*) over any soldier who had dared, or should dare, to further this Agrarian law ; he had already refused them all share in the plunder taken from the Aequians at Bola. So exasperated were the men that they rose in mutiny, and stoned their general to death—a rare instance of insubordination among the soldiers of Rome.

AUTHORITIES.—Livy, iv. v. ; Dionys., xi ; Zonaras, vii. 19, 20. On Maelius : Lewis, i. 270 ; Mommsen, *Röm. Forsch.*, ii. 199. For the constitutional points see (besides the usual authorities) *Dict. Ant.*, “CENSOR,” “QUAESTOR.”





Emissary of the Alban Lake.

## CHAPTER XII

### WARS SINCE THE DECEMVIRATE—SIEGE OF VEII. (448 391 B.C.)

SINCE the victory gained by the Consuls, Valerius and Horatius, over the Sabines, no molestation had been experienced from that quarter. The leagues formed by the great Consul, Sp. Cassius, had checked the advance of the nations on the east and south, particularly of the Volscians. These successes continued. Colonies sent to Ardea in 442 B.C., and to Velitrae in 404, protected the Roman territory on the east from the inroads of the Volscians; while northern Latium was secured by another Colony planted at Lavici in 418.<sup>1</sup> A great change had taken place since the Aequians and Volscians had been in occupation of the Alban Hills and threatened the very gates of Rome. And while these tribes were being forced back upon the east, wars were waged against the Etruscans beyond the Tiber, which ended in the first considerable addition to

*Successes of  
Rome against  
Aequians and  
Volscians.*

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen (i. 450) gives reasons for doubting the tradition about Lavici. Velitrae had been previously colonized in 494 B.C; see *Dict. Geogr.* p. v.

the Roman territory that had been received since the fall of the monarchy. After the days of Lars Porsena, the Republic had carried on a desultory war with the Veientes, as with her neighbours on the eastern frontier. But since the fatal day on which the great Fabian gens perished on the Cremera, there had been a cessation of these feuds. The quarrel was thus renewed.

*Renewal of  
hostilities  
with Veii.*

Fidenae was an ancient town on the Sabine side of the Tiber, about six miles from Rome. It was a Roman Colony, but it had repeatedly revolted and expelled the colonists.<sup>1</sup> The last time that this happened, the Fidenatians submitted themselves to Lars Tolumnius of Veii as a protector against the Romans.<sup>1</sup> He raised an army of his own people combined with the Faliscans of Falerii. But the Romans prevailed, and A. Cornelius Cossus slew the Veientine king with his own hand. The linen cuirass which he took and offered up to Jupiter Feretrius as *spolia opima* was long preserved. It is worth adding that the

*Fidenae.*

Cossus wins *spolia opima*. Emperor Augustus himself informed Livy that in the inscription upon this cuirass Cossus called himself Consul; and if this was true, the *spolia opima* of Cossus involve questions of some difficulty.<sup>2</sup> Fidenae was razed to the ground: a truce was made with Veii.

This truce ended in the year 407 B.C., and the Veientes entreated the assistance of their Etruscan kinsfolk against the City of the Seven Hills. But the northern states were in fear of the Gauls, who were threatening to overrun their country, and Veii was left to defend herself.<sup>3</sup> She was no mean rival—as large as Rome, as well peopled, not more than twelve miles distant. The Veientes, however, did

*Veii.*

<sup>1</sup> He is said to have murdered the Roman ambassadors, and their statues stood on the Forum till near the time of Cicero (*Phil.*, ix. 2).

<sup>2</sup> Livy, iv. 20. This battle took place in 437 B.C., while Cossus was not Consul till 428. If Augustus read the inscription rightly, and the inscription is contemporary, the feat of Cossus is wrongly dated, which, however, can hardly be the case. If not, the common notion that the *spolia opima* could only be won by the general slaying the general of the enemy with his own hand must be abandoned: indeed, though Livy and others maintain this notion, Varro (*Festus*, s.v. *opima*) expressly says: “Opima spolia etiam esse, si *manipularis miles* detraxerit, dummodo duci hostium.” *Cp.* Lewis, ii. 277.

<sup>3</sup> Melpum (near Milan), the most important city of the Etruscans in the north, is said to have fallen to the Gauls on the same day as Veii fell to the Romans.

not dare again to meet the Romans in the field, and allowed their city to be invested (405 B.C.). This was the first time that the Roman militia kept the field for a continuance, and now for the first time they received pay for their services.<sup>1</sup> Hitherto the men had only gone forth for a short campaign, but now they were obliged to remain in the field for the whole year, in order effectually to blockade the enemy's city. *Siege begun.*

But the siege lasted several years without any progress on the part of the Romans. They were unused to the work of a regular siege; and in 396 the people of Capena and Falerii, who had now taken part with Veii, attacked and defeated them. A panic fear spread from the army to Rome; the matrons crowded to the temples; the Senate met and ordered that a Dictator should be appointed. The choice fell on M. Furius Camillus, who from this time fills an important place in Roman History. *Camillus appointed Dictator.*

The history of the later years of the siege of Veii passes into an heroic legend, like those of Coriolanus and the Fabii. Thus it runs:—

The discouragement of the Romans had not been caused by defeat alone. It was magnified by prodigies and marvels. Two years before, when summer was now far spent, the Alban Lake, which stands high on the Alban Hills without any visible outlet for its waters, began to rise from no apparent cause. Prayers and sacrifice availed not; the waters still flowed on. Then the Senate sent to consult the oracle at Delphi what should be done to avert the mischief. *Overflow of Alban Lake.*

Meantime an old Veientine soothsayer was heard to laugh at the Romans who were at Veii. "For," said he, "it is written in the book of fate that Veii shall be taken only when the waters of the Alban Lake shall be let off without escaping to the sea." A Roman centurion who heard this, persuaded the old man to come forth and advise him about certain matters of his own: then he seized the old man, and the generals sent him to Rome to be examined by the Senate. But the Senate paid him no heed till the messengers returned from Delphi and said the same things. Then they set to work and made a great tunnel from the south-western part of the lake, so as to allow its waters to disperse, by means of ditches over the fields, without reaching the sea.<sup>2</sup> The tunnel, called in Latin an *emissarium* or *out-letter*, to which the legend refers, still remains. It is hewn through rock for a distance of more than a mile, varying

<sup>1</sup> See Ihne, iv. 150.

<sup>2</sup> Cp. Cicero, *De Div.*, i. 44.

from seven to two feet in height, and being more than four in breadth.<sup>1</sup> It would be a considerable work even in these days.<sup>2</sup>

When the Veientes found that the fates were about to be fulfilled, they sent messengers to ask for peace. But the Senate turned a deaf ear to their prayer; whereupon one of the messengers said: "It is written truly that our city should fall; but it is also written (though ye know it not) that, if Veii should fall, Rome shall be destroyed also." But still the Senate listened not, and M. Furius Camillus, already appointed Dictator, took the command.

Camillus dallied not with the work. He was not contented with blockading the city as before, but began a mine which was to open into the citadel; and when all this *Fall of Veii.* was ready he sent word to the Senate. A decree was issued authorising all Roman citizens who pleased to go and share in the plunder.

As the Romans stood in the mine beneath the citadel, so runs the legend, the king of Veii was offering a sacrifice there to Juno; and they heard the soothsayer declare that whoever cut out the entrails of the victim should prevail.<sup>3</sup> Then the astounded Veientes saw armed Romans rise from beneath their feet. So they and their king were slain, and the Romans cut out the entrails. And Camillus sent a band of young men dressed in white, with hands clean from blood, to carry the statue of the great goddess Juno to Rome. But they, not daring to touch her, asked whether she were willing to go; and then (it is said) she nodded assent, and the statue was placed in a new temple upon the Aventine.

<sup>1</sup> The Alban stone was noted for its goodness. After the great fire at Rome, in Nero's time, it was ordered that a portion of every new house should be of Alban or Gabian stone (*cp.* Furneaux on Tacitus, *Ann.*, xv. 43. 4).

<sup>2</sup> There is an *emissarium* to let off the waters of the Fucine Lake (Lake of Celano) in the Aequian mountains. It was executed in the time of the Emperor Claudius, and is three miles in length from the edge of the lake to the bed of the Liris. Its height is about ten feet, and its breadth six. Thirty thousand men were engaged for eleven years in the work (*cp.* Furneaux on Tac., *Ann.*, xii. 56; *Dict. Geogr.*, "FUCINUS LACUS.") In our own days a company completed the work in nine years. These facts will show the greatness of the work of draining the Alban Lake, which was executed in the infancy of the Roman Republic.

<sup>3</sup> "Qui eius hostiae exta *prosequisset*, ei victoriam dari" (Livy, v. 21). Plut. (*Cam.*, 5) makes a curious mistake in translating this: ὅτι νίκην δίδωσι τῷ κατακολουθήσαντι τοῖς ἱεροῖς,—as if Livy had written *prosecutus esset*.

Thus fell Veii, like Troy, in the tenth year of the war, and the people obtained a great booty. And Camillus entered Rome, and passed along the Sacred Way, and went up to the Capitol in a car drawn by four white horses, like the chariot of the sun. Never had general so triumphed before, and men feared that the vengeance of the gods might come upon his pride.

Veii had fallen, and her few allies were not left unpunished. The people of Capena saw their fruitful lands wasted, and hastened to make submission to the conquerors.

Camillus himself, now Military Tribune, went against Falerii, the city of the Faliscans, which also fell an easy prey to the Roman arms. The story goes that,

*The school-master of Falerii.*

when he laid siege to this city, a certain schoolmaster, who taught the sons of all the chief men, brought them out on false pretences, and led them to the Roman camp. But Camillus, scorning the baseness of the man, ordered that his hands should be tied behind him, and that the boys should flog him back again into the town. "For Romans," said he, "war not with boys, but with men." Then the Faliscans, won by his noble conduct, willingly surrendered their city (B.C. 394).

*Surrender of Falerii.*

Soon after, Sutrium and Nepeté also acknowledged the supremacy of Rome, and her power became paramount in all the district south of the Ciminian forest. Nor was this all. Three years later she overcame in

*Sutrium and Nepeté.*

battle the powerful city of Vulsinii (*Bolsena*) north of the Ciminian range, and a peace of twenty years was then concluded. A common fear made both parties inclined to forego further hostilities. The Gauls were at hand, and perhaps had already crossed the Apennines.

*Truce with Vulsinii.*

The conquest of Veii very nearly proved the ruin of Rome. It was a large and beautiful city, well and regularly built on a plain, with a citadel of great natural strength overhanging the city.<sup>1</sup> The Veientes themselves, according to the barbarous practice of ancient times, had all been put to the sword or sold into slavery. There stood the goodly city empty, inviting people to come and dwell in her.

On the other hand, Rome with her seven hills presented a series of ascents and descents; within her walls there was hardly a level street, and the streets themselves were much less regular and handsome than those of Veii. It is not wonderful, then, that men should

*Proposal to remove from Rome to Veii.*

<sup>1</sup> Dennis, *Cities and Cemeteries of Etruria*, i. 1.

turn their thoughts towards the latter city, especially those poor Plebeians who had no lands at Rome. In the year after the capture, T. Sicinius and some of his brother Tribunes proposed that half the people should go and settle in Veii, so that she should form another state equal to Rome; but this proposal was stopped by the veto of two Tribunes, who opposed their colleagues. It was, however, renewed a year afterwards, with the consent of all the Tribunes; but the People listened to the reasoning of the Patricians, and eleven Tribes out of twenty-one voted against the bill. Thus the Tribunes were defeated even in their own Assembly.

Satisfied with this victory, the Patrician party consented to an Agrarian law on a large scale. The Veientine lands were distributed, and seven *iugera* were allotted to every householder, with an additional allowance for his children.

Meantime the great Camillus had lost favour with his countrymen. His Patrician pride all along diminished the popularity which as a conqueror he had won; and he lost favour still more when he called upon every man to refund a tenth of the spoil they had taken at Veii. He had vowed, he said, to offer this tenth to Apollo; and the spoil had been divided without first setting apart the portion due to the god. Poor men ill brook to part with what they think their own; the general's vow, they thought, was a mere pretence to rob the Plebeians of their hard-won spoil.

Nor was it long before men came forward and accused Camillus of taking a part of the booty for his own share, which ought to have been fairly divided among all. It was said that he had appropriated certain bronze gates, which at Rome, when all coin was of bronze, were exceedingly valuable. The general was impeached for corrupt practices by L. Apuleius, Tribune of the Plebs (391 B.C.). His clients and tribesmen offered to pay the fine which probably would have been imposed upon him, but said they could not acquit him. He therefore left the city, and as he left it he turned about and prayed that his country might soon have reason to feel his want and call him back again. Ardea, a city of the Latins, was his place of refuge.

There can be little doubt that Camillus really took these gates. But he might well think that he was entitled to them, for it was acknowledged that a general had a right to set apart a portion for himself, and we may believe that his chief fault lay in his Patrician haughtiness. All

*Unpopularity  
of Camillus.*

*His exile.*

*Estimate of  
his character.*



would wish to believe that so great a man was not to be blamed for greed and baseness.

His parting prayer was heard ; for “the Gaul was at the gates, and the next year saw Rome in ashes.”

AUTHORITIES.—Livy, iv., v. ; Dionys., xii., xiii. (fragments) ; Diod., xii.-xiv. ; Plut., *Camillus*. On Camillus : Niebuhr, *Hist.*, ii. 501 ; Lewis ii. 317.



Gallic warriors (from bronzes in the British Museum).

## CHAPTER XIII

### THE GAULS (390 B.C.)

THE course of Roman History, hitherto disturbed only by petty border wars, now suffers a great convulsion. Over her neighbours on the south-east the Republic was in the ascendant; on the north-west the frail oligarchies of Etruria were sinking before Camillus and his hardy soldiers; when, by an untoward union of events, Rome saw her best general depart from her walls, and heard that a host of barbarians was wasting the fair land of Italy. The Gauls burst upon Latium and the adjoining lands with the suddenness of a thunderstorm, which swept over the face of Italy, crushing and destroying. The Etruscans were weakened by it: and if Rome herself was laid prostrate, the Latins also suffered greatly, the Volscians were humbled, and the Aequians so shattered that they never recovered from the blow.

The Gauls were a tribe of that large race of mankind who are known under the name of Celts, and who at the time in question peopled nearly the whole of Western Europe, from the heart of modern Germany to the ocean. The *Celtic peoples.* northern and central parts of the continent were already in the hands of various nations, called by the common name of Germans or Teutons, to whom belonged the Goths, Saxons, Danes, Normans, Lombards, Franks, Suevi, and Alemanni; but in earlier times the Celts possessed most of France, the west of Germany, parts of Spain, and Portugal, together with the British Isles. Of these Celts there were two great divisions, commonly called Goidels and Brythons, differing in habits and language. To the former family belong the Irish, Gaelic, and Manx languages; to the latter Welsh, Breton, and Cornish.<sup>1</sup>

Before the time we are now speaking of there had been a great movement in the Celtic nations. Two great swarms went out from Gaul. Of these, one crossed the Alps *Celtic Migrations.* into Italy; the other, moving eastward, in the course of time penetrated into Greece,<sup>2</sup> and then passed into Asia Minor, where they were known under the name of Galatians.

It is supposed that the Gaels who peopled the greater part of Gaul, being oppressed by other tribes from the north, went forth to seek new homes in distant lands, as in later times the Gothic and German nations were *Occupation of Northern Italy.* driven in the contrary direction by the Huns and other Asiatic hordes, who were thronging into Europe from the East. At all events, it is certain that large bodies of Celts passed over the Alps before and after this time, and having once tasted the wines and eaten the fruits of Italy were in no hurry to return from that fair land into their own less hospitable regions. The course taken by these adventurers was probably over divers passes of the Alps, from the Mount Cenis and the Little St Bernard to the Simplon. Pouring from these outlets, they overran the rich plains of Northern Italy, and so occupied the territory which lies between the Alps, the Apennines, and

---

<sup>1</sup> Goidel (Gael) is probably synonymous with Celt, both words signifying "warrior." But it is convenient to have one common name, and most modern writers have taken Celt or Kelt as the generic appellation of the race. The name Kymric (surviving in Cumberland) applies only to a part of the Brythonic family.

<sup>2</sup> They assaulted the temple of Delphi in 278 B.C., rather more than a century after their compatriots sacked Rome (see *The Student's Greece*, p. 553).

the Adriatic,<sup>1</sup> that the Romans called this territory Gallia Cisalpina, or Hither Gaul. The northern Etruscans<sup>2</sup> gave way before these fierce barbarians, and their name is heard of no more in those parts. Then the Gauls crossed the Apennines into southern Etruria, and while they were ravaging that country, they first came in contact with the sons of Rome.

The common date for this event is 390 B.C. How long before this time the Gallic hordes had been pouring into Italy we know not. One account tells us that, after helping the Phocæan colonists of Massilia, they crossed the Alps, defeated the Etruscans, and founded Mediolanum, during the reign of Tarquinius Priscus.<sup>3</sup> But whenever it was that they first passed over the Alps, it is certain that now they first crossed the Apennines.

The tribe which took this course were of the Senones. They are described as large-limbed, with fair skins, yellow hair, and blue eyes, in all respects contrasted with the natives of southern Italy. Their courage was high, but their temper fickle. They were more fitted for action than endurance, able to conquer, but not steady enough to maintain and secure their conquests.

Brennus<sup>4</sup> and his barbarians (it was said or sung) passed into Etruria at the invitation of Aruns, a citizen of Clusium (*Chiusi*), whose wife had been dishonoured by a young Lucumo or Noble of the same place. To avenge his private wrongs, this Etruscan called in the Gauls, as Count Julian in the Spanish legends called in the Moors to avenge the violence offered to his daughter by Roderic the Goth. The Gauls, nothing loth, crossed the mountains, and laid siege to Clusium; on which the Etruscans of the city, terrified and helpless, despairing of effectual succour from their own countrymen, sent to seek aid from the city of the Tiber, which had conquered so many old Etruscan cities. The Senate gave them a favourable hearing, but contented themselves with sending three ambassadors, sons of Fabius Ambustus, the Pontifex Maximus, to warn the Gauls not to meddle further with the men of Clusium, for Clusium was the

<sup>1</sup> All of it except Liguria, which was bounded by the Apennines and Maritime Alps, the Po and the Trebia.

<sup>2</sup> Pp. 13, 126.

<sup>3</sup> Livy, v. 34. Polybius (ii. 17) evidently regarded the interval between their first arrival and their march on Rome as much shorter. See Lewis, i. 479, ii. 356; Mommsen, i. 423.

<sup>4</sup> The same title is given to the chief who led the assault upon Delphi. See Pauly, *Real-Encycl.* 2 s. v. "BRENNOS."

ally of Rome. The barbarians took slight notice of the message, and continued the war. Now it chanced that there was a battle fought while the three Fabii were still at Clusium; and they, forgetting their peaceful character of envoys, took part with the Clusians against the Gauls, and one of them was seen stripping the arms off a Gallic chieftain whom he had slain. The barbarians, in high wrath, demanded to be led straight against the city whose sons were so faithless, but their chiefs restrained them, and sent an embassy to Rome, demanding that the envoys should be given up. Then the Senate, not caring to decide so weighty a matter, referred it to the People; and so far was the People from listening to the demands of the Gaul, that, at the Comitia next ensuing, these very envoys were all three elected Military Tribunes. On hearing of this gross and open insult, Brennus broke up his camp at Clusium, and marched southward for Rome. The river Clanis, upon which stood Clusium, would lead the Gauls down to the Tiber. Having crossed that river, and pouring down its left bank, they found themselves confronted by the Romans on the banks of the Allia, a little stream *Battle of the Allia.* which rises in the Sabine Hills and empties itself into the Tiber through a deep ravine, at a distance of 12 miles above Rome.<sup>1</sup> The Roman left rested on the Tiber, the ravine of the Allia was in their front, and their right was protected by hilly ground. Brennus attempted not to attack in front, but threw himself with an overpowering force upon the right flank of the enemy; and the Romans, finding their position turned, were seized with panic fear and fled. Those on the left plunged into the Tiber in the hope of escaping across the river to Veii, and many made their escape good: but many were drowned, and many pierced by Gallic javelins. A certain number reached Rome, and carried home news of the disaster.<sup>2</sup>

The Gauls cared not to pursue the foe. One whole day they spent in collecting trophies, and rejoicing in their easy victory.

Meantime the Senate at Rome did what was possible to retrieve their fallen fortunes. With all the men of military age they withdrew into the Capitol, for they had not *Defence of Capitol.* numbers to man the walls of the city. The mass

---

<sup>1</sup> Livy (v. 37. 7) says "*ad undecimum lapidem.*" But there is no stream at exactly this distance. The nearest that answers to the description is the little brook called *Fonte di Papa* (see *Dict. Geogr.*, "ALLIA"). Diodorus (xiv. 114) places the battle on the *right* bank of the Tiber, without mentioning the Allia.

<sup>2</sup> It was marked in the Calendar as the *dies Alliensis*, xv. or xvi. Kal. Sext. = July 18th or 17th (*cp.* Virg., *Aen.*, vii. 717; Lucan, vii. 409).

of the Plebeians fled from the city, and many seem to have taken refuge in Veii. The Priests and Vestal Virgins, carrying with them the sacred images and utensils found refuge at the Etruscan city of Caere. But the old Senators, who had been Consuls or Censors, and had won triumphs and grown grey in their country's service, feeling themselves to be now no longer a succour but a burthen, determined to sacrifice themselves for her ; and M. Fabius, the Pontifex, recited the form of words by which they solemnly devoted themselves, and the enemy with themselves, to the gods below.<sup>1</sup> Then, as the Gauls approached, they ordered their ivory chairs to be set in the Forum, and there they took their seats, each man clad in his robes of state, to await the coming of the avenger.

*Self-sacrifice  
of aged  
Senators.*

The Gallic host approached the city and came to the Colline gate. It stood wide open, and they advanced slowly, not without suspicion, through deserted streets, unresisted and unchecked. When they reached the Forum, there, within the sacred precincts of the Comitium, they beheld those venerable men, sitting like so many gods descended from Heaven to protect their own.<sup>2</sup> They gazed with silent awe, till at length a Gaul, hardier than his brethren, ventured to stroke the long beard of M. Papirius. The old man raised his ivory staff and smote the offender ; whereupon the barbarian, in wrath, slew him, and his first sword-stroke gave the signal for a general slaughter. Then the Romans in the Capitol believed that the gods had accepted the offering which those old men had made.

But for a time they were doomed to look down inactive upon the pillage of their beloved city. It was set on fire, and all the houses perished, except some upon the Palatine, which were saved for the convenience of the chiefs. At length the Gauls, sated with plunder, resolved to assault the Capitol. In those days it was surrounded on all sides with steep, scarped cliffs, and only approachable from the Forum by the Sacer Clivus. Here the Gauls made their assault, but it was easily repulsed, and henceforth they contented themselves with a blockade. A portion of them remained in the city, while the rest roamed through the neighbouring country, plundering and destroying.

*Sack of Rome.*

The months that follow are embellished with more than one

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen*, as the Romans called it.

<sup>2</sup> Plut., *Cam.*, 21. Livy (v. 41) represents them as killed in their own houses (*cp.* Ovid, *Fasti*, vi. 357).



heroic legend. We read that while the Gauls were lying at the foot of the Capitol, they were astonished to see a youth named C. Fabius Dorso come down into the midst of them, clad in sacred attire, and pass by the Forum to the Quirinal Hill, there to perform certain solemn rites peculiar to the great Fabian gens.<sup>1</sup> Struck with religious awe, they suffered the bold youth to go upon his way and return to the Capitol unharmed. *Fabius Dorso.*

Still more famous is the legend of M. Manlius, the saviour of the Capitol. The Plebeians at Veii were anxious to communicate with the Senate and Patricians there, and for this purpose a brave youth, named Pontius Cominius, undertook to climb the steep rock of the Capitoline on the river side. He explained to the Senate the wish of the people to recall Camillus and make him Dictator; and, having obtained their sanction, he returned the same way in safety. But next day the Gauls observed the marks on the rock where his feet had rested, or where he had clung for support to the tufted grass and bushes. Where one man had climbed another could follow, and by night a chosen party cautiously ascended by the same track. The foremost of them was just reaching the top in safety; the guards slept; not even a watch-dog bayed. But in the precincts of the temple of Juno, which stood hard by, certain sacred geese were kept, and the pious Romans (so ran the legend) had spared to eat of these even in the extremities of hunger. And they were rewarded. For now, in the hour of need, the sacred birds began to cackle aloud and flap their wings, so that they roused M. Manlius from sleep.<sup>2</sup> Snatching up his arms, he rushed to the edge of the cliff where the noise was, and found a Gaul just reaching the top. Quick as thought he pushed the intruder backward; as he fell he overthrew many of his comrades; the others were slain without resistance. Thus M. Manlius saved the Capitol; and his fellow-soldiers so honoured his bravery that each man gave him a day's allowance of food, notwithstanding the distress to which all had been reduced. *M. Manlius.* *The sacred geese.*

For seven months did the Gauls blockade the Capitol. They entered the city in the heat of the dog-days, and the two months that follow are at Rome the most unhealthy of the year. Unused to the sultry climate, naturally intemperate, living in the open air, numbers of them

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* p. 100.

<sup>2</sup> *Virg., Aen.*, viii. 652; *Lucr.*, iv. 685; *Ovid, Met.*, ii. 538; *Mart.*, xiii. 74.

fell a prey to pestilence and fever. But with stubborn courage they braved all, till at length Brennus agreed to quit Rome on condition of receiving 1000 pounds' weight of gold. This was hastily collected; and when it was being weighed out, Brennus, with insolent bravado, threw in his sword with the weights, crying, "*Vae victis!*" ("Woe to the vanquished!") But while the scale was yet turning (so ran the legend), Camillus, who as Dictator had taken the command of the Roman army at Veii, marched into the Forum. Sternly he ordered the gold to be taken away, saying that with iron, not with gold, would he redeem the city. Then he drove the Gauls away, and so completely destroyed their host that not a man was left to carry home the news of their calamity.<sup>1</sup>

Such was the conclusion of the legend. But, unfortunately for Roman pride, here also, as in the tale of Porsena, traces of true history are preserved which show how little the Roman annalists regarded truth. Polybius tells us, as if he knew no other story, that the departure of the Gauls was caused, not by the forces of Camillus, but by the intelligence that the Venetians, an Illyrian tribe, had invaded their settlements in Northern Italy; and that they marched off unmolested to their homes.<sup>2</sup> It is added by a later historian, that a Livius Drusus recovered the very gold received at Rome, from the Gauls of a later day.<sup>3</sup>

The Gauls left the city in ruins, in whatever way they were induced to retire, whether by the sword of Camillus, or by the softer persuasion of gold. Of the condition in which Rome was left we will speak further in the next chapter.

Two later inroads of the Gauls are distinguished by two famous legends—the last, or nearly the last, which occur in the pages of Roman history.

In the Manlian house there was a Family which bore the name of Torquatus. This name was said to have been won by T. Manlius, who fought with a gigantic Gallic champion on the bridge over the Anio in 361 B.C., and slew him. From the neck of the slain enemy he took the massy chain (*torques*) which the Gallic chiefs were in the habit of wearing.<sup>4</sup> He put it round his own neck, and returning in

<sup>1</sup> Virg., *Aen.*, vi. 826.

<sup>2</sup> Polyb., ii. 18; Plut., *De Fort. Rom.*, 12.

<sup>3</sup> Suet., *Tib.*, 3. See Ihne, i. 273.

<sup>4</sup> "Lactea colla

Auro innectuntur."—Virg., *Aen.*, viii. 660.

triumph to his friends, was ever after known by the name of T. Manlius Torquatus. Of him we shall hear more in the sequel.

Again, when L. Camillus, son of the great Camillus, went forth to repel a new invasion of Latium by the Gauls in 350 B.C.,<sup>1</sup> a champion challenged any one of the Romans to *Valerius* single combat. The challenge was readily ac- *Corvus.* cepted by M. Valerius, who, by the side of the huge Gaul, looked like a mere stripling. At the beginning of the combat (wonderful to tell) a crow lighted upon his helmet; and as they fought, the bird confounded the Gaul by flying in his face, striking him with its beak and flapping its wings before his eyes, so that he fell an easy conquest to the young Roman. Hence M. Valerius was ever known by the name of Corvus and his descendants after him. Him also we shall hear of hereafter; for he lived to be a great general, and more than once delivered his country from great danger.

AUTHORITIES.—On the Gauls in general: Rhys, *Early Britain; Encycl. Brit.*, "CELTIC LITERATURE." For their relations with Rome: Livy, v.-vii.; Plutarch, *Camillus*; Polybius, ii. 17, 18. (See also Lewis, ii. 400).

---

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen (i. 432) thinks that it was this expedition of which Aristotle heard, not the better known earlier one.

## CHAPTER XIV

SEQUEL OF THE GALLIC WAR—LICINIAN LAWS—FINAL  
EQUALISATION OF THE TWO ORDERS. 389—367 B.C.)

WE can imagine better than describe the blank dismay with which the Romans, on the departure of the Gauls, must have looked upon their ancient homes. Not only was the country ravaged, as had often happened in days of yore, but the city itself, except the Capitol, was a heap of ruins. It is not strange that once again the Plebeians should have thought of quitting Rome forever. Not long before, they had wished to migrate to Veii: now they had actually been living there for many months. Rome no longer existed: patriotism, it might be said, no longer required them to stand by their ancient home; why should not all depart—Patricians with their clients and freedmen, as well as Plebeians—and make a new Rome at Veii? In vain Camillus opposed the proposition with all the influence which his late services had given him. Even standing in the Forum, under shadow of the Capitol, with the Citadel defended by Manlius over their heads, in the sight of their country's gods just brought back from Caeré, the Plebeians were ready to agree to a general migration of the whole people, when (so runs the story, a sudden omen changed their hearts. A certain centurion was leading a party of soldiers through the Forum and, halting them near the Comitium, while the question was being debated in the Senate-house, he used these memorable words: "Standard-bearer, pitch the standard here; here it will be best for us to stay!")

It was therefore resolved to rebuild the city, and the Senate did all in their power to hasten on the work. They took care to retrace, as far as might be, the ancient sites of the temples; but it was impossible to prescribe any rules for marking out the streets and fixing the habitations of the citizens. All men were allowed to help them-

*Proposal to  
migrate to  
Veii renewed:*

*defeated by an  
omen.*

*Irregularity  
in rebuilding  
the city.*

selves to stone and timber, and tiling for the houses was supplied at the public expense. So men built their houses where they could, where the ground was most clear of rubbish, or where old materials were most easy to be got. Hence, when these houses came to be joined with others, so as to form streets, these streets were narrow and crooked, and, what was worse, were often built across the lines of the ancient sewers, so that there was now no good and effectual drainage. The irregularity continued till Rome was again rebuilt after the great fire in the time of the Emperor Nero.

Great were the evils that were caused by this hurry. The healthiness of the city must have been impaired, order and decency must have suffered, and, besides this, there was one particular evil at the moment which threatened very great mischief. The mass of the people, having little of their own, or having lost all in the late destruction, were obliged to borrow money in order to complete their dwellings, and as tillage had for the last season been nearly suspended, the want and misery that prevailed were great. Now again, as after the wars against the Tarquins, many of the poorer sort were reduced to bondage in the houses of the wealthy.

Then it was that M. Manlius, the defender of the Capitol, stood forth as the patron of the poor. He saw a debtor being taken to prison, whom he recognised as a brave centurion that had formerly served with him in the wars. He instantly paid the man's debt and set him free. Then, selling the best part of his landed property, he declared that, while he could prevent it, he would never see a fellow-citizen imprisoned for debt. His popularity rose high, and with the poorer sort the name of M. Manlius was more in esteem than that of the great Camillus. Not content with relieving want, he also stepped forward as an accuser of the Patricians and Senators: they had divided among themselves, he said, part of the gold which had been raised to pay the Gauls. The Senate had ordered a Dictator to be named, and A. Cornelius Cossus was chosen. He summoned Manlius before him, and required him to prove the charge which he had maliciously brought against the ruling body. He only answered by repeating his charges, and the Dictator ordered him to be cast into prison. But the tumult that followed became so serious that it was thought necessary to release him. He renewed his attacks with undiminished zeal. But now a cry was raised against him that he was in fact endeavouring to make himself tyrant of Rome, and that this was the real purpose of all his generosity. Two of the Tribunes

*Misery of the people.*

*Manlius, the champion of the poor.*

*His fate.*

were induced to impeach him. But Manlius claimed to be regularly tried before the whole People assembled in their Centuries, and his claim was allowed. On the appointed day he appeared in the Campus Martius, surrounded by a crowd of debtors, every one of whom he had saved from bondage. Then he exhibited spoils taken from thirty enemies slain by himself in single combat; eight civic crowns, bestowed each of them for the life of a citizen saved in battle, with many other badges given him in token of bravery. He laid bare his breast, and showed it all scarred with wounds, and then, turning to the Capitol, he called those gods to aid, whom he had saved from the sacrilegious hands of the barbarians. The appeal was felt, and if the Centuries had then given their votes he would certainly have been acquitted of high treason. So his enemies contrived to break up the Assembly; and shortly after, he was put on his trial in another place, the Peteline grove, whence (it is said) the Capitol could not be seen. Here he was at once found guilty and condemned to be thrown down the Tarpeian rock. His house on the Capitol was destroyed, and it was enacted that henceforth no Patrician should dwell there. It was also forbidden that any one of his *gens* should hereafter bear the forename of Marcus.<sup>1</sup>

Yet measures had lately been passed which must have indirectly benefited many of the poorer citizens. The lands *Four new Tribes formed.* which had been taken from the Veientes, on the right bank of the Tiber, had been incorporated into the Roman territory and divided into four Tribes, so that all free men settled in these districts became burgesses of Rome, and had votes in the Comitia both of the Centuries and Tribes. Commissioners also were appointed to make a division of lands in the Pontine district. Yet these measures were insufficient to heal the breach which still subsisted between the Patricians and Plebeians. Nothing could be effectual to this end but the admission of the Plebeians to the chief magistracy, and a struggle now commenced for that purpose.

It has been said that all difference between the Patrician and Plebeian Orders was rapidly disappearing. In fact, the Patrician families were gradually becoming fewer, while many Plebeian families were rising to wealth and power. Already we have seen the Plebeians obtain a footing in the Senate;

---

<sup>1</sup> It may be observed that each *gens* clung to the same forenames. Thus Publius, Lucius, Gnaeus, were favourite forenames of the Cornelii; Gaius of the Julii; Appius of the Claudii; and so on. See Lewis, ii. 367; Mommsen, *Röm. Forsch.*, i. 15.



already they were allowed to fill the office of Quaestor, and, as Military Tribunes, could command the armies of the state ; but to the curule offices,<sup>1</sup> the Censorship and Consulship, they were not admissible, the reason given being, that for these offices the auguries must be taken, and no religious rites could be performed save by persons of pure Patrician blood. This now began to be felt to be a mockery. Men saw with their own eyes and judged with their own understanding that Patricians and Plebeians were men of like natures, were called on alike to share burthens and dangers in the service of the state, and therefore ought to share alike the honours and dignities which she conferred. So Canuleius argued many years before, so the Plebeians thought now ; and two resolute Tribunes arose, who at length carried the celebrated laws by which Plebeians were admitted to the highest honours.

*Plebeian  
claim to  
Consulship.*

*Licinius and  
Sextius,  
Tribunes.*

These were C. Licinius Stolo and his friend L. Sextius.

There is a well-known story of the manner in which Licinius was first roused to the undertaking. It runs thus. M. Fabius Ambustus, a Patrician, had two daughters, the elder married to Ser. Sulpicius, a Patrician, the younger to C. Licinius, a Plebeian. It happened that Sulpicius was Consular Tribune in the year B.C. 377 ; and when the younger Fabia was on a visit to her sister, Sulpicius, returning home in state from the Forum, alarmed the Plebeian's wife by the noise made by his lictors knocking at the house-door. The elder sister laughed at the ignorance which this implied ; but Ambustus, pitying the confusion of his younger daughter, promised to place her on a level with her proud sister. It may be observed, by the way, that the story must be an invention, because Licinius' wife, being daughter of a man who had himself been Consular Tribune not long before, could not have been ignorant of the dignities of the office ; and because there was nothing in the world to prevent Licinius himself from being Consular Tribune and thus equal to his brother-in-law. No doubt Licinius and his friend were led by higher motives to bring forward their laws.

*Story of  
the two  
daughters of  
Fabius  
Ambustus.*

However this might be, Licinius and Sextius procured their election to the Tribunate of the Plebs for the year 376 B.C., and promulgated the three bills which

*Licinian  
Rogations.*

<sup>1</sup> Curule Magistrates were those who had the right of using the *sellæ curulis* or chair of state. See *Dict. Ant.*, "SELLA."

have ever since borne the name of the LICINIAN ROGATIONS. These were :—

I. That the sum of the interest already paid should be deducted from all debts, and the remainder paid off in three successive years.

II. That no citizen should hold more than 500 *iugera* (about 312 acres) of the Public Land, nor should feed on the public pastures more than 100 head of larger cattle and 500 of smaller, under penalty of a heavy fine. A certain number of free men were also to be employed on each estate.

III. That henceforth Consuls, not Consular Tribunes, should always be elected, and that one of the two Consuls *must* be a Plebeian.

Of these laws, the first is of a kind not very uncommon in rude states of society, and only in such states could it fail to produce serious mischief. If persons lend and borrow money they enter into a legal contract, and the state is bound to maintain this contract. Cases indeed will occur when the borrower is unable to pay his debts, and that from no fault or neglect of his own ; and it is good that the law should provide for cases of insolvency in which the insolvent is not guilty of fraud. But if the state were to make a practice of cancelling legal debts, persons would be very slow to lend money at all, and thus credit and commerce would be destroyed. At Rome after the Gallic war, as at Athens in the time of Solon (when a similar ordinance was passed),<sup>1</sup> all things were in such confusion that it might be necessary to resort to arbitrary measures of this kind ; and we may well believe that Licinius himself a wealthy man, would not have interfered in this way but from necessity. But the precedent was bad ; and in later times one of the worst means used by demagogues was a promise of *novae tabulae*, or an abolition of all debts.

The second was a general Agrarian law. Former Agrarian laws had merely divided certain portions of Public Land among the needy citizens ; but this laid down a general rule by which the holding (*possessio*) of all such lands was to be limited. The purpose of Licinius was good. He wished to maintain that hardy race of yeomen who were the best soldiers in the state militia ; whereas, if all these lands were absorbed by the rich, they would be cultivated by hired labourers or by slaves. The subsequent history will show how unfortunate it was for Rome that this law was not, perhaps could not be, more fully executed.

<sup>1</sup> His famous *συνάρχθεια*, or Disburthening Ordinance, by which all existing debts were wiped out (*cp. The Student's Greece*, p. 102).

These two laws were of a social nature, attempting to regulate the private relations and dealings of the citizens; the third was a political law, and needs no remark.

At first the Patricians were equally opposed to all these laws; they were the chief creditors, and therefore would lose by the first law; they held the bulk of the Public Lands on easy terms, and therefore would lose by the second; they alone could be Consuls, and therefore they could not brook the third. It was then natural that they should offer a violent resistance; nor is it wonderful that they should enlist many rich Plebeians on their side, for these persons would suffer as much as themselves from the first two laws. Accordingly, we find that the other eight Tribunes were persuaded to put a veto on the bills. But Licinius and Sextius would not be thus thwarted, and themselves turned the powerful engine of the veto against their opponents. When the time of the elections arrived, they interdicted all proceedings in the Comitia; consequently, no Consuls, Consular Tribunes, Censors, or Quaestors could be elected. The Tribunes and Aediles, who were chosen by the Plebeians in their Tribes, were the only officers of state for the ensuing year.

This state of things (as the Roman annalists say) lasted for five years, Licinius and Sextius being re-elected to the Tribunate every year. But at the end of that time (370 B.C.), when the people of Tusculum, old allies of Rome, applied for aid against the Latins, the Tribunes permitted Consular Tribunes to be elected to lead the army; in the next year M. Fabius Ambustus, the father-in-law and friend of Licinius, was elected. The latter, far from relaxing his claims, now proposed a fourth bill, providing that, instead of two keepers of the Sibylline books (*duumviri*),<sup>1</sup> both Patricians, there should be ten (*decemviri*), to be chosen alike from both Orders: so scornfully did he treat the pretensions of the Patricians to be sole ministers of religion.

The Patricians felt that the ground was slipping from under them, and that the popular cause was daily gaining strength. It was in vain, after another year's struggle, that the Senate ordered a Dictator to be named for the purpose of settling the matter in their favour. The great Camillus assumed the office for the fourth time, but resigned; and P. Manlius

---

<sup>1</sup> P. 53.

Capitolinus, who was named presently after, found himself powerless.<sup>1</sup>

Once more, as when the Patricians were in opposition to the Tribunes Terentilius and Canuleius, a compromise was effected.

*Compromise suggested.* The law respecting the keepers of the Sibylline books was allowed to pass, and it was suggested that the two former of the Licinian Rogations, the two social laws, might be conceded, if the Plebeians would not press the political law and claim admission to the Consulship. But this the Tribunes refused. They could not, as they had always argued, effectually remedy the social evils of their poor brethren unless they had access to the highest political power; and they declared they would not allow the first two bills to become law unless the third was passed together with them. "If the people will not eat," said Licinius, "neither shall they drink." In vain the Patricians endeavoured to turn this declaration against them; in vain they represented the Tribunes as ambitious men who cared not really for the wants of the poor in comparison of their own honour and dignity: in vain it was declared that the mass of the Plebeians were ready to accept the compromise. The Tribunes set their faces like iron against the threats of the higher sort and the supplications of the lower. For another year the grim conflict lasted, till at length their resolution prevailed, and in the year 367 B.C. all the three Licinian Rogations became law.<sup>2</sup>

*Licinian Rogations passed.*

This great triumph was achieved with little tumult (so far as we hear) and no bloodshed. Who can refuse his admiration to a people which could carry through their most violent changes with such calmness and moderation?

But the Patricians, worsted as they were, had not yet shot away all their arrows. At the first election after these laws were passed, L. Sextius was chosen the first Plebeian Consul. Now all business transacted at the Comitia of the Centuries required confirmation by the Patrician members of the Senate.<sup>3</sup> This confirmation they refused to grant, and Camillus, who was now some eighty years old, was named Dictator for the fifth time to support them in their refusal. The old soldier, always ready to fight at an advantage, perceived that nothing now was practicable but an honourable capitulation, and ended his political career nobly by resolving to act as mediator.

*Sextius first Plebeian Consul.*

<sup>1</sup> He appointed Licinius his *magister equitum*, the first instance of a Plebeian holding that office.

<sup>2</sup> On the chronology, see Niebuhr, *Hist.*, ii. 560; Lewis, ii. 379.

<sup>3</sup> Pp. 56, 81.

The matter was finally adjusted by a further compromise. The election of the Plebeian Consul was confirmed, but the judicial power was now taken from the Consuls and put into the hands of a supreme Patrician judge, called the Praetor, and Sp. Camillus, son of the Dictator, was the first Praetor. At the same time also another magistracy, the Curule Aedileship, was created, to be filled by Patricians. These Curule Aediles shared the duties of the Plebeian Aediles, and, besides this, had to superintend the Great or Roman Games.<sup>1</sup> At the same time a fourth day was added to these games in honour of the Plebeians.

Thus the Patricians lost one of the Consulships, but retained part of the consular functions under another title. As a record of his strenuous efforts to establish a lasting peace between the Orders, Camillus vowed a temple to Concord; and this was the last act of his life. The site of the Temple of Concord, one of the best known points in the ruins of ancient Rome, can be traced at the north-western angle of the Forum, immediately under the Capitoline. The building was restored with great magnificence by the Emperor Tiberius, and it deserved to be so, for it commemorated one of the greatest events of Roman history—the final union of the two Orders, from which point we must date that splendid period on which we now enter.<sup>2</sup> By this event was a single city enabled to conquer, first all Italy, and then all the civilised countries of the known world—that is, all the peoples bordering on the Mediterranean Sea.

AUTHORITIES.—Livy, vi.; Zonaras, vii. 23, 24; Plut., *Cam.*, 36, 39; [Victor] *Vir. Ill.*, 20, 24; Dio, xxvi. 1-3, xxix. 1, 5; Appian, *B. C.*, i. 8; Dionys., xiv. 6; Lewis, ii. 359 *sqq.* On Manlius: Mommsen, *Röm. Forsch.*, ii. 179; Ihne, *R. G.* i.<sup>2</sup> 167. On the Licinian Rogations: Long, *Decline of the Roman Republic*, i. 149-170; Lewis, ii. 385; see also *Hermes*, xxiii. 410, xxx. 624.

<sup>1</sup> *Dict. Ant.*, "LUDI ROMANI."

<sup>2</sup> Lanciani, *Ruins and Excavations*, 288.

# BOOK III

## ROME CONQUEROR OF ITALY

(B.C. 366—264)

---

### CHAPTER XV

SEQUEL OF THE LICINIAN LAWS — CIVIL HISTORY TO THE  
FIRST SAMNITE WAR (B.C. 366—344)—WARS FROM 389  
TO 344

VARIOUS causes were for some time interposed to prevent the due execution of the Licinian laws. Indeed, the first two of these measures, which aimed at social improvements, may be said to have failed. Social abuses are always difficult to correct, for such evils are of slow growth ; their roots strike deep ; they can only be abated by altering the habits and feelings of the people, which cannot be effected in the existing generation ; they will not give way at once to the will of a law-giver, however good his judgment, however pure his motives, however just his objects. But the common difficulty of removing social evils was increased in Rome at this time by circumstances.

For two years or more a pestilence raged in the city, which swept away large numbers of citizens, and paralysed the industry of all. The most illustrious of its victims was the great Camillus. About the same time, probably from the action of earthquakes, the Tiber overflowed his bed, and flooded the Great Circus, so that the games then going



on were broken off; and, not long after, a vast gulf opened in the Forum, as if to say that the meeting-place of the Roman People was to be used no more. The *Gulf in the Forum.* seers said that the gods forbade this gulf to close till the most costly possession of Rome should have been thrown into it. Then, when men were asking what this might be, a noble youth, named M. Curtius, said aloud that Rome's *M. Curtius.* true wealth was brave men, that nothing else so worthy could be devoted to the gods. Thus saying, he put on his armour, and, mounting his horse, leaped into the gulf, and straightway, says the legend, the earth closed, and became solid as before; and the place was called the Lacus Curtius for ever after.<sup>1</sup>

To these direct visitations of God, the pestilence and the earthquake, was added a still more terrible scourge in the continued inroads of the Gauls. It has been *Inroads of Gauls.* noticed above that in the years 361 and 350 B.C.<sup>2</sup> these barbarians again came into conflict with Rome, again burst into Latium and ravaged the Roman territory.

These combined causes increased the distress of the poor, and we read without surprise that in the year 357 B.C., ten years after the passing of the Licinian laws, a bill was brought forward by Duillius and Maenius, Tribunes *Attempts to limit rate of interest.* of the Plebs, to restore the rate of interest fixed by the XII. Tables,<sup>3</sup> which in the late troubles had fallen into neglect; and five years later (in 352) the Consuls brought forward a measure to assist the operation of the Licinian law of debt. They appointed five commissioners (*quinqueviri*), with power to make estimates of all debts and of the property of the debtors. This done, the commissioners advanced money to discharge the debt, so far as it was covered by the property of the debtor. The measure was wise and useful, but could only be partial in its effects. It could not help those debtors who had no property, or not enough property to pay their debts withal. Hence we find that in another five years (347 B.C.) the rate of interest was reduced to 5 per cent. (*fenus semiunciarium*), and five years afterwards it was tried to abolish interest altogether.<sup>4</sup> But laws to limit interest proved then, as they

<sup>1</sup> According to an older legend it derived its name from the Sabine champion, Mettus Curtius (p. 23). Here is a notable example of the "double legend." The spot was called "Lacus Curtius"; and to account for the name two legends arose, one recent, the other of remote antiquity. See Lewis, ii. 410.

<sup>2</sup> P. 138.

<sup>3</sup> P. 114.

<sup>4</sup> P. 161.

have proved ever since, ineffectual to restrain the practices of grasping and dishonest usurers.

There were, then, great difficulties in the way of a law for relieving debtors. These were increased, as has been seen, by circumstances, and, as we must now add, by the selfishness and dishonesty of the rich Patricians and Plebeians, who held the bulk of the Public Land in their own hands, and contrived to evade the Licinian law in the following way. If a man held more than 500 *iugera*, he emancipated his son,<sup>1</sup> and made over a portion of the land nominally to him, or, if he had no son, to some other trusty person. With sorrow we hear of these practices, and with still greater sorrow we learn that C. Licinius himself was indicted for fraudulently making over 500 *iugera* to his son, while he held another 500 in his own name. Thus this remedy for pauperism was set aside and neglected, till the Gracchi arose and vainly endeavoured, after more than two centuries of abuse, to correct that which at first might have been prevented.<sup>2</sup>

The law for equalising political power was more effective. For eleven years after the Licinian law one Consul was always a Plebeian. Then the Patricians made a last struggle to recover their exclusive privilege; in the year 355 B.C. we have a Sulpicius and a Valerius as Consuls, both of them Patricians; and in the course of the next dozen years we find the law violated in like manner no less than six or seven times.

These violations of the law above mentioned seem to have been effected by the power by which the Senate ordered the Patrician Consul to name a Dictator. At least, in the space of twenty-five years after the Licinian laws we have no fewer than fifteen Dictators. Now several of these were appointed for sudden emergencies of war. But often we find Dictators when there is no mention of foreign war. In the year 360 we find that both the Consuls enjoyed a triumph, and not the Dictator. And on several occasions it is expressly stated that these Dictators were appointed to hold the Consular Comitia, when no doubt they brought their overbearing power to secure the election of two Patrician Consuls.

---

<sup>1</sup> By Roman law all children were regarded as the *property* of the father. In order to make a son independent (*sui iuris*), the father went through the form of *selling* him to another person, who then set him free, and this was called *emancipatio*.

<sup>2</sup> We hear of this Licinian Law being enforced again in 298 B.C. (Livy, x. 13). Cf. also Niebuhr, *Hist.*, iii. 13.

But if this were the plan of the Patricians, it availed only for a time. After the year 343 B.C. the law was regularly observed, by which one Consul was necessarily a Plebeian, till in the year 172, when the number of the Patrician families had greatly decreased, both Consulships were allowed to be filled by Plebeians, and from that time forth the Consulships were often both held by men of the Plebeian Order. The Plebeians also forced their way to other offices. C. Marcius Rutilus, the most distinguished Plebeian of his time, who was four times elected Consul, was named Dictator in the year 356 B.C., no doubt by the Plebeian Consul, Popilius Laenas; and five years later (351) we find the same Marcius elected to the Censorship, while in 337 B.C. Q. Publilius Philo was the first Plebeian Praetor.

*First Plebeian  
Dictator,  
Censor,  
Praetor.*

Practically, therefore, the political reform of Licinius and Sextius had been effectual so far as the admission of Plebeians to the highest offices of state was concerned. It must be remarked, however, that these privileges, though no longer engrossed by Patricians, seem to have been open only to a few wealthy Plebeian families. C. Marcius Rutilus, as we have just remarked, held the Consulship four times in sixteen years (357-342); M. Popilius Laenas four times in twelve years (359-348); C. Poetelius Libo and Q. Publilius Philo enjoyed a similar monopoly of honours.

*Plebeian  
honours  
limited to a  
few families.*

As the exclusive privileges of the Patricians thus gradually and quietly gave way, instead of being maintained (as in modern France) till swept away by the violent tide of revolution, so did the power of the Senate rise. It was by the wisdom or policy of this famous assembly that the city of Rome became mistress of Italy and of the world; but a more convenient place for examining its constitution will occur hereafter. At present we proceed with our proper task. Hitherto the contest has been internal, of citizen against citizen, in order to gain an equality of rights. Henceforth for two hundred years, we shall have to relate contests with foreign people, and the subject of this Book is to give an account of the conquest of Italy, for which the Roman Senate and People, now at length politically united, were prepared.

*Future course  
of Roman  
History.*

Abroad, after the burning of the city, Rome had once more to struggle for very existence. Before the city was so far restored as to be habitable, it was announced that the Aequians and Volscians were in arms. The Aequians, indeed, seemed to have shared in the

*Wars with  
Aequians,  
Volscians.*

general disaster caused by the Gallic inroad; henceforth at least their name seldom occurs on the page of Roman history. But the Volscians boldly advanced to Lanuvium, and once more encamped at the foot of the Alban Hills. The city was in great alarm, and Camillus was named Dictator for the third time to meet the exigency. He defeated the enemy with great loss, and pursued them into their own territory. He then marched rapidly to Bolae, to which place the Aequians had advanced, and gained another victory.

Danger also impended from the north. The Etruscans hoped by a brave effort to recover the territory which the Romans *Wars with* had for the second time appropriated. They laid *Etruscans.* siege to Sutrium, and it fell. But the prompt Dictator, on the first alarm, marched his troops to the point of danger, and on the very day on which Sutrium had yielded *Triumph of* to the foe, it was again taken by the Roman *Camillus.* general. Thus Camillus again appears as the saviour of Rome. He enjoyed a threefold triumph over the Volscians, the Aequians, and the Etruscans (389 B.C.).

It was two years after, that the Etruscan territory, now effectually conquered, was formed into four Tribes. By the *Six new* addition of these new Tribes the whole number *Tribes.* was raised to twenty-five.<sup>1</sup> The late assault of the Etruscans, perhaps, suggested the wisdom of making the free inhabitants of this district citizens of Rome. Men who had lately been subject to the oppressive government of a civic oligarchy, being now mingled with Roman Plebeians who had received allotments in the district, and seeing the comparative freedom of all Roman burgesses, were sure to fight for Rome rather than join in an insurrection against her. Here was the beginning of that sagacious policy, which for a time led political enfranchisement hand in hand with conquest. Thirty years later (358 B.C.) the Senate pursued the same course with respect to the Pontine district and other lowlands which had been recovered from the grasp of the Volscians. This territory was formed into two Tribes, so as to make the whole number twenty-seven, and the inhabitants had an interest in repressing predatory inroads.<sup>2</sup>

Soon after these Volscian and Etruscan wars, there were threatenings of greater danger than was to be feared either

<sup>1</sup> See pp. 76, 142. The names of these four tribes were the Stellatine, Tromentine, Sabatine, Arniensian (Livy, vi. 5). Two colonies were established as border fortresses—Sutrium in 383, Nepetë in 373.

<sup>2</sup> The Pontine and Publilian (Livy, vii. 15).

from Volscians or Etruscans. The Latins and Hernicans, who since the time of Sp. Cassius had fought by the side of Rome in all her border wars, no longer appeared in this friendly position. The inroad of the Gauls had broken up the League. Rome had been reduced to ashes and was left in miserable weakness. Many of the Latin towns were so utterly destroyed that the antiquary in vain seeks for their site in the desolation of the Campagna.<sup>1</sup> But the two important cities of Tibur and Praenesté (*Tivoli* and *Palestrina*), perched on steep-scarped rocks, defying the rude arts of the invader, had gained strength by the ruin of their neighbours, and appear as independent communities, standing apart from the rest of Latium and from Rome. In 382 B.C. the Praenestines sent a force to support Velitrae, a Roman Colony, in its revolt, and war accordingly was declared against them. In this war even the Tusculans deserted Rome. But after a severe struggle of more than two years, T. Quinctius, being named Dictator, reduced all the towns subject to Praenesté, and blockaded Praenesté itself, which capitulated on terms of which we are not informed.<sup>2</sup>

During the long internal struggle, which ended in the passing of the Licinian laws, the annals are silent respecting foreign wars. But a few years after the Temple of Concord had been erected by old Camillus, fresh alarms arose. The Hernicans gave signs of disquietude. War was declared against them in 362 B.C. Next year came the second inroad of the Gauls, and it was observed with consternation, that this terrible foe occupied the valley of the Anio and was not molested either by the Latins of Tibur or by the Hernicans. In the year 360 B.C. the Consul Poetelius enjoyed a triumph over the men of Tibur and the Gauls—an ominous conjunction.

But this new inroad of the barbarians, which threatened Rome with a second ruin, really proved a blessing ; for the remaining Latin cities, which in the late conflicts had stood aloof, terrified by the presence of the Gauls and seeing safety only in union, now renewed their league with Rome, and the Hernicans probably followed their example. This league, which was concluded in 358 B.C., produced its fruit. The Gauls quitted Latium ; and Tibur, the only Latin city which still continued hostilities against Rome, was at length compelled to yield (354 B.C.).

<sup>1</sup> See the ancient list in Dionys., v. 61 ; *cp.* Ihne, i. 96.

<sup>2</sup> On the inscription professing to refer to this war, see Ihne, i. 292.

While these dangers were successfully averted on the eastern frontier, war had been declared between Rome and the powerful Etruscan city of Tarquinii, which lay beyond the *War with Tarquinii,* Ciminian Hills. This was in the very year in which the new league was formed with the Latins. But for this, it is hard to imagine that Rome, exhausted as she was, could have resisted the united assaults of Gauls, Volscians, Latins, Hernicans, and Etruscans. As it was, she found it hard to make head against the Tarquinians alone, who in the first year of the war defeated the Consul, C. Fabius, and sacrificed three hundred and seven Roman prisoners to their gods. Two years later they were joined by the Faliscans. Attended by priests, who bore torches in their hands and had their hair wreathed into snake-like tresses, they attacked the Romans, scattered them, and threatened Rome itself. Then M. Popillius Laenas, the Plebeian Consul, being ordered by the Senate to name a Dictator, named another Plebeian, C. Marcius Rutilus, the first of his Order (as we have said) who was advanced to this high office, and his conduct justified the appointment. The enemy was defeated. The Senate refused a triumph to the Plebeian; but the People voted that he should enjoy the well-earned honour.

For a moment the people of Caeré, who had given shelter to the priests and sacred things of Rome in the panic of the Gallic invasion, joined the war, but almost immediately *and Caeré.* after, they sued for peace. The Romans, however, remembered this defection, as we shall have to mention in a future page.<sup>1</sup> But the Tarquinians had already been subdued; and three hundred and fifty-eight prisoners were scourged and beheaded in the Forum to retaliate for former barbarity. In the year 351 B.C. a peace of forty years was concluded, after a struggle of eight years' duration.

It was in the year after the conclusion of this war that the third inroad of the Gauls took place, when M. Valerius gained *Inroads of Gauls.* his name of Corvus.<sup>2</sup> Thus remarkably was Rome carried through the dangers of intestine strife and surrounding wars. When she was at strife within, her enemies were quiet. Before each new assault began, a former foe had retired from the field, and Rome rose stronger from every fall. She had now recovered all the Latin coast-land, from the Tiber to Circeii, and her increasing importance is shown by a renewed treaty with the *Second treaty with Carthage.*

<sup>1</sup> P. 219.

<sup>2</sup> P. 139.



great commercial city of Carthage (B.C. 348).<sup>1</sup> But a more formidable enemy was now to be encountered than had as yet challenged Rome to conflict, and a larger area opened to her ambition. In the course of a very few years after the last event of which we have spoken, the first Samnite War began.

AUTHORITIES.—Our information about these wars comes chiefly from Livy, vi. vii. See the (ultra-critical) estimate in Ihne, b. iii. ch. i.

---

<sup>1</sup> Livy, vii. 27; Oros., iii. 7. But see Strachan-Davidson, *Polybius*, Prol., vi B.



Coin of Carthage, 4th century B.C. (*B.M.C.* III. C. 41.)



Samnite Warriors (from a mural painting at Paestum).

## CHAPTER XVI

### FIRST SAMNITE WAR. (B.C. 343—341)

WE must now carry our eyes beyond the plain of Latium, and penetrate into Campania and the valleys of the Apennines, of which, as yet, our History has taken no account.

The Sabines are a people connected with the earliest legends of Rome, but the Sabines of Cures and the lower country between the Anio and the Tiber are those who *Origin of the Samnites.* have hitherto engaged our attention. It is in the highlands of Reaté and Amiternum that we must search for the cradle of the race. The valleys of this high district afford but scanty subsistence; and the hardy mountaineers ever and anon cast off swarms of emigrants, who sought other homes and made good their claims by arms. It was a custom of the Sabellian tribes, when food was scarce and population became dense, to devote the whole produce of one springtime to the gods.<sup>1</sup> Among other produce, the children born in that year were dedicated to the god Mamers (Mars), and when they came to man's estate, went forth to seek their fortunes abroad. On one such occasion the emigrants, pressing southward from the Sabine highlands, occupied the broad mountainous district which lies northward of Campania, and took the

<sup>1</sup> This was called a *ver sacrum*.

name of Samnites. The Picenians and Frentanians, on the north coast, with the four allied cantons of the Vestinians, Marrucinians, Pelignians, and Marsians, who were interposed between the Samnites and their ancestral Sabines, claimed kin with both nations. *Their geographical position.*

The Samnites themselves also formed four cantons—the Caracenians, Pentrians, Caudinians, and Hirpinians. Of these the Pentrians were far the most considerable; they occupied the rugged mountain district from which descends the upper valley of the Volturnus. Here a great mass of mountains, now known by the name of Mount Matésé, rises boldly from the central chain to the height of more than 6000 feet, and its steep defiles offer defences of great natural strength. But the remains of massive polygonal masonry, which are still seen on the rocky heights occupied by their towns of Aesernia and Bovianum (*Isernia* and *Bojano*), show that the Samnites used art to strengthen their natural defences. Below Mount Matésé, in the valley of the Calor, lay the canton of the Caudinians, whose town of Beneventum (anciently called Maleventum) was also made strong by art. It is within these limits, from Aesernia to Beneventum, that the scenes of the chief campaigns of the Samnite wars were laid.

From the nature of their country the Samnites were a pastoral people. Their mountains break into numberless valleys, sloping both north and south, well watered, and fresh even in the summer heats. *The Samnites a pastoral people.* Into these valleys, as is still the practice of the country, the flocks were driven from the lower lands, ascending to one mountain pasture after another as the heats increased, and descending again towards the plain as autumn inclined towards winter.

But the Samnites were not contented with these mountain homes. As they had themselves been sent forth from a central hive, so in time they cast forth new swarms of emigrants. In early times a Samnite tribe, under the name of Frentanians, had taken possession of the coast-lands between the Marrucinians and Apulia.<sup>1</sup> *Frentanians.* Other bands of adventurous settlers pushed down the Volturnus into the rich plain which lay beneath their mountains, and which, in earlier times, had attracted Etruscan conquerors.<sup>2</sup> *Campanians.* About the year 423 B.C., nearly a century before the time of which we are presently to speak, a band of Samnites seized the city of Capua, and reduced its ancient inhabitants to the

<sup>1</sup> Strabo, v. 241.

<sup>2</sup> P. 13.

condition of clients.<sup>1</sup> Soon after, the great Greek city of Cumae, which then gave name to the Bay of Naples, was conquered by the new lords of Capua, who, from this time forth, under the name of Campanians, became the dominant power of the country. In course of time, however, the Samnites of Capua, the Campanians, adopted the customs of their subjects, and forgot their connexion with the old Samnites of the mountains, just as the Roman Sabines lost all sympathy with the old Sabines of Cures, and as in England the Anglo-Normans became the national enemies of the French.

It may be added that the Lucanians and Apulians, who stretched across the breadth of Italy below Campania, were formed by a mixture of Samnite invaders with the *Lucanians and Apulians.* ancient population ; while the Bruttians, who occupied the mountainous district to the southern side of the Gulf of Tarentum, seem to have consisted chiefly of the original inhabitants, who had risen successfully against the *Bruttians.* invaders. But these half-Sabellian tribes, like the whole races from whom the Samnites came, lent uncertain aid to their kinsmen in the struggle with Rome.

These remarks will prepare us for the great conflict which in fact determined the sovereignty of Italy to be the right of the Roman, and not of the Samnite people. The first *Causes of First Samnite War.* war arose out of a quarrel such as we have just alluded to between the Campanians and the old Samnites of the Matésé. In the year 354 B.C. a league had been concluded between the Romans and the Samnites. Since that time Samnite adventurers had been pressing down the valley of the Liris towards the eastern frontier of the Volscian territory, while the Romans, having now renewed their league with the Latins, were forcing back the Volscians from the west. In 343 B.C. the Samnites pursued their encroachments so far as to assail the Sidicines, a tribe whose chief town was Teanum, in the hill country to the north of Campania. The Sidicines invoked the aid of Capua against their assailants ; and the Capuans, venturing to give this aid, drew upon their own heads the wrath of the mountaineers. The Samnites took possession of Mount Tifata, a bare hill which overhangs Capua on the east, and plundered at will the rich plain below. Unable to stand against the enemy in the field, the degenerate Campanians entreated the assistance of the Roman and Latin League. There was some difficulty in listening to this application, for the

---

<sup>1</sup> Livy, iv. 37.

treaty which had been concluded eleven years before still subsisted, and no hostility to Rome was chargeable upon the Samnites. But it is probable that their aggressions in the valleys of the Liris and Volturnus had alarmed the Senate; and all scruples were removed when the Campanians made their city over to Rome, so that it might be alleged that in defending Capua, Rome would be defending what was her own. An embassy was forthwith sent to require the Samnites to keep their hands off the subjects of Rome. A haughty reply was given to this demand, and war was declared against the Samnites.

The Consuls of the year were both Patricians, A. Cornelius Cossus, and M. Valerius Corvus, whose single combat with the Gaul has been mentioned more than once. *First year of war.* Apart from legendary tales it is evident that Valerius was the most considerable man at Rome, now that Camillus was no more. Though not yet thirty years of age, he was already in his third Consulship, and thrice again he held the same high office. To the end of his life he continued in the service of the state, and there is reason to believe that his influence was employed in assisting to remove the last traces of disunion between the Orders. If the Licinian Law was to be broken, it could not be broken in favour of a worthier than M. Valerius.

Each Consul led two legions separately into the field, with an equal number of Latin allies. Valerius was to drive the Samnites out of Campania, Cossus was to invade *Battle of Mt. Gaurus.* Samnium. Valerius gained a great victory over the Samnites under Mount Gaurus, which lies near Baiae on the sea-coast. But while Valerius was thus victorious in Campania, his colleague became entangled in a Samnite defile and was shut in by the enemy on all sides. From this danger he was relieved by the valour and conduct of a legionary tribune, P. Decius Mus, the first-named of an illustrious Plebeian family. This brave man explored the pass, and, returning in safety, enabled the Consul to attack the enemy, and gain a victory. Presently after *Other victories.* this, Valerius, having (as seems probable) formed a junction with his colleague, overthrew the enemy in a third battle at Suessula.

Next year (342 B.C.) the Romans kept a consular army in Campania, but attempted no active operations against the Samnites, and early in the third year they concluded a treaty of alliance with the enemy, by *Peace concluded.* which the Sidicines and Campanians were left entirely at their

mercy. The causes of this unexpected change of policy were probably two-fold: first, a renewal of discord between the two Orders of the Roman people; secondly, the uneasy feeling which showed itself between the Romans and their Latin allies.

It has been shown above that the pressure of the laws of debt continued; and the discontent thus caused, long smouldering, broke out into flame among the legionaries who were wintering in Campania.<sup>1</sup> They compared that rich and beautiful country with the sullen gloom of the Roman territory, and the luxurious life of the Campanian people with their own rude and sparing habits, and they formed (as we are told) a design to imitate the old Samnites in making themselves lords of this happy land.

*Mutiny of  
Roman  
Legions in  
Campania.*

When C. Marcius, the new Consul, came to the army in the year 342 B.C., he found the men more ready to mutiny than to take the field. An attempt was made to check this spirit by drafting off the most unruly and sending them home in small detachments under various pretences. A cohort was posted at Lautulae, a narrow pass just south of Tarracina, which commanded the coast road between the Volscian Hills and the sea. This cohort was ripe for mutiny, and persuaded the various detachments to halt and join them. The insurgents gradually absorbed the greater part of the army, and advanced to Bovillae in front of the Alban Hills. Here they forced an old Patrician, whom they found dwelling at his country house, to be their leader, and stationed themselves within a few miles of Rome. Then, as there is reason to suppose, they were joined by a number of the disaffected from within the city.<sup>2</sup>

Here was another of those Secessions of which we have heard so much. But now, be it observed, the Secession was not of the whole Plebeian Order, but only of the poorer sort, who felt oppressed by debt. Against these were arrayed, not only the Patricians and their clients, but the wealthier Plebeians, and all who wished to maintain order in the state; and this great party showed their sincerity by procuring that M. Valerius Corvus, a man as famous for moderation as for bravery, should be appointed Dictator, to put an end to the sedition. He was able to

*put down  
by Valerius  
Corvus.*

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps also the systematic evasion of the Licinian Law respecting the election of a Plebeian Consul may have contributed to this discontent.

<sup>2</sup> Livy (vii. 42) remarks that all the details of this story were variously told.



collect an imposing force, with which he approached the insurgents. But Roman citizens were not yet so reckless of blood as willingly to engage in civil war; and when the two armies met, they were overpowered, the one by pity, the other by remorse, and the soldiers of each party embraced each other.

Two laws were proposed for the purpose of allaying the prevailing discontent: one, that no citizen should be struck off the military roll but by his own consent; the other, that no one who had served as legionary tribune should be called on to act as centurion. *Laws for improving the position of soldiers.* The first law was a boon to the debtors, for persons serving in the army were protected from their creditors. The second arose probably from the case of one who had been vexatiously degraded to a subaltern rank by his Patrician general; and the Plebeians were the more willing to maintain the dignity of the tribunes, since the election of six out of the twenty-four had recently been conceded to the People.<sup>1</sup>

Such were the concessions made to the army. At home greater changes followed. A law was carried by the tribune Genucius, enacting that all debts then existing should be cancelled, and that for the future no interest was to be taken for money lent. *Laws for relieving debtors.* This second provision was simply absurd. It was the same thing as forbidding the loan of money at all; no one will lend without some profit to cover the risk of loss. The former provision cancelling all debts was a more violent and dangerous form of the first Licinian Law. The Licinian Law struck certain sums off the debts, providing for the payment of the rest; this new law abolished the debts altogether. What was said of the former law must be repeated here. Such laws, declaring general insolvency, can only be justified by absolute necessity, and never can be enacted in a settled state of society. That such laws were necessary may be inferred from the fact that Valerius suffered them to pass. Society was already so disorganised that even such a law did not make it worse; nay, from this time forth we may date improvement; for about this time was passed a law which abolished the right of reducing debtors into a state of slavery,<sup>2</sup> and henceforth we

<sup>1</sup> Livy, vii. 5. The regular number of legions was four, two to each Consul, and there were six tribunes to each legion. In 311 B.C. it was decided that the people should elect 16 out of the 24. Polybius (vi. 19: about 150 B.C.) regards *all* the military tribunes as elected by the People.

<sup>2</sup> *Lex Poetelia de nexis* (Livy, viii. 28). On the date, see Niebuhr, *Hist.*, iii. 156.

hear little more of free Romans binding themselves as slaves to their creditors.

These intestine commotions probably hindered all active operations against the Samnites in the second year of the war.

*Further cause for peace.* But the cause which forced the Romans to conclude a not very honourable peace in the following year (341 B.C.) was so important, and was followed by results so considerable, that it must form the subject of a separate Chapter.

AUTHORITIES.—On the Samnites: Mommsen, b. i. ch. 8; *Encycl. Brit.*, "SAMNITES"; see also Introd. Sect. 2. First Samnite War: Livy, vii. viii.; Appian, iii. Mommsen (i. 459) and Ihne (i. 341) agree in disbelieving all the details.



Roman Soldiers (from the base of the Column of Aurelius).

## CHAPTER XVII

### GREAT LATIN WAR. SUBJECTION OF LATIUM. (B.C. 340-338.)

THE hostile disposition visible among the Latin communities was of itself sufficient to incline Rome to peace. By the conditions of the Latin League Rome and Latium formed a federal union; and it must never be forgotten that when a Roman army took the field half of it was composed of Latins.

It has been said that after the burning of the city in 390 B.C., the Latins generally stood aloof from Rome, while Praenesté and Tibur even assumed a position of defiance. But in 358 B.C. the old league had been renewed, and the Latins again joined Rome in warring, first against the Volscians and Etruscans, and finally against the Samnites. It is probable that there had been fresh symptoms of disaffection on the part of the Latin cities, and that it was to anticipate hostile movements against Rome that the Senate now, in the year 341 B.C., not only made peace with the Samnites, but concluded a new alliance with that people. Thus the Latins continued in league with the Sidicines and Campanians, while the Romans united themselves with the Samnites, the mortal

enemies of the very tribes who had lately been under the protection of Rome.

When Rome formed a separate league with the Samnites, she acted without consulting the Latins. Her conduct made it clear that Latium must either acknowledge her sovereignty or assert independence in arms. There was indeed a third course possible, namely, for the two nations to form a federal state under one government ; and in the year 340 B.C. the cities of Latium sent their two Praetors (who were elected every year like the Consuls at Rome), together with ten chiefs of their Senate, to propose terms of union. Rome and Latium were henceforth to form one state, Rome being allowed to remain as the seat of government ; but of the two Consuls, one was to be a Latin ; half the Senate was to be Latin ; that is, probably, the Senate was to be doubled by the admission of 300 Latin members ; and no doubt the Latin territory was to be divided into Tribes, which would have equal votes with those of old Rome at the Comitia.

These proposals were fair enough, and it may be thought that Rome might have accepted them without loss of honour ; for, not long after, most of the Latin cities formed the centres of new Tribes, and some of the most distinguished men of later times were of Latin origin. But the conduct of some among the Latin cities had not been such as to warrant confidence, and it is probable that a union now formed, when neither nation was willing to acknowledge the supremacy of the other, would not have been more lasting than that of Holland and Belgium in modern times.

It is not likely, however, that politic reasons of this kind influenced the Romans in rejecting it. Rude nations generally act on impulse rather than on reason ; and the story shows that Roman pride was touched rather than Roman interests.

The Senate, says the legend, met to receive the Latin deputies in the temple of Capitoline Jupiter, at the head of the Clivus Capitolinus. When the Latin Praetor had spoken, the Fathers were filled with wrath, and their mind was uttered by T. Manlius Torquatus, Patrician Consul, the same who had earned his surname in single fight against a Gaul. " If," said he, " the Roman Senate were so dead of heart as to admit these proposals, I myself would come down to the Senate-house, sword in hand, and slay the first Latin who should presume to cross its threshold." Angry words followed, in the course of which L. Annius of Setia, one of the Latin Praetors, spoke lightly of the great god of the Capitol, in whose temple they were assembled. Then, to avenge his majesty, burst forth

*Proposal of  
Latin cities  
for a union  
with Rome.*

*Fate of  
Annius.*

lightning and thunder ; and the Latin, turning hastily to depart, fell headlong down the steps of the temple and was killed.

But while the Senate were receiving deputies they were also preparing for war. The Patrician Consul was, as has been mentioned, the famous T. Manlius, and his Plebeian colleague was the no less famous P. Decius Mus, who had saved the army of Cossus in the Samnite war. The Consuls at once led forth the legions, resolving to leave Rome under the protection of the Praetor, while they marched through the friendly passes of the Marsians and Pelignians into Samnium, there to unite with a Samnite force and descend upon Capua. This bold stroke succeeded. The Latin army marched southward to protect their allies, and it was in the plains of Campania that the fate of Rome and Latium was to be decided.

*The Consuls  
march into  
Campania.*

After movements of which we are not informed, the two armies met under Mount Vesuvius, near a place called Vesis. Here they lay facing one another, neither party choosing to begin the fray. It was almost like a civil war. Romans and Latins spoke the same language ; their armies had long fought side by side under common generals ; their arms, discipline, and tactics were the same.

*Armies meet  
under Mt.  
Vesuvius.*

And here we will follow Livy in giving an account of the Roman army as at that time constituted.

In the old times the Roman army had been drawn up in close order, like the Greek phalanx, so as to act by weight. The front ranks were armed with the long pike or spear (*hasta*) and the large round shield (*clipeus*, *ασπίς*). Locking their shields together, with their spear-points bristling in front, they formed a mass irresistible so long as it remained unbroken. This order of battle was carried to perfection by Philip of Macedon, and we shall speak further of it when we come to the war with Pyrrhus.

*Roman  
military  
system.*

*The phalanx.*

The Romans changed their system, and made this heavy mass a living body. Their citizens were fighting for their country, fit for something better than to be mere machines. The Roman soldiers of later times were armed, not with the long pike, but with two heavy javelins called *pila*, which they were taught to throw with great effect, and a short strong sword, fit alike for striking and thrusting.<sup>1</sup> They ex-

*Reformed  
arrangement.*

<sup>1</sup> The *gladius Hispanus* was only adopted after the second Punic War, but it was probably preceded by a sword of similar character. (Arnold, *Second Punic War*, 395).

changed the round shield for one of oblong shape (*scutum*, *θυρεός*), curved so as to defend the side as well as the front. Thus armed, they stood at the distance of a yard from their right and left hand men, so as to allow free room for the use of their weapons. The men of each rear-rank stood, not directly behind their front-rank men, but so as to cover the space between two, like the knots in net-work (*in quincuncem dispositi*). Thus, when the front-rank men had discharged their *pila*, they fell back, and their rear-rank stepped forward so as to come in front and discharge their *pila* in turn. Meanwhile the original front-rank was falling back to the rear, and each rear-rank was gradually coming up to be ready to take its turn in front. When the enemy was thrown into confusion by this continued shower of missiles, each rank advanced successively to close combat, and completed the work of defeat with their swords.

Now in the times of Marius and Caesar, who conquered the Germans and Gauls with tactics of this kind, the whole legion was armed alike, being divided into ten cohorts, and each cohort into three maniples or six centuries, each century being commanded by a centurion.

But this uniformity of system did not yet prevail. At this time the legion consisted of three battalions, and to these were attached a body of light troops, bowmen and slingers (*rorarii*), and also an unarmed body called *accensi*, because they were added to the ratepaying citizens (*censi*) to serve as attendants. Of the three battalions the foremost was called *hastati*, though it is hard to explain the name, as their spear was the *pilum*.<sup>1</sup> Behind these were the *principes*, being the first in rank among the citizens, armed with the sword and *pilum*. In rear of the *principes* were ranged the men of the third battalion, called *triarii*, composed of the most experienced soldiers, destined to act as a reserve and bring aid to any part of the front battalions which seemed to be in difficulty.<sup>2</sup>

To each legion was attached a squadron (*ala*) of 300 horse, but the horse soldiers of Rome were always inefficient; her chief dependence was on her infantry.

This system, at the time we speak of, was common both to

<sup>1</sup> Behind the *hastati* were placed the standards (*signa*) of the maniples, whence the men of this front battalion were also called *ante-signani*. In later times, the term *ante-signani* designated merely the front ranks.

<sup>2</sup> In earlier times the *triarii* alone seem to have carried *pila* (probably as guards of the camp), whence they were called *pilani*, and the two front battalions *ante-pilani*. Afterwards, the *triarii* appear for a considerable time to have been armed with the *hasta*.



Romans and Latins. They had been used to fight side by side, and in each army there were many men and officers who were personally connected with those in the other. Under these circumstances the Roman commanders prohibited all single combats. All strength was to be reserved for the great battle which was to determine the fate of the two nations.

*Prohibition  
of single  
combats.*

But young Manlius, son of the Consul, approached the enemy's outposts with a reconnoitring party, and, stung to the quick by the taunts of Geminus Metius, a Latin champion, accepted his challenge to single combat. The young Roman conquered, and returned to the camp to lay the spoils of the enemy at his father's feet. But the spirit of Brutus was not dead; and the stern Consul, unmindful of his own feelings and the pleading voices of the whole army, condemned his son to death for disobedience to orders.<sup>1</sup>

*Manlius con-  
demns his  
son to  
death for  
disobedience.*

Some time before the battle each of the Consuls had been visited by an ominous dream, by which it was revealed that on one side the general, on the other side the army, was doomed to perish, and that the army whose general should sacrifice himself would be victorious. It was agreed between them that he whose division first gave ground should devote himself to the gods of the lower world. In the morning the victims were sacrificed in due form, and it was found that the liver of the victim offered on the part of Decius was defective, while that of Manlius was perfect. And the event confirmed the omen, for Manlius, who commanded the right division, held his ground, while the legions of Decius on the left gave way. Then Decius, mindful of his vow, called for Valerius, the Chief Pontiff, to direct him how duly to devote himself. He put on his toga, the robe of peace, so as to veil his head, leaving one hand free to support his chin; and then, standing on a javelin, he pronounced a solemn form of words, by which he devoted the army of the enemy along with himself to the gods of death and to the grave. Then, with his military cloak drawn round him after the Gabine fashion,<sup>2</sup> he leaped upon his horse, and, dashing into the enemy's ranks, was slain. Both armies understood the act; it depressed the spirits of the Latins as much as it raised those of the Romans.<sup>3</sup> The skill of Manlius now finished the work of

*Battle of  
Vesuvius.*

*Self-devotion  
of Decius.*

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* pp. 57, 123.

<sup>2</sup> Above, p. 53.

<sup>3</sup> Juvenal, viii. 254.

superstitious awe. He had armed his *accensi*, contrary to usual custom, and as soon as his two front battalions were wearied he brought them up in front. The Latins, thinking they were the *triarii*, brought up their own third battalions, who thus used up their weapons and their strength upon the Roman *accensi*. Then Manlius brought up his real *triarii* to gain an easy victory over the wearied enemy, who fled in irretrievable confusion.

*Battle of  
Trifanum.*

The Latins, indeed, raised a new army, and met the Consul at Trifanum, between Sinuessa and Minturnae, but they again suffered a complete defeat.

If the greatness of a Consul's honours were proportioned to the importance of his acts, the triumph of T. Manlius Torquatus ought to have been second to none, for not only Latium, but Campania, remained at the mercy of the conquerors. But the memory of his son was alive, and the younger men were too much struck with horror at the remorseless act of his father to give glory to the victorious Consul. His character well suited his other surname of Imperiosus.

The war was kept up for all the next and part of the following year by several Latin cities. The Consuls of 339 B.C., victorious in the field, laid siege to Pedum, which offered a stout resistance, and held out to the third year of the war (338 B.C.). When Pedum fell, Tibur, Praenesté, and other places which still kept up the war, were also taken or made submission, and the Latin War was ended.

The country that was left at the mercy of Rome by the issue of the Latin war comprehended Latium itself, the country of the Volscians and Auruncans from Anxur or Terracina to the mouth of the Liris, and the northern district of Campania, nearly to the mouth of the Volturnus. It was a rich domain, and at the close of the first year of the war the Senate, sure of their prize, proceeded to appropriate part of the lands of these countries. The poorest Plebeians, lately relieved of the pressure of debt, now received portions not exceeding three *iugera* (nearly two acres) apiece. The allotments were small, but with the help of pasturage on the public land, this was enough to enable industrious men to keep free from debt.

*Territory  
acquired by  
Rome.*

*Allotments.*

These allotments had been partly made in the second year of the war, and their scantiness caused great discontent. To allay these angry feelings the Senate ordered a Dictator to be named, and the Plebeian Consul, Q. Publilius Philo, being named by his Patrician

*Publilius  
Philo,  
Dictator.*

colleague, proposed three laws further abridging the privileges of the Patrician lords (339 B.C.).

The first Publilian law re-enacted or gave fuller sanction to the principle already established, that the Resolutions of the Plebeian Assembly should have the force of law.<sup>1</sup> *Publilian Laws.*

The second provided that all laws passed at the Comitia of the Centuries should receive beforehand the sanction of the Patrician members of the Senate; so that their confirmation was henceforward reduced to a mere form.<sup>2</sup> The third enacted that one of the Censors, as well as one of the Consuls, must be a Plebeian.

At the close of the war, the Senate proceeded to make such a settlement of the conquered communities as might deliver Rome from all future fears of a Latin insurrection. *Treatment of Latin cities.* The principle was that which was steadily and insidiously pursued in all future dealings with conquered countries, namely, to divide the interests of the different communities by bestowing privileges on some and by reducing others to subjection. It should be added, however, that hopes were held out to those who were most severely punished that by obedience and good service they might hereafter gain the privileges of the most highly favoured.

We must here explain what those privileges were. All burgesses of Rome now enjoyed the same rights. These rights were private and public. The private *Private and public rights.* rights of a Roman citizen were (1) the power of legal marriage with all families of citizens (*ius conubii*); (2) the power of making legal contracts of bargain and sale, so that he might hold land and houses by a good title in any part of the Roman territory (*ius commercii*); (3) the power of leaving property by will, and of inheriting property, with other smaller privileges (*ius testamentifactionis, hereditatis*, etc.). The public rights were (1) the power of voting in the Comitia of the Centuries and of the Tribes (*ius suffragii*); and (2) the power of being elected to all offices of State (*ius honorum*).

When foreign communities and their lands were incorporated with Rome, the free citizens residing on those lands became entitled to all these rights. In other cases it was common for Rome to enter into relations with foreign communities on such conditions that she granted them a portion of those rights, and received for her own citizens corresponding rights in those

<sup>1</sup> Above, p. 116.

<sup>2</sup> P. 146. Subsequently, the Lex Maenia made the same provision for elections.

communities. Thus a citizen of Capua might possess the private rights of a Roman citizen at Rome, and reciprocally a Roman burgess might be able to exercise the same rights at Capua. It is obvious that these concessions might be made in various degrees of completeness. All private rights might be granted, or only some ; or to the private rights might be added a power of obtaining even the public rights, that is, of becoming a burgess of Rome.

It is probable that by the Latin League, this equal relation was established between Rome on the one hand and all the independent Latin communities on the other. *Previous privileges of Latins.* Romans possessed the private rights of citizenship in all these communities, and Latins possessed the same rights at Rome. It is probable also that the citizens of each of the two contracting parties had some power of obtaining public rights in the other—Rome in Latium, and the Latins in Rome. A Roman might become the burgess of any one of the Latin communities, a Latin might become a burgess of Rome.

But now, at the end of the year 338 B.C., Latium lay at the feet of Rome, and no such equality was thought of. A complete division of interests was made between the Latin cities, and all union was rendered difficult. *New relations of Latins to Rome.* The district of Lanuvium, together with other Latin districts, was at once added to the Roman territory as two new Tribes (the Maccian and Scaptian), so that their citizens became citizens of Rome, and voted in the Comitia. Other communities, as Aricia, Pedum, and Nomentum, were also made Roman, but without the public or political rights of citizens.<sup>1</sup> Tibur and Praenesté were deprived of a portion of their territory, which thus became part of the public domain of Rome ; otherwise they remained independent. All the Latin communities were for the present prohibited from entering into relations, public or private, one with another. The citizen of one town could not enter into legal marriage with the family of another town, nor make a legal contract of bargain and sale with any but one of his own townsmen. This severe penal enactment shows that they were reduced into a state of absolute subjection, and the isolation which was its consequence effectually maintained that subjection. Many Latin cities had been destroyed by the Gauls ; others now began to dwindle away ; so early may be traced the causes which have ended in

---

<sup>1</sup> Tusculum had been treated similarly in 381 B.C. Citizens of these towns were said to possess *civitas sine suffragio*.

the present desolation of the Campagna. In course of time all, or nearly all, the Latin territory was incorporated with the Roman Tribes, and Latin families furnished some of the most illustrious generals and statesmen of Rome.<sup>1</sup>

The communities between Latium and Campania, with the chief cities of northern Campania, were admitted into advantageous alliance with Rome. Capua especially appears in later history on terms of positive equality. The chief citizens, whom Livy calls the Knights, were probably of Samnite origin, and had taken part with Rome in the late Latin war. It is likely that these men were now restored as a Patrician Order in Capua, and that the privileges of equal alliance referred to them alone.<sup>2</sup> Probably, also, in other towns a Patriciate was formed, while the mass of the people were left in the former condition of the Plebeians at Rome. Thus the Patricians or governing body in each city would be anxious to maintain alliance with Rome, because on that depended the maintenance of their own supremacy.

*Settlement  
of the  
Campanian  
cities.*

AUTHORITIES.—Latin War: Livy, viii.; Diod., xvi. 90; Mommsen, i. 459. Military System: Livy, viii. 8; Polyb., vi. 19-42; Mommsen, ii. 72; Marquardt, *Röm. Staatsverw.*, ii. 309; *Dict. Ant.* "EXERCITUS," Organization of Italy: Marquardt, *op. cit.*, i. 22. Publilian Laws: *Dict. Ant.*, "AUCTORITAS PATRUM"; Mommsen, *Röm. Forsch.*, i. 164, 240; Herzog, i. 253.

<sup>1</sup> A Tusculan magistrate was elected consul at Rome in 322 B.C. (Plin. *H.N.*, vii. 44), under circumstances of which we know little.

<sup>2</sup> Ihne, i. 373.



Coin alluding to capture of Privernum (*B.M.C.* vii. C. 20).

## CHAPTER XVIII

### EVENTS LEADING TO SECOND SAMNITE WAR. (337-327 B.C.) SECOND OR GREAT SAMNITE WAR. (326-304.)

FOR the twelve years which followed the reduction of Latium the Romans remained at peace with the Samnites. But several events showed that this interval of rest was but the preparation for a future and decisive struggle.

*Twelve years  
of rest.*

Four or five years after the peace, Alexander of Epirus, uncle of Alexander the Great, landed in southern Italy with an army, having been invited by the Tarentines to defend them against their barbarous enemies, the Lucanians. Alexander defeated a joint army of Lucanians and Samnites near Paestum, and the Senate forthwith made an alliance with him, thinking, no doubt, that he might be of service to them hereafter (332 B.C.). But Alexander, after various successes, fell in battle near Pandosia.<sup>1</sup>

A little after this treaty, the Volscian city of Privernum revolted against Rome. The revolt was soon crushed; but the Privernatians, contrary to custom, were treated with indulgent favour by the Senate. Their deputies, being asked by a Senator: "What was due to such conduct as theirs?" boldly replied: "That which is due to brave men who have fought for freedom." "Well, but if we spare you," asked the Consul, "what are we to expect?" "Peace," was the answer, "if you treat us well; but if ill, a speedy return to war." Then the Senate voted that the people of Privernum should be admitted to be Roman citizens, and some years later (318 B.C.) they were included in one of two new Tribes,<sup>2</sup> which made the Tribes

*Privernum  
enfranchised.*

*Two new  
Tribes.*

<sup>1</sup> Holm, *History of Greece* (Eng. Trans.), iii. 407.

<sup>2</sup> The Ufentine and Falerine.



thirty-one in all. This indulgence was calculated to make the Campanians satisfied with Roman sovereignty, and to retain them on the side of Rome in the struggle with the Samnites.

But the determination of the Romans was most strongly shown by the Colonies which they planted upon the Samnite frontier. The Auruncan town of Cales rebelled, *Colony at Cales.* and, being speedily reduced by Valerius Corvus, was occupied by 2500 settlers, who became, as it were, the Patricians of the Colony, while the old population took the position of subject Plebeians (336-334 B.C.). This settlement served as a fortress in the newly acquired district between Campania and Latium. The Volscian town of Fabrateria, near Fregellae, implored the aid of Rome against the Samnites, who were again endeavouring to push *Fregellae.* down the Liris. The Senate promptly answered by warning the Samnites to abstain from further inroads, and by occupying Fregellae with a body of colonists (330-328 B.C.). This second Colony was destined to command the upper or inland road from Latium into Campania. In 329 B.C. a third Colony had been planted in the strong city of Anxur or *Tarracina.* Tarracina, which was intended to cover the lower, or coast road, into the same country.

A Colony planted in Antium at the close of the Latin war had a similar effect. *Antium.*

In the year 327 B.C. began the dispute which was the immediate cause of the second or great Samnite war. Parthenopé was an ancient Greek colony founded *Dispute with Palaepolis.* by the Chalcidians of Cumae on the northern part of the Bay of Naples. In after years another city sprung up beside it, whence the original Parthenopé was called Palaepolis or Old-town, while the new town took the name of Neapolis. The latter is represented in name as well as in site by the modern Naples; the former has so utterly disappeared that its site is a matter of guess. At the time just mentioned the Senate sent to Palaepolis to complain of outrages committed upon Roman subjects in Campania. But the Greek city, being closely allied with her sister Neapolis and the great town of Nola (which had almost become Greek), and seeing that she might count on the aid of the Samnites, refused to give any satisfaction for the alleged injuries. On this the Senate declared war, and ordered Q. Publilius Philo, the Plebeian Consul, to besiege Palaepolis, which forthwith received a garrison consisting of 2000 Nolans and 4000 Samnites.

Publilius encamped between the two cities, the new and the

old ; and at the close of his Consular year of office received the title of Pro-consul, in order to enable him to continue the war—the first example of a practice which afterwards became common. Soon after, the Romans were admitted by agreement with some of the Greek citizens into the old town, and from this time we hear no more of Palaepolis. The Neapolitans, foreseeing the ascendancy of Rome, entered into a treaty of peace with the Senate, and Publilius returned home completely successful (327 B.C.).

While these affairs were going on, war broke out with the Samnites. The Senate sent ambassadors to complain of the conduct of these people in supporting Palaepolis against Rome. The Samnites denied the charge, and retorted upon Rome for daring to colonise Fregellæ. “What need of further trifling?” said they. “War is the only way to settle our disputes ; the plain of Campania must be our battle-ground. There let us meet and decide which is to be mistress of Italy, Samnium or Rome.” But the Romans, coldly replying that it was their custom to choose their own field of battle, contented themselves with declaring war. Thus was war again begun between Rome and Samnium. This time it lasted, not two years, as before, but twenty-two. It was a desolating warfare, which brought both nations to the last stage of exhaustion. But Rome remained the conqueror.

War being declared, the Senate hastened to detach the Lucanians and Apulians from the cause of the Samnites, and some sort of alliance was at once concluded with these tribes. We find, indeed, that the Lucanians soon after took part with the Samnites, but their aid was of an uncertain and unstable character. Tarentum, the chief of the Greek cities in the south of Italy, took no direct part in the war, though their hearts were with the Samnites ; indeed, it was by the arts of the Tarentines that the Lucanians were detached from their alliance with Rome.<sup>1</sup>

Such was the state of the neighbouring nations when war broke out. It will be useful here to notice the men whom the Romans expected to lead them to victory.

Of T. Manlius Torquatus, the conqueror of the Latins, we hear not.<sup>2</sup> Probably the ruthless execution of his son prevented his being again elected Consul. M. Val-

*Publilius  
Philo, first  
Pro-consul,  
captures  
Palaepolis.*

*Outbreak of  
Second  
Samnite War.*

*Part taken  
by nations  
of southern  
Italy.*

*Leading men  
at Rome.*

<sup>1</sup> Livy, viii. 27. *Cp.* the story of Tarquinius at Gabii, p. 53.

<sup>2</sup> From the *Fasti* it appears that he was Dictator in 320 ; but he took no part in the war.

erius Corvus, the conqueror of the Samnites in the First War, was still in the vigour of life. He had been first elected Consul in the year 348 B.C., at the early age of twenty-three; now, therefore, he was barely forty-five. Four times had he been Consul; and as Dictator, in the year after his Samnite victory, he had quelled a dangerous insurrection without bloodshed. He was once more Dictator in the year 301 B.C., and Consul in each of the two succeeding years. But, for whatever reason, he held no command in the Second Samnite War.

The general in whom the Senate seem to have placed most confidence was L. Papirius Cursor. Four times was he made Consul in this war, and twice Dictator, and his services were usually called for in the greatest emergencies. He was a man of little education, of great bodily strength, and especially remarkable for his swiftness of foot (whence his name of Cursor), able to endure all extremes of hunger, cold, and fatigue, and not without a rough sort of humour. A man of this kind was sure to be popular with the soldiers; yet he often lost even their goodwill by his violent and overbearing conduct.

Q. Fabius Maximus was, perhaps, the most considerable man of the time. He was a Patrician, but the warm friend of the Plebeian P. Decius, the son of that Decius who devoted himself so nobly in the Latin War. Fabius more than once proved himself the better genius of Rome.

With these three Patricians must be remembered the names of three Plebeians—P. Decius the younger, and C. Marcius Rutilus, with Q. Publilius Philo, who was already famous in Roman History.

To oppose these Roman chiefs the Samnites had, no doubt bold and skilful leaders; for during a great part of the war their arms were in the ascendant. But the only name noticeable is that of C. Pontius.

*C. Pontius.*

The war itself may be conveniently divided into three periods; the first, from 326 to 322 B.C., when the Samnites were so far reduced as to sue for peace; the second from 321, when the Romans were defeated at the Caudine Forks, to 315 when the Samnites gained another victory at Lautulae, and Capua threatened to revolt; the third from 314, when the Roman fortune again began to prevail, to 304, when the war ended.

*Three periods of war.*

FIRST PERIOD (326-322).—The year after the declaration of war was spent in preparations, and next year (325 B.C.), the Senate boldly ordered the Consul D. Junius Brutus to march into the country of the Vestinians, probably in order to secure communications with the Apulians,

*First period.*

while his colleague, the grandson of the great Camillus, entered Samnium from Campania. Brutus was refused a passage through the Vestinian country, and spent the whole year in reducing this people to submission.

Meantime, Camillus being sick, L. Papirius Cursor was named Dictator to act in his place, and he chose Q. Fabius as his Master of Horse. The Dictator found the Samnite army and Q. Fabius advanced to the edge of the Lower Apennines, which overhang the Latian Plain, somewhere in the neighbourhood of Sublaqueum (*Subiaco*), and there he fixed his camp. Being obliged to return to Rome because of some informality in the auguries, he left the army in command of Fabius, strictly charging him not to venture on an action. But in a day or two, as he was presiding in the Senate, came a letter from the Master of Horse, addressed not to himself but to the Senate, saying that he had attacked the enemy and gained a signal victory. Papirius rushed out of the Senate-house, and went straight to the army, vowing that his rebellious officer should die the death of young Manlius, the son of Torquatus. The Dictator, as soon as he arrived, ordered the lictors to seize Fabius. But Fabius took refuge among the veterans; and after a long struggle he fled to Rome, and had just appeared before the Senate to tell his story, when Papirius himself entered the Senate-house with his lictors. A scene of great violence followed, but at length the Dictator was obliged to grant a forced and ungracious pardon. On his return to the camp he found the army ripe for mutiny and unwilling to fight. Then even his stubborn will gave way: he found it necessary to curb his angry temper, till at length, having recovered the goodwill of the soldiery, he again attacked the enemy, and completely defeated them.

So discouraged were the Samnites that they sued for peace, but only a year's truce was granted, and even before its close hostilities were resumed. After two more campaigns the Romans were still superior, and the enemy were totally discouraged. It was now agreed to make a scapegoat of Brutulus Papius, who was the leader of the war-party in Samnium. Papius nobly said that he would not stand in the way of his country's wishes, and sought a voluntary death. Then the Samnites sent ambassadors to Rome, bearing his body, to sue for peace. But this unworthy treatment of a man whose only fault seems to have been that he loved his country too well, was of no avail. The conditions of peace offered by the Senate were so hard that it was thought that a war ever so unsuccessful could bring about no worse results. It was determined to renew hostilities.

SECOND PERIOD (321-315 B.C.).—As during the first five years of the war the Roman arms had prevailed, so during the next seven the Samnites were on the whole successful. This success, it may be presumed, was due to *Second period.* C. Pontius, a man who had been educated in Greek learning, and whose name stood so high that he was elected captain-general of the Samnite League. The very first year of his command was marked by one of the greatest disgraces which the Roman armies ever suffered. This was the famous affair of the Caudine Forks (*Furculae Caudinae*).<sup>1</sup>

It appears that in the year 321 B.C. both the Consuls, T. Veturius and Sp. Postumius, had been ordered to march into Campania, in order to attack Samnium from that country. When they reached Calatia Samnii,<sup>2</sup> they received false tidings that Pontius with the whole Samnite army was besieging Luceria. Thinking that, unless they hastened by the shortest way into Apulia, the whole country might be lost, they marched straight onward through Samnium, taking the road which led through the mountains to Beneventum. Soon after the road enters the mountains, the valley becomes very narrow, then opens out into a small plain, and again closes in. When the Roman armies, after traversing the plain, attempted to defile through the pass at the far end of it, they found that a Samnite force had blocked up the road and held it. The Consuls turned about, intending to go back into Campania and seek another way into Apulia, but they found that the enemy had in the meantime taken possession of the pass by which they had entered, so that they were hemmed in both in front and rear. Still the Romans made a desperate attempt to force their way out of this trap. Great numbers fell; one half of the officers were killed or wounded, and not till then did the Consuls offer to treat.<sup>3</sup>

Pontius was so elated by his great success that he knew not what would be the best use to make of his victory, and asked counsel of his father. "One of two things," said the old man; "either put all to the sword and deprive your enemies of a brave army, or let them go untouched and make them your friends." But Pontius took a middle course. He proposed to let the army go free on

*Roman army  
passes under  
the yoke.*

<sup>1</sup> *Dict. Geogr.*, "CAUDIUM."

<sup>2</sup> This place is nearly 10 miles N.E. of Capua, while the Campanian Calatia is about 7 miles S.E.

<sup>3</sup> This account of the events is a hypothesis by Niebuhr, based partly on Appian, iii. 4; it is very generally accepted, but see the criticism of Lewis, ii. 451.

surrendering their arms and publicly acknowledging their defeat, if the chief officers would engage to procure a favourable peace. This was agreed to ; the treaty was signed by the Consuls and all the superior officers, and six hundred knights were handed over to Pontius as hostages till the treaty was ratified. Then the whole army, clad in their under garments only, having given up their armour and cloaks, were allowed to go through the Samnite lines, each man passing singly under the yoke.<sup>1</sup> In this sorry guise they made their way to Capua, where they were supplied with arms and outer garments, that they might not return to Rome like prisoners or slaves. But so ashamed were they, that none would go into the city till nightfall, except the Consuls, who were obliged to enter publicly and by daylight. All business was suspended ;<sup>2</sup> all ranks put on mourning ; all festivals, public and private, were adjourned ; and the Comitia for election of new magistrates were held by an Interrex, the Consuls being deemed unworthy to preside. The persons chosen to be the new Consuls were those held most likely to repair this great disaster—L. Papirius Cursor the Patrician, and Q. Publilius Philo the Plebeian.

The question of the fulfilment of the treaty was now brought before the Senate. Postumius, one of the Consuls who had made the treaty, rose, and declared that it ought not to be observed ; that the ex-Consuls, and all who had signed that shameful treaty, ought to be given up to the enemy. Two Tribunes of the Plebs opposed this motion, but yielded to the argument of Postumius. Consuls, Legionary Tribunes, Quaestors, and all others who had signed, were given to the fetial or herald, and he delivered them in chains to the Samnites. As soon as this was done, Postumius, the late Consul, struck the Roman fetial with his knee, saying : “ I am now a Samnite subject, and thus do I insult the sacred officer of Rome. The Romans can now make rightful war against the Samnites.” But Pontius cut short this paltry quibbling by declaring that he would not receive the prisoners at all. “ Rome,” said he, “ made a treaty with me ; I will not excuse her performance of her duty because she gives up the persons of a few officers. If she will not have the treaty, let her place her army as it was in the Pass of Caudine Forks, and then I will see what may be done.” The Roman prisoners returned to Rome ; the six hundred hostages were left to the mercy of the Samnites.

*Peace  
repudiated  
by Senate.*

<sup>1</sup> P. 98.

<sup>2</sup> *Iustitium indictum est.* Cp. Willems, *Le Sénat*, ii. 244.



In this matter the Roman Senate has been much blamed for treachery and breach of faith. But to justify such censure we must be able to answer these questions:—Had the Consuls power to make a treaty binding on the whole people? Or if they had not, did they send to Rome to obtain the sanction of the Senate and People? If these questions are answered, one or both of them, in the affirmative, then doubtless the Senate were most guilty. But if the Consuls had no such power, and if the authorities at home had not been consulted, then all that can be said is that C. Pontius ought not to have dismissed the army till the treaty had been duly ratified, for Rome was so near that an answer could soon have been brought back. Even, however, if the Senate is excused, the conduct of Postumius, in pretending to be a Samnite when he insulted the Roman fetial, seems to us contemptible, if not too ludicrous even to be contemptible.

So the war was renewed, and continued for two years more with varying success, till in 318 B.C. a two years' truce was agreed to. At the expiration of this truce, in the eleventh year of the war, the Samnite chief descended into Campania; and Fabius, appointed Dictator, had only just time to occupy the pass of Lautulae, between Anxur and Fundi. But Fabius, brave and skilful as he was, could not hold his post with a raw army, and was defeated with great loss. The loss of Lautulae opened Latium to the Samnite army; the Ausonians rose against Rome, and Campania threatened to revolt. The condition of the city might well have seemed desperate.

Yet from this time the star of the Samnites began to wane. For the remaining ten years of the war the Roman arms uniformly prevailed; and with these begins our third and last period.

THIRD PERIOD (314—304 B.C.).—Notwithstanding the defeat of Lautulae, the Romans kept the field with unabated vigour. The Samnites were defeated, and compelled to retire before the Consuls; Sora, which had been given up to the enemy, was re-conquered; the wretched Ausonians were betrayed to their old masters, and (to use the words of Livy) were annihilated. C. Maenius was named Dictator to inquire into Campanian disaffection; his presence at Capua created so much terror that the two Calavii, the leaders of the confederacy, committed suicide, and the investigation soon afterwards dropped.

The Senate then busied themselves with so fortifying the upper road that they might never again lose it. They re-

*Remarks on  
their conduct.*

*Continued  
success of  
Samnites.*

*Third period.*

*Capua called  
to account.*

established the Colony of Fregellae, which had been taken by the Samnites and then recovered ; and they sent *New Colonies.* colonists to Casinum, Interamna, and Suessa, so that these places, with Cales, formed a line of fortresses along the Samnite frontier. They also took the large town of Nola in southern Campania, and sent a strong body of colonists to the distant town of Luceria, so as to uphold Roman interests in Apulia. Thus were the Samnites held in check on every side.

The war would probably have come to a quick conclusion had it not been that the Etruscans declared war against Rome.

*Etruscans declare war.* This was in 311 B.C. ; and for this year as well as the next, armies were sent to maintain the war both in Samnium and Etruria.

For the year 309 B.C., it is stated in the *Fasti* that no Consuls were elected. Papirius, with Dictatorial power, led his legions into Samnium. The Samnites had made great exertions to retrieve their failing fortunes, and the splendid equipment of their army is described by Livy. One division wore striped tunics with gilded shields ; the other was clad in white, with shields of silver. But all was of no avail ; the long-tried fortune of Papirius again prevailed, and the Samnites were once more utterly defeated. This was the last battle of any consequence which they fought in this war.

When the Etruscans first declared war, they descended into lower Etruria and laid siege to Sutrium. Fabius, with the bold decision which marks the Roman leaders of this time, determined to make an inroad into upper Etruria, and attack the authors of the war at home. For this purpose it was necessary to traverse the Ciminian hills. Since lower Etruria had been conquered, these hills had been left as a frontier, not to be occupied by either party. They were overgrown with wood, and no Roman foot (it is said) had traversed them for many years. Fabius sent forward his brother Marcus, who had been brought up at Caeré and spoke Etruscan like a native, to examine the country beyond the forest ; he then sent word to the Senate of his intention, that they might provide means to defend the city, in case the Etruscans ventured to attack it in his absence. The Senate was alarmed by his boldness, and sent off ambassadors, attended by two Tribunes, with positive orders to stop his march. But Fabius was already in upper Etruria. He ravaged the country far and wide, and the enemy returned in haste from Sutrium to defend their own homes. This was in the year 310 B.C., when Fabius was Consul. He was continued in the command as Proconsul, for

the following year, when he was allowed a triumph. In 308 the Etruscans sued for peace, and it was granted to the separate states for long periods.

The Samnites were now nearly worn out. The war had lasted for eighteen years. The Romans every year continued to invade their country; and at length, upon the fall of Bovianum (305 B.C.), the chief town of the *Peace with Samnium.* Pentrians, they sued for peace. It was granted no doubt on hard terms, though what these were is not certain (304 B.C.).

The Senate were more ready to come to terms, because some of their other neighbours threatened to be troublesome. Even the Hernicans, the old and faithful allies of Rome, *Hernicans reduced.* had risen against her just before the close of the war; but they were reduced in a single campaign, and their towns treated as those of the Latins had been before. Anagnia, their chief city, became a Roman municipal town. Part of the Volscian lands also were occupied by the colonies of Interamna and Casinum (as above noted), and now a colony was sent also to Sora. At the close of the war, the remnant of *Aequians subdued.* the Aequians also ventured to provoke the wrath of Rome. They also were soon subdued, and two Colonies were planted among their mountains—at Alba on the Fucine Lake, and at Carseoli; and by the next Censors the Aequian territory on the Anio was formed into two new Tribes (the Aniense and Terentine), so that now the number amounted *Tribes increased to thirty-three.* to thirty-three. This near approach of Roman settlers alarmed the Sabellian tribes on the high Apennines, and the Marsians broke off the alliance which they had formed with Rome and declared war. They were speedily defeated;<sup>1</sup> the Senate at once offered to renew the former league, and the Marsians long remained the faithful allies of Rome. The Marrucinians, Pelignians, Frentanians had already joined the Roman league, and now the Vestinians also were admitted into alliance.

**AUTHORITIES.**—Livy, viii.-x.; Dionysius, xv. 4-14; Diodorus, xix. 65—xx. 80; *c.p.* Ihne's criticism.

<sup>1</sup> According to Diodorus (xx. 44), the Marsians did not revolt, but were assisted by the Romans against the Samnites.



Tomb of Scipio Barbatus.

## CHAPTER XIX

### THIRD SAMNITE WAR. (298-290 B.C.)

THE peace which concluded the Second Samnite War was made in 304 B.C., and in six years from that time the Third Samnite War began. This peace was indeed no *Hollowness of the peace.* peace (in our sense of the word), but a mere armistice on the part of the Samnites, who no doubt were resolved to break it as soon as they felt themselves strong enough to renew hostilities.

Their great want in the late war had been allies. They had fought single-handed against Rome, who was supported by Latins, Campanians, and Apulians. The greater part of the Sabellian tribes had stood aloof in cold neutrality, or had rendered a very doubtful succour. But an opportunity now offered which seemed to present occasion for forming a great confederation of Central Italy against Rome.

Although peace had been made with the Etruscan states in

308 B.C.,<sup>1</sup> Rome soon appears in hostility with many of the Etruscan cities. This war was caused by a call for assistance from the noble house of the Cilnii of Arretium, from whom C. Cilnius Maecenas, the minister of Augustus, claimed descent, and whom the popular party was endeavouring to eject from their city. In Umbria also we find the Romans at war with the people of Nequinum, a city strongly situated on the Nar. After an obstinate siege they took the place and planted a Colony there, under the name of Narnia, to command the point at which the frontiers of Etruria, Umbria, and the Sabines meet. It was, perhaps, in consequence of this aggressive movement that the Gauls (probably the Senonians, the same who had burnt Rome, and who had made a permanent settlement on the Umbrian coast-land) took part with the Etruscans in the war against Rome (299 B.C.).

*War with  
Etruscans,  
Umbrians,  
and Gauls.*

The Romans now seemed to have their hands full ; and the following year (298 B.C.) was the moment chosen by the Samnites for renewing the war.

*Samnites  
declare war.*

Their first step was to overpower Lucania, which was in alliance with Rome, and now claimed protection from Rome. The Senate promised what was asked for, and thus war was declared against the Samnites. Then they attempted to draw over the Marsians to their league, but this people turned a deaf ear to the voice of the tempter. The Sabines, however, of the upper country gave a favourable answer.

With this formidable enemy on the one hand, and the fear of the Etruscans and Gauls on the other, the position of Rome appeared critical. But the fickle Gauls took no part in the next campaign, and Rome was left to deal with the Samnite league on the south and the Etruscan cities on the north.

The Patrician Consul of the year, L. Cornelius Scipio Barbatus, the first notable man of a great name,<sup>2</sup> invaded Etruria, while his colleague, Cn. Fulvius, entered the country of the Pentrian Samnites and gained considerable advantages. The Senate, anxious to conclude the war, desired that Q. Fabius Maximus, the hero of the late war, should be elected Consul for the next year. Fabius was now an elderly man, and this would be his fourth

*Fabius and  
Decius ravage  
Samnium.*

<sup>1</sup> Page 181.

<sup>2</sup> This was the Scipio whose sarcophagus (figured at the head of this chapter) is preserved in the Vatican. The inscription on it records that he "subdued all Lucania, and led away hostages." When this was done is not recorded in Livy. See Ihne, i. 459, for a possible explanation.

Consulship. He was fain to decline the task, but at length gave way, on condition that his Plebeian colleague should be P. Decius Mus, son of him who devoted himself in the great Latin war; and he also had been Consul twice before. They had been colleagues in the Consulship ten years before (308 B.C.), and, as joint Censors in 304, had cordially united in measures calculated to preserve harmony in the state, as we shall show in the next chapter. Their friendship continued with slight interruption till the death of Decius, and they present a most honourable example of a Patrician and Plebeian combined for the common good. Lucania had already been regained, and both Consuls invaded Samnium, Fabius the Pentrian, Decius the Caudine valleys. They overran every part, burning and destroying.

It appeared as if this brave people were again at the feet of Rome, and L. Volumnius, the Plebeian Consul of the next year (296 B.C.), entered Samnium as if to take possession. But the Samnites rose from under their calamities with an elasticity as great as Rome herself displayed. Probably, in the terrible assault of the last year, great part of their flocks and herds, their chief wealth, had been secured in mountain fastnesses, and therefore they suffered not so much as an agricultural people might have done. But the chief merit of their renewed vigour must be attributed to a brave chief named Gellius Egnatius, who shines forth for a moment, like Pontius in the former war, through the uncertain mist of Samnite history as it is transmitted to us by Roman annalists. The plan for an Italian confederation, which had been faintly attempted at the beginning of the war, this man attempted to realise by a step as bold as ever was taken in a desperate emergency.

With a chosen body of Samnites he made a rapid march into the valley of the Tiber, between Umbria and Etruria, hoping that his presence might rouse to action the slumbering energies of those countries. App. Claudius, the Patrician Consul, a remarkable man, of whose acts in peace we shall have to speak in the next chapter, was sent into Etruria with an army. But Appius was more skilled in the contests of the Senate than of the field, and made little progress against the enemy, till he called his colleague out of Samnium to his aid.

In this state of things the people were convened to elect Consuls for the ensuing year (295 B.C.). They at once chose old Fabius for the fifth time, and would have continued Volumnius in office. But Fabius again consented to serve only on condition that he was

*Fabius and  
Decius again  
Consuls.*



united to his old and tried colleague, P. Decius, who was accordingly elected for the fourth time Consul.

It was settled that both the Consuls, with four legions, were to go forward into Umbria, so as to separate the Samnites, with their Umbrian and Gallic allies, from Etruria. Scipio Barbatulus took the command of one of the *Great efforts of Rome.* Etruscan legions, to watch the enemy. Volumnius, as Proconsul, was sent into Samnium. Fulvius was to be stationed near Falerii with a reserve force to overawe Etruria, while a fourth army, under Postumius, was to cover Rome itself. This was the largest number of troops that the Republic had ever yet called into the field. With her allies she could not have had less than 100,000 men under arms.

When the Consuls took the field, they were greeted with the unwelcome news that Scipio had been overpowered by the Gauls at Clusium, and that these barbarians, with some of the Etruscans, had joined the brave *Defeat of Scipio.* Gellius Egnatius in Umbria. The Consuls immediately pushed across the Apennines, and at the same time they sent orders to Fulvius and Postumius to advance into Etruria, hoping by this diversion to draw off the Etruscans and thus weaken the confederate army. The scheme was successful; and when the Roman army met the confederates at Sentinum in Umbria, the Etruscans had already returned home. Here, as on all occasions, the conduct of that people was weak and selfish. No brave man could trust his fortunes in their hands.

The Roman army of Umbria, legionaries and allies, amounted to about 60,000 men. The enemy, even without the Etruscans, were far more numerous. Fabius commanded the right wing, which was opposed to Gellius with his *Battle of Sentinum.* Samnites and probably some other Italian tribes; Decius on the left faced an immense host of Gauls. Just before the battle began, a hind chased by a wolf (so runs the story) ran down between the armies; the hind sought refuge among the Gauls, and was slain by their javelins; the wolf turned into the Roman ranks, and no man touched the sacred beast of Romulus. This was hailed as an omen of good, and the battle began. Fabius, after an obstinate struggle, brought up his reserve, and the Samnites gave way. But he could not pursue them; for Decius on his side had been less successful. The Gauls had brought their war-chariots into action, and the Romans were terror-struck by these strange engines of destruction. A panic seized the cavalry, and the legions wavered; when Decius resolved to follow the example of his father, and devote himself for his country. He went through the same solemn forms; his heroic

death lent new courage to his men, and they returned to the charge under the command of M. Livius, the Pontifex.<sup>1</sup> Still the Gauls kept their ground unflinching, till Fabius, having driven the Samnites from the field, detached the Campanian cavalry, followed by a battalion of legionaries, to take them in rear. Thus surrounded, they were soon completely broken, and a general pursuit took place. The Samnites had taken refuge in their camp, where they were attacked anew, and the brave Gellius Egnatius fell fighting. But a remnant of his hardy mountaineers retreated in good order, and regained their own country. The slaughter on both sides was prodigious.

Such was the battle of Sentinum, which determined the fate of Samnium and of Italy. The triumph of Fabius, who also gained another victory over the Etruscans at Perusia, was well deserved. But it was marred by the absence of his brave colleague; and none felt this more than Fabius himself. He had pronounced an oration over the grave of his thrice-proved friend, and did full justice to his self-denying bravery.

Notwithstanding this complete rout of the confederates, the Samnites maintained the contest for five years more. In 293 B.C. they made a desperate effort; certain *Battle at Aquilonia.* picked battalions were splendidly armed, as in the last war, and bound themselves by horrid oaths to die or conquer. The Consuls of the year were L. Papirius, son of Papirius Cursor, and Sp. Carvilius; and they both invaded Samnium, as Fabius and Decius had done four years before. The Samnites resolved to try the fortune of another battle with their new levies, and awaited the attack of Papirius at Aquilonia, the position of which is unknown.<sup>2</sup> When the omens were taken from the feeding of the sacred fowls (*pulli*), their keeper (*pullarius*) reported that "they fed well—so greedily, indeed, that some of the corn fell from their mouths." The omen was good. But just as the battle was beginning, the nephew of the Consul Papirius came to him in great fear: "for," said he, "the *pullarius* has lied; the fowls will not eat at all." "Be it so," replied the Consul, "the omens were reported to me as good, and I shall begin the battle. If the report was false, let the false speaker look to it." So saying, he ordered the *pullarius* to be set in the front rank. At the first onset the wretch was

---

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen (i. 460) considers the death of Decius in the Latin war (p. 167) to be an anticipation by the annalists of this event; Cicero distinguishes the two cases, and mentions a third in the war with Pyrrhus (*De Div.*, i. 24; *De Fin.*, ii. 19; *Tusc. Disp.*, i. 37).

<sup>2</sup> On its situation, see Pais, *Storia di Roma*, i. 2, 439.

killed ; by his death the anger of the gods was believed to be averted, and the Romans advanced to battle with fresh confidence. In the heat of battle Papirius, confident of victory, shouted : “ Jupiter, grant me victory, and I will give thee a cup of honey-wine before I touch a drop of any wine myself.” The soldiers recognised the rough humour of old Papirius Cursor, and shared the general’s confidence. The enemy were utterly defeated, and the rest of the year was spent in ravaging the country. The booty taken was immense ; and Carvilius signalised the triumph by erecting on the Capitol a statue of Jupiter, made from the captured arms, so huge that it could be seen from the Alban Hill, twelve miles off.

These vigorous measures were not continued the next year, when Q. Fabius Gurgēs, son of old Fabius, was sent alone into Samnium. He had the name but not the nature of his father, and the Samnites were once more commanded by their greatest man, C. Pontius, of whom we hear nothing from the year of the Furculæ Caudinæ to the present time. He boldly marched into Campania, where he was attacked by the Romans, who were defeated with heavy loss. The news of this unexpected reverse raised a storm of indignation at Rome, and the Consul was only saved from disgrace by his father, who volunteered to join the army as his son’s *legatus* or lieutenant. His presence restored spirit to the army. Another battle was fought ; many thousand Samnites fell, and C. Pontius was taken prisoner. The triumphal procession was remarkable, because old Fabius rode behind the car of his son as one of his officers, to the Capitol.

The people of Tarentum and some of the southern tribes had from time to time showed symptoms of hostile feeling ; and it was no doubt to curb them that the Senate determined to colonise Venusia on the confines of Apulia and Lucania. It is said that 20,000 Romans and Latins settled in the future birthplace of Horace, and we shall find Venusia hereafter appearing as one of the most faithful of the Colonies (291 B.C.).

In the following year the Samnites finally laid down their arms, and submitted to Roman supremacy. One short struggle more followed ten years after, when the arrival of Pyrrhus gave false hopes to the people of southern Italy. After his departure the Samnites, with the rest of the Italians, bowed without further dispute to the sovereignty of Rome.

The close of this war was marked by one disgraceful act, the death of C. Pontius. He followed the triumphal procession of

*Defeat of  
Fabius Gurgēs  
by C. Pontius.*

*Colony at  
Venusia.*

*Submission of  
Samnites.*

Fabius Gurgus, and was beheaded in the prison under the *Execution of* Capitol. We blush for Rome while we hear of such *Pontius.* treatment of a noble and generous enemy. We grieve that the last we hear of old Fabius is that he should have been associated in a triumph by which his laurels were so grievously sullied.<sup>1</sup>

AUTHORITIES.—Livy, x. ; *Ep.*, xi. (books xi. to xx. are lost, only meagre epitomes surviving, *i.e.* for the period 292-219 B.C.) ; Zonaras, viii. 1 ; Polybius, ii. 19 : Lewis, ii. 473.

---

<sup>1</sup> There seems to be no reason for Mommsen's hypothesis that the Pontius executed after this triumph was the *son* of the victor of the Caudine Forks.



The Appian Way, with the tomb of Caecilia Metella.

## CHAPTER XX

### CIVIL HISTORY DURING THE TIME OF THE SAMNITE WARS

IN a period of continued war, home affairs commonly present a monotonous aspect. It is after a war that civil commotions usually arise and political innovations take place. There were, however, some changes introduced during the Samnite wars that call for special notice.

As all political inequality between Patricians and Plebeians had been removed, so all social distinctions were fast disappearing. Yet jealousy still lingered in many minds.

A sign of this appears in the story preserved of the wife of Volumnius, the Plebeian colleague of Appius Claudius in 296 B.C. She was a Patrician of the Virginian gens, but the Patrician matrons would not allow her to join in the worship of the Pudicitia Patricia, alleging that by marriage with a Plebeian she had forfeited her rights. Upon this she consecrated a chapel to Pudicitia Plebeia. But petty jealousies of this kind did not find place among the better sort of either Order. The example of Fabius

*Remnants of  
jealousy  
between the  
Orders.*

and Decius shows that there were noble-minded men in each, who could join heart and hand in the service of the state.

But there were many of the young Patricians who could not brook to part even with their political supremacy. Clubs

*Patrician  
clubs put  
down by  
Maenius.*

(*coitiones*) were formed for the purpose of influencing the elections, with the view (probably) of debarring the Plebeians from the rights accorded to them by the Licinian law. C. Maenius, a

Plebeian, who had been appointed Dictator to inquire into the threatened revolt of Capua (314 B.C.),<sup>1</sup> after executing his duty abroad, went on summarily to break up these political clubs as contrary to public good. For this he was impeached before the Senate. The complaint indeed was dismissed, but the clubs continued to interfere with the freedom of election.

The only exclusive privilege which was still maintained by the Patricians was, that they alone were eligible to the sacred offices of the Pontificate and Augurate. There were still only four Pontifices, beside the Pontifex Maximus, and four Augurs, all Patricians, according to the original institutions ascribed to Numa. But this privilege was little worth preserving, when it had been conceded that Plebeians could hold Curule offices, enter the Capitoline Temple in triumphal procession, and take

*Ogulnian  
Law.*

the auspices at the meeting of the Centuriate Assembly. Accordingly, in the year 300 B.C., a law was proposed by two Tribunes, both bearing the name of Ogulnius, for removing this last symbol of exclusive privilege. It was proposed that henceforth there should be eight Pontifices, four from each Order; and at the same time probably it was conceded that the Chief Pontiff might be either Patrician or Plebeian, for we find the office held by Ti. Coruncanius, a distinguished Plebeian, not many years later. The number of Augurs was also to be increased to nine, five being Plebeians. Vacancies were to be filled up, as heretofore, by the surviving members of the College, a practice which in Roman language was called *coöptatio*. The Ogulnian law was opposed by Appius, but Decius spoke warmly in its favour, and it was carried by general consent.

We have now ceased to hear the epithet *poor* applied to the Plebeians as a class. There were still, no doubt, poor Plebeians

*Plebeians as a  
class no  
longer poor.*

as there were poor Patricians; but the law which delivered debtors into bondage was no more,<sup>2</sup> and the late distributions of Public Land to those who had settled in the colonies lately planted in the Volscian,

<sup>1</sup> Page 179.

<sup>2</sup> Page 161.



Aequian, and other districts, must have removed poverty from a large number of families. The colonial system of Rome was yet in its infancy, and will be considered hereafter. It is plain, however, that it diminished the number of poor Plebeians; nor was anything now remaining to affix poverty to them as a class.

But while this complete fusion of the Orders was peaceably brought about, a new element of discord was appearing in the state. The poor of the Plebeian Order had been relieved by colonisation. But another class of poor was rapidly arising with the increase of the city in population and wealth. For a long period of Rome's earlier age, slaves seem not to have been numerous. Agricultural labour was mostly done by the Plebeians themselves, either as the owners of small estates or as free labourers. The mechanical works of artisans and the business of trade was mostly carried on by the clients, under the protection and for the benefit of their patrons. But, no doubt, when Rome became a powerful monarchy under the later kings, she followed the example of all ancient states, and made slaves of a large number of those whom she conquered. And the same process must have been repeated with accelerated rapidity during the progress which the arms of the Republic had made since the union of Patricians and Plebeians. That slaves were very numerous, appears from the fact that the Freedmen had become an important class in the state.<sup>1</sup> These Freedmen were many of them wealthy; but when a large number of slaves were set free at once, as was sometimes the case on the death of their master, a number of indigent persons must have been left to their own resources; and thus it was that the new race of poor citizens arose, of whom we shall hear so much in the later period of our history under the name of the Populace of Rome, the *factio forensis* of the Roman writers.

It is not an unusual thing to find persons of high Patrician blood associating themselves politically with the lowest orders rather than with the class immediately below them. Such a combination was easy at Rome, because the elevation of the Plebeian order still rankled in the minds of many Patricians; and it might have been expected that there would not be wanting unscrupulous men of this class who would avail themselves of any means to

*Increasing  
number of  
slaves and  
freedmen.*

*Appius  
Claudius  
Cecus.*

---

<sup>1</sup> *Freed-men* were those who had themselves been slaves, or who were the sons of slaves. They were called *libertini* absolutely, but *liberti* in reference to their patron. Thus Tiro was Cicero's *libertus*, but when spoken of simply, he was a *libertinus*.

recover their exclusive privileges. Such a man was Appius Claudius, afterwards named Caecus or the Blind. He was descended from that proud Sabine family which in the earlier times of the Republic had for three generations led the high Patrician party in their opposition to the claims of the Plebeians. He was, as we have seen,<sup>1</sup> devoid of military talent among a people where every man was more or less a soldier, and where every magistrate was expected to be a general. But his abilities as a statesman were great. He is the first man of whom we hear as rising to high honours with this recommendation only to favour: his temper was determined, and his will inflexible. The Freedmen had most of the private rights, but none of the public rights, of citizens.<sup>2</sup> Appius conceived the plan of creating a new party by their means, so as to neutralise the equality lately won by the Plebeians. The Patricians were as yet the chief slave-owners, and the Freedmen were chiefly their dependents, so that any political power given to the Freedmen would, for a time at least, be at the disposal of the Patricians.

In 312 B.C. Appius was chosen Censor, together with the Plebeian C. Plautius. He was not Consul till five years later, *Choice of the Senate.* a reversal of the usual order of office, which may be attributed to his want of military skill. One of the first duties of the Censor was to make up the list of the Senate. The common practice was to leave all the old members on the list, unless any man had been guilty of some dishonourable act, and to fill up the vacancies by a regular rule.<sup>3</sup> But Appius disdained all precedent, and called up into the Senate a number of persons devoted to himself, who had no claim to such a dignity. Probably the chief slight was shown to the Plebeians. But Appius failed in his purpose; for the Consuls of the next year treated the list made out by Appius as null, and the Plebeian Censor, C. Plautius, resigned his office to mark disapproval of his colleague's conduct. It was the custom, when by any cause a Censor was deprived of his colleague, that he should lay down his office at once; but Appius again defied precedent, and remained sole Censor.<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 184.

<sup>2</sup> Page 169.

<sup>3</sup> Page 121.

<sup>4</sup> So Livy says; but his account is throughout unfavourable to Appius. Perhaps we ought rather to suppose that Plautius approved of his action and remained in office, but was so much less influential a man as to be passed over in the tradition (Diod., xx. 36; *cf.* Frontinus, *De Aquaed.*, 5).

He was now quite unfettered, and undertook the great alteration to which we have before alluded. In revising the Census-register, or list of all who belonged to the Tribes, he allowed the Freedmen to be registered in the list of any Tribe they pleased, country as well as city. Now the Freedmen, being resident in Rome, were always present at the assemblies, whereas the country voters attended much less regularly—a fact which gave to the Freedmen a power beyond their numerical proportion. It is not too much to assume that in this measure Appius had the interest of the Patrician party at heart rather than that of the Freedmen and Populace, whom he admitted to equality with the rest of the burgesses.<sup>1</sup>

*Enfranchise-  
ment of  
freedmen.*

The agent whom he employed in this business was one Cn. Flavius, the son of a Freedman, who followed the calling of a public scrivener or notary (*scriba*), a class which in ancient times, when printing was unknown, was numerous and important. This man's name is best known in connexion with another matter, the publication of the forms and times to be observed in legal proceedings. Up to that time the Patricians had kept all the secrets of law in their own hands; they alone knew which were the days when courts could be held<sup>2</sup> and when they could not; they alone were in possession of those technical formularies according to which all actions must proceed. But Flavius, by the help of his patron Appius, got possession of these secrets, and drew up a regular calendar, in which the *dies fasti* and *nefasti* were marked; and this he set up in the Forum so that all might see it. He also published an authentic list of the formularies proper to be employed in the several kinds of action, and thus, as Cicero says, "he picked out the crows' eyes."

*Cn. Flavius  
publishes the  
calendar.*

A few years after the admission of the Freedmen to the full citizenship, Flavius became a candidate for the Curule Aedileship. The officer presiding at the election said he could

<sup>1</sup> Many scholars think that, before this time, only landowners could vote in the Tribes. If this is so, Appius, besides giving the full franchise to the Freedmen, was the first to include non-landowners in the Tribes.

<sup>2</sup> Such days were called *dies fasti*, as opposed to those marked as *nefasti* (or *illiciti*) in the calendar of the Pontiffs; thus Ovid says (*Fasti*, i. 47):

"Ille Nefastus erit, per quem tria verba silentur;  
Fastus erit, per quem lege licebit agi."

See *Dict. Ant.*, "DIES"; W. W. Fowler, *Roman Festivals*, p. 11.

not take votes for a person who was engaged in business ; upon which *Flavius* stepped forward and laid down his tablets and style, the badges of his occupation, declaring that he would be a scrivener no longer. Then he was elected, to the great indignation of the old citizens, who saw two of their own candidates, both of them sons of Consuls, rejected in favour of this Freedman's son.

We have seen that Appius remained sole Censor, and when he had held his office for eighteen months it was expected that he would lay it down, as ordered by the Aemilian law. But he had no such intention. He had begun some great national works, and determined to hold his office for the whole *lustrum*, that is, for three and a half years longer. The works we speak of became and still remain famous as the Appian Road and the Appian Aqueduct.

The Appian Road is well known, even to those who have not visited Rome, by the amusing description which Horace has given of his journey along it.<sup>1</sup> It led from *Via Appia.* Rome to Capua, passing through the Pontine marshes to Tarracina ; then skirted the seaward side of the Volscian hills by the pass of Lautulae, and went on by way of Fundi, Formiae, and Sinuessa to Capua. There had been a road this way before ; and it was this lower road that Appius now improved and made fit for military purposes : its length was about 120 miles. Long afterwards it was continued through Beneventum and the Samnite Apennines to Brundisium. The Latin road, as the upper road to Capua was called, left Rome by the same gate, the Porta Capena.

The Appian Aqueduct was the first of those great works by which Rome was so abundantly supplied with water. But it did not resemble the Roman aqueducts of later times—those long lines of arches with which every one is familiar. In those days enemies often penetrated even to the walls of Rome, and might easily have broken off a raised aqueduct. It passed underground till it had entered the city, when it rose on a few arches near the Porta Capena, then passed down into the lower parts of the city next the river, where spring-water there was none, and where dwelt those poorer classes whose favour Appius had endeavoured to gain. It may well be that he had a political end in view ; but however this might be, every one will agree with the remark, that one must “feel unmixed pleasure in observing that the first Roman

<sup>1</sup> *Sat.*, i. 5.

aqueduct was constructed for the benefit of the poor, and of those who most needed it."

During the whole of Appius' arbitrary Censorship the Senate and the old citizens refrained from offering any direct opposition to his acts. But when the next Censors (of the year 307 B.C.) left his work untouched, the Senate resolved that new Censors should be chosen two years before the proper time, and the choice of the people fell on Rome's two worthiest sons, Q. Fabius Maximus and P. Decius Mus. These two great men applied a remedy simple but effectual. They did not, as the more violent might have wished, disenfranchise the Freedmen, but confined them to the four city Tribes, so that they could only carry four Tribes, whereas there were now twenty-seven in the hands of the old citizens. This measure was executed in the year 304 B.C. Fabius and Decius saved the state as much by their firmness and moderation now as they did afterwards by the glorious victory of Sentinum.<sup>1</sup>

*Censorship of  
Fabius and  
Decius.*

AUTHORITIES.—Censorship of Appius Claudius Caecus: Livy, ix. 29-34, 46; Diodorus, xx. 36; *C.I.L.*, i. <sup>2</sup> 192; Mommsen, i. 501; Herzog, i. 265. Further references are given by Herzog, *l.c.* The views taken of Appius differ most widely.

---

<sup>1</sup> Livy (ix. 46) asserts that the *cognomen* of Maximus was given to Fabius in consequence of this civil triumph. But Polybius (iii. 87) attributes it to the success of the Dictator in the second Punic War.

## CHAPTER XXI

### EVENTS BETWEEN THE THIRD SAMNITE WAR AND THE LANDING OF PYRRHUS. (289-282 B.C.)

OF the years which follow the Samnite wars little is known. The first decade of Livy has ended ; and of the second decade, which would have carried us on to the beginning of the great war with Hannibal, a brief and naked epitome of each book is all that remains. For the campaigns of Pyrrhus we have Plutarch ; but for the intervening years the materials are few and scanty.

Immediately upon the final submission of the Samnites, in 290 B.C., the Senate resolved to punish the Sabines for listening to the overtures of the Samnite chiefs at the beginning of the late war. The commander entrusted with the invasion of the difficult country formed by the valleys of the highest Apennines, was M<sup>r</sup>. Curius Dentatus, a name which may be counted among the most illustrious in Roman history, though we confess with regret that we know little of his life. He is said himself to have been of Sabine origin—sprung from the Sabines of the lower country, no doubt, who had long been closely united with Rome. He lived, like the old Plebeian yeomen, on his own farm, and himself shared with his men the labours of his field. It is said that on one occasion the Samnites sent messengers to tempt him with costly presents of gold ; the messengers found him roasting turnips at the fire, and when he had heard their business, he pointed to his rude meal, and said : “ Leave me my earthen pans, and let those who use gold be my subjects.” His honesty and rough vigour of character recommended him to the Tribes, and, notwithstanding his humble condition, he rose to the first offices of state. In the year 290 B.C. he was elected Consul, and received the final submission of the Samnites. He then straightway turned his arms against



the Sabines, who fell an easy prey and henceforth became absolutely subject to Rome, being obliged to accept the citizenship without suffrage, the burdens without the privileges.<sup>1</sup>

After his double triumph over the Samnites and Sabines, Curius proposed an Agrarian law, providing that all the poorer citizens (these probably were for the most part the Freedmen and others lately admitted into the Tribes) should receive each man an allotment of seven *iugera* in the Sabine country. This was vehemently opposed by the greater part of the old citizens, Plebeians as well as Patricians, and the life of Curius was thought to be in so great danger, that eight hundred young men attached themselves to him as a body-guard.

The sequel of this strife cannot be unfolded. All we know is that the poverty of the poor was aggravated by several years of famine and pestilence, and that debts again multiplied. The end of it was, that about the year 286 B.C., the mass of the poorer citizens, consisting chiefly of those who had lately been enfranchised by Appius, left the city and encamped upon the Janiculum. To appease this last Secession, Q. Hortensius, being named Dictator, succeeded in bringing back the people by allowing them to enact several laws in an oak-grove near the place of their encampment. One of these Hortensian laws seems to have been an extension of the Agrarian law of Curius, granting not seven, but fourteen *iugera* (about 9 acres) to each of the poor citizens. Another may have provided for the reduction of debt. But that which is best known as the Hortensian law was one enacting that all Resolutions of the Tribes should be law for the whole Roman people.<sup>2</sup> This was nearly in the same terms as the law passed by Valerius and Horatius at the close of the Decemvirate, and that passed by Publius Philo the Dictator, after the conquest of Latium.

*Laws of the  
Dictator  
Hortensius.*

This was the last Secession of the people. For one hundred and fifty years, from this time to the appearance of the Gracchi, we hear of no civil dissensions at Rome.

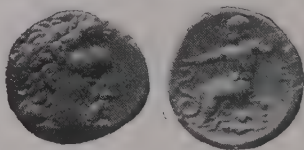
It may be here added that, on the allotment of the Sabine domain lands, Curius refused to take more than any other poor citizen. But it was decreed by acclamation that he should be rewarded by a gift of five hundred *iugera* (about 312 acres).

Notwithstanding the part played by Hellenic heroes in the

<sup>1</sup> Probably this only applies to a small portion of the Sabines; see Ihne, i. 474.

<sup>2</sup> Above, p. 116.

earliest Roman legends, the Romans had as yet had few dealings with the Greeks. The tale of Tarquin sending *Intercourse of Rome with Greece.* to consult the Oracle at Delphi, of the mission of the three men to procure the laws of Solon, the answer of the Delphic Priestess with respect to the draining of the Alban Lake, are legends of dubious authority. A story that Roman envoys appeared among the ambassadors of other Italian peoples at Alexander's court at Babylon is discredited by Arrian, the most trustworthy historian of the great king. The next time we find Rome mentioned as having intercourse with Greece was towards the close of the third Samnite war. Pestilence was raging at Rome, and the Senate is said to have



Coin of Epidaurus, with snake (Head, *Hist. Num.*, 369).

sent to Epidaurus to request that Aesculapius (the tutelary god of that place) might come to avert the evil. The *Snake of Aesculapius.* ambassadors returned with a sacred snake, the emblem of the god, which found its own way into their ship, and ensconced itself in the cabin. When they arrived in the Tiber, the snake glided from the ship, and swimming to the island called the Insula Tiberina, which lies at the foot of the Capitoline Hill, disappeared there. Here a temple was built to the Greek god of medicine. The island was shaped into the rude resemblance of a trireme, which it still bears.

Such are the faint records of Rome's early intercourse with Greece proper.

But there was another Greece nearer home, with which she was soon to come in direct collision. In early times, when the name of Rome was yet unknown, the cities of Greece, especially the great Dorian city of Corinth, were sending out their superfluous population to seek settlements in the western world. Italy and Sicily were to them what North America has been to us. All the eastern and southern coasts of Sicily—all the *Magna Græcia and Sicily.* coasts of Lower Italy, from the Bay of Naples to the promontory of Iapygium, were thick-studded with Grecian colonies, which had become large and flourishing cities when Rome was yet struggling for existence. The inhabitants of these Greek colonies were

known by the names of Siceliotes and Italiotes,<sup>1</sup> to distinguish them from the native Siceli and Itali. The seaboard of southern Italy received the appellation of Magna Graecia. Hitherto the name of Rome had been unfear'd and uncared for. The Greeks of Sicily were defended by the sea,<sup>2</sup> those of Italy by the barrier of hardy tribes which lay between them and their future mistress. But now this barrier was broken down. The brave Samnites had submitted after a struggle as noble as any which history has recorded. The Lucanians and Apulians had formed a league with Rome. Already had Palaepolis and Neapolis bowed before her. Any day the Consuls and their legions might be expected to knock at the gates of the southern cities.

Most of these cities, famous in early time, had fallen into decay, caused in part by the inroads of the Sabellian tribes, in part by civil wars with one another, and by domestic convulsions in each. In Sicily, especially, the Carthaginians were always dangerous, and here, above all, the changes of government were most frequent and most violent. Aristocracies were supplanted by turbulent democracies, and then gave way to despotic rulers, who had been elevated in dangerous times, or who had raised themselves by force to sovereign power. Such rulers were called Tyrants by the Greeks—a name which (as is well known) referred rather to the mode in which power was gained than to the mode in which it was exercised. In seditions and civil wars thousands and tens of thousands of citizens had fallen; the prosperity of ancient cities had decayed; cities themselves had perished. The vast remains of temples at Agrigentum, at Selinus, at Paestum, show what these cities must have been, where now not a house is left. A vast mass of broken pottery now incumbering the site of Tarentum, shows how populous must once have been those now desolate shores. The series of coins belonging to this city is surpassed in beauty and variety of type only by those of Syracuse. Sybaris, the splendid and luxurious rival of Croton, was destroyed by the latter city. Croton herself, though supported by the old remembrance of her Pythagorean rulers, had fallen into insignificance. Thurii, the chosen seat of the old age of Herodotus, Metapontum, Locri, and Rhegium, still retained the vestiges of ancient grandeur. The most noted tyrant of

---

<sup>1</sup> Σικελιώται, Ἰταλιώται.

<sup>2</sup> The early intercourse between Rome and Sicily is, however, proved by language: Mommsen, i., 201, 255.

Syracuse, Dionysius, was one of the chief causes of the decay of the Greek towns of Lower Italy. About the time that the Gauls were devastating Latium, he did not scruple to league himself with the barbarous Lucanians, so as to establish a tyranny over his fellow-countrymen. And about a century later, Agathocles of Syracuse ravaged Lower Italy. Thus, by combined violence from many sources, the Hellenic communities, both of Italy and Sicily, were fallen from their ancient magnificence, but Tarentum and Syracuse remained.

SYRACUSE was founded about the same time as Rome, by Archias, a noble Corinthian, who led forth a colony of his countrymen to seek a new country in the far west.

*Syracuse.*

For many years the colony was governed (like the mother-city) by a moderate aristocracy. This was interrupted by the princely tyranny of Gelo and his brother Hiero, who held the sceptre of Syracuse at the time of the Persian wars from 485 to 467 B.C. The old republic was then restored till after the invasion of the Athenians, when it seems to have been supplanted by a democratic government (B.C. 410). The factious conflicts which followed paved the way for the tyranny of the elder Dionysius in 405; but the sceptre which, after an active reign of thirty-eight years, he transmitted to his son, passed finally from that son's feebleness about the beginning of the Samnite wars. For nearly thirty years the republic was restored, when another adventurer possessed himself of the throne. This was Agathocles, who began life as a potter's apprentice, and raised himself first by his personal strength and beauty of form, then by the continued exertion of an almost fabulous boldness. His reign terminated in 289, soon after the third Samnite war had been concluded. A new king, Hiero II., was called to the throne probably in 270, and it was in his reign that the Romans first set foot in Sicily.

Of these sovereigns, it may be observed that the two last, Agathocles and Hiero, were no longer called Tyrants, but Kings. The former name had fallen into disuse after the splendid royalty of Alexander, whom no one, save Demosthenes and his republican followers, ventured to call by the name of Tyrant.

Here an event must be mentioned, which has no small influence on the subsequent history. A large portion of the army of

*Messana occupied by Mamertines.* Agathocles consisted of Italians, who called themselves Mamertines, that is, servants of Mamers or Mars. They were Campanian adventurers of Samnite origin, who took service with any government that would pay them. They chose their own captains, like the free

troops led by the Condottieri of the middle ages. On the death of Agathocles, a large body of these Mamertines seized the city of Syracuse. But they were induced to leave the city on receiving payment of a large sum of money, and were marched to Messina, for the purpose of crossing into Italy. But finding this city an inviting prey, they seized it and became its lords, and soon they established their power over a large portion of northern Sicily. Meanwhile, the Carthaginians recovered possession of the west of the island. Syracuse and the other Greek cities retained a precarious independence.

Hence it will appear that the Greek-Sicilian cities were in no case to help their brethren in Italy, should these be attacked by Rome. They could not defend themselves, much less render aid to others.

TARENTUM, originally a Lacedaemonian colony, lay at the northern corner of the great gulf which still bears its name. It had an excellent harbour, almost land-locked. On the eastern horn of this harbour stood the city. Its form was triangular, one side being washed by the open sea, the other by the waters of the harbour, while the base or land side was protected by a wall. Thus advantageously posted for commerce, the city grew apace. She possessed an opulent middle class, and the poorer citizens found

*Tarentum.*

*Situation and people.*



Coin of Tarentum (Head, *H. N.*, 48).

an easy subsistence in the abundant supply of fish which the gulf afforded. These native fishermen were always ready to man the navy of the state. But they made indifferent soldiers. Therefore when any peril of war threatened the state, it was the practice of the government to hire foreign captains, soldiers of fortune, who were often kings or princes, to bring an army for their defence. Thus we find them taking into their service Archidamus of Sparta and Alexander of Epirus, to defend them against the Lucanians. So also, after the second Samnite war, when they began to fear the power of Rome, they engaged the services of Cleonymus, prince of Sparta, to fight their battles; and they called in Agathocles of Syracuse to war against the neighbouring Italian tribes. And last of all, when they came into actual conflict with Rome, they

*Practice of hiring foreign captains.*

put themselves under the protection of Pyrrhus, as we shall presently have to narrate.

Once already had Tarentum come into contact with Rome, at the close of the second Samnite war,<sup>1</sup> and a treaty had then  
*Treaty with Rome.* been made between Rome and the Tarentines, by which the Romans bound themselves not to pass the temple of Lacinian Juno, nor let any ships of theirs appear in the Gulf of Tarentum, while doubtless the Tarentines engaged to confine their fleets within certain limits.

After this followed the third Samnite war. At its close it seemed clear that Rome was to be, if she was not already, *Intrigues against Rome.* mistress of Italy. What power could withstand her? Tarentum must now meet Rome face to face, and must decide whether they should meet as friend or foe. She chose the latter. For the next few years we find the Etruscans and Gauls in the north, the Lucanians in the south, renewing war with Rome, and finally crushed by her energy. These last struggles are attributed to the intrigues of Tarentum; and when they availed not, she at length threw herself into the gap, and called in Pyrrhus, the greatest general of the age, to fight the battles of the Greeks against Rome.<sup>2</sup>

The first link in the chain of events which led to the war with Tarentum was (curiously enough) the aid lent by Rome to a Greek city on the opposite side of the Gulf.  
*Thurii assisted by Rome against Lucanians.* This was Thurii. Soon after the close of the third Samnite war Thurii was attacked by the Lucanians. Some years before, when Cleonymus of Sparta made a descent upon their coast and took their city, they implored the aid of Roman legions, which came too late indeed, but yet came, and Thurii now hoped for more effectual succour. But at this time the domestic struggle was going on which ended in the Hortensian law. Soon after quiet was restored, the Tribune Aelius proposed, and the People voted, to declare war against the Lucanians.

This declaration of war was followed by a general rising of the Italian nations against Rome. The Lucanians, lately her allies, now her enemies, were joined by the Bruttians, *General rising in South and North.* part of the Apulians, and even by some relics of the Samnites. But the attention of the Senate was diverted from this southern war by more imminent peril in the north. News came that the states of northern

<sup>1</sup> This is the date assigned by Niebuhr (*Hist.*, iii. 272); see also Ihne, i. 489. Mommsen (ii. 42) prefers an earlier date. *Cp.* p. 174.

<sup>2</sup> According to Pausanias (i. 12), they had previously assisted him at Corcyra.



Etruria had again combined against Arretium, which, under the rule of the friendly Ciniî, remained faithful to Rome. They had summoned to their aid an army of Senonian Gauls from the coasts of Umbria; and these Celtic barbarians, though at peace with Rome, came eager for plunder, and burning to avenge their defeat at the battle of Sentinum. L. Caccilius Metellus, one of the Consuls of the last year, and now Prætor, was ordered to march to the relief of Arretium, while the new Consuls, P. Cornelius Dolabella and Cn. Domitius, prepared to crush the Etruscan war. But what was the consternation at Rome when tidings came that Metellus had fallen in battle, and that his whole army had been cut to pieces or made prisoners!

*Metellus cut  
off in Etruria.*

The Senate, nothing daunted, ordered Dolabella to advance, while his colleague Domitius remained in reserve. Meanwhile, they sent the Fætiâs into Umbria to complain of the breach of faith committed by the Senonian Gauls. But it happened that in the battle with Metellus, Britomâris the Gallic chief had fallen, and the young chief, his son, burning with mad desire of vengeance, committed another and a worse breach of faith: he murdered the sacred envoys in cold blood. As soon as the news of this outrage reached the Consul Dolabella, he promptly changed his plan. Instead of marching towards Arretium he turned to the right, and, crossing the Apennines, descended into the Senonian country. This he found almost defenceless, for the warriors were absent in Etruria. He took a bloody revenge, ravaging the country, burning the dwellings, slaying the old men, enslaving the women and children. The Celtic warriors hastily returned to defend their homes, but in vain; they sustained a complete defeat, and the Senonians of Italy were annihilated.

*Dolabella  
extirpates  
Senones.*

The work of death was not yet done. The Boian Gauls, who lived to the north-west of the Senonians, between the Apennines and the Po, seized their arms and marched southwards to assist or avenge their brethren. On their way they were joined by the Etruscans and overtook Dolabella, who had also been joined by his colleague Domitius. The battle was fought on the right bank of the Tiber, near the little lake Vadimo. It was a fierce conflict, but the legionaries had become used to the stalwart frames, strange arms, and savage cries of the Celtic barbarians, and their victory was complete. The Boians were assisted by the Etruscans to continue the war into the next year, but with no better success, being defeated at Populonia.

*Battle of  
Lake Vadimo,  
283 B.C.*

These great victories kept the Celtic tribes of Northern Italy quiet for about fifty years. Meanwhile the Senate secured the frontier of Umbria and occupied the vacant lands of the Senonians by the Colony of Sena Gallica, which, under the name of Senigaglia, still preserves the memory of its Celtic possessors.

Meanwhile the war had been going on feebly in Lucania, but these prompt and successful operations in the north enabled the Senate to prosecute it more energetically, and in the year 282 B.C., the Consul C. Fabricius Luscinus, a remarkable man, of whom we shall have more to say presently, defeated the confederates in several actions, and finally compelled them to raise the siege of Thurii. The Roman army was withdrawn, but a garrison was left to defend the city, and the grateful people dedicated a statue to their deliverer, the first honour paid by Greeks to their future masters.

It was believed at Rome, and not without reason, that the Tarentines, though they had not themselves drawn the sword, had been the secret instigators of these wars, both in Lucania and Etruria. It was probably in consequence of this belief that, soon after the departure of Fabricius, in face of the treaty by which Roman ships were forbidden to appear in the Gulf of Tarentum, L. Valerius sailed round the Lacinian headland, and with ten ships stood across the gulf. It was a summer afternoon, and the people were assembled in their theatre, which (as was common in Greek cities) was used alike for purposes of business and pleasure. This theatre seems to have commanded a view of the sea, so that the whole assembly saw the treaty violated before their eyes, and lent a ready ear to a demagogue named Philocharis, who rose and exhorted them to take summary vengeance. The people, seamen by habit, rushed down to the harbour, manned a number of ships, and gained an easy victory over the little Roman squadron. Four ships were sunk, one taken, and Valerius himself was killed. The die was now cast, and the demagogues pushed the people to further outrages. The Tarentine populace marched straight to Thurii, and, accusing the Thuriens of seeking aid from the barbarians, plundered the unfortunate city, drove its chief citizens into exile, and dismissed the Roman garrison.

The Senate, unwilling to undertake a new war, in which their coasts might be ravaged by the superior navy of the Tarentines, sent an embassy, headed by L. Postumius, to require some explanation of this outrageous conduct. They knew that the wealthier citizens of Tarentum

*Roman ships  
assaulted in  
harbour of  
Tarentum.*

*Sack of  
Thurii.*

*Roman  
envoys in-  
sulted.*

were as averse from war as themselves, and hoped that by this time the people might be inclined to hear the voice of reason. But unfortunately the ambassadors arrived during a great feast, when the whole people, given up to wine and revelry, were again collected in the theatre. The Roman envoys were led straight into the orchestra, and ordered to state the purpose of their mission. When Postumius endeavoured to do so, his bad Greek produced peals of laughter from the thoughtless populace. He bore all patiently till a drunken buffoon ran up and defiled his white toga with ordure. This produced fresh laughter and loud applause, which was again renewed when Postumius held up the sullied robe in the sight of all. "Aye," said he, "laugh on now: but this robe of mine shall remain uncleansed till it is washed in your best blood!"

Yet even after these gross insults the Roman People was so weary of war that the Senate debated long before they ordered L. Aemilius Barbula, one of the Consuls for the year 281 B.C., to march southward, while his colleague covered the Etruscan frontier. Aemilius ravaged the territory round the city, and took many prisoners; but he showed all consideration to those citizens who wished to maintain peace; and so successful was this policy, that the demagogues lost their power, and Agis, the chief of the moderate party, was chosen *strategus*. And now there was good hope that some satisfaction would be offered for the outrages committed against the Romans and their allies, and that peace might be maintained; but this hope was soon frustrated. Early in the year the chiefs of the democratic party had sent to invite Pyrrhus, king of Epirus, to bring over an army and undertake the defence of Tarentum. These Tarentine envoys were accompanied by ambassadors from the Lucanians and Samnites, with large promises of soldiers to recruit his army and provisions to feed them. Pyrrhus needed no great persuasion to undertake a romantic enterprise, and he forthwith despatched Cineas, his trusted minister, and afterwards Milo, one of his best officers, with 3000 men, to garrison the citadel of Tarentum. The arrival of Milo restored the democratic party to power. Agis was deprived of his office, and the Roman Consul retired into Apulia.

Pyrrhus was now expected every day. Even before the decree was passed to invite him, the Tarentine populace was wild with expectation, and gave themselves up to immoderate joy. "Aye, dance and sing while ye may," said one of their

graver citizens ; "there will be something else to do when Pyrrhus comes.

AUTHORITIES.—For the Greeks in Italy and Sicily, see *The Student's Greece* and references there given. The political history of Rome during these years rests on most unsatisfactory evidence. Polybius, ii. 19, 20 ; Zonaras, viii. 2 ; Eutropius, ii. ; Orosius, iii. 22 ; Appian, iii. (fragments) ; Dionysius, xvii. xviii. (fragments), may be mentioned as illustrations of the available sources. *Cp.* Arnold's *History of Rome*, ii. 465.



Coin of Pyrrhus, with head of Dodonean Zeus (Head, *H. N.*, 273).

## CHAPTER XXII

### PYRRHUS IN ITALY (280—275 B.C.)

PYRRHUS was now in his thirty-eighth year. His whole life had been a course of adventure and peril. His father Aeacides was king of Epirus, kinsman and successor of that Alexander of Epirus who fell near Pandosia;<sup>1</sup> and the young prince, being left an orphan at the age of five amid the troubles which followed the death of Alexander the Great, led a wandering and uncertain life till, at about seventeen years of age, he sought the court of Antigonus the Macedonian king of Syria, (in company with the celebrated Demetrius Poliorcetes, who had married his sister,) and was present on the bloody field of Ipsus (301 B.C.), which deprived Antigonus of his life, and Demetrius of his succession. After this defeat he resorted to the magnificent court of Ptolemy Soter, the first Macedonian king of Egypt, as a hostage for his friend Demetrius. Here he found favour with the queen Berenicé, who gave him in marriage Antigóné, her daughter by a former marriage, and persuaded Ptolemy to assist him in gaining possession of the crown of Epirus. There he established himself so firmly, that some years after he became master of part of the kingdom of Macedon. But this last success was short-lived; after a few months Pyrrhus was again driven across the mountains into Epirus (B.C. 287). For the next few years he lived at peace; he now employed himself in embellishing Ambracia as the capital of his dominions, and reigned there in security and magnificence. He was in the prime of life, handsome in person, happy in temper, popular from his frankness and generosity, and reputed to be

<sup>1</sup> Page 172.

a skilful soldier. But neither his nature nor his restless youth had fitted him for the enjoyment of happy tranquillity. To strengthen himself by alliances he had married several wives, and among them the daughter of Agathocles of Syracuse. The exploits of that remarkable man fired his soul; he remembered that Alcibiades, that Alexander, that every Greek conqueror had looked to the West as a new scene for enterprise and triumph, and he lent a ready ear to the solicitations of the Italian envoys. After defeating the Romans and Carthaginians, he might return as king of Southern Italy and Sicily, and dictate terms to the exhausted monarch of Macedon and Asia. These had been the dreams of less romantic persons than himself.

It was at the end of the year 281 B.C. that he left Epirus. On the passage his ships were scattered by a storm, but eventually they all reached Tarentum in safety. He had with him a force of about 20,000 foot, 2000 archers, 500 slingers, and 3000 horse, together with a squadron of 20 elephants, held by the Greeks at that time to be a necessary part of a complete armament. A large portion of his troops was furnished by Ptolemy Ceraunus, now king of Macedon; part of his cavalry were Thessalian, the best in Greece. It was a small army for the execution of designs so vast. But he trusted to the promises of the Lucanians and Samnites; and he also intended to make the Tarentines into soldiers. No sooner had he landed than this people found how true were the words of their fellow-citizen. They had meant Pyrrhus to fight their battles, like his kinsman Alexander of Epirus, but he resolved that they also should fight his battles. He shut up the theatre and other places of public amusement, closed the clubs, put some demagogues to death, and banished others, and ordered all citizens of military age to be drilled for the phalanx. The indolent populace murmured, but in vain. The horse had taken a rider on his back to avenge him on the stag, and it was no longer possible to shake him off.

With the early spring the Romans took the field. T. Coruncanius, Plebeian Consul for the year 280 B.C., commanded against the Etruscans. P. Valerius Laevinus, his *Roman* *preparations.* Patrician colleague, was to march through Lucania and encounter Pyrrhus; while Aemilius, Consul of the former year, probably remained near Venusia, to hold the Samnites and Apulians in check. A Campanian legion, composed of Mamertines and commanded by one Decius Jubellius, occupied Rhegium, in order (we may suppose) to intercept communications from Sicily.



The king moved along the coast from Heraclea to meet the Roman army, and came in view of it encamped on the right bank of the little river Siris. His practised eye was at once struck by the military order of the enemy's camp, and he remarked: "In war, at least, these barbarians are no way barbarous."

*Armies meet  
on the Siris.*

And now for the first time the Roman legions had to stand the shock of the Greek phalanx. The tactics of the two armies were wholly different. The free order of the legions, which were now armed for the most part with *pila* and swords, has been described above.<sup>1</sup> On the other hand, the Epirotes formed a great column called the phalanx, in which each man stood close to his fellow, so that half his body was covered by his right-hand man's shield. They were drawn up sixteen deep and their long pikes (*sarissæ*) bristled so thickly in front that the line was impenetrable, unless a gap could be made in the front ranks. They acted mechanically by weight. If they were once broken they were almost defenceless. Level ground, therefore, was necessary to their effective action.

Pyrrhus had secured this last-named advantage; the plain of Heraclea was well adapted for the regular movement of the phalanxes, as well as for that of his cavalry and elephants. The action began by the Roman cavalry crossing the Siris, and driving back a squadron of the king's horse. The main body of the Romans, inspired by this success, threw itself upon the phalanx. But they could make no impression on this solid mass; the *principes* took the place of the *hastati*, and the *triarii* succeeded to the *principes*, in vain. Laevinus then ordered up his cavalry to attack the phalanx in flank. But they were met by the elephants, supported by a body of Thessalian horse. The Romans had never before seen these monstrous animals, which, in their ignorance, they called "Lucanian oxen"; their horses would not face them, and galloped back affrighted among the infantry. Pyrrhus took advantage of this confusion to charge with his cavalry, and the rout was general. The Romans were driven back across the Siris, and did not attempt to defend their camp. Yet they soon rallied, and retired in good order into Apulia, where Venusia was ready to receive them. It was now seen with what judgment the Senate had occupied that place with a large Colony.

The victory of Heraclea was gained at a heavy loss. Pyrrhus now rightly estimated the task he had undertaken. He had a soldier's eye. When he visited the field of battle next day, and saw every

*Remarks of  
Pyrrhus on  
his victory.*

<sup>1</sup> P. 165.

Roman corpse with its wounds in front, he exclaimed : " If these were my soldiers, or if I were their general, we should conquer the world." When he offered in the temple of Jove at Tarentum a portion of the spoils taken after the battle, he placed on them the following inscription :—

" Those who had ne'er been vanquished yet, great Father of Olympus,  
Those have I vanquished in the fight, and they have vanquished me."

And when he was asked why he spoke thus, he answered : " Another victory like this will send me without a man back to Epirus."

The battle of Heraclea, however, encouraged the Greek cities of Locri and Rhegium to throw off the Roman yoke.

*Locri joins* Locri joined Pyrrhus, but Decius Jubellius and his  
*Pyrrhus.* Campanian soldiers declared themselves inde-  
*Rhegium* pendent, and seized Rhegium for themselves. But,  
*independent.* above all, the battle of Heraclea left the country

open before him, and when he advanced into Samnium many of the Lucanians and Samnites joined him. But he reproached them with their tardiness, and no doubt he perceived that he could hope for little real support from the Italians. He saw that he must trust mainly to his own resources, and the battle which had just been fought taught him how formidable was the foe he had to deal with. He resolved therefore to end the war at once by negotiating an advantageous peace.

The person employed in this negotiation was Cineas, a name only less remarkable than that of Pyrrhus himself. He was a

*Mission of* Thessalian Greek, famous for his eloquence, but  
*Cineas.* still more famous for his diplomatic skill. He

served Pyrrhus as minister at home and ambassador abroad. "The tongue of Cineas," Pyrrhus used to say, "had won him more than his own sword." So excellent was his memory, that he had hardly arrived in Rome when he could call every Senator by his name. The terms he had to offer were stringent, for Pyrrhus required that all Greek cities should be left free, and that all the places that had been taken from the Samnites, Apulians, and his other allies, should be restored.<sup>1</sup>

Yet the skill of Cineas would have persuaded the Senate to submit to these terms if it had not been for one man. This was Appius Claudius the Censor. He was now in extreme old age ; he had been blind for many years, and had long ceased

*Speech of* to take part in public affairs. But now, when he  
*Appius.* heard of the proposed surrender, he caused himself to be conducted to the senate-house by his four sons and by

<sup>1</sup> Practically this amounts to the withdrawal of the colonists from Luceria and Venusia : Ihne, i. 519.

his sons-in-law, and there, with the authoritative eloquence of an oracle, he confirmed the wavering spirits of the Fathers, and dictated the only answer worthy of Rome—that she would not treat of peace with Pyrrhus till he had quitted the shores of Italy.<sup>1</sup> The dying patriotism of Appius covers the multitude of arbitrary acts of which he was guilty in his Censorship.

Cineas returned to Pyrrhus baffled and without hope. He told his master that “to fight with the Roman People was like fighting with the hydra”; he declared that “the city was as a temple of the gods, and the Senate an assembly of kings.” But the king resolved to try what effect might be produced by the presence of his army in Latium. He passed rapidly through Campania, leaving it to be plundered by the Samnites, and advanced upon Rome by the upper or Latin road. He laid waste the lands held by the colony of Fregellæ; he received the submission of Anagnia, the capital of the Hernicans, and was perhaps admitted into the impregnable citadel of Praenesté, for both the Hernicans and the Praenestines were only half Roman citizens; they bore the burthens without enjoying the privileges, and may therefore have been glad to welcome a chance of liberty. He then advanced six miles beyond Praenesté, within eighteen miles of Rome. But here his course was stayed. There were no signs of defection among the bulk of the Latins, or Volscians, or Campanians, who had been admitted into the Tribes and enjoyed the full honours of Roman citizenship. T. Coruncanius, afterwards Chief Pontiff, and now Consul, was himself a Latin of Tusculum. What he had gained all might hope for.

The situation of Pyrrhus became critical. Coruncanius had concluded a peace with the Etruscans, and was before him; Laevinus had recruited his shattered army, and was threatening his rear. He therefore determined to withdraw into winter-quarters at Tarentum.

This winter is famous for the embassy of C. Fabricius, who was sent by the Senate with two other Consulars to propose to Pyrrhus an interchange of prisoners. The character and habits of Fabricius resembled those of Curius. He lived in frugal simplicity upon his own farm, and was honoured by his countrymen for his inflexible uprightness. He was somewhat younger than Curius, and seems to have been less rough in manners and more gentle in

<sup>1</sup> In Cicero's time there was extant what claimed to be a *verbatim* report of this celebrated speech. (Cic., *Sen.*, 6; *Brut.*, 16.)

disposition. The stories are well known which tell how Pyrrhus practised upon his cupidity by offering him gold, and upon his fears by concealing an elephant behind the curtains of the royal tent, which, upon a given signal, waved its trunk over his head; and how Fabricius calmly refused the bribe, and looked with unmoved eye upon the threatening monster. Pyrrhus, it is said, so admired the bearing of the Roman that he wished him to enter into his service like Cincas, an offer which, to a Roman ear, could convey nothing but insult. The king refused to give up any Roman citizens whom he had taken, unless the Senate would make peace upon the terms proposed through Cincas; but he gave his prisoners leave to return home in the month of December to take part in the joviality of the Saturnalia, if they would pledge their word of honour to return in case the Senate should determine to continue the war. His confidence was not misplaced. The prisoners used every effort to procure peace, but the Senate remained firm, and ordered every man, under penalty of death, to return to Tarentum by the appointed day.

Hostilities were renewed next year (279 B.C.). The new Consuls were P. Sulpicius, a Patrician, and P. Decius Mus, son and grandson of those illustrious Plebeians who had devoted themselves to death beneath Vesuvius and at Sentinum. We are ignorant of the details of the campaign till we find the Consuls strongly encamped near Asculum of Apulia. Here Pyrrhus encountered them. After some skilful manœuvring he drew the Romans down into the plain, where his phalanx and cavalry could act freely. He placed the Tarentines in the centre, the Lucanians and other southern Italians on his left wing, the Epirotes and Samnites on his right: his cavalry and elephants he kept in reserve. A second time the Roman legions wasted their strength upon the phalanx. Again and again they charged that iron wall with unavailing bravery, till Pyrrhus brought up his elephants, as at Heraclea, and the Romans were broken. But this time they made good their retreat to their intrenched camp, and Pyrrhus did not think it prudent to pursue them. He had little confidence in his Italian allies, who hated the Greeks even more than they hated the Romans, and gave signal proof of their perfidy by plundering the king's camp while he was in action. The loss on both sides was heavy. The second victory was now won: but the king's saying was fast being fulfilled. In these two battles he had lost many of his chief officers and a great number of the Epirotes, the only

troops on whom he could rely. He dared not advance ; and tidings came presently which dispirited him still more. The Romans, he heard, had concluded a defensive alliance with Carthage, so that the superiority of Tarentum at sea would be lost ; moreover, his friend and ally, Ptolemy Ceraunus, had been slain by the Gauls, and these barbarians were threatening to overrun Greece.

Under these circumstances he seized the first occasion of making peace with Rome. This was afforded early in the next year (278) by a communication he received from the new Consuls, Q. Aemilius and C. Fabricius. They sent to give him notice that his physician had offered to take him off by poison. Pyrrhus returned his warmest thanks, sent back all his prisoners fresh-clothed and without ransom, and told his allies he should accept an invitation he had just received to take the command of a Sicilian-Greek army against the Carthaginians and Mamertines. Accordingly he sailed from Locri to Sicily, and left the Italians to the mercy of the Romans. But Milo still kept hold of the citadel of Tarentum, and Alexander, the king's son, remained in garrison at Locri.

*The Consuls inform Pyrrhus of his physician's treachery.*

*Pyrrhus sails to Sicily.*

He had been a little more than two years in Italy, for he came at the end of the year 281 B.C. and departed early in 278. He returned towards the close of 276, so that his stay in Sicily was about two years and a half. The events of these years may be very briefly summed up.

The Samnites and Lucanians continued a sort of partisan warfare against Rome, in which, though the Consuls were honoured with triumphs, no very signal advantages seem to have been gained. The Romans no doubt recovered the Latin cities which had submitted to the king ; they also made themselves masters of Locri and of the ancient city of Croton ; but they failed to take Rhegium, which was held by Decius Jubellius and his Mamertines in defiance of Pyrrhus and Romans alike. Meanwhile Pyrrhus was pursuing a triumphant career in Sicily. He confined the Mamertines within the walls of Messina, and in a brilliant campaign drove the Carthaginians to the extreme west of the island. But in an evil hour he undertook the siege of Lilybæum, a place which the Carthaginians had made almost impregnable. He was obliged to raise the siege, and lost the confidence of his fickle Greek allies. Before this, also, it is probable that death had deprived him of the services of Cineas. Left to himself he was guilty of many harsh and arbitrary acts, which proceeded rather from impatience and

*Pyrrhus in Sicily.*

disappointment than from a cruel or tyrannical temper. It now became clear that he could hold Sicily no longer, and he gladly accepted a new invitation to return to Italy.

Accordingly, late in the year 276 B.C., he set sail for Tarentum. On the passage he was intercepted by a Carthaginian fleet, and lost the larger number of his ships; *He returns to Italy.* and, on landing somewhere in the neighbourhood of Rhegium, he suffered further loss by an assault from the Mamertines, who still held the city. Yet, once in Italy, he found himself at the head of a large army, composed partly of his veteran Epirotes, and partly of soldiers of fortune who had followed him from Sicily. His first act was to recover possession of Locri; and here, in extreme want of money, he listened to evil counsellors, and plundered the rich temple of Proserpine. The ships that were conveying the plunder were wrecked, and Pyrrhus, conscience-stricken, restored all that was saved. But the memory of the deed haunted him; he has recorded his belief that this sacrilegious act was the cause of all his future misfortunes.

The Consuls of the next year (275 B.C.) were L. Cornelius Lentulus and M'. Curius Dentatus. On Curius depended the fortunes of Rome. The people were much disheartened, for pestilence was raging. The statue *M'. Curius Dentatus Consul.* of Capitoline Jupiter had been struck by lightning, and men's hearts were filled with ominous forebodings. When the Consuls held their levy, the citizens summoned for service did not answer their names. Then Curius ordered the goods of the first recusant to be sold, a sentence which was followed by the loss of all political rights. This severe measure had its effect, and the required legions were made up.

Lentulus marched into Lucania, Curius into Samnium. Pyrrhus chose the latter country for the seat of war. He found Curius encamped near Beneventum, and he resolved on a *Battle of Beneventum.* night attack, so as to surprise him before he could be joined by his colleague. But night attacks seldom succeed; the army missed its way, and it was broad daylight before the Epirote army appeared before the camp of the Consul. Curius immediately drew out his legions, and assaulted the enemy while they were entangled in the mountains. He had instructed his archers to shoot arrows wrapped in burning tow at the elephants, and to this device is attributed the victory he won. One of the females, hearing the cries of her young one, which had been wounded in this way, rushed furiously into the ranks of her own men. Curius now brought up the main body of his foot and attacked the disordered phalanx; it was broken and became



helpless. The defeat was complete : Pyrrhus fell back at once upon Tarentum, and resolved to quit the shores of Italy, leaving Milo to hold the citadel.

But the glory of his life was ended ; the two or three years that remained of it were passed in hopeless enterprises. In storming Argos he was killed by a tile thrown by a woman from the roof of a house. Such was the *Fate of Pyrrhus.* end of this remarkable man. Like Richard I. of England or Charles XII. of Sweden, he passed his life in winning battles without securing any fruits of victory ; and, like them, a life passed in the thick of danger was ended in a petty war and by an unknown hand. His chivalric disposition won him the admiration even of his enemies ; his impetuous temper and impatience of misfortune prevented him from securing the confidence of his friends. Yet he left a name worthy of his boasted descent from Achilles and his cousinhood to the great Alexander ;<sup>1</sup> and we part with regret from the history of his Italian wars, for it is the most frank and generous conflict in which Rome was ever engaged.

AUTHORITIES. --Plutarch, *Pyrrhus* ; Livy, *Ep.*, xii.-xiv. ; Zonaras, viii. 3-6 ; Appian iii. ; also various notices in Oros., Dionys., Justin, Dio, Frontinus, etc. On the battle of Asculum, see Arnold, *Hist.*, ii. 509 ; Mommsen, ii. 25. The chapters in Niebuhr's *History* are particularly valuable.

---

<sup>1</sup> His father was nephew to Olympias, the mother of Alexander.



Coin struck during the Social War, showing Samnite bull goring Roman wolf (*B. M. C.* VII. c. 15).

## CHAPTER XXIII

### FINAL REDUCTION AND SETTLEMENT OF ITALY. (274-264 B.C.)

THE departure of Pyrrhus left Italy at the mercy of Rome. Yet Milo, the king's lieutenant, still held the citadel of Tarentum, and none of the nations who had lately joined the Epirote standard submitted without a final struggle.

*Final reduction of Samnites and southern Italians.* AFFAIRS OF THE SOUTH.—The Samnites, Lucanians, Bruttians, and other tribes continued a kind of guerrilla warfare, for which their mountains afforded great facilities. To put an end to this, in the year 272 B.C., L. Papirius Cursor the younger, and Sp. Carvilius, who had crushed the Samnites at the close of the third war, were again elected Consuls. Papirius invested Tarentum, and while the lines were being formed, he received the submission of the Lucanians and Bruttians.

Meanwhile Carvilius attacked the Samnites, and the scattered remnants of that brave people saw themselves compelled to submit finally to Rome, after a struggle of about seventy years.<sup>1</sup> Thus ended what is sometimes called the Fourth Samnite war.

The same summer witnessed the reduction of Tarentum. Papirius entered into a secret treaty with Milo, by which the latter was to evacuate the city and leave it to the will of the Romans.<sup>2</sup> He sailed for Epirus with all his men and stores, and Tarentum was left to the mercy of Rome. The Tarentines were allowed to continue independent, on condition of paying an annual tribute to the conqueror; but

<sup>1</sup> Both consuls had to be sent against them in 269 B.C., but this outbreak does not appear to have been really serious.

<sup>2</sup> Papirius feared the intervention of the Carthaginians, whose fleet actually arrived outside the harbour.

the fortifications were rased, the arsenal dismantled, the fleet surrendered to Rome, and a Roman garrison placed in the citadel.

The attention excited by the failure of Pyrrhus is attested by the fact that in the year 273 B.C. Ptolemy Philadelphus, sovereign of Egypt, sent ambassadors to Rome, and entered into alliance with Rome. Thus began a connexion with Egypt which continued unbroken to the time of Caesar.

*Embassy from  
Ptolemy.*

In 271 or 270 B.C. the Plebeian Consul Genucius was sent to reduce Decius Jubellius and the Campanian soldiers, who had made themselves lords of Rhegium. The Senate formed a treaty with the Mamertine soldiery, who had occupied Messana in the same manner, and thus detached them from alliance with their compatriots; they also secured supplies of corn from Hiero, the new sovereign of Syracuse. The Campanians of Rhegium being thus forsaken, the city was taken by assault and all the soldiery put to the sword, except the original legionaries of Jubellius, who, as burgesses of Capua, possessed some of the rights of Roman citizens, and were therefore reserved for trial before the People of Rome. Somewhat more than three hundred still survived out of several thousands; but they met with no mercy. Every Tribe voted that they should be first scourged and then beheaded, as traitors to the Republic. The surviving citizens of Rhegium were restored to the condition of a Greek community.

*Campanians  
of Rhegium  
punished.*

A few years later (266 B.C.) the Sallentines and Messapians in the heel of Italy submitted to the joint forces of both Consuls. Brundisium and its lands were ceded to Rome; about twenty years afterwards (244 B.C.) a Colony was planted there, and Brundisium became the Dover of Italy, as Dyrrhachium, on the opposite Epirote coast, became the Calais of Greece.

*Sallentines  
and Messa-  
pians submit.  
Colony at  
Brundisium.*

**AFFAIRS OF THE NORTH.** - In the year 268 B.C. both Consuls undertook the reduction of the Picenians, who occupied the coast land between Umbria and the Marrucinians. Their chief city, Asculum, was taken by storm. A portion of the people was transferred to the beautiful coast between Naples and the Silarus, where they took the name of Picentines.

*Submission of  
Picenians and  
Umbrians.*

Soon after (266 B.C.) Sarsina, a city of the Umbrians, was taken, and all Umbria submitted to Rome.

It remains to speak of Etruria. No community here was strong enough, so far as we hear, to maintain active war against Rome. Vulsinii, its most powerful city, was now compelled to

sue for succour. The ruling aristocracy had ventured to arm their serfs, probably for the purpose of a Roman war ; but these men had turned upon their late masters, and were now exercising a still direr oppression than they had suffered. The Senate readily gave ear to a call for assistance from the Vulsinian lords ; and (in the year 265 B.C.) Q. Fabius Gurgus, son of old Fabius *Surrender of Vulsinii.* Maximus, invested the city. He was slain in a battle sally made by the Etruscan serfs, who were, however, obliged to surrender in the next year. The Romans treated the city as lawfully-gotten booty. The old Etruscan town on the hill-top, with its polygonal walls, was destroyed ; its 2000 statues and other works of art were transferred to Rome ; a new town was founded on the low ground, which in the modernised name of Bolsena still preserves the memory of its ancient fame. With Vulsinii fell the last of the independent Etruscan communities, and all Italy awaited the will of the conquering city of the Tiber.

We must now give a brief account of the manner in which the Roman government so ordered the noble dominions of which they were now masters, that for many years at least absolute tranquillity prevailed.

To conceive of ancient Rome as the capital of Italy in the same sense that London is the capital of England, or Paris of *Settlement of France,* would be a great mistake. London and *Italy.* Paris are the chief cities of their respective countries only because they are the seat of government. The citizens of these cities have no privileges above the other citizens of their respective countries. But the city of ancient Rome was a great Corporate Body or Community, holding sovereignty over the whole of Italy, from the Macra and Rubicon downwards. The Roman territory itself, in the first days of the Republic, consisted (as we have seen) of twenty-one Tribes or Wards. Before the point at which we have arrived these Tribes had been successively increased to three-and-thirty. These Tribes included a district beyond the Tiber stretching somewhat further than Veii, a portion of the Sabine and Aequian territory beyond the Anio, with part of Latium, part of the Volscian country, and the coast-land as far as the Liris, southward. None but persons enrolled on the lists of these Tribes had a vote in the Popular Assemblies or any share in the government and legislation of the city. The Latin cities not included in the Tribes, and all the Italian communities, were subject to Rome, but had no share in her political franchise.

The principles on which the Italian nations were so settled

as to remain the peaceable subjects of Rome were these. First, they were broken up and divided as much as possible ; secondly, they were allowed, with little exception, to manage their own affairs. The *Isolation and self-government.* ISOLATION enforced by Rome prevented them from combining against her. The SELF-GOVERNMENT granted by Rome made them bear her supremacy with contentment.

The arts by which isolation was produced were put in practice at the settlement of Latium seventy years before. The same plan was pursued with the different Italian nations. Those which submitted with a *How isolation was produced.* good grace were treated leniently. Those which resisted stubbornly, were weakened by the confiscation of their lands, and by the settlement of colonies in their principal towns. The Marsians and Frentanians are the best example of the milder treatment ; the Samnites afford the most notable instance of the more harsh.

The work of isolation was promoted, partly by the long and narrow shape of Italy and the mountain range by which it is traversed, which makes a central government difficult, and has till recently broken it up into many states, but partly, also, by a sentiment common to most of the Italian nations, as well as to those of Greece. They regarded a man, not as one of a nation, but as the member of a civic community. Every one regarded his first duties as owed to his own city, and not to his nation. Their city was their country. They addressed one another not as fellow-countrymen, but as fellow-citizens. Rome herself was the noblest specimen of this form of society, and the settlement which she adopted throughout Italy took advantage of this prevailing rule, and perpetuated it.

Not only were the Italians split up into civic communities, but these communities were themselves placed in very different conditions. The division of the Italian communities, as established by the Roman Government, was threefold—Prefectures, Municipal Towns, and Colonies.

PREFECTURES.—The Prefectures did not enjoy the right of self-government, but were under the rule of Prefects or Roman governors, annually appointed ; and the inhabitants of the Prefecture were liable to all the burthens of *Prefectures.* Roman citizens, without enjoying any of their privileges. This condition seems to have been much the same as that which was called the Caerite Franchise, because the town of Caeré was the first community placed in the dependent position implied by the term. Amid the terror of the Gallic invasion, Caeré had afforded a place of refuge to the priests and sacred things of

the Romans, and had been rewarded by a treaty of equal alliance. But at a later period she joined other Etruscan communities in war against Rome, and probably for this reason she was reduced to the condition of a Prefecture. Capua afterwards became a notable instance of a similar change. During the Samnite wars, and afterwards, she enjoyed a state of perfect equality in respect to Rome. The troops which she supplied in virtue of the alliance between her and Rome formed a separate legion, and were commanded by officers of her own, as in the case of Decius Jubellius. But in the Hannibalic war she joined Hannibal, and to punish her she was degraded to the condition of a Prefecture.

MUNICIPAL TOWNS.—At the period of which we write, these were communities bound to Rome by treaties of alliance, varying in detail but framed on a general principle with respect to burthens and privileges. Their burthens consisted in furnishing certain contingents of troops, which they were obliged to provide with pay and equipments while on service. Their privileges consisted in freedom from all other taxes, and in possessing the right of self-government. This condition was secured by a treaty of alliance, which, nominally at least, placed the municipal community on a footing of equality with Rome; though sometimes this treaty was imposed by Rome without consulting the will of the other community. Thus there was, no doubt, a considerable diversity of condition among the *municipia*. Some regarded their alliance as a boon, others looked upon it as a mark of subjection. In the former condition were many of the communities of Latium; in the latter condition were Vulsinii and the Etruscan cities. The Municipal Towns enjoyed the civil or private rights of Roman citizens; but none, without special grant, had any power of obtaining the political or public rights. In some cases even the private rights were withheld, as from the greater part of the Latin communities after the war of 340 B.C., when the citizens of each community were for a time forbidden to form contracts of marriage or commerce with Roman citizens or with their neighbours. They stood to Rome and to the rest of Italy much in the same condition as the Plebeians to the Patricians before the Canuleian law. But these prohibitions were gradually and silently removed. Municipal Towns were often rewarded by a gift of the Roman franchise, more or less completely, while those which offended were depressed to the condition of Prefectures. At length, by the Julian law (B.C. 90), all the Municipal Towns of Italy, as well as the Colonies, received the full Roman franchise; and



hence arose the common conception of a Municipal Town, that is, a community of which the citizens are all members of the nation, all possessing the same national rights, and subject to the same national burthens, but retaining the administration of law and government in all local matters which concern not the nation at large.

COLONIES.—It is in the Colonial Towns that we must look for the chief instruments of Roman supremacy in Italy. Directly dependent upon Rome for existence, they served more than anything to promote that division of *Colonies.* interests which rendered it so difficult for Italy, or any part of Italy, to combine against the Roman government.

When we speak or think of Roman Colonies, we must dismiss all those conceptions of colonisation which are familiar to our minds from the practice either of ancient Greece or of the maritime states of modern Europe. Roman Colonies were not planted in new countries by adventurers who found their old homes too narrow for their wants or their ambition. When the Romans planted a Colony (at the time we speak of and for more than a century later),<sup>1</sup> it was always within the limits of the Italian Peninsula, and within the walls of ancient cities whose obstinate resistance made it imprudent to restore them to independence, and whose reduced condition rendered it possible to place them in the condition of subjects. But these Colonies were not all of the same character. They must be distinguished into two classes—the Colonies of Roman Citizens and the Latin Colonies.

The Colonies of Roman Citizens consisted usually of three hundred men of approved military experience, who went forth with their families to occupy conquered cities of *(1) Roman* no great magnitude, which were important as *Colonies.* military positions, being usually on the sea-coast.<sup>2</sup> These three hundred families formed a sort of Patrician caste, while the old inhabitants sank into the condition formerly occupied by the Plebeians at Rome. The heads of these families retained all their rights as Roman citizens, and might repair to Rome to vote in the Popular Assemblies. When in early Roman history we hear of the revolt of such Colonies, the meaning seems to be that the natives rose against the colonists and expelled them. Hence it is that we hear of colonists being sent more than once to the same place, as to Antium.

<sup>1</sup> Down to the tribunate of C. Gracchus.

<sup>2</sup> Such were called *coloniae maritimae*; *cp.* Marquardt, *Röm. Staatsverw.*, i. 38; Beloch, *Italischer Bund*, 135.

But more numerous and more important than these were the Latin Colonies, of which there were thirty in existence when Hannibal crossed the Alps. Of these thirty no fewer than twenty-six had been founded before the close of the present period. The reason for the name they bore was this. We have seen that a close connexion had subsisted between Rome and the Latin communities from the earliest times. Under the later Kings, Rome was the head of Latium; and by Spurius Cassius a league was formed between Rome and Latium, which continued with a slight interruption till the great Latin War of 340 B.C. So long as this league lasted, Latins enjoyed all the private rights of Roman citizens in Rome, and Romans enjoyed all the private rights of the Latin citizens in any of the cities of Latium. During the period of the league many Colonies were sent forth, in which the settlers consisted jointly of Romans and Latins, and were not confined to the small number of three hundred, but usually amounted to some thousands. But the citizens of these Latin Colonies seem to have had no rights at Rome, except such as were possessed by the allied Municipal Towns. They were therefore regarded politically as communities in alliance with Rome. After the Latin War similar Colonies still continued to be sent forth. Indeed, these were the Colonies which chiefly relieved the poor of the Roman territory. At first, no doubt, the Colonists remained distinct from the old inhabitants, but gradually both were fused into one body, like the Sabines and Latins at Rome, like the Samnites and their subjects in Capua.

The Latin Colonies, then, at that time were merely allied cities, bound to furnish troops for the service of Rome, and maintaining the Roman alliance in the midst of a hostile population. It is to these Colonies that we must chiefly attribute that tenacious grasp which Rome was able to keep upon every district in Italy.<sup>1</sup>

The rights and privileges of these Latin Colonies are only known to us as they are found at a later period of the Republic under the name of *Latinitas*, or the Right of *Ius Latii*. Latium (*iūs Latii*). This Right, at the later time we speak of, we know to have consisted in the power of obtaining the full rights of a Roman burgess, but in a limited and peculiar manner. Any citizen of a Latin community, whether one of the free cities of Latium or a Latin Colony, was allowed to emigrate to Rome and be enrolled in one of the Roman Tribes, on one of two conditions: either simply that he left a

---

<sup>1</sup> See the list in Marquardt, i. 48.

representative of his family in his native town, or that he had held a magistracy there.<sup>1</sup> Thus was formed that large body of half-Roman citizens throughout Italy, who are so well known to readers of Livy under the appellation of "the Latin name." *Socii et nomen Latinum*—the Allies and the Latin Name—was the technical expression for all those Italian communities, besides Rome herself, who were bound to supply soldiers for her armies.

FREE AND CONFEDERATE STATES.—Besides the mass of the Italian communities which were in a condition of greater or less dependence upon Rome—the Prefectures in a state of absolute subjection, the Colonies bound by ties of national feeling and interest, the Municipal Towns by articles of alliance—there remain to be noticed, fourthly, the cities which remained wholly independent of Rome but were bound to her by treaties of equal alliance. In Campania, most of the cities were free, till, after the Hannibalic war, several were reduced to the condition of Prefectures. Of the Latin cities, Tibur and Praenesté were confederate states; of the Hellenic cities in the south, Neapolis, Rhegium, and others; in Umbria, Camerinum and Iguvium.<sup>2</sup> But as Roman power increased, most of these communities were reduced to the condition of simple municipal towns.

Whatever is known of the internal constitution of these various communities belongs to later times, when by the Julian Law they all obtained the Roman franchise, and became part and parcel of the Roman state. There can, however, be little doubt that in the Colonies a constitution was adopted similar to that of Rome herself. The Colonists formed a kind of Patriciate or aristocracy, and the heads of their leading families constituted a Senate. There were two chief magistrates, called *duumviri*, representing the Consuls, to whom (in the more important towns) were added one or two men to fulfil the duties of Aedile. In the course of time similar constitutions were introduced into the Municipal Towns also.<sup>3</sup>

Thus, by placing the Italian cities in every possible relation

<sup>1</sup> The latter arrangement is probably to be identified with the *ius Ariminense* or *ius duodecim coloniarum* of Cicero (*Caec.*, 35; but see Beloch, 154). It will be noticed that under this regulation the Roman citizenship would be much harder to acquire than under the older system. *Cp.* Mommsen, ii. 52; Marquard, i. 53.

<sup>2</sup> *Cp.* Marquardt, i. 46.

<sup>3</sup> *Cp.* Mommsen, i. 442, 452; Volquardsen in *Rh. Mus.*, N.F., xxxiii. 552.

to herself, from real independence to complete subjection, and by planting Colonies, some with full Roman rights, some with a limited power of obtaining these rights, Rome wove her net of sovereignty over the Peninsula, and covered every part with its entangling meshes. The policy of Rome, as has been said, may be summed up in the two words—Isolation and Self-government.

AUTHORITIES.—Mommsen, ii. 46; Marquardt, *Röm. Staatsverw.*, i; Beloch, *Der Italischer Bund*; Watson, *Letters of Cicero*, App. xii.; *Dict. Ant.*, "LATINITAS."



Romano-Campanian Stater, 3rd century B.C. (*B. H. C. V.*, c. 8).



Coin of Carthage, 2nd century B.C. (*B. M. C.* VI. c. 35).

## BOOK IV

# ROME AND CARTHAGE

## CHAPTER XXIV

### CARTHAGE. EVENTS LEADING TO FIRST PUNIC WAR

NOTHING is more remarkable in the history of Rome than the manner in which she was brought into contact only with one enemy at a time. During the heat of her contest with the Samnites Alexander of Macedon was terminating his career. The second Samnite war broke out in 326 B.C.; and three years later the great king died at the untimely age of thirty-two. When he took rest at Babylon, after ten years spent in ceaseless activity, he received embassies from all parts of the known world. If it is to be believed that among these envoys there were representatives from some of the states and tribes of Lower Italy, their business at the distant court of Alexander could have been no other than to solicit the aid of his victorious arms to arrest the course of Rome, and protect the southern shores of Italy, so dear to every Greek, from her overpowering ambition. The possibility that the great king might have turned his course westward occurred to Roman minds. Livy broaches the question, whether Rome would have risen superior to the contest or not, and decides it in the affirmative.

*Good fortune  
of Rome in  
her successive  
wars.*

But his judgment is that of a patriot, rather than of an historian. Scarcely did Rome prevail over the unassisted prowess of the Samnites. Scarcely did she drive the adventurous Pyrrhus from her shores. If a stronger than Pyrrhus—a man of rarest ability both for war and peace—had joined his power to that of C. Pontius the Samnite, it can hardly be doubted that the history of the world would have been changed.

The same good fortune attended Rome in her collision with Carthage. The adventurous temper of Pyrrhus alarmed the Carthaginians, and threw them into alliance with the Romans. What might have been the result of the Tarentine war, if the diplomacy of Cineas had been employed to engage the great African city against Rome? But Pyrrhus was foiled, and the two great Powers of the West were left face to face. A collision was inevitable. As the king turned his back upon the west, he said regretfully:—"How fair a battlefield we are leaving for the Romans and Carthaginians!"

The famous city of Carthage stood on the north coast of Africa at a distance of nearly 150 miles south-westward of the westernmost point of Sicily. It was a colony from Tyre, the great centre of Phœnician commerce in the east, and the common date for its foundation is about a century before the foundation of Rome. The language of the colony continued to be Phœnician, or (as the Romans called it) Punic;<sup>1</sup> and the scanty remains of that language are sufficient to show its near affinity with Hebrew and its kindred tongues. In early times Carthage had assumed a leading position in the west of the Mediterranean. At the time of her fall, after the long and disastrous struggle with Rome and the loss of all her empire, she still numbered a population of 700,000 citizens, and her buildings covered a space of more than twenty miles. As her wealth and power increased she had planted numerous colonies on the African coast. Three hundred Libyan cities are said to have paid her tribute, and her dominion was gradually extended to the Pillars of Hercules on the one side, and nearly to the Great Syrtis on the other. The natives of this wide district were ruled by Carthage with excessive rigour, being treated as mere tillers of the ground, subject to the payment of tribute, but not entrusted with any political rights whatsoever. The result was that the presence of a foreign invader was always the

---

<sup>1</sup> *Phœnix* became in Latin *Pœnus*. The adjective hence formed was *Punicus*, as *munire* from *moenia*, *punire* from *pœna*.



signal for insurrection ; and this is a fact which offers a remarkable point of contrast between the dominion of Rome in Italy and that of Carthage in Africa.

The government was nominally entrusted to two elective magistrates, who bore the title of Suffets<sup>1</sup> or *Presidents*, and a Senate of large but uncertain number. But all real power seems to have been absorbed by a smaller Council of One Hundred and Four,<sup>2</sup> who held office for life. Before this narrow oligarchy all other powers grew dim, just as at Venice, after the thirteenth century, the Doges dwindled to a shadow before the secret despotism of the Council of Ten.

The Carthaginians had little need of a strong military force in Africa. Their own citizens seem to have been trained to arms for home purposes, and an immense magazine of military stores was kept in Byrsa or Bozra,<sup>3</sup> the citadel. This force was probably sufficient to overawe the native Libyans, and to repress the incursions of the Numidians and other predatory tribes on their western side. But for foreign service they relied almost solely on mercenary troops.<sup>4</sup> These they hired from Libya itself, Spain, Italy, Gaul, and Greece. The Balearic Isles supplied them with slingers. Their light cavalry, which in the hands of Hannibal proved a formidable force, was formed of wild Numidians, light, spare, hardy men, who had their horses so completely under command as to ride them without bit or rein.

The officers in chief command of these motley forces were usually native Carthaginians, who seem to have been men chosen rather because of their devotion to the oligarchical families than because of their aptness for command. When they failed, their merciless masters visited the failure by fine, imprisonment, or crucifixion.

<sup>1</sup> The Latin *Sufes*, plur. *Sufetes*, is the same as the Hebrew *Shôphét*, plur. *Shôph'etim*, which in our Bible is translated *Judges*.

<sup>2</sup> Sometimes called, in round numbers, the Council of One Hundred ; just as, at Rome, a court of one hundred and five members was known as the "Centumviri."

<sup>3</sup> *Bozra* was probably Phœnician for *fortress*. The Greeks called it *Bûρσα*. No doubt the meaning of this word gave rise to the legend that Dido bought as much land from the Libyans "as a *hide* would compass," and then cheated them by cutting the hide into strips (*Virg., Aen.*, i. 367).

<sup>4</sup> Mommsen (ii. 157) points out that in a Spanish army of 15,000, there was not a single Carthaginian, officers excepted, and that the "Liby-Phœnicians" (or Phœnicians of other African cities) were only represented by part of a cavalry corps of 450.

It was by means of her fleets that Carthage was brought into connexion and collision with other countries. In early days she had established commercial settlements in *Attempts upon Sicily.* the south of Spain and in Sicily. It was in these countries that she came in contact first with the Greeks, and afterwards with the Romans. In early times the Carthaginians contented themselves with factories or trading-marts on the coast of Sicily, of which the principal at this time were Drepana, Panormus, and Lilybaeum; and these they fortified very strongly. But some time after the great overthrow of the Athenian power by the Syracusans (413 B.C.), the Carthaginians seem to have become masters of nearly the whole of this fertile and coveted island. Their successes were first checked by Dionysius, the Tyrant of Syracuse, whose long *Dionysius of Syracuse.* reign of 38 years (405–367 B.C.) comprises the time of Rome's great depression by the Gallic invasion, while the year of his death is coincident with the passing of the Licinian Laws, the era from which dates the constant advance of the great Italian city. After many vicissitudes he was obliged to conclude a peace by which the river Halycus was settled as the boundary between Grecian and Carthaginian Sicily (383 B.C.).

In 317 B.C. Agathocles made himself chief of Syracuse, and in 310 B.C. the Carthaginians declared war against him. Reduced to great straits, he took the bold step of transporting the troops which remained for the defence of his capital into Africa, so as to avail himself of the known disaffection of the Libyan subjects of Carthage. His successes were marvellous. One of the Suffets fell in battle, the other acted as a traitor. All the Libyan subjects of Carthage supported the Sicilian chief, and for nearly four years he was master of the land. He was then obliged to return by troubles at home, and the remainder of his life was spent in vain attempts in Sicily, in Corcyra, and in southern Italy. He died in 289 B.C., less than ten years before the appearance of Pyrrhus in Italy.

After the death of Agathocles, the Carthaginians and Greeks of Sicily rested quiet till Pyrrhus undertook to expel the former from the island. The appearance of Carthaginian fleets off the coasts of Italy roused the jealousy of the Italian Republic, and an opportunity only was wanting to give rise to open war between the two states. In the year 264 B.C. such an opportunity occurred.

The occupation of Messana by the Campanian Mercenaries of Agathocles, calling themselves Mamertines, has been noticed.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 200.

From this place they became dangerous neighbours to Syracuse. A young man named Hiero, who had won distinction in the Sicilian campaigns of Pyrrhus, defeated these marauders, and was by his grateful compatriots proclaimed king about the year 270 B.C. The new king resolved to destroy this nest of robbers, and advanced against Messina with a force superior to any they could bring into the field against him. The Mamertines, in this peril, were divided: one party wished to call in the Carthaginians, another preferred alliance with Rome. The latter prevailed, and in 264 B.C. envoys were despatched to demand immediate aid. The Senate were well inclined to grant what was asked; for, that Messina, a town with a good harbour and separated from Italy by a narrow strait, should pass into the hands of Carthage, might have given alarm to a less watchful government. Yet shame restrained them. It was but a few years since Hiero had assisted them in punishing the Campanian legion which had seized Italian Rhegium, as the Mamertines had seized Sicilian Messina, and the Senate declined to entertain the question. But the Consuls, eager for military glory, brought the matter before the Assembly, which straightway voted that support should be given to the Mamertines, or in other words, that the Carthaginians should not be allowed to gain possession of Messina. The Consul App. Claudius, grandson of the old Censor, was to command the army.

*The Mamertines and Hiero.*

*Assistance voted to Mamertines.*

During this delay, however, the Carthaginian party among the Mamertines had prevailed, and a party of Carthaginian soldiers had been admitted into the town. Meantime, Appius succeeded in landing his troops to the south of the town, and defeated Hiero with such loss, that the prudent king retired to Syracuse. Next day the Romans fell upon the Carthaginians, and defeated them also. The Consul pursued his successes by plundering the Syracusan dominions up to the very gates of the city.

*Victories of Romans over Hiero and Carthaginians.*

The Romans, having now set foot in Sicily, determined to make war against Carthage. It is probable that the Senate, recollecting the rapid success of Pyrrhus, who in two years almost swept the Carthaginians out of the island, reckoned on a speedy conquest; else, after their late exhausting wars, they would hardly have engaged in this new and terrible conflict. But they were much deceived. The first Punic War, which began in 263 B.C., did not end till 241, having dragged out its tedious length for three-and-twenty years. The general history of it is most un-

*General character of First Punic War.*

interesting. All the great men of Rome, who had waged her Italian wars with so much vigour and ability, were in their graves ; we hear no more of Decius, or Curius, or Fabricius, and no worthy successors had arisen. The only men of note who appear on the Roman side are Duilius and Regulus. But the generals of Carthage are no less obscure. No one on their side is worthy of mention except the great Hamilcar, and he appears not till near the close of the war, and is now to be mentioned not so much for what he then did as for the promise of what he might do hereafter.

AUTHORITIES.—On Carthage in general : Bosworth-Smith, *Carthage and the Carthaginians* ; Meltzer, *Geschichte der Karthager* ; Cunningham, *Western Civilization*, 62, 140 ; Mommsen, ii. 135. On the Carthaginian Constitution : B. W. Henderson in *Journ. Phil.*, xxiv. 119 (where the chief passages from ancient authors are cited *in extenso*) ; Newman, *Politics of Aristotle*, ii., App. B. On the events leading to the First Punic War : Polybius, i. 10, 11 ; *cp.* Zonaras, viii. 8, 9.



*As*, with head of Janus (p. 28) : ship's prow on reverse (*cp.* p. 232).

## CHAPTER XXV

### FIRST PUNIC WAR. (263-241 B.C.)

To make the dreary length of this war more intelligible, it may conveniently be divided into three periods. The first comprises its first seven years (263-257), during which the Romans were generally successful, and at the close of which they had driven the Carthaginians to the south and west coasts of Sicily. The second is an anxious period of mingled success and failure, also lasting for seven years (256-250); it begins with the invasion of Africa by Regulus, and ends with his embassy and death. The third is a long and listless period of nine years (249-241), in which the Romans slowly retrieve their losses, and at length conclude the war by a great victory at sea.

*Divisions of  
First Punic  
War.*

FIRST PERIOD (263-257).—The loss of the town of Messana so displeased the Carthaginian government that they ordered their unfortunate general to be crucified. The Romans pursued their first success with vigour. In the year 263 B.C. both the Consuls crossed over into Sicily with an army of nearly 50,000 men. A number of the Sicilian towns declared in favour of the new power, which might (they hoped) secure their independence against both Syracuse and Carthage; for at present no one dreamed of a permanent occupation of the island by the Romans.<sup>1</sup> Hiero, a prudent man, was struck by the energy of the new invaders. "They had conquered him," he said, "before he had had time to see them." He shrewdly calculated that the Carthaginians would prove inferior in the struggle, and forthwith concluded a treaty of alliance with Rome, by which he was left in undis-

*First Period.  
Success of  
Romans.*

<sup>1</sup> The inhabitants of Segesta are said to have voluntarily admitted the Roman army, on the ground that they too were descended from Aeneas. See Lewis, i. 318.

turbed possession of a small but fertile region lying round Syracuse ; some more remote towns, as Tauromenium, being also subject to his sceptre. From this time forth to the time of his death, a period of forty-seven years, he remained a useful ally of the Roman people. In 262 B.C. both Consuls laid siege to the city of Agrigentum, which, though fallen *Capture of Agrigentum.* from her ancient splendour, was still the second of the Hellenic communities in Sicily. A new general was sent from Carthage to raise the siege, and for some time fortune favoured him. He invested the Roman lines, so as to intercept all supplies ; and thus the besiegers, being themselves besieged, were reduced to great straits. But the Consuls held their ground till they forced the enemy to give battle, and gained a complete victory. Upon this the commandant of the garrison, finding further defence useless, slipped out of Agrigentum by night, and deserted the hapless city after a siege of seven months. The Romans repaid themselves for the miseries they had undergone by indulging in all those excesses which soldiers are wont to commit when they take a town by storm after a long and obstinate defence.

This great success raised the spirits of the Romans ; and now the Senate conceived the hope and formed the plan of expelling the Carthaginians entirely from Sicily. Their short *Romans build a fleet.* experience had already taught that sagacious council that a fleet was indispensable for success. Nothing shows the courage and resolution of the Romans more than their manner of acting in this matter. It is no light matter for landsmen to become seamen ; but for unpractised landsmen to think of encountering at sea the most skilful seamen then known might have been deemed a piece of romantic absurdity, if the men of Rome had not undertaken and accomplished it.

What they wanted first was a navy, which, in size at least and weight of ships, should be a match for those of the enemy. It is a mistake to suppose that the Romans had no fleet before this time. The treaties with Carthage sufficiently prove the contrary ; and it is certain that on several occasions before this they had employed ships of war.<sup>1</sup> But these ships were of the trireme kind, formerly in use among the Greeks. The Carthaginians, like the Greeks after Alexander, used quinqueremes ; and it would have been as absurd for the small Roman ships to have encountered those heavier vessels as for a frigate to cope with a three-decker. The Romans therefore determined to build quinqueremes. A Carthaginian ship, cast ashore on the

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen, ii. 43.



coast of Bruttii, served as a model ; the forest of Sila, in the same district, would supply timber. In sixty days from the time the trees were felled they had completed (so the story goes) a fleet of one hundred quinqueremes and twenty triremes ; and while it was building, they trained men to row in a manner which to us seems laughable, by placing them on scaffolds ranged on land in the same way as the benches in the ships. (260 B.C.)

The Consul Cn. Cornelius put to sea with seventeen ships, leaving the rest of the fleet to follow ; but he was surprised at Lipara and captured, with the whole of his little *Defeat of* squadron, by the Carthaginian admiral. His *Cornelius*. Plebeian colleague, C. Duilius, was in command of the army ; but as soon as he heard of this disaster, he hastened to take charge of the main body of the fleet, and sailed along the north coast of Sicily with the purpose of engaging the enemy.

Meantime the Roman shipwrights had contrived certain engines, by means of which their seamen might grapple with the enemy's ships, so as to bring them to close *Corvi*. quarters and deprive them of the superiority derived from their better construction and the greater skill of their crews. These engines were called crows (*corvi*). They consisted of a gangway 36 feet long and 4 broad, pierced with an oblong hole towards one end, so as to play freely round a strong pole 24 feet high, which was fixed near the ship's prow. At the other end was attached a strong rope, which passed over a sheaf at the head of the pole.<sup>1</sup> By this rope the gangway was hauled up till within reach of the enemy's ship ; it was then suddenly let go, and as it fell with all its weight, a strong spike on its under side (shaped like a crow's beak) was driven into the enemy's deck. Then the Roman men-at-arms poured along the gangway, and a stand-up fight followed, in which the best soldiers must prevail.

Thus prepared, Duilius set forth to encounter the enemy's fleet. He found them ravaging the coast at Mylac, a little to the west of Cape Pelorus. The admiral was the *Battle of* same person who had commanded the garrison of *Mylac*. Agrigentum, and was carried in an enormous septireme, which had formerly belonged to Pyrrhus. Nothing daunted, Duilius attacked without delay. By this rude assault the skilful tactics of the Carthaginian seamen were confounded. The Roman fighting-men were very numerous, and when they had once boarded an enemy's ship, easily made themselves masters of

<sup>1</sup> The description in Polybius (i. 22) is not quite clear.

her. Duilius took thirty-one Carthaginian ships and sunk fourteen. For a season no Roman name stood so high as that of Duilius. Public honours were awarded him; he was escorted home at night from banquets by the light of torches and the music of the flute; a pillar was set up in the Forum (ornamented with the beaks of the captured ships, and therefore called the Columna Rostrata) to commemorate the great event; fragments of the inscription still remain in the Capitoline Museum at Rome.<sup>1</sup> And no doubt the triumph was signal; to have defeated the mistress of the sea upon her own element in the first trial of strength was indeed remarkable. The honours conferred upon the conqueror cannot but give a pleasing impression of the simple manners then prevailing at Rome, especially when we contrast them with the cruelty of the Carthaginians, who crucified their unfortunate commander.

The sea-fight of Duilius was fought in the year 260 B.C. In the following years the Carthaginians acted for the most part on the defensive. Not only Agrigentum, but *Carthaginians lose great part of Sicily.* Camarina, Enna, and many other cities fell into the hands of the Romans. The Carthaginians were confined to their great trading marts, Drepana, Lilybaeum, and Panormus, and hardly dared to meet the Romans in the field. But these places were very strong, especially Lilybaeum. Against its iron fortifications all the strength of Pyrrhus had been broken. It was not time yet for Carthage to despair. But in the eighth year of the war the Senate determined on more decisive measures. They knew the weakness of the Carthaginians at home; they had a victorious fleet, and they determined not to let their fortune slumber.

SECOND PERIOD (256-250 B.C.).—Duilius appears for a brief time as the hero of the first part of the war, but its second period is marked by the name of a man who has become famous as a patriot—M. Atilius Regulus. *Second Period. Battle of Ecnomus.* It was in the year 256, the eighth of the war, that the Consuls, M. Regulus and L. Manlius, sailed from Italy and doubled Cape Pachynus with a fleet of 330 decked ships of war. The Carthaginian fleet, even larger in number, had been ordered to Lilybaeum to meet the enemy, whether they should approach from the north or from the east. They now put to sea, and, taking their course along the southern coast of Sicily, met the Roman fleet between Heraclea Minoa and the promontory of Ecnomus. The battle that ensued was the greatest

---

<sup>1</sup> These fragments may, however, belong to the restoration under Tiberius. *C.I.L.*, i.<sup>1</sup> 40; see also i.<sup>2</sup> 193.

that, up to that time, had ever been fought at sea : it is said that some 300,000 men were engaged. It was desperately contested on both sides ; but at Heraclea again we are astonished to find the Roman fleet victorious.<sup>1</sup>

The way was now open to Africa. The Consuls, after provisioning their fleet, sailed straight across to the Hermaean Promontory, which is distant from the nearest point of Sicily about ninety miles. But the Roman soldiery went on board with gloomy forebodings of their fate ; one of the tribunes refused to lead his legionaries into the ships, till Regulus ordered the lictors to seize him. Having reviewed the fleet at the Hermaean Promontory, the Consuls coasted along southward to the city of Aspis or Clupea. Here they landed and took the place. The country now lay open before them. There was no Carthaginian army to meet them, no fortress capable of offering a long resistance. Carthage, being of old mistress of the sea, feared no invaders, and, like England, trusted for defence mainly to her wooden walls. Yet she had not been unwarned. Some fifty years before, the adventurous Agathocles had landed like Regulus. Then, as now, the whole country lay like a garden before him, covered with wealthy towns and the luxurious villas of the Carthaginian merchants. Then, two hundred towns or more had surrendered almost without stroke of sword. It appeared as if the same easy success now awaited Regulus and the Romans.

The Consuls were advancing along the coast of the gulf towards Carthage, when Manlius was recalled with the greater part of the army, and Regulus was left in Africa with only 15,000 foot and 500 horse. Yet even with this small force he remained master of the country. He had gone round the whole Gulf of 'Tunis as far as the river Bagradas, and it was on the banks of that river (so ran the legend) that the army was assailed by a huge serpent, so strong and tough of skin that they were unable to destroy it, till they brought up their artillery of catapults and balists ; he then continued his route to the Bay of Carthage. He was allowed to take Tunis, which stood within twenty miles of Carthage. Continued in command as Proconsul, he appeared next spring before the capital. The great city was now reduced to the utmost straits. A Roman army was encamped within sight ; the Numidians took advantage of the enemy's

---

<sup>1</sup> Polybius (i. 26-28) gives a clear account of the strategy. See the Plan in Bosworth-Smith, *Carthage and the Carthaginians*, p. 118.

presence to overrun and plunder the whole country ; famine stared the townsmen in the face ; the government trembled. In this abject condition the Council sent an embassy to ask what terms of peace Regulus would grant. The Proconsul was elated by success, and demanded the most extravagant concessions. The Carthaginians were to break up their fleet, pay all the expenses of the war, and cede all Sicily, with Sardinia, to Rome. When these terms were reported, public indignation rose against the arrogant invaders. The civic force was not wholly untrained to arms, and they had now to fight for their hearths and altars. A good general was sought for. Among the soldiers of fortune who had lately come to Carthage was an officer of high reputation, by name Xanthippus, a Lacedaemonian. This man had been heard to censure the native generals, and to declare that the victories of the Romans were due, not to their own superior skill, but to the faults of their opponents. He was summoned before the Council, and desired to give reasons for his remarks. He did so, and for a moment the government, dismissing all jealousy, appointed this foreigner general-in-chief. Xanthippus immediately drew together both the mercenaries and the armed citizens, and then, supported by a large body of elephants, he boldly took the field. The Romans were astonished, but they were too much accustomed to victory to hesitate about accepting battle. But the enemy was superior in force probably, certainly in generalship. Xanthippus gained a victory as easy as it was complete. Regulus himself was taken prisoner ; only 2000 of his men succeeded in making good their retreat to Clupea.

Thus was Carthage delivered by the ability of one man, and that man a foreigner. The government did not improve in wisdom or generosity ; their incapable generals resumed the command, and Xanthippus, loaded no doubt with honours and presents, prudently withdrew from the jealous city.

The Roman Senate did their best to repair this great calamity. The Consuls of the year 255 B.C. were ordered to put to sea, and bring off the garrison and fugitives from Clupea. Near the Hermaean Promontory they encountered the enemy's fleet, and again defeated it ; and then, having taken up the men at Clupea, they sailed for Sicily. But a still greater disaster was in store for Rome than the destruction of her African army. This was the loss of that fleet of which she was justly proud. The time of the year was about the beginning of the dog-days, when the Mediterranean is apt

to be visited by sudden storms from the east. The Consuls were warned by the pilots that it would be dangerous to double Cape Pachynus, but they were ignorant and rash, and continued their course. Off Camarina they were caught by the tempest ; almost the whole fleet was wrecked or foundered ; the coast of Sicily from Camarina to Pachynus was strewed with fragments of ships and bodies of men. Such was the end of the first Roman fleet.

These successive disasters might well raise the hopes of Carthage, and they sent a considerable force into Sicily, with 140 elephants. No doubt it was expected that the whole island would once more become their own. *New Roman fleet.*

But the Romans showed a spirit equal to the need. In three months' time (so wonderful was their energy) a new fleet of 220 sail was ready for sea, and the Consuls of the year 254 B.C., having touched at Messana to take up the remnants of the old fleet, passed outward to Drepana. They failed to take this strong place, but they were more successful at Panormus, the modern Palermo, which yielded after a short siege to the Roman arms. This was an important conquest.

Next year the fleet touched at several places on the African coast, but without making any impression on the country. Among the shoals of the Lesser Syrtis it ran great danger of being lost ; but having escaped this *Second fleet lost.*

peril, the Consuls returned to Panormus, and thence stood straight across for the mouth of the Tiber. On the passage they were overtaken by another of those terrible storms, and again a large part of the fleet was lost. Thus in less than three years the Romans lost two great fleets. This was enough to damp even their courage, and the Senate deter- *Romans give up the sea.* mined to try whether it were not possible to keep their ground in Sicily without a navy. For the present they gave up all claim to the command of the sea, and limited themselves to a small fleet of sixty ships.

Matters continued in this state for two years. Neither party seemed willing to hazard a battle by land, but in 251 B.C. Hasdrubal, the Carthaginian general, was induced to march from Lilybaeum to Panormus, in the hope of recovering that important town. The *Victory of Metellus at Panormus.* Roman commandant was the Proconsul L. Caecilius Metellus. He allowed the enemy to approach the walls, and then suddenly sent out a body of light troops as skirmishers. Pursued by the elephants these troops retired to the moat, which was lined with javelin-men. Some of the elephants, being wounded, carried confusion into their own ranks, and Metellus, seizing

the occasion, sallied out against the enemy and defeated them utterly. Besides 13 Carthaginian officers of rank, 120 elephants were taken and carried across the sea on strong rafts to adorn the triumph of the Proconsul. The battle of Panormus was the greatest battle that was fought on land in the course of the war, and it was the last. In memory of this victory we find the



Coin of Metellus Scipio (Stevenson, "CAECILIA").

elephant as a frequent device on the coins of the great family of the Metelli.

After the battle of Panormus, the hopes of the Romans rose again, and the Senate gave orders to build a third fleet of 200 sail. But the Carthaginians, weary of the war, and suffering greatly in their commerce, thought that a fair opportunity for making peace was now offered. The Romans had not so entirely recovered from their late disasters but that they might be glad to listen to fair terms. Accordingly, an embassy was despatched to offer an exchange of prisoners, and to propose terms on which a peace might be concluded. Regulus (according to the well-known story) accompanied this embassy, under promise to return to Carthage if the purposes of the embassy should fail. When he arrived at Rome he refused to enter the walls, as being no longer a citizen. Then the Senate held a meeting outside the city, to confer with him in presence of the ambassadors, and the counsel which he gave confirmed the wavering minds of the Fathers. "Useless it was," he said, "to ransom prisoners who had ignobly yielded with arms in their hands; let them be left to perish unheeded; let war go on till Carthage be subdued."

His death. His counsel prevailed, and the embassy returned without effect. Regulus also returned to suffer the vengeance of the Carthaginians. Every one knows the horrid tortures by which it is said that life was taken from him; how he was placed in a barrel full of spikes pointing inwards; how his eyelids were cut off; and how he was thus exposed to the unmitigated glare of an African sun, to die by the slow agonies of pain, and thirst, and fever.



Regulus was a man of the old Roman kind, like Curius and Fabricius, devoted to his country, eager for glory, frugal, bold, resolute, or (call it) stubborn. He has been censured for excessive presumptuousness in his African campaign, and for the extravagance by which he lost all the advantages which he might have secured. But it must be allowed that he had some grounds even for overweening confidence. Ever since the two nations had met in arms, the star of Carthage had grown dim before that of Rome. Even on the sea, where her navies had long ridden triumphant, the Queen of the Mediterranean had twice been beaten by her unskilled rival. There was enough to make more sagacious men than Regulus believe that Carthage was well-nigh powerless against Rome. The Romans had yet to learn that when the jealous government of Carthage allowed great generals to command their armies, such as Xanthippus, and Hamilcar, and Hannibal, then the well-trained mercenaries might gain easy victories over their own brave but less practised citizens. The whole story of the death of Regulus has been doubted, chiefly because of the silence of Polybius, the most authentic historian of the time; and it is certain that at least one mythical marvel has been introduced into the narrative of the African campaigns.<sup>1</sup> But if allowance be made for some patriotic exaggeration, there is nothing improbable in the story. Those who crucified their own unlucky generals would not be slow to wreak any measure of vengeance on a recusant prisoner. We read also that the Romans retaliated by torturing two noble Carthaginian prisoners,<sup>2</sup> and this fact can hardly be an invention. At all events, the personal qualities of Regulus rest too firmly on old tradition to be questioned. While we read the beautiful passages in which Cicero describes his disinterested patriotism;<sup>3</sup> while we repeat the noble Ode, in which Horace paints him as putting aside all who would have persuaded him to stay—people, friends, and family—and going forth to torture and death with the same serene indifference as if he were leaving the busy life of Rome for the calm retirement of his country house,<sup>4</sup> so long will the blood flow more quickly and the heart beat higher at mention of the name of Regulus.

THIRD PERIOD (249-241).—It has been said that the Senate, encouraged by the victory of Panormus, resolved once more

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 235.

<sup>2</sup> Gell., vii. 4.

<sup>3</sup> *De Off.*, iii. 26.

<sup>4</sup> Hor., *Od.*, iii. 5.

to attempt the sea. In the course of the year 250 B.C. the third fleet was ready, and its purpose soon became evident. The Consuls were ordered to invest Lilybaeum, the queen of Carthaginian fortresses, both by sea and land.<sup>1</sup> If this strong place fell, the Carthaginians would have no firm hold on Sicily; but it could not be taken unless it were blockaded by sea, for by sea supplies could be poured into it from Carthage. The Romans began the *Siege of Lilybaeum.* siege with activity; they constructed enormous works, they sunk ships at the harbour's mouth, and endeavoured to throw a dam across it, but in vain. The skilful seamen of Carthage still contrived to run into the harbour, and a Rhodian, called Hannibal, got through the Roman fleet repeatedly, before he was at last captured. The navy lay at hand in the Bay of Drepana ready to take advantage of any remissness on the part of the Romans.

Yet the invincible perseverance of the Romans would have prevailed but for the headstrong folly of the Patrician Consul for the year 249 B.C. This was P. Claudius, second *Folly of P. Claudius.* son of the old Censor, nephew of him who had relieved Messana. As he lay before Lilybaeum, he formed a plan for surprising the enemy's fleet at Drepana, and left his station for this purpose. In vain he was warned by the *pullarius* that the sacred chickens would not feed. "Then let them drink," said the irreverent commander, and threw them into the sea. But the men were much dispirited by the omen and the contempt of the omen.

The first notice which the enemy had of the attack was the appearance of the leading ships of the Roman fleet off Drepana.

*Battle of Drepana.* But the Carthaginian commander exerted himself with so much vigour, that by the time the Romans were sailing into the harbour, the Carthaginian fleet was prepared for action. The Roman commander attempted to retreat, but was assailed by the enemy, and so entirely routed that, of the whole fleet, only thirty ships escaped. The reckless Consul was recalled to Rome by the Senate, and ordered to supersede himself by naming a Dictator. With the old insolence of his family, he named the son of one of his own freedmen, by name Claudius Glicia. But the Senate set aside the nomination, and themselves appointed A. Atilius Calatinus.<sup>2</sup> Claudius was afterwards fined, and might have

<sup>1</sup> See the description in Ihne, ii. 82.

<sup>2</sup> Livy (*Æp.*, xix.) adds that Glicia was allowed to retain the dress of his office, as though he had actually held it. Perhaps a compromise was

suffered a worse punishment, had not a thunderstorm interrupted the proceedings. He was dead three years after : for a story is preserved, that at that time his sister insolently expressed a wish that he were still alive, that he might lose more men, and make the streets less crowded. She was heavily fined for this speech ; and if words deserve punishment, none deserved it more than hers.

The loss of the fleet of Claudius was not the only disaster of the year. L. Junius, his Plebeian colleague, was less guilty, but even more unfortunate. He was conveying a large fleet of ships, freighted with supplies for the forces at Lilybaeum, when, near Camarina, he was overtaken by a tremendous hurricane, and both the convoy and the conveying squadron perished. The destruction was so complete, that almost every ship was broken up, and not a plank (says Polybius) was fit to be used again.

*Destruction of  
remainder of  
Roman fleet.*

Thus, by the folly of one Consul and the misfortune of the other, the Romans lost their third great fleet. It seemed to them as if the god of the sea were jealous of these new pretenders to his favour.

These disasters left the Carthaginians once more masters of the sea. And, presently after, a really great man was appointed to command in Sicily. This was Hamilcar Barca,<sup>1</sup> the father of Hannibal. He seems not to have had many ships or troops at his command ; but the skill with which he used his means abundantly shows what might have been done if the government had trusted him more completely. Before long he landed suddenly near Panormus, and in the face of the Roman commandant seized a hill called Hercté (*Monte Pellegrinò*) which overhung the town. Here he established himself ; hence he carried on a continual predatory warfare against the Romans for the space of three years, and made continual descents on the coast of Italy, plundering and alarming. After this, by an equally sudden movement, he made a descent on Eryx, which had been taken by the Romans some years before, and surprised the place. To this strong position he now shifted his quarters, and confronted the Roman force which occupied the heights above the town.

*Hamilcar.*

---

arrived at, and Claudius was induced to name a more suitable Dictator, on condition that his first nomination should be officially recognised in this way.

<sup>1</sup> *Barca* = Hebr. *bārāq*, *lightning*. *Barcé* is the nurse of the Phœnician Sychæus ; Virg., *Aen.*, iv. 632.

Except for this, matters were at a standstill. The main strength of the Romans was concentrated in the lines of Lilybaeum; but they had no fleet now, and therefore the place was fully supplied from the sea. On the other hand, the activity of Hamilcar kept the enemy always in alarm. Slight accidents constantly took place, and an anecdote is told by Diodorus, which sets the character of Hamilcar in a pleasing light. In a skirmish with the Roman Consul, C. Fundanius, he had suffered some loss, and sent (according to custom) to demand a truce, that he might bury his dead. But the Consul insolently replied, that he ought to concern himself about the living rather than the dead, and save further bloodshed by surrendering at once. Soon after it was Hamilcar's turn to defeat the Romans, and when their commander sent for leave to bury his dead, the Carthaginian general at once granted it, saying that he "warred not with the dead, but with the living."<sup>1</sup>

These interminable hostilities convinced the Senate that they must once more build a fleet, or give up all hopes of driving the Carthaginians out of Sicily. Unless  
*Fourth Roman fleet.* the Carthaginian commanders could be cut off from receiving supplies by sea, there was no hope. Hamilcar would still hold Eryx. Lilybaeum would foil all their efforts, as it had foiled the efforts of Pyrrhus. The siege had now lasted more than eight years, and it appeared no nearer its conclusion than at first. All sacrifices must be made. A fleet must be built. And by aid of a patriotic loan it was built. At the beginning of the year 241 B.C. the Patrician Consul, C. Lutatius Catulus, put to sea with at least 200 sail.

This was the fourth navy which the Romans had created. It is impossible not to admire this iron determination; impossible not to feel satisfaction at seeing it rewarded.

The Consul, with his new fleet, sailed early in the year, and blockaded Drepana by sea and land, so as to deprive the Carthaginians of the harbour which their fleet formerly occupied to watch the Romans at Lilybaeum. He also took great pains to train his seamen in naval tactics.

On the other hand, the Carthaginians had of late neglected their navy; but they now hastily equipped a fleet, which was  
*Battle of Aegatian Islands.* despatched to the relief of Drepana. It was heavily freighted with provisions and stores. Hanno, its commander, touched at Hiera, a small

<sup>1</sup> Cp. "Nullum cum victis certamen et aethere cassis."—Virg., *Aen.*, xi. 104.

island about twenty-five miles from the port of Drepana. Of this Catulus was informed, and, though suffering from a wound,<sup>1</sup> he at once put to sea, hoping to intercept the enemy before they unloaded their ships. On the evening of the 9th of March he lay to at Aegusa, another small island about ten miles distant from Hiera. Next morning the Carthaginians put to sea and endeavoured to run into Drepana. But they were intercepted by the Roman fleet, and obliged to give battle. They fought under great disadvantages, and the Romans gained an easy victory. Fifty of the enemy's ships were sunk, seventy taken; the rest escaped to Hiera.

This battle, called the battle of the Aegatian Islands (for that was the general name of the group), decided the war. It was plain that Lilybaeum must now surrender, and that Hamilcar would not be able to maintain him-  
*Conclusion of peace.*  
 self in Eryx. The merchants of Carthage were eager for the conclusion of the war, and the government sent orders to Hamilcar to make a peace on the best terms he could obtain. Catulus at first required, as a preliminary to all negotiations, that Hamilcar should lay down his arms and give up all Roman deserters in his service. But when the Carthaginians disdainfully refused this condition, the Consul prudently waived it, and a treaty was finally agreed upon by the two commanders to the following effect:—that the Carthaginians should evacuate Sicily; should give up all Roman prisoners without ransom; and should pay 2200 talents in twenty years towards the expenses of the war. But the Roman people refused to ratify the treaty without inquiry. Accordingly, the Senate sent over ten commissioners, who confirmed the treaty of Catulus, except that they raised the sum to 3200 talents, and required this larger sum to be paid in ten years, instead of twenty. They also insisted on the cession of all the small islands between Italy and Sicily.

Thus ended the first Punic War. The issue of this long struggle was altogether in favour of Rome. She had performed few brilliant exploits; she had sent few eminent  
*Results.*  
 men to conduct the war; but she had done great things. She had beaten the mistress of the sea upon her own element. She had gained possession of an island nearly twice as large as Yorkshire, and fertile beyond the example of other lands. Her losses, indeed, had been enormous, for she had

---

<sup>1</sup> The Consul, being ill, gave up the command in the battle to the Praetor Valerius; so a controversy afterwards arose regarding the triumph celebrated in honour of the victory. (Val. max. ii., 8, 2).

lost 700 ships of war, a vast number of men, and large sums of money. But Carthage had suffered still more. For though she had lost not more than 500 ships of war, yet the interruption to her trade, and the loss of her great commercial emporiums of Lilybaeum and Drepana not only crippled the resources of the state, but largely diminished the fortunes of individual citizens. The Romans and Italians, who fought in this war, were mostly agricultural; and the losses of such a people are small and soon repaired, while those suffered by a great commercial state are often irreparable.

This war was only the prelude to a more fierce and deadly contest. Carthage had withdrawn discomfited from Sicily, and her empty treasury and ruined trade forbade her *Prospects.* to continue the conflict at that time. But it was not yet decided whether Rome or Carthage was to rule the coasts of the Mediterranean. The great Hamilcar left Eryx without despair. He foresaw that by patience and prudence he might shake off the control of his jealous government and train up an army in his own interest, with which he might defy the Roman legions.




**AUTHORITIES.**—Polybius (i. 13-64) is by far the most important. (On his life, use of materials etc., see Strachan-Davidson, *Selections from Polybius*, App. ii., and literature there cited.) Occasionally, he can be supplemented from other sources, e.g. Zon., viii. 8-17; Diod., xxiii. 5-9, xxiv. 1; Livy, *Ep.* xvii.-xix.; Oros., iv. 8-10; Eutrop., ii. 20; Flor., i. 18. These subjects the ancient authorities for this whole period to an unsparing and sceptical criticism, which is well worth study, though not always convincing. See also Meltzer, *Geschichte der Karthager*, B. iii., ch. 2; especially the notes.



avus  
L I

# ITALY

AT THE BEGINNING OF THE FIRST PUNIC WAR 264 B. C.

-  Roman  
 Carthaginian  
 Roman colonies





Coin of Nero, showing temple of Janus closed (Stevenson, "JANUS").

## CHAPTER XXVI

### EVENTS BETWEEN THE FIRST AND SECOND PUNIC WARS

THE first Punic War lasted three-and-twenty years, and the interval between the end of this war and the beginning of the next was of nearly the same duration. In the course of this period (from 241 to 218 B.C.) both Rome and Carthage, notwithstanding their exhausted condition, were involved in perilous wars. In the next three years Carthage was brought to the very brink of destruction by a general mutiny of her mercenary troops, which had been employed in Sicily, and were now to be disbanded. Their ring-leaders were Spendius, a runaway Campanian slave, who feared to be given up to his old master; and Matho, a Libyan, who had been too forward in urging the demands of the army for their pay to hope for forgiveness from the Carthaginian government. Led on by these desperadoes, the soldiers gave a loose rein to their ferocity; they seized those who had been sent to treat with them, plundered the country round about, raised the subject Africans in rebellion, besieged the fortified towns of Utica and Hippo, and cut off all communication by land with the promontory upon which Carthage stands. The mass of the soldiery might have been brought to terms, but the chiefs and their officers were fighting with halters round their necks, and whenever any one attempted to persuade peaceful measures, a knot of the more violent cried him down; and thus, as usually happens in popular commotions, the real wishes of the greater part were drowned in the loud vociferations of a few bold and resolute desperadoes. The work of these men was made easier by the fact that the army was composed of a great

many different nations. Almost the only word which was understood by all was the terrible cry of "Stone him ! stone him !" which was raised by the most violent of the insurgents whenever any one rose to advocate peace, and was re-echoed by the mass in ignorance or fear.

The Carthaginian government at first relied on their old incompetent generals. At length the danger forced them to give the command to Hamilcar, who conducted his operations with so much skill that he divided the insurgents. Spendius was defeated and surrendered at discretion. Matho shut himself up in Tunis, till he was obliged to risk a battle. He was utterly defeated, taken prisoner, and put to death. Thus terminated this terrible war, which had lasted three years and four months, and at one time threatened the very existence of Carthage. It was known by the name of the War Without Truce, or the Inexpiable War (πόλεμος ἄσπονδος).

The Romans took no advantage of the straits to which Carthage was reduced during this fearful war, and this forbearance makes their conduct at its close the more surprising. The mercenary troops in Sardinia had mutinied after the example of their brethren, and had taken possession of the island. After the close of the war in Africa, these insurgents, having been expelled, besought the Romans to restore them ; and their prayer for aid, like that of the Mamertines, was granted. The Senate declared war against Carthage, and as the price of peace had the effrontery to demand, not only the cession of Sardinia, but also the payment of a further sum of 1200 talents. The Carthaginians were too weak to refuse ; not even Hamilcar could have counselled them to do so. But this ungenerous conduct strengthened Hamilcar's grim resolve to take full vengeance on the grasping Italian Republic.

To execute this resolve it was necessary for him to obtain an independent authority, so as to form armies and carry on campaigns without being fettered by the orders of the narrow-minded government. And now seemed the time to obtain this authority. Hanno and the leading members of the Council had long been jealous of the great family, of which Hamilcar was the chief. Hamilcar's fame and popularity were now so high, that it was possible he might overthrow the power of the Council. It was, therefore, with pleasure that they received his proposal to reduce Spain under the Carthaginian power. Carthage already had settlements in the south of Spain, and the old Phœnician colony of Gades owned her supremacy. But the rest of the country was peopled by wild and savage tribes, who could not be conquered in a

day. No doubt the government of Carthage saw the departure of Hamilcar for Spain with as much inward satisfaction as the French Directory in 1798 witnessed the departure of Napoleon for Egypt. If he succeeded, he would at least be far distant and long absent; if he failed, they would be rid of one whom they feared and hated. But, before we trace the consequences of this extension of Carthaginian power in Spain, the affairs of Rome and Italy claim our attention.

During the Mercenary War in Africa the Romans enjoyed the blessing of peace; and so profound was the general tranquillity at the end of the year 235 B.C., that the temple of Janus was closed by the Consul Manlius Torquatus for the first time (say the annals) since the reign of Numa. In the last year of the first Punic war the lower Sabine country had been formed into two Tribes, the Veline and the Quirine. Thus the number of thirty-five was completed, and no addition was hereafter made to the Ager Romanus, properly so called.

*Temple of  
Janus closed.*

*Number of  
Tribes com-  
pleted.*

This tranquillity was of no long duration. Not to mention petty wars in Sardinia and Corsica, the success of their arms in Sicily and their newly-acquired maritime power encouraged the Romans to cross the Adriatic, not so much for the purpose of advancing their own dominion as to render a service to all who frequented these seas for the purposes of traffic. The far side of the Adriatic, then called Illyricum, consists of a narrow ledge of coast-land backed by parallel mountain-chains. Many islands appear off the shore, and several large creeks afford safe anchorage for ships. These natural advantages made the Illyrians of the coast skilful seamen. Their light barks (*lembi*)<sup>1</sup> issued from behind the islands or out of the creeks, and practised piracy on their neighbours. Their main stronghold seems to have been Scodra (*Scutari*). Teuta, a woman of bold and masculine spirit, became chief of this piratical race during the infancy of her son Pinnes, and soon made herself supreme over all the islands except Issa, which she proceeded to blockade in person. The Senate had not hitherto found leisure to check the progress of these pirates; and it was not till the year 229 B.C. that they sent C. and L. Coruncanius as envoys to remonstrate with Teuta. But Teuta

*Illyrian War.*

<sup>1</sup> The Illyrian seamen long continued the use of these light vessels. The Liburnian galleys used by Augustus at Actium were from these coasts. Therefore Horace (*Epod.*, i. 1) says to Maecenas:—

<sup>1</sup> *Ibis Liburnis inter alta navium  
Amice, propugnacula.*—*Cp. Od.*, i. 37.30.

was little disposed to listen to remonstrance. "It was not," she said, "customary for the chiefs of Illyricum to prevent their subjects from making use of the sea." The younger Coruncanius, indignant at this avowal of national piracy, replied that "if such were the institutions of the Illyrians, the Romans would lose no time in helping her to mend them." Exasperated by this sarcasm, Teuta ordered the envoys to be pursued, and the younger one to be put to death. The Romans at once declared war against the Illyrians.

Continuing the blockade of Issa, the Illyrian queen succeeded in taking the town of Corcyra, and Demetrius, a clever and unscrupulous Greek of Pharos (a place on the coast of Upper Illyria), the chief counsellor of Teuta, was made governor of the latter place. The people of Issa now sent ambassadors to crave protection from Rome, and the Senate gladly took advantage of this opening. The Consuls promptly sailed from Brundisium with a powerful fleet and army. Demetrius surrendered Corcyra without a blow; Apollonia also, and Dyrrhachium, and other places welcomed the invaders. These defections paralysed Teuta's spirit. She made submission to Rome, and was obliged to give up the greater part of her dominions to the traitor, who now became chief of Illyricum, under the protection of Rome. The Illyrians were not to appear south of Lissus with more than two barks at a time.

The suppression of Illyrian piracy was even more advantageous to the commerce of Greece than to that of Rome. And the

Romans were not unwilling that this should be so. For the leading men of the Senate began, even at this time, to show a strong disposition to win the good opinion of the Greeks, who, degenerate as they were, were still held to be the centre of civilisation and the dispensers of fame. The Roman chiefs, therefore, sent envoys to various Greek states to explain the appearance of a Roman force in those quarters, and to publish the treaty which had been made with the Illyrians. They were received with high distinction. The Athenians and Corinthians, especially, paid honour to Rome, and recognised her claim of kin to the Hellenic race, the former by admitting her citizens to the Eleusinian Mysteries, the latter by voting that they might take part in the Isthmian games.

This short war was scarcely ended, when the Romans saw a conflict impending, which filled them with alarm.

It will be remembered that just before the war with Pyrrhus, the Senonian Gauls had been extirpated, and the Boians defeated



with great slaughter near the lake Vadimo in Etruria (283 B.C.).<sup>1</sup> From that time the Gauls had, for the most part, remained quiet within their boundaries. But *Galic War.* in 232 B.C., the Tribune C. Flaminius, a man who will hereafter claim more special notice, proposed to distribute all the Public Land held by Rome on the Picenian *Agrarian law of Flaminius.* and Umbrian coasts to a number of poor citizens.<sup>2</sup> The Colonies of Sena Gallica (283 B.C.), and Ariminum (268 B.C.) had been planted on the same coast, at a time when the Boians were too much weakened by their defeats to offer any opposition. But in the course of a generation their strength was recruited. and they were encouraged to rise against Rome by the support of the Insubrians, a powerful tribe who occupied the Transpadane district about Milan. The confederates invited large bodies of Gauls from beyond the Alps,<sup>3</sup> and the news of their arrival increased the terror which the recollections of the Allia still wrought upon the Roman mind. Report exaggerated the truth, and the Romans made larger preparations for this Gallic war than they had made against Pyrrhus or the Carthaginians. Active preparations were seconded by superstitious rites. The Sibylline books were consulted, and then it was found written that the soil of Rome must be occupied by foreign foes. To fulfil this prediction, the government barbarously ordered a Gaulish man and woman, together with a Greek man and woman, to be buried alive in the Forum Boarium.

The campaign opened in Etruria. The Gauls crossed the Apennines and marched southward, followed by the Praetor stationed in Etruria, before whom they retreated as far as Clusium. Here they turned upon their pursuers *Defeat of the Praetor.* and defeated them with great slaughter. But the Consul Aemilius Papus had in the meantime crossed from Umbria into Etruria, and on his approach the Gauls retired homeward along the coast, wishing to secure their booty, while Aemilius hung upon their rear, without venturing to engage in a general action. They found, however, that the other Consul

<sup>1</sup> Page 203.

<sup>2</sup> Cicero (*de Sen.*, 4) dates this law four years later.

<sup>3</sup> They were called *Gaesatae*, probably from *gaesum*, the Gallic javelin mentioned by Virgil and others :

— "duo quisque Alpina coruscant  
Gaesa manu."—*Aen.*, viii. 661 (*cp. Conington in loc.*).

The Transalpine Gauls are represented as wearing tartan plaids (*sagula virgata*) and trews (*braccae*). Hence the ancient province of Transalpine Gaul (Narbonensis) was called *Gallia Braccata*, while the Romanised Cisalpine province was *Gallia Togata*.

Atilius had crossed over from Sardinia to Pisa, and thus, hemmed in by two consular armies, they were obliged to give battle near the headland of Telamon. The conflict was desperate, but the Romans were better armed and better disciplined than of old, while the Gauls had remained stationary. Their large, heavy broadswords, forged of ill-tempered iron, bent at the first blow, and while they stopped to straighten them, they were full exposed to the thrust of the short Roman sword. The victory of Telamon was as signal as that of Sentinum or of Vadimo (225 B.C.).<sup>1</sup>

The Consuls of the next year (224 B.C.) invaded the Boian country, and received the complete submission of all the tribes on the right bank of the Po. In the following year *Campaign of Flaminius.* C. Flaminius, the reputed cause of the war, was Consul, and pushed across the Po, with the resolution of punishing the Insubrians for the part they had taken in the invasion of Etruria. The place at which he crossed the great river was somewhere above Mantua; and here he was joined by the Cenomani, who appear to have been at feud with the Insubrians. Assisted by these auxiliaries, he moved westward across the Adda, the boundary of the Insubrian district. At this moment Flaminius received despatches from the Senate, commanding him to return to Rome immediately, on the ground that the auspices had not been duly taken at his election. But he laid them aside unopened, and at once gave battle to the enemy. He gained a signal victory, and then, opening the despatches, he laughed at the scruples of the Senate.<sup>2</sup>

Presently after, the Insubrians sued for peace; but the new Consuls, Cn. Cornelius Scipio and M. Claudius Marcellus—*Marcellus wins Spolia Opima.* afterwards so celebrated—obtained leave to undertake a fourth campaign. The Consuls both marched north, and entered the Insubrian territory. But Marcellus, hearing that a chief named Viridomarus had crossed the Po to ravage the newly conquered country, left his colleague to reduce Acerræ, while he went in pursuit of the chief. He came up with the enemy near Clastidium, and attacked them with his cavalry alone. A smart action ensued, in which Marcellus encountered Viridomarus and slew him with his own hand, and the Gauls fled in disorder. Thus were won the third and last *spolia opima*. Meanwhile Acerræ had

<sup>1</sup> Polybius (ii. 28-31) gives a clear and graphic account of this battle, perhaps derived from Fabius Pictor, who may well have taken part in it.

<sup>2</sup> Mommsen (ii. 226) comments very unfavourably on this campaign.

fallen ; the capture of Mediolanum (*Milan*), the chief city of



Coin of Marcellinus, bearing head of Marcellus, and showing *spolia opima*. (Stevenson, "CLAUDIA").

the Insubrian Gauls, followed ; and the war was concluded (B.C. 222).

Soon after this it was resolved, probably at the instance of Flaminius, to plant two colonies, Cremona and Placentia, on opposite sides of the Po, so as to secure the territory lately won from the Boians and Insubrians. But this project was not completely executed till four years later, when Hannibal was preparing to invade Italy. Communication was secured between Rome and Ariminum by a road constructed in the Censorship of Flaminius, which bore his name (220 B.C.).

*Colonies at  
Cremona and  
Placentia.*

During this great disturbance in Italy, Demetrius of Pharos proved as false to his new patrons as he had been to Teuta. Relying on the support of the king of Macedon, whom he had assisted at the battle of Sellasia in 222 B.C., he assumed the air of an independent chief, and encouraged his subjects in their old piratical practices. In 219 B.C., L. Aemilius Paullus and M. Livius, the Consuls, received orders from the Senate to put a stop to these proceedings. In one short campaign they took Pharos and forced Demetrius to take refuge at the Macedonian court, where we shall find him at a later time active in promoting hostilities against Rome. Illyricum was again handed over to native chiefs, subject to a payment of tribute. The Romans, however, kept possession of the island of Corcyra, together with the strong towns of Dyrrhachium and Apollonia—positions of great service in the Macedonian wars.

*Revolt of  
Demetrius of  
Pharos.  
Second  
Illyrian War.*

Thus triumphant on all sides, and on all sides apparently secure, the Roman government had no presentiment of the storm that had long been gathering in the West. We must now return to Hamilcar.

He crossed the straits of Gibraltar in 238 B.C., or a little later. With him went his son-in-law Hasdrubal, *Hannibal's* and his son Hannibal, then a boy of nine years old. *oath.*

Before he sailed, Hamilcar offered a solemn sacrifice to the

gods ; and as he stood by the altar, he asked his youthful son whether he also would go to Spain. The boy eagerly assented, and the father, taking him by the hand, bade him swear eternal enmity to Rome and the Romans. Hannibal himself, in his old age, told the tale to Antiochus, king of Syria, how he was led to the altar of his country's gods, and took this direful oath. Nothing can more strongly show the feelings with which Hamilcar left his country. He went not as the servant of Carthage but as the enemy of Rome, with feelings of personal hostility, not to be appeased save by the degradation of his antagonist.

His first object was to conquer Spain, and thus put Carthage in possession of a province which might itself become a great kingdom, and was worth many Sicilies and Sardinias. One of the chief advantages he proposed to himself in this conquest was to gain the supply of hardy soldiers, which would be given by the possession of Spain, and to collect a treasure for purposes of war by working the silver-mines and opening out the resources of the country. But he was well aware that conquest was not sufficient ; he must teach them to look up to himself and his family as their friends and benefactors. He was so successful in his endeavours, that he collected and disciplined an excellent army, with which he reduced many of the ruder tribes to the northward of the modern Andalusia and Murcia. Thus he reigned (this is the best word to express his power) with vigour and wisdom for eight years ; and in the ninth he fell in a battle near the Tagus.

Hannibal was still too young to take up the work which his father had left unfinished. But Hasdrubal, the son-in-law of the great commander, proved his worthy successor. He at once assumed supreme authority. By the gentler arts of conciliation he won over a great number of tribes ; and in order to give a capital to this new realm, he founded the city of New Carthage (*Cartagena*) on the coast of Murcia. The successes of Hamilcar had already attracted the notice of the Senate, and about the year 226 B.C., they concluded a treaty with Hasdrubal, whereby the river Ebro was fixed as the northern boundary of the Carthaginian empire in Spain. Hasdrubal fell by the knife of an assassin in the year 221 B.C., the eighth of his command.

Hannibal was now twenty-six years of age. He was at once elected by the acclamations of the army to stand in his great father's place. Nor did the government venture to brave the anger of a young general at

the head of an army devoted to his cause. Hannibal remained as ruler of Carthaginian Spain. The office was becoming hereditary in his family.

Hamilcar had enlarged the Carthaginian rule in Spain from a few trading settlements to a great province. Hasdrubal had pushed his arms beyond the Tagus. Hannibal passed the Castilian mountains which form the upper edge of the basin of the Tagus, and made the name of Carthage feared among the Vaccaeans of the Douro, by taking one of their chief towns, Helmanticé (*Salamanca*). At the close of the year 220 B.C., all the Spanish tribes south of the Ebro were in subjection to Carthage, or in alliance with her. The great qualities of the three men through whom they knew her made them not unwilling vassals.

But there was one city south of the Ebro which still maintained independence. This was Saguntum, held to be an ancient colony from the Greek island of Zacynthos. *Siege of Saguntum.* Its site on the coast of modern Valencia is marked by the present town of *Murviédro* (Muri Veteres), rather more than half-way between New Carthage and the mouth of the Ebro. Saguntum had been for some time in alliance with Rome, and, though on the Carthaginian side of the Ebro, was by the terms of the treaty entitled to support. In the year 219 B.C., this city was at war with a neighbouring tribe, and Hannibal eagerly seized the opportunity of destroying the ally of his enemy. He surrounded Saguntum with a large army, but the people held out for eight months with that heroic obstinacy which seems to distinguish all dwellers on Spanish ground, when engaged in defensive warfare. In many respects the siege of Saguntum brings that of Saragossa to mind.

While the siege yet lasted, the Roman Senate had sent envoys to Hannibal, requiring him to desist from attacking their ally; but he gave them no satisfaction. After *Debate at Carthage.* sailing to Carthage and meeting with an unfavourable reply there, they returned home; together with them the news of the fall of Saguntum reached Rome, and a new embassy was sent to Carthage to demand that Hannibal, the author of the mischief, should be given up. There was a large party, that of Hanno and the government, which would probably have complied with this demand. But Rome was hated at Carthage, and the government did not dare to oppose the general feeling. They attempted to justify the capture of Saguntum by fine-spun diplomatic arguments. But the chief of the Roman envoys broke off these discussions, and, doubling a fold of his toga, he held it up and said: "In this

fold I carry peace and war: choose ye which ye will have." "Give us which you will," replied the Suffet. "Then take war," said the Roman, letting his toga fall loose. "We accept the gift," cried the Senators of Carthage, "and welcome."

Thus was war formally declared against Rome. But before we pass on to the narrative of this war, it will be well to form some idea of the extraordinary man who, by his sole genius, undertook and supported it with success for so many years.

Hannibal was now in his twenty-ninth year, nearly of the same age at which Napoleon Bonaparte led the army of the French Republic into Italy. And when we have named Napoleon, we have named, perhaps, the only man, ancient or modern, who can claim to be superior, or even equal, to Hannibal as a general. Bred in the camp, he possessed every quality necessary to gain the confidence of his men. His personal strength and activity were such that he could handle their arms and perform their exercises, on foot or on horseback, more skilfully than themselves. His endurance of heat and cold, of fatigue and hunger, excelled that of the hardiest soldier in the camp. He never required others to do what he could not and would not do himself. To these bodily powers he added an address as winning as that of Hasdrubal his brother-in-law, talents for command fully as great as those of his father Hamilcar. His frank manners and genial temper endeared him to the soldiery; his strong will swayed them like one man. The different nations who made up his motley army—Africans and Spaniards, Gauls and Italians—looked upon him each as their own chief. Amid the hardships which his mixed army underwent for sixteen years in a foreign land, there never was a mutiny in his camp. This admirable versatility of the man was seconded by qualities required to make the general. His quick perception and great sagacity led him to marvellously correct judgment of future events and distant countries, which in those days, when travellers were few and countries unknown, must have been a task of extraordinary difficulty. He formed his plans after patient inquiry, and kept them profoundly secret till it was necessary to make them known. But with this caution in designing was united marvellous promptness in execution. "He was never deceived himself," says Polybius, "but seldom failed to take advantage of the errors of his opponent." Nor was he a mere soldier. In leisure hours he delighted to converse with Greeks on topics of intellectual interest. As a statesman, after the termination of the war, he



displayed ability hardly inferior to that which he had displayed as a general.

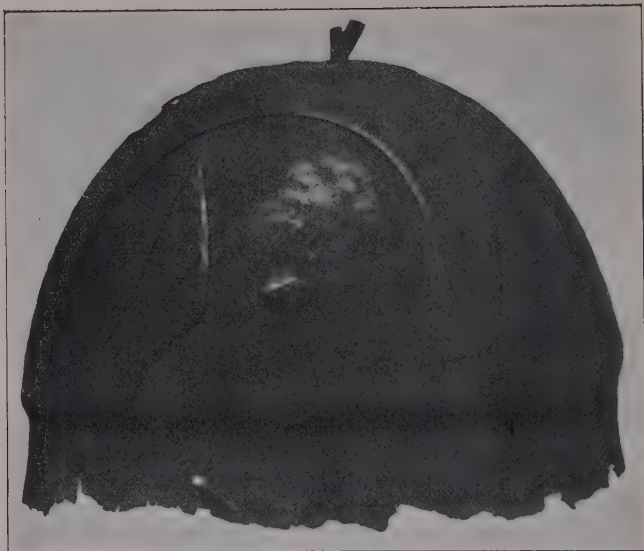
Against these great qualities, he is said to have been cruel even to ferocity, and treacherous beyond the common measure of his country.<sup>1</sup> As to perfidy, we hear of no single occasion on which Hannibal broke faith with Rome. As to cruelty, there can be no doubt that he was indifferent to human life; and on one occasion at least we shall find him, under the influence of passion, treating his prisoners with great barbarity. But though he had been trained to consider the Romans as his natural enemies, to be hunted down like wolves, we shall find him treating worthy foemen, such as Marcellus, with the magnanimity of a noble nature.

But whatever might be the ability, whatever the hardihood of the young general, he required it all. To penetrate from the Ebro to the Po, with chains of giant mountains to bar his progress, through barbarous and hostile countries, without roads or maps or accurate knowledge of his route, without certain provision for the food and clothing of his army, without the hearty concurrence of his own government—was an undertaking from which the boldest might shrink; and to have accomplished this march with triumphant success would alone justify the homage which is still paid to the genius of Hannibal.

AUTHORITIES.—Polybius, i.-iii., supplemented by Zon., viii. 18-22; Livy, *Ep.*, xx., xxi. (the complete Livy recommences at 219 B.C.): Oros., iv. 12, 13; Plutarch, *Marcellus*, 3, 4, etc.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Has tantas viri virtutes ingentia vitia aequabant: inhumana crudelitas, perfidia plusquam Punica."—Livy, xxi. 4.



Helmet found on the battle-field of Trasimene (British Museum).

## CHAPTER XXVII

### SECOND PUNIC WAR : FIRST PERIOD (218-215 B.C.)

THE war which began with the invasion of Italy by Hannibal lasted for seventeen years. Its changing scenes and fortunes will be made more clear by separating it into Periods, as was done with the First Punic War. These Periods are four.

The first comprehends the victorious career of Hannibal, from the passage of the Alps in 218 B.C., to his winter quarters at Capua in 216-15. Each year is marked by a great battle—Trebia, Trasimene, Cannae.

The second is of five years, in which the Romans, by caution and wariness, avoid signal defeats, and succeed in taking Syracuse and recovering Capua, though they lose Tarentum (215-211 B.C.).

The third is of four years, in which Hannibal, left without support from home, is obliged more and more to confine

himself to the mountain regions of Calabria, relying on the succours to be brought him from Spain by his brother Hasdrubal. It ends with the disastrous battle of the Metaurus, which destroyed his hopes (210-207 B.C.).

The fourth, of five years, sees Hannibal brought to bay in the extremity of Italy, while the main scene of the war shifts to Spain and Africa. It terminates with the great battle of Zama and the peace which followed (206-201 B.C.).

But during the former periods of the great war, the Roman arms were also engaged in Spain, in Sicily, and in Northern Greece. From the very beginning of the war they maintained the conflict in Spain ; after 215 B.C. they were obliged to besiege Syracuse and reconquer Sicily, as well as Sardinia ; in 214 B.C. they engaged in war with Philip of Macedon, in order to prevent him from sending aid to Hannibal in Italy. Fitting opportunities will occur to speak of the first two wars ; but the Macedonian War will be conveniently deferred to the next Book.

The winter of 219 was passed by Hannibal in active preparation. His soldiers received leave of absence, with orders to be present at New Carthage at the very beginning *Hannibal's* of next spring. He sent envoys into the south of *preparations.* Gaul and north of Italy, to inform the Celts on both sides of the Alps of his expedition –to conciliate the Transalpine Gauls and secure a free passage for his army, to rouse the Cisalpine by promises of delivery from the Roman yoke. These envoys returned early in the year 218 with favourable accounts of the disposition of the Gallic tribes : the passage of the Alps they reported to be difficult and dangerous, but not impracticable.

Thus assured, Hannibal reviewed his troops at New Carthage. The army of invasion amounted to 90,000 foot and 12,000 horse, with thirty-seven elephants.<sup>1</sup> The best of the heavy infantry was Spanish, the veteran soldiers of Hamilcar and Hasdrubal, recruited by new levies of his own. The Spaniards, however, were kept in balance by a large body of Libyan troops. The slingers were from the Balearic Isles. Of the cavalry, the heavy troopers were Spanish, while the light horse were furnished by Numidia ; and the whole of this arm was placed under the command of Carthalo and the fiery Maharbal.

Hasdrubal, the brother of Hannibal, was left at New

---

<sup>1</sup> Polybius. iii. 35. 1. The historian saw at Lacinium in southern Italy a bronze tablet left there by Hannibal on which were inscribed the numbers of the *whole* force under his command at Cartagena (iii. 33. 18). It was considerably larger at that time.

Carthage to rule the lately-conquered province of Spain, and to raise bodies of reserve for the Italian war. Mago, his youngest brother, accompanied the general.

Hannibal left New Carthage about the end of May, and marched with no interruption to the Ebro; but as soon as he had crossed that river, the whole country up to the Pyrenees was hostile. By great rapidity of movement, though with the loss of many men, he reduced all the tribes to submission in a few weeks, and, leaving an officer, with 11,000 men, in charge of this district, he pushed forward to the Pyrenees. Here it seems that the Spanish soldiers began to shrink from the difficulties before them; 3000 Carpetanians, a tribe which had not been long conquered, seized their arms and set off homewards. Hannibal with prudent dissimulation gave out that the men had departed with his consent, and granted to all who were unwilling to go on free leave to return. Nearly 8000 more availed themselves of this permission.

He passed round the eastern end of the Pyrenees, where the mountains sink gently towards the sea, and halted his army for a few days at Illiberis, near Ruscino (*Roussillon*). It appeared that the losses he had sustained, together with the 22,000 men whom he had left in Catalonia or who had gone home, had reduced his foot to 50,000, and his horse to 9000. With this force he advanced almost unopposed to the banks of the Rhone.

It is now time to inquire what the Romans were doing to meet the coming danger.

The Senate had not been idle. But they had acted on the supposition that the Second Punic war, like the First, would be fought on foreign soil. It is almost amusing to contrast their expectations with the result. The Plebeian Consul, Tib. Sempronius Longus, was sent to Sicily in command of a large fleet, with orders to invade Africa; the other Consul, P. Cornelius Scipio, was to land in Spain and take the field against Hannibal. And it is plain that the Senate thought this service the least important of the two, because they detained Scipio's army for the purpose of quelling a rebellion which had broken out in Cisalpine Gaul, in consequence of the proceedings of the *triumviri*, who had been sent to distribute the confiscated lands of the Boians and Insubrians among the colonists of Placentia and Cremona.<sup>1</sup> Relying on the promises given by the envoys of Hannibal, the Gauls rushed to arms. To repress

*Preparations  
of Romans.*

*Revolt in  
Cisalpine  
Gaul.*

<sup>1</sup> Page 251.

this outbreak, one of Scipio's legions was sent off in all haste, and the Consul could not set sail for Spain till he had raised a new legion. His troops met at Pisa, and he sailed for Spain ; but on touching at the eastern mouth of the Rhone he was astonished to learn that Hannibal had already crossed the Pyrenees. *Scipio reaches Massilia.*

On receiving this news he at once disembarked, intending to arrest the progress of Hannibal upon the Rhone. He did not expect him there for some time yet, and determined to give his army some rest, while he despatched a reconnoitring party of 300 picked horse up the left bank of the river, under trusty guides furnished by the people of Marseilles.

But Hannibal had crossed the Rhone while these horsemen were on their way up the river. The point at which he reached it was not far above Avignon, about fifty miles from the coast. The river itself is large, and its stream very strong. But, besides these natural difficulties, he found the left bank occupied by a large host of Gauls. Upon this, he immediately made preparation for forcing the passage. After two days spent in procuring boats and constructing rafts, he sent Hanno, son of Bomilcar, with a strong detachment, to cross the river about twenty miles higher up, so as to come round upon the rear of the Gauls. On the morning of the third day after his departure, Hanno signalled his arrival to Hannibal by a column of smoke ; and the Carthaginians immediately pushed their boats and rafts into the stream. The Gauls flocked down to the water's edge, brandishing their arms and uttering wild yells of defiance, but while the boats were in mid-stream a cry arose from the rear, and, looking round, the barbarians beheld their tents in flames. They hastened back, and met Hanno advancing upon them ; while the first divisions of the Carthaginian army, having crossed the river and forming under the general's eye, completed their defeat. The rest of the army quickly followed, and encamped on the left bank of the great river. All the troops, except the elephants, had effected the passage. At this very time Scipio's 300 horse were within a day's march of their formidable foe. *Hannibal crosses the Rhone.*

On the next morning (the sixth after his arrival on the Rhone) news reached Hannibal that the Romans had landed. Upon this he instantly despatched a body of 500 Numidian horse down the left bank of the river to reconnoitre, while he made preparations himself for bringing over the elephants. At this moment some chieftains of the Cisalpine Gauls arrived from Italy to inform him of what their people were ready to do against the Romans, and to describe in glowing colours the richness

and beauty of the land which would welcome him after the toils of the Alpine passage.

In the evening the Numidian horse galloped into camp in great disorder, having lost half their number. At some distance a body of cavalry appeared in pursuit, who reined in their horses on coming in view of the Carthaginian camp, and then turned about and rode off down the river. This was Scipio's reconnoitring party, which had encountered the Numidians and defeated them.

Hannibal, finding the enemy so near at hand, sent off the whole of his infantry next morning to march northwards up the left bank of the Rhone. He himself only stayed till he saw his elephants safely across the stream, and then, with these animals and the cavalry, he followed the army.

Scipio, on his part, so soon as he heard that the Carthaginians had already crossed the Rhone, proceeded up the river. But it was at least three days after Hannibal's departure when he arrived at the point where the Carthaginians had crossed. It was in vain to pursue the enemy into unknown regions, peopled by barbarous tribes; and Scipio had the mortification to reflect that, if he had marched at once from the coast, he might have come in time to assist the Gauls in barring Hannibal's passage. Not able to undo the past, he provided wisely for the future. He despatched his brother Gnaeus to Spain with the fleet and the consular army, deeming it of high importance to check the growth of Carthaginian power in that country, and himself returned to Pisa to take command of the army which had been left to suppress the Gallic insurrection. He expected to meet Hannibal's army shattered by the passage of the Alps, and to gain an easy victory.

Meanwhile, Hannibal continued his march up the Rhone, and, crossing the Isère, found himself in the plains of Dauphiné, then inhabited by the Allobrogian Gauls. Having marched thus far north for ten days, he fell in with a chieftain who was contending for the dominion of the tribe with his younger brother. Hannibal's veterans put the elder brother in possession, and the grateful chief furnished the army with arms and clothing, entertained them hospitably, and guided them to the verge of his own dominions. This may have brought them to the point at which the Isère issues from the lower range of the Alps into the plain, near the present fortress of Grenoble.

Up to this point there is little doubt as to the route taken by Hannibal, but after this all is doubtful. It appears that he



first had to force his way through a pass of the lower mountains behind Grenoble, from which he emerged into a comparatively open valley, where he took a town belonging to the Allobrogian Gauls. Two or three days' march through this valley brought him to the foot of the main Alpine chain. Here he was met by the mountaineers with branches in their hands in token of peace and friendship, offering to guide him over the pass. Hannibal accepted their offers only because he thought it dangerous to refuse, taking the precaution to place his heavy infantry in the rear. On the third day the faithless barbarians fell upon his line of march, and were with some difficulty repulsed. They continued to annoy him by rolling huge stones down the steep sides of the mountain which overhung the path, till he checked their assaults by seizing a strong White Rock which commanded the pass. Here he kept the barbarians at bay till his baggage and cavalry had slowly struggled out of the defile. He then followed with the elephants, which were of great use, for the mountaineers dared not come near these strange and unknown monsters.

On the ninth day after he began the ascent he reached the summit. He now endeavoured to cheer the fainting hearts of his weary soldiers, by pointing out the descending pathway which led to the plains of Italy. And here he halted two days to rest them and collect the stragglers. It was now October. The last year's snow, frozen into ice, lay thick at the top of the pass, and fresh snow which had fallen covered the traces of the path. The ascent had been bad, but the descent was worse. Multitudes of men and cattle sank daily, worn out by hunger and fatigue. Their progress was further impeded by finding that in one place the pathway had slipped away for a distance of a furlong and a half. It was necessary to make a new road, and in miserable plight the bulk of the army was compelled to halt for three days.<sup>1</sup> In three days more they reached the bottom of the pass, having spent fifteen days in the whole passage.

The extent of suffering which the army had gone through may be best estimated by considering the losses which it had sustained since the passage of the Pyrenees. Out of 50,000 foot and 9000 horse, Hannibal had remaining only 20,000 of the former and 6000 of the latter.<sup>2</sup> A

<sup>1</sup> The story of his softening the rocks by fire and vinegar is omitted. Polybius says not a word of such matters, and there is little doubt that they are a romantic addition of the Latin writers.

<sup>2</sup> This is taken from Hannibal's plate at Lacinium; see page 257.

number of his elephants had perished ; it is wonderful that so many horses survived.

The pass of the Alps to which the description above given refers cannot be ascertained. But though many scholars favour *Pass by which the Little St. Bernard, recent criticism has tended he crossed.* towards showing that the question lies really between the Mont Genève and the Col d'Argentière.<sup>1</sup> At any rate, Livy tells us that all authorities were agreed in holding that the Taurini were the first tribe with whom Hannibal came into contact on the Italian side. These Taurini were at enmity with his allies, the Insubrians (Milanese), so, after resting his troops for some time, and procuring fresh horses for many of his cavalry, he marched against them and took their capital city (Turin) by assault.

December must now have been at hand. He was moving down the left bank of the Po, above its junction with the Ticinus, on the Piedmontese side of the latter river, when his cavalry came in conflict with the Roman horse, commanded by the Consul Scipio himself.

Scipio had returned to Pisa, whence he moved northward to encounter Hannibal on his descent from the Alps. He crossed *Skirmish of the Po probably near Placentia, marched westward the Ticinus.* to the Ticinus, over which he threw a bridge, and advanced still westward. On the next day but one his scouts brought word that Hannibal was in front. Next day both generals advanced to reconnoitre with their cavalry, the Romans having also some light infantry. A smart action followed, in which the Romans had the worst. The Consul was severely wounded, his life being saved by the devotion of a Ligurian slave, or, as others said, by his son Publius, afterwards the great Africanus, then a youth only seventeen years old. He fell back upon his main body, and recrossed the Po so rapidly that 600 men, who had been left to break up the bridge, fell into the hands of Hannibal. This was the skirmish of the Ticinus, which proved Hannibal's superiority in cavalry.

Hannibal, having failed in intercepting Scipio, marched backward, and crossing the Po higher up stream, advanced *Junction of the two Roman armies.* eastward down the river. Scipio fell back to a strong position near Placentia, where he at first purposed awaiting the arrival of his colleague Sempronius, whom the Senate had ordered to hasten from Sicily into the north of Italy. Hannibal followed

---

<sup>1</sup> See Arnold, *Second Punic War*, 26, 362 ; G. E. Marindin in *Class. Rev.*, xiii. 238.

the Romans, and encamped in view of them on the left bank of the Trebia. But when Scipio found that the Gauls were rising in insurrection around him, he crossed the Trebia to the west, and retired to higher ground, while Hannibal seems also to have crossed the river to the east, perhaps with a view to cutting Scipio's communications with Placentia, and thus forcing on a battle. Meantime, Sempronius, not daring to sail direct from Sicily to Pisa at that time of year, had sent his army over the Straits of Messana, with orders to rendezvous at Ariminum ; and so expeditious were they, that they performed the whole distance from Lilybaeum to Ariminum in forty days. Hannibal ought to have been able to prevent the two Consuls from joining their forces, as he was between Scipio's position and Ariminum ; but for some reason he did not do so, perhaps because he was imperfectly informed of Sempronius' movements and was absent at the critical moment on an expedition to Clastidium (*Casteggio*), which lies considerably to the west and was betrayed to him by the treachery of a Brundusian to whom the Romans had entrusted it. Scipio endeavoured to dissuade Sempronius from venturing a general action, but in vain ; and being still confined by the consequences of his wound, he was obliged to leave the whole army under the direction of his colleague. Hannibal, for his part, was anxious for a battle. The Gauls would feel the presence of two armies in their country as a heavy burden, and victory was necessary to secure them in his interest. It was probably the need of provisions which had tempted him to go to Clastidium.

The Trebia is a mountain stream, which in summer runs babbling over a broad, gravelly bed, so shallow that the foot-traveller walks over it unheeding ; but in winter, *Battle of the Trebia.* or after heavy rains, it rises to a deep and rapid torrent. It was now nearly the end of December, and Hannibal resolved that he would not cross the water to attack the Romans, but would make them cross it to attack him. He executed his purpose with great skill. On his left there was a sort of gully, thickly grown with reeds and brushwood, in which he concealed his brother Mago with 1000 foot and as many horse. Then, early in the morning, he sent his Numidian riders across the river, and ordered the whole army to prepare for the work of the day by rubbing themselves with oil and making a hearty meal. As soon as Sempronius saw the Numidians cross the water, he sent out his cavalry, about 4000 strong, to meet them, and then drew out his whole army, amounting to about 36,000 men, to support the attack. The Numidians feigned defeat, and fled across the river. The Romans pursued, but the water

was running breast-high and was deadly cold ; sleet was falling, and when they reached the other side, they were benumbed with cold and wet and hunger. The Numidians now dispersed, and the Romans found themselves confronted by Hannibal's infantry in battle-order, with the rest of the cavalry and the elephants on either wing. The Roman cavalry was greatly outnumbered and soon put to flight ; but the legions and allies kept their ground bravely under all disadvantages till Mago rose from ambush and attacked them in rear. Then the rout became general. A body of 10,000 men, however, made their way to Placentia ; the rest were driven back with great slaughter to the Trebia, in which many were drowned, but a large number rallied, and, with the Consul Sempronius himself, recrossed in safety.<sup>1</sup>

The battle of the Trebia ended Hannibal's first campaign. The Consuls, with the relics of their armies, contrived to recross the Trebia again on rafts by night, and make good their retreat to the fortresses of Placentia and Cremona. Meantime, Sempronius had sent home a varnished account of the battle, but the fatal truth soon betrayed itself. Two consular armies had been defeated ; Cisalpine Gaul was abandoned to the Carthaginians.

The preparations for the next campaign were mainly defensive. Sicily, Sardinia, and Tarentum were garrisoned against the Carthaginian fleets ; the new Consuls were to keep Hannibal out of Roman Italy. The Patrician *Flaminius and Servilius*, *Consuls, 217 B.C.* Consul for the year was Cn. Servilius ; C. Flaminius was the Plebeian. Flaminius, it will be remembered, had won extraordinary popularity by a sweeping agrarian law to divide the coast lands of Umbria and Picenum among a number of poor citizens. He had already been Consul in 223 B.C., and had won a great battle over the Insubrian Gauls, in contempt of the orders of the Senate. As Censor, he still dwells in memory for having made the Flaminian Way, the great high road from Rome through the Sabine country to Ariminum. This was the man elected by popular favour to oppose Hannibal,—brave and generous, but adventurous and reckless. Fearing that the Senate might even yet bar his Consulship by an appeal to the omens, he left the city before the Ides of March,<sup>2</sup> which was at that time the day for the Consuls to enter

<sup>1</sup> On this battle, see Arnold, *l. c.*, 373 ; G. B. Grundy in *Journ. Phil.*, xxiv. 83. The question at issue is whether the battle was fought on the right or left bank of the Trebia.

<sup>2</sup> From about the year 223 to 153 B.C., the Consuls entered office on the Ides of March ; after the latter date, on the Calends of January.

upon office. Servilius was sent to Ariminum to guard the Flaminian Road: Flaminius himself took post at Arretium to watch the passes of the Apennines.

As the spring approached Hannibal was anxious to leave Cisalpine Gaul. His friends, the Insubrians and Boians, however much they wished to be relieved from the Roman yoke, did not relish entertaining a large army. They were proverbially fickle, and so much did Hannibal mistrust them, that, to prevent

*Hannibal's  
march  
through  
Etruria.*

attempts upon his life, he continually wore disguises and assumed false hair. Leaving the Roman colonies of Placentia and Cremona unassailed, he passed the Apennines early in the year after one unsuccessful attempt, and came down into the neighbourhood of Pistoja and Lucca. From this point he had to march for four days through unwholesome swamps. Here his men and horses suffered much; he himself, being attacked by ophthalmia, lost the sight of one eye, and he was obliged to have recourse to the single elephant which survived the cold of the Alps and a winter in the North of Italy. In the neighbourhood of Faesulae he rested his army, now much increased by Gallic recruits, and rewarded his men with the plunder of Etruria. Flaminius now found that his dexterous enemy had stolen a march upon him, and Hannibal, on his part, heard with delight the rash and adventurous character of the new Consul. Trusting to this, he led his army past Arretium, where Flaminius lay encamped, and leaving Cortona on the left, passed on towards Perugia along the northern side of Lake Trasimene. As soon as Flaminius found that the Carthaginian had passed him in this disdainful way, he immediately marched in pursuit.<sup>1</sup>

The traveller from Florence to Perugia passes along the northern shore of Lake Trasimene. On emerging from a tunnel, he finds the broad lake lying to his right, and on his left a crescent-shaped plain, skirted by hills of some height, and divided into two segments by the hill on which the village of Tuoro stands. After traversing this open space the railway passes the village of Passignano, where the hills again descend to the lake. This was the ground Hannibal chose for awaiting Flaminius. He placed his Balearians and light troops in extended order along the hills on the left, so as to reach as far as Passignano; the general himself, with his infantry, was in front, probably near Tuoro;

<sup>1</sup> Many attempts have been made to fix both the point at which Hannibal passed the Apennines, and the route which he subsequently pursued. See the literature cited in Arnold, *l. c.*, 378.

his cavalry with the Gauls lay ensconced in the uneven ground next the lake, ready to close upon the rear of the Romans so soon as they were fairly in the plain. While Hannibal's forces were thus disposed, Flaminius was encamping for the night, near the north-western corner of the lake. In the morning a thick mist hung over the lake and low lands, so that, as the Consul advanced, he could see nothing. The Roman vanguard, consisting of 6000 men, seems to have passed the point now occupied by Tuoro before Hannibal gave the signal for attack. Hearing the cries of battle behind, the vanguard halted anxiously on the hill which they were then ascending, but could see nothing for the mist. Meantime the Consul, with the main army, was assailed on all sides. Charged in front by the Spanish and African infantry, on the right and in rear by the Gauls and cavalry, exposed on the left flank to the ceaseless fire of the slingers and javelin-men, Flaminius and his soldiers did all that brave men could. They fought valiantly and died fighting. Not less than 15,000 Italians fell on that fatal field. Such was the scene disclosed to the soldiers of the vanguard when the mist cleared off. Hannibal now sent Maharbal to pursue this division, which surrendered at discretion. According to Polybius, the prisoners amounted in all to 15,000. Such of them as were Roman citizens were all thrown into chains; the Italian allies were dismissed without ransom. Thus did Hannibal's plan for the conquest of Rome begin to show itself. He had no hope of subduing Rome and Italy with a handful of Spanish and African veterans; these were to be the core of a great army, to be made up of Italians, who (as he hoped) would join his victorious standard, as the Gauls had already done. "He had come," he said, "into Italy, not to fight against the Italians, but to fight for the liberty of the Italians against Rome."

Such was the battle of Lake Trasimene. So hot was the conflict that the combatants (it is said) did not feel the shock of an earthquake, which overthrew many cities of Italy.<sup>1</sup>

Stragglers escaping from the slaughter carried the evil tidings to Rome, and the Praetor, unable to extenuate the loss, came into the Forum, where the People were assembled, and ascending the Rostra, uttered the brief but significant words: "We have been defeated in a great battle." Dreadful was the terror. The gates were thronged with mothers and wives, eagerly questioning the

<sup>1</sup> The traditional site of this battle has been much attacked in modern times. See Arnold, *l. c.*, 384; *Journ. Phil.*, xxiv. 103, xxv. 112, 273, xxvi. 203.



fugitives about the fate of their sons and husbands. Every hour Hannibal was expected. Three days passed and he came not, but the news of a fresh disaster came. Cn. Servilius, the other Consul, as soon as he heard of Hannibal's presence in Etruria, resolved to join his colleague immediately, and sent on his horse, 4000 strong, as an earnest of his own arrival. Hannibal, informed of their approach, detached Maharbal with a division of cavalry and light-armed troops to intercept them, and nearly half of the Romans were cut in pieces.

Amid the terror which prevailed the Senate alone maintained their calmness. They ordered the bridges over the Tiber to be broken down, and sate from day to day to receive intelligence and deliberate on measures of safety. *Fabius Maximus, Dictator.* It was resolved (an extraordinary measure) to call

upon the People to *elect* a Dictator. The person chosen was Q. Fabius Maximus, a man of known discretion; M. Minucius Rufus was also *elected* as his Master of the Horse.<sup>1</sup> Fabius consulted the Sibylline books, and advised the Senate to decree a sacred spring,<sup>2</sup> according to the ancient custom of the Sabines. Then, collecting the troops that had escaped, and filling up their ranks by a new levy, he joined the army of Servilius, and thus, with four legions and their auxiliary troops, prepared to take the field.

Meanwhile the movements of Hannibal had relieved the Romans of all immediate fear. It seems that he had little hopes of the Etruscans, for he straightway passed over the Apennines into Picenum, collecting plunder *Course of Hannibal.* from all sides. In Picenum he lay quiet during the heat of the summer. The soldiers revelled in the abundance of Italy; it is said they bathed their horses in wine. As the weather became cooler, he advanced along the coast of the Adriatic into Apulia, still plundering as he went. But the colony of Luceria refused entrance to the invader, and Hannibal passed the Apennines again into Lower Samnium, where Beneventum, also a colony, closed its gates against him.

Before this time Fabius had taken the field. He had made up his mind not to risk a battle. His plan of campaign was to move along the heights, so as to keep Hannibal in view, cutting off his foraging parties, and harassing him in all ways without risking a general action. This was not for Hannibal's interest. He wished to fight another

<sup>1</sup> Commonly, the Consul *nominated* the Dictator, and the Dictator *appointed* his Master of Horse, but the surviving Consul could not now return to Rome for this purpose.

<sup>2</sup> Page 156.

great battle and win another great victory (the things were synonymous with him), in order that the Samnites and other Italians might take courage to rise and join him. It was no doubt with the purpose of provoking Fabius to a battle, or of showing the Italians that the Romans dared not fight him, that Hannibal descended from Beneventum into the rich Falernian Plain.<sup>1</sup> Here dwelt Roman citizens; this was the garden of Italy: would not the Dictator fight to defend them and their country from the spoiler? No: Fabius persisted in his cautious policy. He closed all the passes leading from the plain, where Hannibal's soldiers were now luxuriating, and waited his time patiently, thinking he had caught the invader in a trap. But

*Escape of  
Hannibal  
from Cam-  
pania.*

the wily Carthaginian eluded him by a simple stratagem. He took 2000 of the oxen of this favoured region, and as soon as it became dark he caused fagots to be tied to their horns and lighted; and thus the animals were driven, tossing their heads with fright and waving the flames, up the heights that flank the road from Teanum to Allifae. The troops who guarded this pass were drawn off by this stratagem to the hills on which they saw the lights moving, and left the road clear for the passage of the Carthaginian army. When morning broke Hannibal was lying safely encamped near Allifae. Thence he pursued his devastating course through the Pelignian and Frentanian lands, till he again reached Apulia, and there fixed on a position before Gereonium for his winter quarters. The place was warm and sunny; corn and provisions were abundant.

Fabius, however, discomfited by Hannibal's escape from Campania, persisted in earning his name of *The Lingerer*,<sup>2</sup> and, following Hannibal as before, took post near Larinum, within a few miles of the enemy's camp.

He was now recalled to Rome to preside over certain sacred offices, or rather (as may be suspected) to give an account of his conduct. He found the people much discontented. He had been in command of two Consular

*Discontent at  
Rome.*

<sup>1</sup> This is the statement of Polybius. The story in Livy, that Hannibal told the guides to lead him to *Casinum*, and that they by a mistake took him to *Casilinum* in Campania, is not noticed by the graver historian.

<sup>2</sup> *Cunctator*. Every one knows Ennius' line, borrowed by Virgil (*Aen.*, vi. 847):

"Unus homo nobis cunctando restituit rem."

But not so familiar are those which follow:

"Noenum rumores ponebat ante salutem;

Ergo postque magisque viri nunc gloria claret."

armies for several months, and had done, it was said, worse than nothing ; he had allowed the lands of the colonists in Apulia and Samnium, the lands of Roman citizens in Campania, to be wasted and spoiled before his eyes. These discontents were fomented by Minucius, the Master of the Horse, who had been left in command in Apulia, with positive orders from the Dictator not to risk an action. He contrived, however, to gain some advantages in skirmishing with the Carthaginian foraging-parties, and sent home highly-coloured despatches describing his successes. Popular feeling rose to its height, and C. Terentius Varro became its mouthpiece. This man is said to have been the son of a petty tradesman ; but he had been Praetor the year before, and was now aspiring to the Consulship. His eloquence was great ; and he forced the Senate to consent to a law which gave Minucius an equal command with the Dictator. Fabius quietly gave

*Minucius.*

up half the army to his late subordinate, and was soon repaid for his moderation. Hannibal discovered the rash character of the new commander, and drew him out to battle. Minucius would have been defeated as utterly as Flaminius at Lake Trasimene, had not the watchful Fabius come up, upon which Hannibal drew off his men, and Minucius, acknowledging Fabius as his deliverer, craved his pardon and resumed his post of Master of the Horse. The whole army was again united under the command of Fabius.

Thus ended the second campaign, not greatly to the satisfaction of either party. Hannibal had hoped that ere this all Southern Italy would have risen like one man against Rome. He had shown himself her master in the field ; wherever her soldiers had accepted

*Review of  
second  
campaign.*

battle, they had been grievously defeated. He had shown all indulgence for Italian prisoners, though he had put to the sword all Roman citizens. But not one city had yet opened its gates to receive him. The Gauls of the North were the only people who had joined him since he crossed the Alps. The Romans, indeed, continued to suffer cruelly, and their ordinary revenues were grievously curtailed. It was agreed that a great effort must be made in the ensuing campaign ; an overpowering force was to be brought against Hannibal ; he was to be crushed, if not by skill, by numbers.

When the day of electing the Consuls came, out of six candidates C. Terentius Varro alone obtained a sufficient number of votes in any Tribe to be re-

*Varro and  
Pautlus,  
Consuls, 216 B.C.*

turned. It is difficult to ascertain the true character of this man. His vigorous eloquence had won the con-

fidence of the people ; but so much is plain, that he was no general, and his election was esteemed a public misfortune by the Senate. Varro himself presided at the election of his colleague, and the Senate, anxious to provide an able general, induced L. Aemilius Paullus to come forward as a candidate. Paullus had shown his ability in his former Consulship (219 B.C.) when he concluded the second Illyrian War in a single campaign. His manners were unpopular ; but so great was the necessity of the case, that when he came forward the other candidates withdrew.

These were the Consuls elected to fight Hannibal. Their four legions were to be added to the four which Fabius had commanded just before ; and these eight legions were raised to more than their usual complement, so that the whole army to be commanded by the Consuls must, with the allied force, have amounted to 80,000 foot and more than 6000 horse.

The late Consuls (Atilius had succeeded Flaminius), now serving as Proconsuls in Apulia, had laid up large stores of provisions and forage in the fortress of Cannae, which was situated on the right bank of the Aufidus ; and on the plain near this place their camp was formed. Hannibal, as the spring advanced, exhausted his supplies ; and having by this time received recruits from Cisalpine Gaul, he made a rapid movement and seized the Roman magazine at Cannae, encamping not far from that place. The Proconsuls sent home word of this disaster, but received strict orders to continue on the defensive till the Consuls arrived to take the command. Yet it was some time before this took place, certainly not till near the end of July, for the great battle, which is now to be described, was fought on the 2nd of August,<sup>1</sup> and it was fought very soon after the arrival of the Consuls.

The Consuls immediately moved the army to the neighbourhood of Hannibal, with the intention of offering battle. But when Paullus observed the open plain, he was desirous to put off an engagement and manœuvre so as to draw the enemy into ground less favourable for the action of cavalry. Varro, however, thought otherwise ; and now appeared the evil of both Consuls being joined in command of the same army.

It was a repetition of the arrangement which had answered so ill in the last year under Fabius and Minucius, with this additional evil, that the Consuls,

*Varro  
resolves to  
give battle.*

---

<sup>1</sup> It is probable, however, that the Roman Calendar was in error, and that the battle was really fought not later than June.

instead of dividing the army between them, took the command of the whole on alternate days. The Consuls were by the constitution equal, and Varro was far too confident of success to give way to his more experienced colleague. Aemilius felt bitterly the truth of Fabius' parting injunction: "Remember that you will have to oppose not only Hannibal, but also Varro."

On the next day Varro, having the sole command, moved the whole army nearer to Hannibal's camp; but no battle ensued. On the following day Aemilius fortified a smaller camp on the opposite side of the river, so as to secure the passage. Early on the third day Varro moved the whole army across the river to this smaller camp, and drew it up in battle order so as to face the south; and Hannibal, no less eager for battle, immediately followed the Romans across the Aufidus.<sup>1</sup>

When Aemilius found that a battle must be fought, he did his best to support his colleague. The Roman cavalry, only 2400 strong, were posted on the right flank; the left was covered in like manner by the cavalry of *Preparations.* the allies. Aemilius commanded on the right, Varro on the left; the centre was under the orders of Servilius, the Proconsul. It must be especially observed that the legionaries and allied infantry were not drawn up, as usual, in an open line, but with the ranks made deep and closed up almost like the phalanx. It has been above observed how serviceable the phalanx was on plain ground, and probably the Consuls imagined that by compact masses of infantry they might offer a more complete resistance to the formidable cavalry of Hannibal.

But Hannibal skilfully availed himself of this close array, and formed his line accordingly. He had crossed the river early, as soon as he saw the Romans in motion. The Spanish and Gallic infantry, much inferior in number to the Romans, he drew out in an extended line, equal in length to that of the enemy, but much less deep and massive. This line advanced in a convex form, and at each end he placed his Africans, so as to form two flanking columns of narrow front but great depth. He himself, with his brother Mago, commanded the infantry. On his left flank, next the river, were the heavy cavalry of Spain and Gaul; on the right were the Numidian light horse.

After some indecisive skirmishing between the light troops,

---

<sup>1</sup> The majority of modern writers suppose that the battle was fought on the *left* bank of the river. See Arnold (*l. c.*, 396) and Strachan-Davidson (*Selections from Polybius*, Prol. iv.) for reasons in favour of the *right* bank.

the real battle began with a conflict on the river-side between the Roman horse and the heavy cavalry of Hannibal. The latter were greatly superior in force, and charged with such effect as to drive the Romans across the river.

Meanwhile the Roman legions and their allied infantry advanced steadily against Hannibal's centre. The long crescent-shaped line above described, being unable to withstand the shock, fell back so as to form a concave figure, and then the whole line retired slowly, so as to draw on the Roman masses between the African flanking columns. The Romans pressed eagerly on the retiring foe, but as they advanced the Africans attacked them on both flanks. The Romans, jammed together and assailed on both sides, fell into great disorder, very few of their vast army being able to use their weapons. But the Consul Aemilius, who had been wounded by a sling in an early part of the action, contrived to restore some sort of order, and it seemed as if the battle was not lost, when the heavy cavalry of the enemy fell upon the rear of the legions, and the rout became complete.

This force, after destroying the Roman cavalry, had moved round to the other wing, where the Numidians were still engaged with the cavalry of the allies. The latter now fled in confusion, and then the Carthaginian cavalry made that decisive charge upon the rear of the legions, which completed the defeat of the Roman army.

After this, the battle became a mere massacre. The Romans and allies, mingled in a disorderly mass, were cut down on all sides. The Consul Aemilius fell. Varro, with but seventy horsemen, escaped to Venusia. A large number of the fugitives made good their retreat to the camps; the rest sought refuge in the woods. But on the bloody field that evening, there lay dead, at the lowest computation, more than 40,000 Roman foot and nearly 3000 horse. The loss in the cavalry involved the death of some of the wealthiest and most distinguished men at Rome. With them had fallen one Consul, one Proconsul, two Quaestors, one-and-twenty out of eight-and-forty Tribunes, and not less than eighty Senators. Of those who had taken refuge in the camps, more than 4000 horse made their way to Canusium; the rest surrendered next day. Hannibal's loss is variously stated at from six to eight thousand.

This, then, was the battle of Cannae. History does not record any defeat more complete, and very few more murderous.

*Feeling at Rome.*

The great army levied to conquer Hannibal had been annihilated. The feverish anxiety with which



those who stayed behind at Rome followed the Consuls in thought may be imagined; we can conceive how, in horrible suspense, they flocked to the temples, offered vows, consulted the auguries, raked up omens and prophecies, left no means untried to divine the issue of the coming battle. What must have been the dismay, what the amazement, with which they received the first uncertain tidings of defeat! what the despair, what the stupor, which the dreadful reality produced!

Among the fugitives who came in with the tidings, was a tribune of the legions, Cn. Lentulus by name. As he rode off the field, he had seen Aemilius the Consul sitting on a stone, mortally wounded. He had dismounted and offered his horse. But the Consul replied: "No, go thou to Rome, seek out Q. Fabius, and bid him prepare to defend the city: tell him that Aemilius dies, as he lived, mindful of his precepts and example." To Fabius, indeed, all eyes were now turned. The Senate instantly met, and at his motion was invested with supreme power; they were to prevent all public lamentations; to hinder the people from meeting in the Forum; to bring all messengers straight to the Praetor; to keep the gates well guarded, suffering no one to pass out except by a special order. Every one feared to see the army of Hannibal defiling through the Apennines upon the plain of Latium.

What the Romans feared the Carthaginians desired. "Only send me on," said Maharbal to the general, "with the cavalry, and within five days thou shalt sup in the Capitol."

But Hannibal thought otherwise. His army was small, he was ill provided with materials for a siege: Rome was strongly fortified. He felt, no

*Why Hannibal did not march on Rome.*

doubt, that the mere appearance of his army before the walls would rather rouse to action than terrify into submission, and meanwhile the golden time for raising the Samnites and other nations of Italy might be lost. Already he was in negotiation with the leading men at Capua, a city second only to Rome in point of size, superior probably in wealth. To this place he resolved to march as soon as his men were rested. When their allies had deserted, Rome must agree to his terms, without giving him the trouble of a siege.

He resolved, however, to try the temper of the Romans, and accordingly sent ten of the chief men among his prisoners, with offers to hold to ransom all whom he had taken. The Senate, on the motion of T. Manlius Torquatus, a man who had inherited the stern decision of his ancestor, refused to listen to their petitions, and ordered all to return, as they had bound themselves, to Hannibal's camp. Hannibal, greatly provoked

at this almost contemptuous reply to his advances, put some of the prisoners to death and sold the greater part into slavery. This was but the common custom of the times. But besides this, he reserved the noblest youths to fight as gladiators for the amusement of his army, and on their refusal he applied torture to force compliance. The fact shows that in moments of passion Hannibal was too justly liable to the accusation of barbarous cruelty.<sup>1</sup>

The Senate were now busily occupied in taking all steps possible for the safety of Rome. The public horror was increased by a discovery that two Vestal Virgins had been guilty of unchastity. One was, as the law directed, buried alive; the other put herself to death. To avert the wrath of the gods, Fabius Pictor was sent to consult the Greek oracle at Delphi; and by the orders of the Sibylline books, a Greek man and woman and a Gaulish man and woman were buried alive in the Forum Boarium, according to the practice used in the last Gallic war. But to these superstitious rites were added wiser precautions. Fabius, with the coolness of age and experience, continued to direct their measures. M. Claudius Marcellus, now Praetor, was sent to take the command of the fugitives in Apulia, for despatches had arrived from Varro, stating that he had collected about 10,000 men in a very disorganised condition. Orders were instantly despatched to App. Claudius at Ostia to join the Consul with the troops under his command. It was reported afterwards, that some of the young nobles at Canusium, headed by a Metellus, had formed a plan to fly from Italy and offer their services to some foreign prince, despairing of the Republic; that young P. Scipio, now about nineteen years old, had gone instantly to the lodgings of Metellus, and standing over him with a drawn sword, had made him swear that neither would he desert the Republic, nor allow others to do so; that to support the noble conduct of Scipio, Varro had himself transferred his headquarters to Canusium, and had used all his efforts to collect the remains of the defeated army.

Having given up his command to Marcellus, Varro set out to Rome. With what feelings he approached the city may be imagined. But as he drew near, the Senate and People went out to meet him, and publicly thanked him, "for that he had not despaired of the Republic." History presents no nobler spectacle than this. Had he been a Carthaginian general, he would have been crucified.

---

<sup>1</sup> Ihne (ii. 252) argues that the evidence for this charge is weak.

M. Junius Pera had been named Dictator, to raise levies in Rome and Latium. But the immense losses sustained in the three past years had thinned the ranks of those who were on the military list. From the action on the Ticinus to Cannae, the loss of the Romans and their allies, in battle alone, must have been not less than 100,000 men. The Dictator, therefore, proposed to buy 8000 slaves for military service, and also to enrol debtors and other persons by law incapable of serving in the Roman legions. Marcellus, with the remains of the army of Cannae, took his post at Casilinum. The commanders were instructed to maintain the defensive system of Fabius, and on no account to risk another battle.

Meanwhile Hannibal was pursuing his plan of uniting the people of Southern Italy against Rome. His first attempt, as has been already noticed, was made upon Capua. *Hannibal enters Capua.* In this important place he found all prepared to receive him. The Senate, being in the interest of Rome,<sup>1</sup> lost its control, and the chief power was seized by a popular leader named Pacuvius Calavius. His first act was to propose to make a treaty with Hannibal on condition that no Carthaginian officer should exercise authority in Capua, and that 300 Roman prisoners should be put into his hands as hostages for the safety of 300 Capuan knights who were serving in the Roman army in Sicily. Hannibal agreed to these demands. Pacuvius then seized the persons of all Roman residents, and put them to death; and Hannibal entered Capua in triumph. One man only, by name Decius Magius, ventured to oppose these measures. Hannibal ordered him to be arrested and sent off to Africa.

Nearly all Southern Italy had by this time declared in Hannibal's favour. Most of the Apulians, the Hirpinian and Caudinian Samnites, most of the Lucanians, and the Bruttians, welcomed him as their deliverer. *Revolt of Southern Italy.* It seemed as if he were now about to realise his great project of raising Italy in insurrection against Rome.

He was obliged to send detachments of his army into several of these districts; and he employed what force he still retained in attempting to gain possession of the cities in the plain of Campania. Atella and Calatia submitted, as Capua had done. But Acerrae and Nuceria yielded only to force; Neapolis and Cumae closed their gates; and the Senate of Nola, fearing that the people might overpower them, as at Capua, sent to Casilinum for Marcellus. This bold officer

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 171.

threw himself into the place, and by a successful sally repulsed Hannibal from the gates. He then seized and executed seventy persons who were suspected of treason, and intrenched himself in a fixed camp above Suessula. Hannibal, thus repulsed from Nola, determined to invest Casilinum, which, from its proximity to Capua, was likely to prove a troublesome neighbour.<sup>1</sup> The garrison held out obstinately, but were at length obliged to yield. This was one of the few towns in Italy which Hannibal took by a regular siege.

Hannibal had already gone into winter quarters at Capua. Soon after the battle he had sent off his brother Mago to carry home the tidings of his great success. For three years he had pursued a career of victory unassisted by the government; Rome was at his feet; he only wanted force enough to crush her. In proof of the greatness of the victory of Cannae, Mago poured out on the floor of the Senate-house a bushel of gold rings, which had been worn by Roman knights who had fallen on that fatal field. But the government, influenced by the mortal enemies of the Barcine family, listened coldly to Mago's words, and asked: "whether one Roman or Latin citizen had joined Hannibal? He wanted men and money: what more could he want, had he lost the battle instead of winning it?" In the end, however, the patriots carried a motion that Mago should carry reinforcements to Hannibal. But the war in Spain assumed so threatening an aspect, that these succours were diverted to this nearer danger, and Mago was ordered to the support of his brother Hasdrubal in that country. All that reached Hannibal, so far as is known, was a force of 4000 Numidian horse, with forty elephants and a supply of money.

Perhaps the general had not expected much from this quarter. No doubt the person to whom he looked for chief support was his brother Hasdrubal in Spain. But here he was doomed to disappointment. It will be remembered that P. Scipio, the Consul of the year 218, when he returned from the Rhone to Pisa, had sent on his brother Gnaeus into Spain, according to the original orders of the Senate. The wisdom of this step was proved by the event. Cn. Scipio landed at Emporiae (*Ampurias*), an old Greek colony. Within the year he had driven the enemy across the Ebro. In the next year, the year of Trasimene, he defeated

---

<sup>1</sup> Casilinum is the modern Capua. It lies on the river Volturnus. The site of the ancient Capua is about three miles eastward.

Hasdrubal by sea, and ravaged the coast up to the suburbs of New Carthage. P. Scipio joined his brother in the course of the same year ; and about the time that the battle of Cannae made Hannibal master of Southern Italy, a signal victory over Hasdrubal at Ibera near the Ebro made the two brothers masters of Northern Spain.

Hannibal's hopes, therefore, of reinforcements for the next campaign rested with his new Italian allies. The additional cavalry and elephants from Carthage would still give him the command of the open country. But the Romans had learnt wisdom by sore experience, and Hannibal could not expect to win great victories, such as had marked his first three campaigns. What he wanted was a good engineer corps and siege apparatus to take the Latin Colonies and other free towns, which even in the districts that had joined him still maintained the cause of Rome. Why he did not employ his winter at Capua in organising a force of this nature we know not. But, whatever was the cause, he seldom was able to take fortified towns by siege ; and the Romans never gave him an opportunity of winning another great battle. Consequently all the Latin Colonies and free towns maintained their independence, and Hannibal was only half master even of Southern Italy.

The Romans, for their part, passed the winter in the most active preparations. The first step necessary was to fill up the numerous vacancies caused in the Senate by the late disastrous battles. It appeared, on calling over the list, that not fewer than one hundred and seventy-seven members were missing. Sp. Carvilius proposed to recruit the ranks of the Senate by admitting the chief citizens of the Latin towns. But this liberal proposal was not listened to ; and, though one Dictator was already in office, it was resolved to commit the whole business to the care of a second, specially appointed for the purpose. The person chosen was M. Fabius Buteo, the oldest living ex-Censor. He was universally respected, and the way in which he discharged the duty laid upon him gave great satisfaction. Those who had held office were named first, in order of rank, and then those who had distinguished themselves in war.

The Consuls elected for the ensuing year (215 B.C.) were Tib. Sempronius Gracchus, and L. Postumius now commanding in Cisalpine Gaul. But before the Ides of March came the sad intelligence that Postumius, with all his army, had been cut off by the Gauls. Fabius Maximus himself was eventually elected Consul for the

*Prospects of  
Hannibal.*

*Senate  
filled up.*

*Postumius  
cut off by  
the Gauls.*

third time, to supply his place. Marcellus and Varro were to remain in command as Proconsuls.

To add to the difficulties of the Romans, means were scanty to support the vast expenses of the war; for the revenues of the whole of Southern Italy were cut off.

It must have been a further discouragement to find that Hannibal had entered into negotiations with Philip, king of *Philip of Macedon.* The messengers of the king were taken on their way back from Capua. For the moment, therefore, the danger to be expected from this quarter was averted, but for the future the prospect was made more gloomy.

Few things, probably, could mark the public feeling more than a law which was passed about the same time, at the instance of the Tribune Oppius, by which it was *Oppian Law.* forbidden that any woman should wear a parti-coloured dress, or should have more than half an ounce of gold to ornament her person, or should approach within a mile of any city or town in a car drawn by horses. Public need must be very urgent before it is possible to restrain private expenditure by enactments so rigid as those of the Oppian Law.

AUTHORITIES.—See note to ch. xxx.



## CHAPTER XXVIII

### SECOND PUNIC WAR: SECOND PERIOD (215—211 B.C.)

THE first period of this great war closed with the revolt of Capua. That which now claims our attention ends with the recovery of that important city by the Romans.

After the battle of Cannae, Q. Fabius Maximus, great-grandson of that Q. Fabius who won so high a name in the Second Samnite War, became for some years the virtual chief of Senate and People. He was already an *Fabius.* old man; more than seventy summers had passed over his head. His disposition was so mild or so apathetic that he was popularly known by the name of Ovicula, or the Lamb. His abilities seem not to have been great. His merit was that he had the hardihood to avow that the Roman militia were no match for Hannibal's veterans, and the courage to act on his belief. The cautious system which he had practised after the battle of Lake Trasimene had excited discontent, but the great defeat of Cannae had most unhappily vindicated it. For some years it was rigorously carried out by commanders more skilful in war than Fabius himself.

Of these coadjutors the ablest was unquestionably M. Claudius Marcellus, who was called the Sword of Rome, as Fabius was called the Shield. He also was past the middle age, being at this time more than fifty. In his first *Marcellus.* Consulship he had distinguished himself by a brilliant victory over the Gauls, and his name now stood very high, for having at Nola given the first check to Hannibal in his career of victory. Marcellus was a true Roman soldier, prompt and bold in action, resolute in adversity, stern and unyielding in disposition, blunt and illiterate, yet not without touches of finer feeling, as was proved at the siege of Syracuse.

With him must be mentioned the Consul elect, Tib. Sempronius Gracchus, a man of humane and kindly *Sempronius Gracchus.* temper, possessing high talents for command. Had he not been cut off so early, he might have rivalled the fame of Marcellus.

Q. Fulvius Flaccus, who had already been twice Consul and once Censor, disdained not for the two following years to act as

Praetor of the City. He enjoyed the confidence of Fabius and the Senate, and this office gave him, in the continued absence of the Consuls, the whole management of the home government. He was not less than sixty years of age, discreet and cautious as Fabius himself, but more active, energetic, and relentless.

To carry out the defensive system of war now adopted, the two Consuls and a Proconsul were stationed in Campania, each with two legions and their auxiliary cohorts. In the present year Fabius took post on the Latin road, between Cales and Casilinum; Gracchus formed an entrenched camp near Liturnum; and Marcellus occupied a similar camp above Suessula. Thus these commanders were always ready to harass Capua, and were also able to make forays into Samnium, Apulia, and Lucania. Their connexion with the sea was maintained by the great seaports of Naples and Cumae.

Hannibal, on the other hand, formed a strong camp on the ridge of Mount Tifata, above Capua. But he was often obliged to move his forces into the south, leaving the Capuans to defend themselves. We have no means of estimating the amount of the Carthaginian army, but it may be inferred that it was small; we never find him able to act in force both in Campania and in the south.

He soon came into collision with the Consul Gracchus. This general was in his camp at Liternum, busily employed in training a large body of slaves, who, by the name of *volones* or Volunteers, served under his command. Here he received information from the people of Cumae that the Capuans were coming to hold a festival near their city, and he was enabled to fall upon the Capuans by night and slaughter a great number. The news soon reached Hannibal, who descended from his camp, only to find Gracchus safe behind the walls of Cumae. He laid siege to the town, but was repulsed by the Romans.

Meantime, Fabius had occupied the camp of Marcellus above Sinuessa; Marcellus, now at Nola, was making forays in the Samnite country. The sufferers sent earnest appeals for defence to Hannibal, and he appeared a second time before the walls of Nola, probably at the invitation of the popular party, which in all the cities was hostile to Rome. But in a well-timed sally Marcellus cut off a large body of the Carthaginian army, and Hannibal, again retiring in disappointment, went into winter quarters at Arpi in Apulia.

Returning spring (214 B.C.) found Hannibal again in his camp on Tifata, and the same Roman commanders opposed to him. Fabius was again Consul, with Marcellus for his colleague, while Gracchus had taken the place of the latter as Proconsul. The circumstances attending the election of these Consuls deserves noting, because they show that the people had completely surrendered their right of free choice into the hands of Fabius. The old Consul purposely encamped in the Campus Martius, and held the election without having entered the city, by which means he retained his *imperium*. The Prerogative Century,<sup>1</sup> which happened to be the Juniors of the First Class in the Aniensiensian tribe, gave their vote for M. Aemilius Regillus and T. Otacilius Crassus. Otacilius was connected with Fabius by marriage, and had commanded the fleet during the current year, but without much credit. Upon this vote being given, the old Consul stopped the proceedings. "The Republic," he said, "was struggling for existence; she was maintaining nearly twenty legions: and that with revenues diminished and citizens thinned: what was the use of all her exertions if she committed her armies to inferior men? Therefore," he concluded, "go, lictor, call back the Juniors of the Aniensiensian tribe to give their vote anew." All men felt that the old man had not only power, but reason, on his side. The same Century, which had voted for other men, now gave their voices for Fabius himself and Marcellus.

*Fabius sets  
aside the  
Consular  
election.*

Some time before this, the Senate gave an earnest of their stern determination by passing a decree that the soldiers of Cannae should be sent to serve in Sicily, but without hope of honour or reward, till the end of the war. And the Censors, in the course of this year, summoned before them Metellus and the others who had wished to desert the Republic after the defeat of Cannae, and deprived them of their civic rights.

*Soldiers of  
Cannae.*

In this campaign, Hannibal was enticed from Campania, by a message sent from certain friends whom he had made within the walls of Tarentum; and it was probably during his absence that Hanno, one of his lieutenants, attempted to surprise the Roman Colony of Beneventum. But the Proconsul Gracchus hastened to the defence of the town and arrived there first; "And now," he told his slave-soldiers, "now the time was come when they might win their liberty. Every one who brought in an enemy's head should be made free." In the battle which followed,

*Hanno  
defeated at  
Beneventum.*

<sup>1</sup> See *Dict. Ant.* "COMITIA."

victory was long undetermined, till Gracchus proclaimed that without victory none should be enfranchised. The men redoubled their efforts; the desperate conflict was determined in favour of the Romans, and Hanno, after great loss, made good his retreat into Lucania. Then Gracchus fulfilled the promise made to his *volones*, and their enfranchisement was celebrated by a public festival at Beneventum, in which they all appeared wearing white caps in token of liberty. So pleased was their commander with the scene, that he had a picture to commemorate it painted on the walls of the Temple of Liberty on the Aventine Hill.

Hannibal, therefore, had the mortification to suffer this reverse, without the satisfaction of succeeding in his own expedition. For M. Valerius Laevinus, the Roman officer stationed at Brundisium, being informed of the plot to betray Tarentum, threw a garrison into the place under the command of M. Livius, and the conspirators\* could not fulfil their promises.

The next year (213 B.C.) was still less fruitful in decisive events than the two foregoing. That is, it was favourable to the Romans; for to Hannibal's cause inaction was fatal. And there are not wanting indications to show that the Italians who had joined him began even now to falter in their resolution, and to look with fearful eyes to the little progress he had made since the battle of Cannae, and to the tenacity with which the Romans kept hold of every city. Arpi in Apulia, Hannibal's former winter quarters, was betrayed to Fabius the younger, who was now Consul assisted by his father as legate. The 300 Capuan knights, who were in the service of Rome at the time when their city threw itself into Hannibal's arms, had shown their disapprobation of this step by settling at Rome, where they were enrolled as citizens; and about this time one hundred and twelve more of the same order came into the Roman camp above Suessula. But out of Italy, Hannibal's skilful negotiations had raised up enemies to Rome wherever his envoys could find an opening—in Macedonia, in Sardinia, in Sicily.

It has been mentioned that the first attempt of the king of Macedon to communicate with Hannibal had been prevented by the Romans, and that through fear of an attack from this quarter they had increased their fleet at Brundisium. A second embassy had been more successful; an alliance had been concluded by Hannibal with the king, by which the latter bound himself to send an auxiliary force to support the Carthaginians in Italy. But Laevinus and his

*Hannibal  
fails at  
Tarentum.*

*Uncertainty  
of Hannibal's  
position.*

*War with  
Macedon.*

successors carried the war into Northern Greece, and Philip was unable to send the promised succours.

In Sardinia an insurrection broke out in the year after Cannae. Q. Fulvius, the City-Praetor, was ordered to provide for its suppression, with leave to appoint any commander whom he thought fit. He straightway *Sardinia.* made choice of T. Manlius Torquatus, a man as stern and uncompromising as himself, who, in his first Consulship twenty years before, had reduced the island. The old general landed with little delay, and by a decisive battle again reduced Sardinia to subjection.

Affairs in Sicily gave much more trouble. Indeed in the years 213 and 212 this island became the chief seat of the war. Hiero, the old king of Syracuse, who for some fifty *Death of Hiero.* years had never faltered in his alliance with Rome, died soon after the fatal day of Cannae.<sup>1</sup> He was succeeded by his grandson Hieronymus, a youth of fifteen years of age, whose imagination seems to have been captivated by the brilliant career of Hannibal. The able Carthaginian soon availed himself of the opportunity which thus presented itself, to send over agents into whose hands the young prince completely surrendered himself. These were two brothers named Hippocrates and Epicydes, Syracusan Greeks by descent, but natives of Carthage. The young king, however, after little more than a year's reign, was assassinated by a gang of obscure conspirators; a republic was proclaimed at Syracuse, and shortly after, all the remaining members of the *Anarchy at Syracuse.* royal family were massacred with circumstances of singular atrocity. The question now was whether the new government should side with Rome or Carthage. The brothers, Hippocrates and Epicydes, at first resolved to return to Hannibal; but they found the party opposed to the new Republic so strong, that they determined to remain, and were elected generals-in-chief. Yet the popular feeling seems to have inclined towards Rome, so that Hippocrates, unable to control it, left Syracuse with a body of troops, and repaired to Leontini. Here he was joined by his *Leontini revolts.* brother Epicydes, and the Leontines declared themselves independent of Syracuse.

This was probably late in the year 214 B.C. And about that time the Consul Marcellus arrived to take the command of the army in Sicily.

Marcellus, without delay, laid siege to Leontini and took

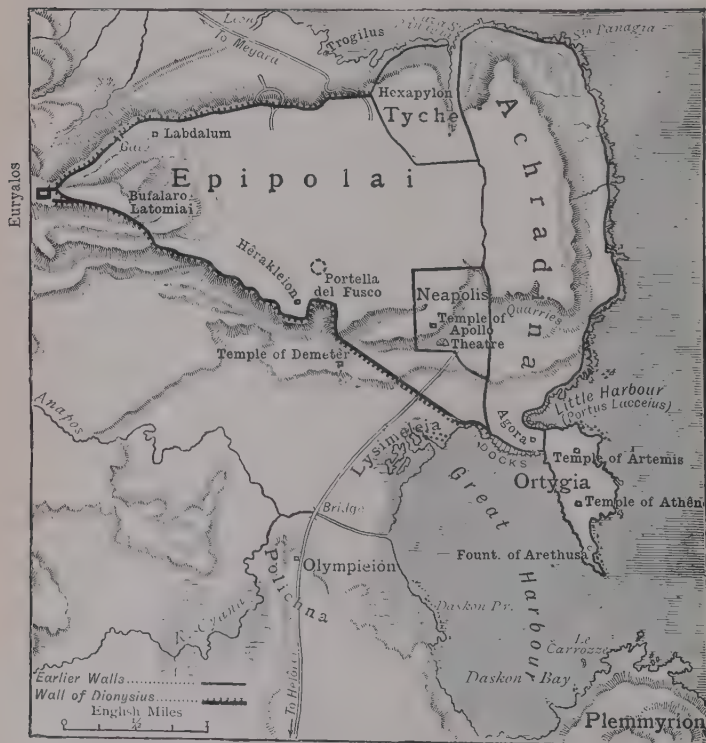
---

<sup>1</sup> See the account of him in Polybius (vii. 8).

the town by assault. He spared the inhabitants ; but he was guilty of a piece of most imprudent severity in scourging and putting to death 2000 of the garrison, who had deserted from the service of Rome. It appears that there were many foreign soldiers of like condition now in the Syracusan army. When these men heard of the cruel death of their comrades at Leontini, they lent a ready ear to the persuasion of Hippocrates and Epicydes, who had escaped from Leontini and now turned the severity of Marcellus to good account. These two adventurers were again elected sole generals, and Syracuse closed her gates against Rome. Marcellus made some fruitless attempts at negotiation ; and finally commenced the siege of Syracuse.

*Marcellus  
takes  
Leontini.*

*Syracuse  
declares  
against Rome.*



Plan of Syracuse



The city of Syracuse had been greatly enlarged since the Athenian expedition.<sup>1</sup> The island of Ortygia had become the citadel, and the suburb along the sea-coast, called Achradina, was now part of the town. The rugged triangular surface called Epipolæ was well fortified, and its northern approaches, especially, were strongly defended by a fort called Hexapylum. *Extent of Syracuse.*

Marcellus at first attempted to take the city by assault. He himself attacked the sea-wall of Achradina, while his officers attempted to force Hexapylum. The Romans were always famous for their skill in *The siege.* the attack and defence of fortifications, and Marcellus was well provided with engines of all kinds. But within the walls was an engineer more skilful than any the Romans possessed. Archimedes, the most celebrated mathematician of ancient times, was now in his 75th year, but *Archimedes.* age had not quenched the inventive vigour of his mind. He was so devoted to abstruse calculations that sometimes he forgot even to take his meals; yet speculation had not unfitted him for practical pursuits. Marvellous are the stories told of the engines which he invented to thwart the assaults of the besiegers, both by sea and land. The whole wall was armed with balists and catapults of immense power, so that the ships dared not come within shot. If they ventured to get close under the walls, favoured by the darkness of night, they were galled by missiles from myriads of loopholes, and nearly crushed by enormous stones let drop from the battlements; or the ship's prow was grasped by an "iron hand" let down from a projecting crane, which suddenly lifted it up, and as suddenly let it go, so that the ship was plunged stern foremost into the water. It is said also that burning-glasses of great power were so placed as to set on fire ships which approached within their reach. This is probably a fiction.<sup>2</sup> But this much is certain, that Marcellus was compelled to desist from his assault, and began to invest the city by regular lines of circumvallation. After many months the Romans were as far from taking Syracuse as ever.

Meantime, the Roman cause was daily losing ground in Sicily. Agrigentum surrendered to the Carthaginians; numerous other towns threw off the yoke; and Enna, a strong fortress, was only saved by the prompt cruelty of the commandant, who massacred the *Romans lose ground in Sicily.*

<sup>1</sup> Compare the plan here given with that in *The Student's Greece*, p. 348.

<sup>2</sup> It is not mentioned by Polybius or Livy.

whole of its inhabitants. But this barbarous act, though efficacious on the spot, served still more to alienate the Sicilians from Rome.

But Marcellus clung to his lines before Syracuse with dogged tenacity, and at length succeeded in scaling the walls by night, *Capture of* when by reason of a festival they were left un-  
*Syracuse.* guarded. He soon gained possession of the whole upper city; and as he gazed down the slope of Epipolæ on the fair view beneath him, even his rude nature was so affected by the beauty of the scene and the greatness of his success, that he burst into a flood of tears. Tyché also and Neapolis surrendered; but Epicydes, within Achradina, prepared for a desperate defence; and Hippocrates, who had gone to meet succours sent from Carthage, soon returned with a considerable force. But Marcellus lay safe within the upper city, and the army of Hippocrates, encamped on the marshy ground at the mouth of the Anapus, was thinned by disease as the hot weather came on; among the dead was Hippocrates himself. Still the sea was open, and a fleet was daily expected from Carthage. Epicydes himself left the city in order to hasten its movements. But off Cape Pachynus a Roman squadron barred its passage; and great was the disappointment of Epicydes, when he saw the Carthaginian admiral bear away towards Italy. Despairing of aid, he fled to Agrigentum.

Many of the garrison were deserters from the Romans, who could expect little mercy from the severe Marcellus. But the rest, when they found themselves deserted by their general, slew their officers, and admitted Marcellus by night within the walls of Achradina and Ortygia. The city was now given up to plunder; and in the massacre which followed, Archimedes was slain by a soldier whose question he did not answer, being absorbed in a geometrical problem. For the honour of Marcellus it should be recorded that he was deeply grieved by this mischance, that he gave honourable burial to the corpse of the philosopher, and showed great kindness to his relations. The royal treasure was reserved for the state, and the exquisite works of the Grecian chisel which adorned the splendid city were sent to Rome; a beginning of that system of plunder which enriched Rome at the expense of Greece.<sup>1</sup>

Thus fell Syracuse, in the summer of 212 B.C., after a siege of

---

<sup>1</sup> Livy, xxv. 40. Some earlier, though less prominent instances are mentioned by Ihne (i. 563).

nearly two years. But though Syracuse was taken, Sicily was not conquered. It will be well to anticipate events a little, so as to finish our narrative of this war in this place.

Epicydes at Agrigentum continued his ceaseless activity, and assisted by Carthaginian officers collected a considerable force. Hannibal also sent over an officer named Mutines, who henceforth became the soul of the war in Sicily. This man was a half-bred Carthaginian ; and the African blood in his veins degraded him as much in the eyes of pure Carthaginians as the taint of black blood degrades a man in some modern states. But his abilities as a soldier made Hannibal overlook vain distinctions, and Mutines took the command of the Numidian horse in the army of Hanno and Epicydes. With such skill did he use this formidable cavalry, that Marcellus rather lost ground than gained it. But the Carthaginian officers, jealous of the upstart commander, took occasion to give battle to the Romans during his absence. Marcellus accepted the challenge, and gained a signal victory (211 B.C.). But his success was still incomplete ; Sicily was not yet conquered, and he was rewarded only by an Ovation or lesser Triumph.<sup>1</sup>

In the next year (210 B.C.) Valerius Laevinus, being Consul, took the command in Sicily, where Mutines still continued to defy the Romans. But the jealousy of the Carthaginians so provoked the hot-blooded African, that he put himself at the head of his Numidians, and threw open the gates of Agrigentum to the Roman Consul. Epicydes escaped to Carthage, leaving the army an easy prey to the Roman legions. The town was sacked and plundered, and the inhabitants reduced to slavery. And in a short time Laevinus was able to report to the Senate the entire submission of all Sicily. Mutines was made a Roman citizen, and received 500 *iugera* of state-land. His Numidian horse took service with Rome.

It is now time to return to Italy, where also the war had resumed a more active form. Early in 212 B.C. Hannibal made a new attempt upon Tarentum, and this time with better success than before. He encamped at some distance from the place, and was constantly visited by two young Greeks, who left the city under pretence of hunting. It was by the landward side<sup>2</sup> that the

<sup>1</sup> *Dict. Ant.*, "OVATIO."

<sup>2</sup> *Cp.* page 201.

conspirators proposed to admit Hannibal, and the time they chose was a night on which it was well-known that M. Livius, the commandant, would be engaged in a drinking-bout. The Romans went to bed in drunken security, and at daybreak found the city in the hands of the Carthaginians. Great part of the garrison were put to the sword, but Livius made good his escape to the citadel. Hannibal immediately took measures for besieging it, and the Tarentines, having dragged their ships over-land from the harbour into the open sea, blockaded it both by sea and land.

Meanwhile the Consuls—Appius Claudius and old Q. Fulvius Flaccus—were preparing to besiege Capua. Gracchus, with his *volones*, was stationed in Lucania; one Praetor, C. Claudius Nero, occupied the old camp above Suessula; another, Cn. Fulvius, brother of the Consul, lay in Apulia. The Capuans, fearing they should be cut off from all supplies, sent a hasty message to Hannibal before Tarentum, and he straightway sent orders to provision the town, in case it should be besieged. But the Carthaginian officers charged with this difficult task were obliged to retire into Bruttii and leave Capua to its fate.

The Roman armies now began to close round that devoted city. But they were destined to suffer heavy losses before they were able to invest it. First, Gracchus, who was coming northwards from Lucania to reinforce the Consuls, was slain in an ambuscade, and his *volones*, so long faithful to their favourite leader, dispersed and fled, each man to his own home. Next, Hannibal himself once more appeared in Campania. He had already sent on a division of cavalry to encourage the Capuans; and now he entered the city in person. He was in high spirits at his successes in the south. Not only Tarentum, but also Metapontum and Thurii, had joined him; and though Syracuse had fallen, the war was still raging in Sicily. The Roman commanders, cowed in spirit by his presence, abandoned the siege, but declined a battle; and Hannibal, anxious to gain possession of the citadel of Tarentum, departed. He went by way of Lucania, and on his route met a Roman army, commanded by M. Centenius, an old centurion, who had collected an army and with equal courage and folly attempted to bar Hannibal's march. He fell as a valiant soldier should fall, and many thousand brave men paid the penalty of trusting to his promises. Hannibal now passed the mountains into Apulia; and here, near Herdonea, he attacked the Praetor, Cn. Fulvius. This man

*Citadel  
blockaded.*

*Capua be-  
sieged by  
Romans.*

*Death of  
Gracchus.*

*Hannibal  
raises siege  
of Capua.*

*Defeat of  
two Roman  
armies.*

was like Centenius in rashness, but unlike him in being a profligate and a coward. In this action, also, several thousand Romans were cut to pieces.

But notwithstanding these thick-coming losses, the Consuls held to their resolution of investing Capua. No sooner was Hannibal's back turned than they again appeared before the city; and before the end of the season the lines of circumvallation were completed. The armies of Rome always contained good workmen; their common agricultural habits accustomed them to the use of the spade; the great works that had been going on before the war, roads and aqueducts, had trained a number of men for military work. Yet the rapidity with which the vast extent of lines necessary to enclose a great city like Capua was completed, cannot but surprise us. These lines were secured by a double wall, and care was taken to supply the besiegers with provisions.

The Consuls for the next year (211 B.C.) were not allowed to supersede Appius and Fulvius; to them was left the glory of completing well what they had well begun.

When the Capuans found themselves invested their spirits fell, and they again sent an urgent message to Hannibal. In an assault upon the Roman lines, he was beaten off with loss. And now only one hope remained. It was possible that, if he threatened Rome itself, the besieging army might be recalled to defend the capital. Accordingly, he sent the Capuans notice of his purpose by means of a pretended deserter, and the next morning the Proconsuls saw his camp on Mount Tifata empty. They thought, probably, that he had returned to the south. But they soon received the tidings that Hannibal's wild Numidians and monstrous elephants were in full route for Rome. Fulvius sent word to the Senate of this fearful visitation; and it was unanimously determined, that one of the Proconsuls should be recalled to defend the city with part of his army and the city legions, while the other was left to maintain the blockade of Capua. Accordingly, Fulvius marched straight to Rome by the Appian road, while Hannibal took a circuitous route by the north, to avoid the thick-studded cities which might have barred his passage. Fulvius, therefore, arrived at Rome before Hannibal, and encamped between the Esquiline and Colline Gates. The consternation at Rome was in some measure quelled by his arrival. Presently after, Hannibal himself arrived and encamped on the Anio, about three miles from Rome. It is said that while he lay there the land occupied by his camp was put up to sale and bought at a price not at

all below its value. Hannibal laughingly bade an auctioneer put up the silversmiths' shops in the Forum for sale. Perhaps he had never seriously expected to take the city by a surprise, but only intended to draw off the besieging army from Capua. Even in this he failed. Rome was able to defend herself, and yet had a sufficient force left at Capua to continue the investment. After some ineffectual engagements, Hannibal retreated from Latium.

The line of his retreat is as uncertain as that of his advance.<sup>1</sup> It is known, however, that he conducted his army through Apulia into Bruttii, which became henceforth his headquarters in Italy.

Meantime, Fulvius had returned to the lines round Capua, full of exultation. Time wore on, and famine began to oppress the wretched inhabitants. How long the desperate  
*Surrender of Capua.* resistance was prolonged we know not. But at length it appeared manifest that surrender must ensue within a few hours, upon which Vibius Virrius, one of the insurgent chiefs, gave a splendid banquet to all Senators who would partake of it. Twenty-seven came, and when the feast was over a poisoned cup went round. Some died where they sat at table, others went home to die, and next morning the city was surrendered. The savage old Fulvius determined to wreak a bloody vengeance upon the leaders of the insurgents. Five-and-twenty were sent to Cales, to Teanum eight-and-twenty, there to wait their doom. In vain Appius pleaded for milder measures. Fulvius heeded no intercession. He rode off to Teanum by night, and by daybreak himself saw all the prisoners beheaded. He then galloped off to Cales, but when the prisoners there were being bound, a messenger from Rome brought him letters from the Senate. He put them into his bosom, and ordered the executions to proceed; nor till all the heads had fallen did he open the letters, which contained orders to reserve the prisoners for the judgment of the Senate. Others of the chief men were imprisoned, and all the commoner sort were sold into slavery. The city itself was confiscated to Rome.<sup>2</sup>

The fall of Syracuse and Capua had given a decided superi-

<sup>1</sup> On this march, see Arnold, *Second Punic War*, 403.

<sup>2</sup> Soon afterwards several noble Capuan youths were put to death at Rome on the charge, probably baseless, of setting the city on fire in revenge for the execution of their fathers (Livy, xxvi. 27). Beloch (*Rh. Mus.*, N. F. xxxii. 237) doubts this whole story of the treatment of the Capuans, on statistical grounds. He also points out that the Romans would be unlikely voluntarily to rob themselves of the services of so many valuable soldiers.



ority to the Roman arms. Yet, though Hannibal was at present so weak that he could not leave the south, nor give effectual succour to his Campanian allies, there *Prospects of Hannibal.* were many causes to give him hopes of retrieving his fortunes. The diversion made by Mutines in Sicily had proved most successful, and it was not till a year later that the cause of Carthage in that island was betrayed. Though the citadel of Tarentum still held out, that great city itself, with all Magna Graecia, except Rhegium, had joined Hannibal, and he lived in hope that at length Philip of Macedon would come over to oppose the common enemy.

Now also he looked with confidence to Spain. For a long time the successes of the Scipios had cut off all hope of succour from his brother Hasdrubal. These successes continued, notwithstanding the arrival of Mago *War in Spain.* with reinforcements from Carthage; many of the Celtiberian tribes enlisted under their banners, eager to try a change of masters; Syphax, a prince of the Numidians, formed an alliance with them, and they seem thus early to have formed the design of carrying the war into Africa.<sup>1</sup> Either in 212 B.C., the same year which witnessed the fall of Syracuse and the investment of Capua, or in the following year, the two brothers entertained high hopes of a successful campaign. Cn. Scipio marched against Hasdrubal, the brother of Hannibal; Publius directed his course against a second Carthaginian army commanded by Hasdrubal, the son of Gisco. *Defeat and death of the Scipios.* But the Celtiberians in the army of Gnaeus deserted, and the Roman general was forced to retreat. Meanwhile his brother Publius had been defeated and slain with a great portion of his army. The united Carthaginian armies now threw themselves on the retreating army of Cn. Scipio, and dispersed it with great loss; the fate of the general himself was never ascertained. The remains of the Roman armies were collected by a brave knight, by name L. Marcius. But for the time the defeat and death of the two Scipios gave back to the Carthaginians all that they had lost in Spain since the departure of Hannibal.

The road now lay open for Hasdrubal to lead a large force to the assistance of his brother in Italy. Notwithstanding his losses, no Roman general had dared to meet him in a fair field of battle since Cannae. What might he not hope when largely reinforced? It belongs to the history of the next period to show how irremediably these hopes were blighted.

<sup>1</sup> On the Spanish Wars, see Arnold, *l. c.*, 184, 412; Ihne, ii. 314, 317.

## CHAPTER XXIX

### SECOND PUNIC WAR : THIRD PERIOD (210-207 B.C.)

THE last years of the war, though marked by great successes, were still full of discouragement to the Romans. Syracuse had been taken; but Sicily remained in full revolt. *Depressed state of Rome.* Capua had fallen; but Tarentum, all except the citadel, was lost. The unmolested march of Hannibal to the walls of the city showed the Romans that no part of Italy save the fortified towns and entrenched camps could be called their own, so long as the Carthaginian general could lead his wild and lawless mercenaries whithersoever he pleased. The loss of Spain had placed before them the dreadful possibility that their great enemy might soon be reinforced by numbers so large as to make him stronger than he had been since he crossed the Alps.

It is evident that mutterings of discontent were beginning to arise against Fabius and his friends. The bitter lesson of *Election of Consuls.* Cannae had taught the Romans the necessity of caution, and proved that, to act with success against Hannibal, they must act on the defensive. But was this system to last for ever? Were they never to meet Hannibal in the field? Thoughts like these, no doubt, suggested the experiment of electing a popular Consul for the year 210 B.C. When the votes of the Prerogative Century were taken, it appeared that the men of their choice were old T. Manlius Torquatus, the conqueror of Sardinia, and that same T. Otacilius who had been ousted from his Consulship four years before by his kinsman Fabius. But Manlius immediately rose and declined the Consulship. "He was," he said, "old and nearly blind: a general should be able to use his own eyes. They must choose other and better men." The Century, after some hesitation, obeyed, and gave one of their votes for Marcellus, as no doubt Fabius and the Senate wished, while they bestowed the other

upon M. Valerius Laevinus, who had served the state well in Northern Greece and Sicily.

Valerius probably owed his election to the fact that he was not disposed to submit to Fabius and Fulvius. An opportunity soon arose for showing this. As he passed through *Laevinus and Marcellus.* Capua on his way to Rome, the Campanians, smarting under the rule of Fulvius, besought him to let them follow in his train, that they might lay their grievances before the Senate; and his arrival at Rome was followed by a deputation from the Sicilians, who had heard with alarm that the imperious Marcellus was about to return to their island with Consular authority. The affairs of both peoples were brought before the Senate. As to the Campanians, the Fathers confirmed in all respects the stern edicts of Fulvius, and not unjustly, for of all cities Capua had been most generously treated by Rome; her rebellion had been prompted, not by love of liberty (for she was already free), but by lust of power. Capua, therefore, now became a Prefecture. On the other hand, Marcellus at once gave up his Sicilian province to his colleague Laevinus, and agreed to take the command in Italy against Hannibal; and the Senate, though they ratified the previous measures of Marcellus, now recommended the Sicilians to the special care of Laevinus. Upon this, the Sicilian envoys, fearing the future anger of Marcellus, fell at his feet and entreated him to take them as his clients. For many years the Marcelli, his descendants, are found as patrons and protectors of the island.

Before the Consuls took the field, they were called upon to meet the financial difficulties under which the state was labouring. The force which had been maintained by Rome *Financial measures.* now for many years was very large, and the cost enormous. The number of legions kept on foot since the battle of Cannae had averaged about twenty; so that the number of soldiers, legionaries and allied, amounted to about 200,000 men. While the expenditure was thus prodigiously increased, the revenues were greatly diminished: and it is a recorded fact, that about this time corn had risen to many times its ordinary price. Although the imposts had been doubled in the fourth year of the war, the state had been obliged to contract loans in various ways. In 214 B.C. an extraordinary measure had been taken for manning the fleets. All who possessed a certain amount of rateable property were required to furnish one or more seamen with six months' pay and their full accoutrements. Senators were called upon to equip eight men, and the rest in proportion to their property. Such was the Roman "Ship-money."

The necessities of the present year (210 B.C.) were greater than ever. Every resource seemed to be exhausted. Among other means, the coinage had been gradually lowered in value. The *as*, which had originally been a pound weight of copper, had been diminished to one-sixth of that weight in the First Punic War; in 217 B.C. it was lowered to one-twelfth; and all payments for the Treasury were no doubt made in this depreciated coinage. The usual results of such measures must have followed. A temporary relief would be gained. But the prices of all articles would be raised, and public credit shaken.

In these difficulties, the Senate proposed again to levy ship-money. But the people were in no mood to bear it. They had been much impoverished in the last four years; continued pressure of taxation had drained their resources; continued service in the army had prevented the proper cultivation of their lands; the marauding march of Hannibal in the year before had ruined many. The ferment caused by this new impost assumed a formidable appearance. The Senate met to deliberate, and the Consul Laevinus proposed that the great Council should set an example of patriotic devotion. "Let us," said he, "contribute all our treasure for the service of the state. Let us reserve—of gold, only our rings, the *bullae* worn by our sons, and for the ornaments of our wives and daughters one ounce apiece,—of silver, the trappings of our horses, the family salt-cellar, and a small vessel for the service of the gods,—of copper, five thousand pounds for the necessities of each family." The proposal was carried by acclamation, and the noble example was followed emulously by all the people. So eager was the throng which pressed to the Treasury, that there were not clerks enough to make a register of the names. This patriotic loan (for it was intended that it should be repaid hereafter) saved the state; and it was even more valuable in the spirit which it called forth than for the actual relief which it afforded to the Treasury.<sup>1</sup>

The Consuls now took the field. Marcellus arrived in Samnium too late to save Cn. Fulvius Centumalus, the last year's Consul, from being cut off with the greater part of his army. The relics of this force were sent

---

<sup>1</sup> The other side of the picture is, however, presented by the conduct of Postumius Pyrgensis (Livy, xxv. 3). Relying on the fact that those who provided supplies for the armies in Spain were insured against storms at the public risk, he intentionally sank ships at sea, and then claimed far more than the full value of the cargo.

to be added to the remains of the army of Cannae, which the relentless Senate still kept in banishment in Sicily. Marcellus cautiously advanced to Venusia, and so dogged Hannibal's footsteps that he was unable to gain any decisive success.<sup>1</sup> The town of Salapia in Apulia, where lived a lady whom Hannibal loved too well and who is said to have more than once detained him from the field, had been betrayed to Marcellus, as had Arpi been to Fabius, and was another example of the altered feeling of the Italians.

Laevinus, as has above been mentioned, was enabled by a stroke of good luck to finish the war in Sicily with ease and credit; and he returned to Rome for the Comitia, accompanied by the redoubtable Mutines. Before he left Sicily he had sent over his fleet to the coasts of Africa. The officer despatched on this service sent word that the Carthaginian government were collecting troops to be placed under Hasdrubal's command for a second invasion of Italy from the north, and preparing a fleet for the recovery of Sicily. The Senate in alarm ordered Laevinus to return instantly to his province without waiting to preside at the Comitia. He was to name a Dictator for that purpose; and the person submitted to him for nomination was old Q. Fulvius, the governor of Capua. Laevinus, however, refused to name his personal enemy; upon which the ruling party referred the matter to the People, who peremptorily ordered the Consul to name Fulvius, and no one else. But Laevinus, to avoid this necessity, had already left Rome, and the Fathers were obliged to request Marcellus to execute their orders. When the old Dictator held the Comitia, the Prerogative Century gave its vote for Fulvius himself and Fabius. An objection was taken by two of the Tribunes that a presiding magistrate could not allow himself to be elected. But this, like many other ordinances, was overruled at this critical season by the Senate, and the election proceeded. The next year was to see Hannibal confronted with the three men reputed to be the ablest commanders in Rome, Fabius and Fulvius as Consuls, and Marcellus as Proconsul. It was hoped that by their united efforts the enemy might be crushed before the arrival of Hasdrubal and his Spaniards.

*Laevinus  
quarrels with  
the Senate.*

But the result was not equal to expectation. In the very

---

<sup>1</sup> Frontinus (ii. 2. 6) says that Hannibal beat Marcellus at Numistro, perhaps in Lucania, but the results of the battle can hardly have been important.

outset of this year (209 B.C.) the levies were delayed by a circumstance which looked even more threatening than the financial difficulties of the previous year. The Latin Colonies, now thirty in number, have been mentioned as the chief stays of Roman power in the subject districts of Italy. They had hitherto borne the toils and expenses of the war unrepiningly. What then was the alarm of the Consuls and the Senate, when twelve of the thirty openly declined to comply with the requisition to furnish their contingents for the armies of this year. The refusal was due in part no doubt to exhaustion and poverty; but it was partly caused by anger at the fact that many of the defeated soldiers of Centumalus lately banished to Sicily were citizens of their towns. The Consuls endeavoured to reason with them, but in vain; and when the deputies of the other eighteen Colonies, which comprised all the largest and most important places, declared their steadfast and unaltered allegiance, the Senate prudently determined to pass the matter over for the present, saying that they would not deign to ask assistance from those who would not give it willingly.

To provide for the current expenses, a large treasure of gold, which had been reserved for extreme emergencies, was now first invaded.

Fulvius joined Marcellus in Lucania, with the purpose of engaging Hannibal's attention, while old Fabius made an attempt to recover Tarentum. Marcellus found his enemy at Canusium, and a series of indecisive actions followed, in which (although the Roman annalists claim the advantage for their hero) it is plain that he must have suffered greatly, for he remained inactive during the rest of the campaign. But fortunately for Fabius' attempt upon Tarentum, Hannibal's presence was required in Bruttii to defend his allies from a band of adventurers, who, formerly in the service of the Carthaginians in Sicily, had now been carried across the straits by Laevinus and sent to Rhegium to harass the Bruttian country. The appearance of the great general was enough to scare these marauders into submission; but scarcely was this done, when he heard the news that Fabius had attacked Tarentum. Instantly he put his army in motion, and marched day and night to relieve this important city. But he was too late. By treachery he had won the place, and by treachery he lost it. One of the officers of the garrison at Tarentum was a Bruttian. This man had a mistress, sister to a Tarentine serving in the Roman army, and she persuaded her lover to open the gates to Fabius. Hannibal, while yet upon his march, heard

*Twelve of the  
thirty Latin  
Colonies  
decline to  
contribute  
any longer  
to the war.*

*Fabius  
recovers  
Tarentum.*



this disastrous news. The old Consul gave up the despised city of the Greeks to be plundered by his soldiers, reserving the public treasure for the service of the state. The capture of Tarentum was the greatest exploit of Fabius, and it was his last ; an honourable close to an honourable career.

Besides the recovery of Tarentum, the Samnites and Lucanians, long wavering, again returned to their allegiance, and were restored by Fulvius to their position as allies, without any notice being taken of their revolt.

Notwithstanding this, men were dissatisfied with the result of the campaign. Three consular armies had not sufficed to defeat Hannibal ; Marcellus, reputed their best general, *Dissatisfaction at Rome.* had done nothing. But the party who murmured against Fabius and his friends were (it seems) still too feeble to prevail. Very lately Laevinus had been compelled to relinquish his opposition ; and when Marcellus appeared to justify his conduct, all men's hearts were turned : not only was he forgiven freely, but he was even elected Consul for the ensuing year (208 B.C.). His colleague was T. Quinctius Crispinus, who had served under him in Sicily.

The defection of the Italians had no doubt weakened Hannibal, and the Consuls determined to throw themselves upon him with their conjoint force. After Hannibal had *Death of Marcellus.* surprised and defeated near Petelia two legions which were marching to attack Locri, the hostile armies met near Venusia, and every day the Romans drew out before the camp of Hannibal and offered battle. But the odds were too great even for Hannibal, and he kept close within his entrenchments. It happened that between his camp and that of the Consuls there was a hill, which Marcellus thought it desirable to occupy. Accordingly he rode up to the top, accompanied by his colleague and a small detachment of cavalry, unconscious that a large body of Numidian horse were lurking in the woods below. In a moment the Consuls were surrounded. Marcellus was run through by the spear of one of these wild horsemen, and fell dead from his horse ; Crispinus escaped mortally wounded to his camp. As soon as Hannibal heard of this great stroke of good luck, he hastened to the scene of conflict, and saw with his own eyes his ablest antagonist lying dead before him. His conduct proved the true nobility of his nature. He showed no triumph, but simply drew the gold ring from the dead man's finger, saying : " There lies a good soldier, but a bad general." He then ordered the corpse to receive a soldier's burial. Like his father Hamilcar, he warred not with the dead, but with the living.

Great was the consternation at Rome when intelligence of this untoward event arrived. The Consul Crispinus had been carried in a litter to Capua, where he was on Roman ground, and could therefore execute the command of the Senate to name a Dictator. He named old Manlius Torquatus, and died shortly after. But no attempt was made to molest Hannibal again this year. Torquatus exercised his office chiefly in holding Comitia for the election of new Consuls. The occasion was a grave one. Never before, since the beginning of the Republic, had she been bereft of both her Consuls at one blow. But in order to understand the full importance of the choice now to be made, it must be mentioned that Hasdrubal, the brother of Hannibal, had already set out upon his march from Spain and in a short time might be expected to arrive in Italy.

All notice of the Spanish war since the death of the two Scipios has purposely been deferred. Here it will be enough to say that, soon after that event, the Senate, well understanding the importance of maintaining the war in Spain, had endeavoured to retrieve their losses in that quarter; and at the close of 211 B.C. young P. Scipio, the hero of the latter part of the war, had accepted the dangerous command left vacant by his father and uncle. In the next chapter notice will be taken of his splendid successes in the west. But these successes had not served to divert Hasdrubal from his purpose. This general had collected an army of good soldiers, which he skilfully carried through the heart of Spain, and, crossing the Pyrenees near Bayonne, entered Gaul by the pass which is now threaded by the high road from Paris to Madrid. By this dexterous movement he eluded the vigilance of the Romans, who knew not whither he was gone. But towards the close of the present year news came from the friendly people of Marseilles, to the effect that Hasdrubal had arrived in Aquitania, and intended wintering in Gaul, as the season was too far advanced for the safe passage of the Alps.

Such were the grave circumstances under which Torquatus summoned the people to elect Consuls for the year 207 B.C.

It might have been thought that the ablest Patrician to be found was M. Valerius Laevinus, who was still in Sicily. Not only had he restored that Province to order, but had laid in large stores of provisions for the troops in the south of Italy, and had sent considerable supplies of corn to Rome. But the Senate distrusted him: they had not forgotten the contumacious way in which he had quitted Rome, rather than name a Dictator at their bidding. They

*Death of  
Crispinus.*

*Hasdrubal  
expected.*

*Nero and  
Livius,  
Consuls.*

therefore turned their eyes on C. Claudius Nero, a man of known energy, who had served now for many years under Fulvius and Marcellus.<sup>1</sup> He had been sent to Spain at the first news of the disasters there, and remained in command till the appointment of young Scipio. All men agreed that Nero should be the Patrician Consul. But who was to be his Plebeian colleague? Marcellus was dead, and Gracchus was dead, and Fulvius was nearly as old as Fabius. At length it was resolved to choose M. Livius, afterwards called Salinator, a man who was also well stricken in years, for he had been Consul with Aemilius Paullus in the year before Hannibal's invasion, and had triumphed with him over the Illyrians. But he had been accused of unfair division of the spoil taken in that Illyrian war, and had been condemned to pay a fine by the vote of all the Tribes, save one. Indignant at an unjust sentence, he had withdrawn to his estate in the country, and had only lately reappeared in the Senate at the command of the Censors. But when there, he sat in moody silence, till at length he started up to speak in defence of his kinsman Livius, who was accused of having failed in his duty as commandant of Tarentum. On this occasion Fabius' conduct had not been conciliatory. For when it was urged in defence of the accused that he had mainly assisted in recovering the city, Fabius drily remarked, that "certainly he had assisted in recovering Tarentum, for if he had not lost it, it would not have had to be recovered at all." These recollections rankled in the heart of the old Senator; he refused the proffered Consulship; and when he yielded, it was to the command rather than the entreaty of the Fathers. But one difficulty remained. The cross-grained old man was at feud with his colleague Nero; and when friends tried to reconcile them, he replied that "he saw no occasion for it: if they remained enemies, they would keep a keener watch for each other's faults." At last he gave way, and before they took the field the Consuls were in perfect agreement.

They hastened early in the year to their respective stations, Nero to take the command in Southern Italy, against the feeble army of Hannibal; Livius to the frontier of Cisalpine Gaul, to await the arrival of Hasdrubal.

As soon as the season permitted, Hasdrubal advanced from his winter quarters. He avoided the coast-road taken by his brother, and passed through the country of the *March of* Arvernians (who have left their name in French *Hasarubal*. Auvergne); thus he came straight to the Alps, and probably

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 288.

crossed them by the Mont Cenis.<sup>1</sup> The time of year was favourable : in the period which had elapsed since his brother's march eleven years before, the Gauls had become better acquainted with the Carthaginians, and Hasdrubal achieved his passage into Italy with little loss or difficulty. He straightway marched through the plains of Cisalpine Gaul, crossed the Po, and descended its stream till he came before the Roman colony of Placentia, one of the eighteen lately found faithful. Hannibal had not wasted time in assailing this town ; but Hasdrubal probably wished to oblige the Gauls, whom he expected to swell the numbers of his army, for hitherto they had not given Hannibal much assistance. Soon after the great battle of Cannae they had cut off the Consul-elect Postumius, and they still drank mead out of his skull. But *Delay at Placentia.* since that time they had remained quiet, overawed by the presence of a Roman force at Ariminum. And the numbers which now joined Hasdrubal were not large, so that the time he spent at Placentia must have been nearly thrown away.

When he left his lines at Placentia, he sent off six couriers, four Gauls and two Numidians, to inform his brother of his intended route. Hannibal meantime, had been *Message sent to Hannibal.* constantly on the move,—marching from Bruttii into Lucania, from Lucania into Apulia, from Apulia again into Bruttii, and then once more back into Apulia. We cannot but admire the skill with which he eluded Nero, who pursued him with a double army of four legions.<sup>2</sup> Yet it was one of these marches that accidentally proved the ruin of his cause. The couriers despatched by Hasdrubal from Placentia made their way into Apulia, but unfortunately arrived just when Hannibal was absent. They attempted to follow him, but missed their way, and fell into the hands of the Roman officer stationed on the Tarentine frontier. That officer immediately sent off the men with the despatches found upon them to Nero at Canusium. An interpreter was procured, and the whole plan of the enemy's campaign was revealed to the Consul. Hasdrubal told his brother that he intended to advance along the Adriatic, by way of Ariminum, and proposed that they should join forces in Umbria, in order to march upon Rome. Nero's determination was soon taken. Legally, he had no power to quit his district in Southern Italy, but in this

<sup>1</sup> Arnold, *l. c.*, 372.

<sup>2</sup> Nero claimed a victory over Hannibal at Grumentum, but this must at least be very much exaggerated.

emergency he resolved to set all forms at defiance. He picked out 6000 foot and 1000 horse, the flower of his army, and gave out that he would march at nightfall on a secret expedition into Lucania. As soon as it was dark he set out, but the soldiers soon discovered that Lucania was not their destination. They were marching northwards towards Picenum, and they found that provisions and beasts of burden were ready for them all along the road, by the Consul's orders. As soon as he was well advanced upon his march, he addressed his men, and told them that "in a few days they would join their countrymen under Livius in his camp at Sena Gallica in Umbria; that combined they would intercept Hasdrubal and his invading army; that victory was certain; that the chief share of the glory would be theirs." The men answered such an address as soldiers should; and everywhere, as they passed, the inhabitants came out to meet them, pressing upon them victuals, horses, all and more than all that they could want. In a week's time they accomplished a distance of about 250 miles, and found themselves within a short distance of Sena. Nero halted till it was dark, that he might enter his colleague's camp unperceived by Hasdrubal.

Nero had previously written to the Senate, informing them of his march, and urging them to throw forward a strong force to defend the defile through which the Flaminian road passes at Narnia, in case the battle should be won by Hasdrubal. Great anxiety prevailed at Rome; but it was with full confidence in the support of the Senate that Nero entered his colleague's camp and beheld the watch-fires of Hasdrubal at not more than half a mile's distance in front. His men were warmly greeted by their comrades, and received within the camp of Livius, that Hasdrubal might not observe the increase of the army. After one night's rest, Nero urged immediate action, lest his absence from Apulia might be discovered by Hannibal, or his presence in Umbria by Hasdrubal. Accordingly, the two legions of Livius, two more commanded by one of the Praetors, together with Nero's troops, drew out before Hasdrubal's camp and offered battle. The experienced eye of the Carthaginian was struck by the increase of numbers, and his suspicions were confirmed by the fact that the trumpet had been heard to sound twice in the camp of Livius. This convinced him that Nero had joined his colleague, and, full of anxious fear as to the fate of his brother, he determined to retreat under cover of night; when the next day broke, his camp was found to be deserted. Orders were given to pursue. The Romans came up with the Carthaginian army on the banks of



the Metaurus, about twelve or fourteen miles north of their former position. The river seems to have been swollen by rains, so that the Carthaginians could not pass it except at certain places, and, their guides having deserted them, they could not find the fords. Hasdrubal, therefore, was obliged to give battle with the river in his rear.

On the side of the Romans, Nero commanded on the right and Livius on the left, the centre being under the charge of the *Battle of the Metaurus.* Praetor. Hasdrubal, with his Spanish troops, stood opposed to Livius, while his Gallic allies confronted Nero; and his centre, covered by a corps of elephants, was formed of a corps of Ligurians who had taken service in his army.

The battle was soon engaged along the whole line. In the centre, the elephants were wounded, and running furiously about trampled down friends and foes alike. On the enemy's left Nero found the Gauls strongly posted, and, leaving part of his troops to hold them in check, he passed round by the Roman rear with his own chosen men, and fell upon the right flank of Hasdrubal's corps. This bold manœuvre decided the battle. When the right wing of the Carthaginian army gave way, the centre followed their example; and Hasdrubal, finding the battle lost, and retreat impracticable, threw himself into the enemy's ranks and fell fighting. The slaughter was great: the Metaurus ran red with blood.

At Rome, as may be well imagined, the news of Nero's march had filled all hearts with hope and fear. And now, after some ten days of intense anxiety, vague rumours came *Joy at Rome.* that a battle had been fought and won. Still, men feared to believe what they wished; and the anxiety rose higher and higher, till the officer in command at Narnia sent home to say that two horsemen had arrived at that place from the field of battle with tidings of a great victory. The news seemed too good to be true. But presently after came officers bearing despatches from the Consuls themselves. So eager were the people, that it was difficult to prevent them from tearing open the despatches before they had been read in the Senate. And when they were brought out and read publicly from the Rostra, a burst of exultation broke from every tongue, and men, women, and children thronged to the temples to bless the gods for their great deliverance. Thanks were decreed to the Consuls and their armies; three days were appointed for a public thanksgiving to the gods. Never were public joy and gratitude more deserved. The battle of the Metaurus was the salvation of Italy; and Horace spoke with as much historic truth as poetic



fervour when he said that "Then, by the death of Hasdrubal, then fell all the hope and fortune of Carthage."<sup>1</sup>

The news was conveyed to Hannibal in a barbarous fashion. Nero had returned to his camp at Canusium as speedily as possible, and his lieutenant had kept the secret so well that Hannibal had remained ignorant of his *Grief of Hannibal.* absence, till a grisly head was thrown before his outposts, and Hannibal knew the features of his brother. Two prisoners sent in, and a large body paraded before the Roman camp, confirmed the sad forebodings of the general, and he said with a heavy heart that "he recognised the ill fortune of Carthage." This treatment of his brother's remains was an ill return for the generosity shown by Hannibal to the corpses of his opponents; and Nero, by this act, forfeited all claim to admiration, except such as must be bestowed on a skilful general and a resolute man.

Hannibal now retreated into Bruttii. The people of this wild country, still nearly as wild as it was then, clung to his fallen fortunes with unshaken fidelity. Here he main- *He retreats to Bruttii.* tained himself for four years longer, almost more admirable in adversity than in prosperity. Even now no Roman general was able to gain a victory over him; even now every veteran soldier remained faithful to his great leader. But he was driven into a corner, and stood like a lion at bay, still terrible, but without hope. The war in Italy may now be considered at an end.

The victory of the Metaurus was held to be an occasion for allowing a triumph to the victorious generals. No triumphal procession had passed down the Sacred Way and ascended to the Capitol since Aemilius Paullus and *Triumph of the Consuls.* Livius Salinator had led up the captive Illyrians in the year before Hannibal's invasion. All former successes in the war had been but the recoveries of losses, all except the capture of Syracuse, when Marcellus had been refused a full triumph, and was fain to be content with an ovation, because he left the Sicilian war unfinished. But now there was no drawback. The two Consuls met at Praenesté and advanced, with the army of Livius and the captives in long procession, to the Temple of Bellona in the Campus Martius. Here they were received by the Senate

1 — "Occidit, occidit  
Spes omnis et fortuna nostri  
Nominis, Hasdrubale interempto" (*Od.*, iv. 4. 70).

On the battle of the Metaurus, see B. W. Henderson in *English Historical Review*, xiii. 417, 625.

and people in festal array. The triumph so well deserved was given. Livius appeared in the triumphal car attended by his



Coin of M'. Acilius Glabrio, with triumphal car.  
(Stevenson, "TRIUMPHUS.")

army, Nero riding on horseback beside him : for the battle had been fought in Livius' district. Yet all men turned their eyes on the Patrician Consul, and the acclamations of the crowd showed to whom belonged the true honours of the triumph.

Notwithstanding these honours, Nero, strange to say, was never again employed during the war ; and it was not till Neros became heirs of the Empire of Augustus that poets sang of the debt which Rome owed to that name.<sup>1</sup> A star was appearing in the west which soon eclipsed the brightness of Nero's fame. The remaining period of the war will be little more than a history of the deeds of Scipio.

---

<sup>1</sup> " Qui t debeas, o Roma, Neronibus,  
Testis Metaurum flumen et Hasdrubal  
Devictus," etc. (Hor., *Od.*, iv. 4. 37.

## CHAPTER XXX

### SECOND PUNIC WAR: FOURTH AND LAST PERIOD (206-201 B.C.)

THE history of the War in Spain has been left almost unnoticed, since the death of the two Scipios in 212 or 211 B.C. It is now time to return to that country; for the issue of the war between Rome and Hannibal was in reality determined on Spanish soil.

After the disasters of that campaign,<sup>1</sup> the Senate determined to despatch reinforcements without delay; and the officer appointed to take the temporary command was C. Claudius Nero, the future hero of the Metaurus. *The younger Scipio, Pro-consul.* Afterwards, however, the Senate resolved to take the unusual course of calling upon the People to elect a Proconsul for Spain at the Great Comitia. The policy of continuing the Spanish War was manifest; but the risk of failure was so great, that the Senate thought fit to throw the responsibility upon the People. But when the day came that candidates for the Proconsulate should present themselves in the Campus Martius, no candidate appeared. Men looked at one another in blank dismay. It seemed that none of the soldiers of the Republic dared to undertake so great and hazardous an enterprise; when to the surprise and admiration of all, P. Cornelius Scipio, son and nephew of the slain generals, arose and offered himself to the suffrages of the People. He was not more than twenty-five years old,<sup>2</sup> but his name and character were well known, and though he had hitherto held no office higher than that of Aedile, he was elected by acclamation.

Scipio presents in almost all respects a striking contrast to

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 291.

<sup>2</sup> Polybius, x. 3, 6; according to Livy, xxvi. 18, he was about twenty-four.

the men who had hitherto conducted the affairs of Rome in the Second Punic War. They were far advanced in years, cautious and distrustful ; he was in the prime of youth, enterprising and self-confident. They had been trained in the severity of the old Roman discipline ; he is said to have been dissolute in early years, and was still thought to affect too much the easy laxity of Grecian manners. They were strictly obedient to the letter of the law ; he was accustomed from his very youth to put himself above the laws and customs of Rome. They always acted as the faithful ministers of the Senate ; he very soon showed that the Senate must be content to follow his policy rather than guide it. They, however gentle to their countrymen, were to foreigners harsh, arrogant, and cruel ; he treated foreigners with a humanity and courteousness that made his name better loved in Spain than in Italv. Yet in some respects he was a true Roman. Notwithstanding the excesses charged upon his youth, he had long learnt to control his passions absolutely, and to submit every desire to his own views of duty. Notwithstanding the grace and affability of his manner, he preserved a loftiness of deportment which kept men at a certain distance from him. Few shared his intimacy ; but where he gave his confidence, as to his friend C. Laelius, that confidence was complete and unreserved. One point in his character calls for particular attention—the religiousness of his life. Never, from his first appearance in public, had he been known to undertake any enterprise without first resorting to the great Temple on the Capitol, and remaining there for hours absorbed in devotion. The religion of Scipio might not be consistent ; yet, on the whole, it would be unjust to doubt that he acted in reliance on the support of Higher Powers. In this lies the secret of his character. That self-confidence, which prompted him to shrink from no responsibility, led him also to neglect the laws when they seemed to oppose what he thought necessary. Every incident in his youth shows this confidence. Not to insist on the doubtful story of his saving his father's life when he was yet a boy, we have seen him as a Tribune of the Legions, assisting to rally the broken remains of the army of Cannae, and barring the secession of the young Nobles after that disastrous day. Three years after, we find him offering himself candidate for the Curule Aedileship ; and, when it was objected that he was yet too young for the office, promptly answering : "If the People vote for me, that will make me old enough." And now, after the death of his father and uncle in Spain, we see him modestly waiting till it was clear that no experienced

commander would claim the dangerous honour of succeeding them, and then bravely offering himself to the acceptance of the People.

Scipio seems to have arrived in Spain in the course of the year 210 B.C. He landed at Emporiae, with his friend Laelius and his elder brother Lucius, who accompanied him as legates. He found that the three generals *Scipio in Spain.* commanding the Carthaginians in Spain, Hasdrubal and Mago, brothers of Hannibal, and Hasdrubal, son of Gisgo, were at discord one with another. Their forces lay scattered over a wide extent of country from Gades to Celtiberia, and there seems to have been no disposition to act on the offensive against the Romans. Scipio, taking advantage of these circumstances, determined to strike a blow which would confirm the enthusiastic feelings of the Roman People towards him, and would mark that a general had arisen who would not rest content with the timid discretion of the Fabian policy. By a bold stroke it might be possible to surprise New Carthage itself. His purpose was revealed to none save Laelius, who was to have command of the fleet. He spent the winter in preparation, and early in the next year (209 B.C.) he led his army across the Ebro, and arrived in an incredibly short time under the walls of the city.

New Carthage lay on a hilly peninsula jutting out into a fine bay, which forms the harbour. On the land side its walls were covered by a marsh or lagoon, which was over-*New Carthage.* flowed by the sea, so that the place was only approachable by a narrow neck of land between the lagoon and the harbour.<sup>1</sup> On this neck of land Scipio took up his position, entrenching himself in rear, but leaving the front of his camp open towards the city. No time was to be lost; and next morning he gave orders to assault the walls. He *Scipio seizes it.* addressed his soldiers and assured them of success; Neptune, he said, had appeared to him in a dream, and promised to take part with the Romans. The men advanced gallantly to the escalade, confident in their young general. But the walls were high and strong; the garrison made a stout defence; and before noon Scipio called off his soldiers. But he did not give up his enterprise. In the afternoon, as he was informed, the water in the lagoon would be very low, in consequence of an ebb tide assisted by a strong west wind. He therefore picked out 500 men, who were ordered to take a number of scaling-ladders and dash through the water so as to mount the walls

<sup>1</sup> Strachan—Davidson, *Selections from Polybius*, App. i.

unobserved, while the main body of the army made a feigned attack by the neck of land. Thus Neptune would fulfil his promise. The device succeeded completely. While the garrison was hurrying to repel the feigned attack, the 500 got into the town unopposed, and rushing to the main entrance, threw open the gates. Scipio, with a chosen detachment, pushed on to the citadel, into which the garrison had fled, and the commandant surrendered at discretion. All slaughter was now stopped, and at the close of the day the young general found himself master of this important city, with a very large treasure and immense supply of stores.

The Carthaginian rule was no longer beloved in Spain, and Scipio turned this disposition to his own advantage with admirable dexterity. He determined to set free all the *Generosity of Scipio.* hostages retained by the Carthaginians, as well as all the citizens of New Carthage. Among these hostages was the wife of Mandonius, brother of Indibilis, a powerful chief of the Ilergetes, who had formerly been the friend of Carthage, and the daughters of Indibilis himself. He sent them home with as much care as if they had been his own kinswomen, although Indibilis and Mandonius had been actively engaged against his unfortunate father and uncle. Then the soldiers brought him a beautiful girl, whom they had reserved as a special gift for their youthful commander. But Scipio, observing her tears, inquired into her condition; and finding she was the betrothed of Allucius, a young Celtiberian chief, he sent for the youth, and restored his bride unharmed, without ransom or condition. This generous conduct was not without its reward. The Spaniards, quick in feeling and romantic in disposition, regarded the young conqueror as a hero sent to deliver them from the yoke of Carthage. His noble bearing, his personal beauty, confirmed the favourable impressions caused by his conduct to the hostages; and when he appeared next year in their country, he was welcomed by Indibilis and Mandonius at the head of their vassals. Soon after, a deputation of Spaniards came to him with entreaties to become their king. But Scipio courteously declined the offer, informing them that he was but the general of the Roman People, in whose ears the name of king was a by-word and a reproach.

The Carthaginian generals were quite unable to make head against the well-earned popularity of the youthful Roman. We *Hasdrubal eludes Scipio.* hear of no attempt to retake New Carthage, and in the year 208 B.C. Hasdrubal Barca was far too busily engaged in preparing for his Italian expedition to act with energy against the Romans. But he found himself obliged to give battle at a place called Baecula, near the Bactis (Guadalquivir). The



Romans won the day, but the Carthaginian commander made a skilful retreat, leaving his camp in the hands of the enemy. All Spain north of the Baetis was relinquished; and Hasdrubal drew back into Lusitania, leaving his brother Mago and Hasdrubal, son of Gisgo, to cover the borders of that district, which, with the province now called Andalusia, were the only parts of Spain left to the Carthaginians. Meanwhile he himself crossed the Tagus, and marching northwards (as we have seen) by ways unknown to the Romans, crossed the Pyrenees near the shores of the Bay of Biscay. Scipio was informed of his intentions to pass into Italy, and had expected him to follow the course of his brother Hannibal. But in the beginning of 207 B.C., while he was still in winter quarters at Tarraco, he heard that his able opponent had eluded him, and was already approaching the Alps.

In that year the Carthaginians made great efforts to retrieve their falling fortunes. Fresh forces were sent from Africa, and young Masinissa, son of Gula, a powerful Numidian chief, appeared in the field with a large body of his formidable horsemen. Scipio himself did not appear in the south till late in the season, when he found that his legate Silanus had kept the Carthaginians in check. But the news of the Metaurus had reached him, and he burned with eagerness to eclipse the glory of Nero.

It must have been early in 206 B.C. that Scipio quitted his winter quarters at Tarraco with his whole force, having resolved to pass the Baetis and bring the enemy to action. The Carthaginians, confident in their numbers, were equally ready, and their united forces boldly faced the enemy. The place of the battle is unknown; its name is variously given as Silpia or Elinga.<sup>1</sup> But the result is certain. Scipio's victory was complete; the whole Carthaginian army was broken and destroyed; its scattered remains took refuge behind the walls of Gades, with Hasdrubal Gisgo and Mago; while the wily Masinissa entered into secret negotiations with the Romans. The Senate, therefore, at the commencement of the year 206, had to congratulate the People not only on seeing Italy almost delivered from the army of Hannibal, but also on the important fact that all Spain, except the town of Gades, was in the hands of the Roman armies.

But Scipio regarded Spain as a mere stepping-stone to Africa. Here, and here only, he felt convinced, could the war be concluded. Already Valerius Laevinus had made descents upon the African coast, and found the

*Battle of  
Silpia or  
Elinga.*

*Spain entirely  
Roman.*

*Scipio's de-  
signs on Africa.*

<sup>1</sup> See Ihne, ii. 401.

country nearly as defenceless as in the days of Agathocles and of Regulus. Scipio determined not to return to Rome till he had laid the train for an invasion of Africa ; and then, with the confidence that marked his whole career, he would offer himself for the Consulship, and force the Senate to allow him his own way.

At that time the country to the west of the Carthaginian territory, from Bona to Oran, was known by the name of Numidia ; and the Numidians themselves were divided into two great tribes, the western Numidians or Masaesylians with Siga for their capital ; and the eastern or Massylians, whose capital was Cirta, now well known under the name of Constantine as the chief fortress of Algeria. Of the Masaesylians Syphax was king ; while Gula, father of Masinissa, was ruler of the Massylians, and Scipio had already entered into negotiations with Masinissa. But Masinissa had not yet any power of his own, while the power of Syphax was great. It was therefore of the greatest importance to secure the friendship of this powerful but unstable chieftain. Scipio resolved, with a bold-

*Visit to  
Syphax.*

ness almost romantic, to pay a visit to the court of Syphax ; and, to show his confidence in the king, he sailed from New Carthage to Africa with two ships only. It happened that Hasdrubal Gisco, who had before this left Spain in despair, visited Syphax at the self-same time with the self-same purposes. Both the rivals were entertained by the Numidian ; but the winning manners and personal grace of

*Sophonisba.*

Scipio prevailed, and Syphax formed an alliance with the Romans. The union, however, was not of long duration. The fickle Numidian was soon won over to the enemy by an offer of the hand of the beautiful Sophonisba, daughter of Hasdrubal Gisco.

When Scipio returned to Spain, he found that his short absence had produced a serious change. Three important cities in the vale of the Baetis, Illiturgi, Castulo and Astapa, had closed their gates and declared their independence. Without delay he laid siege to Illiturgi. The town was taken after an obstinate defence, and given up to massacre and pillage. This dreadful fate of their countrymen produced immediate, but opposite, effects on Castulo and Astapa. The men of Castulo, stricken with fear, surrendered at discretion. The men of Astapa collected all their property into a huge funeral pile in the market-place, and placed their wives and children under a guard, who had orders to slay them and fire the pile as soon as the gates should be forced. The rest of the citizens fell fighting bravely, and the Romans were left masters of a heap of ashes.

*Revolt in  
Spain.*

Another circumstance showed that the Roman power in Spain rested on a precarious tenure. Scipio fell ill at New Carthage, and a report was spread that he was dead. Upon this Indibilis and Mandonius, believed to be his most faithful friends, raised the standard of revolt, and advanced into Celtiberia. A division of Italian troops, 8000 strong, stationed upon the Sucro, broke into open mutiny, driving away their Roman officers, and choosing two Italians as their chiefs. The prompt and decisive way in which Scipio quelled this dangerous mutiny recalls the conduct of Clive in Bengal on a similar occasion. He sent to the mutineers, desiring them to come to New Carthage and receive their arrears of pay; and as they approached the town, he ordered the division of the army in that place to prepare for marching against the revolted Spaniards. The Italians, therefore, met the army leaving New Carthage as they entered it, and fondly deemed that the general would now be completely at their mercy. But when they appeared next morning before Scipio, they found that thirty-five persons, the ringleaders of the mutiny, had been arrested during the night; and the clash of arms in the streets leading to the Forum apprised them that the army had never set out on its pretended march. Scipio reproved the mutineers with much severity. He ordered the ringleaders for execution, and pardoned the rest on their taking the oath of allegiance anew. Indibilis and Mandonius hastened to make full submission. But no sooner had Scipio left Spain than these discontented chiefs again took arms. Indibilis fell in battle; Mandonius was given up to the Romans and put to death.

It was now apparent that the Carthaginians had no longer any hope of recovering their ground in Spain. Hasdrubal Gisco had returned to Africa. Masinissa obtained an interview with Scipio, and renewed his promises of friendship. Mago the last remaining brother of Hannibal, after a vain attempt to surprise New Carthage, returned to Gades, and found that the inhabitants shut their gates against him. He enticed the chief magistrates, called Suffets (as at Carthage), into a negotiation, and seizing their persons crucified them. This brutal and treacherous act forfeited his last claim on the sympathies of the people of Gades. They surrendered to the Romans, while Mago sailed off to the Balearic Isles, and occupied himself in preparing a descent upon the coast of Italy, as a last chance of relieving his illustrious brother.

The soil of the Spanish peninsula was now completely cleared of the Carthaginians, and Scipio prepared to return to Rome.

Four years before, he had left his country amid the hopes and expectations of all men. He now returned, having more than fulfilled those hopes and expectations. His friend Laelius had been sent home to report his first great success : his brother Lucius had lately arrived to announce the conquest of Spain and the approach of the young conqueror ; and no one doubted that at the approaching elections Scipio would be raised to the Consulship by the unanimous voice of the People.

It was towards the close of the year 206 B.C. that he returned. The Senate received him in the Temple of Bellona, but could give him no triumph because he had held no regular magistracy during his absence. He therefore entered the city, and offered himself candidate for the Consulship. Every Tribe united in giving him their suffrages, though he was hardly more than thirty years of age. But the common rules of election had been neglected throughout the war, and no difficulty seems to have been raised on the score of years. His colleague was P. Licinius Crassus, who was Pontifex Maximus, and therefore unable to leave Italy. Whatever foreign enterprise was undertaken must fall to the lot of Scipio. He himself was at no pains to conceal his intention of carrying the war into Africa, and he let it be understood that if the Senate refused leave, he would bring a special bill for the purpose before the People. Fabius, with Fulvius and the old Senatorial party, vehemently opposed these bold projects. But the time was gone by when they could use the votes of the People against an enterprising Consul, as they had done some years before against Laevinus. The Senate was fain to compromise the matter by naming Sicily as his province, with permission to cross over into Africa if he deemed it expedient ; but they refused him the additional levies and supplies he required. The Etruscans, however, and other Italians enthusiastically volunteered to give all he wanted. He spent the year of his Consulship in forming a fleet and collecting troops to reinforce the veterans of Marcellus and Laevinus, and he was continued in his command as Proconsul.

The enemies of Scipio made one more attempt to thwart his African enterprise. He had urged Q. Pleminius, who commanded in Bruttii, to seize the citadel of Locri ; and hearing that Hannibal was on his way to relieve the place, Scipio had left his Province without hesitation, and sailing into the harbour of Locri, obliged the Carthaginian to retire. Pleminius was no sooner left in command in Locri than he indulged in brutal outrages, not only against the people of the place, but

against such Romans as ventured to oppose his will. The Locrians laid their complaints before the Senate at Rome. These complaints arrived early in the year 204 B.C., and old Fabius took occasion to inveigh against the presumptuous audacity of his young rival, attempting to implicate him in the proceedings of Pleminius, urging besides that by going to Locri he had transgressed the limits of his Province, as he had done before by visiting Syphax in Numidia; moreover, that he spent his time in pursuits unfit for a Roman soldier, frequenting the schools and gymnasia of the Greek cities, and wearing a Greek dress; while his men were daily becoming corrupted by licentious living and want of discipline. He ended his speech by proposing that he should be deprived of his command. The Senate ventured not to act on these vague accusations without inquiry, and it was therefore resolved to send a commission into Sicily to examine into the truth of the charges. The result was highly favourable to the general. It was reported that he was guiltless of the excesses of Pleminius; that his troops, instead of being neglected or undisciplined, were in the highest order; and that arms, engines, and supplies of every kind were provided for the invasion of Africa. It was universally resolved that Scipio should retain his command for the purpose of conducting this great enterprise.

The confidence which the Senate felt in the altered state of affairs is fully shown by two decrees passed in this same year. The first respected the twelve Latin Colonies, which five years before had refused to furnish soldiers. At the time it had been thought prudent to pass over this contumacious conduct. But now they were required to furnish a contingent twice as large as they had hitherto furnished, with money for their pay. They murmured, but submitted. The other decree was moved by Laevinus for the repayment of the patriotic loan advanced during his Consulship in the year 210 B.C. It was apparent, therefore, that the battle of the Metaurus, backed by the great successes of Scipio in Spain, had raised the Republic above all fear of disaffection in her Colonies, or of bankruptcy at home. Other signs of confidence appear. A huge stone, supposed to represent the Great Mother of the Gods, was brought in state to Rome from Pessinus in Phrygia. The Sibylline books directed that the care of this precious relic should be given to "the best man" at Rome; and the Senate adjudged the title to P. Scipio Nasica, son of Cn. Scipio, who had died in Spain, and first cousin to the great man who was now making the name illustrious.

*Confidence  
restored at  
Rome.*



All obstacles being now removed, Scipio prepared to cross over into Africa. His army and fleet were assembled at Lilybaeum under his own eye. His brother Lucius and his friend Laelius still attended him as legates, and his Quaestor was a young man destined hereafter to become famous, M. Porcius Cato. It was in the course of the year 204 B.C. that he set sail. His army was not so numerous as it was well-appointed and well-disciplined, composed of men who had grown old in service, skilful in sieges, prepared for all dangers; for the greater part knew that in the successful termination of the war lay their only chance of returning home to end their days in peace. As the ships left the harbour at daybreak, Scipio prayed aloud to all the gods, that his enterprise might be blessed by their favour; that the evils which Carthage had wrought against Rome might now be visited upon her own head. On the second morning they were in sight of the Fair Promontory, and Scipio, when he heard the name, said that the omen was good, and there should be their landing-place.

Masinissa joined him with a body of his Numidian horse; his knowledge of the country and his ceaseless activity would have made him welcome even if he had come alone.

Scipio immediately laid siege to Utica. Terror at Carthage rose to its highest pitch. For a time he was left to carry on his operations unmolested. But as winter approached *Siege of Utica.* Hasdrubal Gisgo succeeded in collecting a considerable force, and persuaded Syphax, his son-in-law, to lend his aid in relieving Utica. Scipio was encamped on a headland to the eastward of this town, on a spot which long retained the name of "the Cornelian Camp,"<sup>1</sup> and the Carthaginians hoped that they might blockade him here both by land and sea. Scipio remained quiet the whole winter, except that he amused Syphax by entering into negotiations for peace. But these negotiations were carried on to mask a design, which, as spring came on, he was enabled to put in practice. He observed that Hasdrubal occupied one camp, and Syphax another. The huts occupied by the Numidians were formed of stakes wattled and thatched with reeds; and the quarters of the Carthaginians, though somewhat more substantial, consisted solely of timber. Scipio contrived to obtain an accurate knowledge of the plan and disposition of these camps, and when the time for the execution of his design was arrived, he suddenly broke off the negotiations.

He now made preparations for a night attack, ordering Laelius

---

<sup>1</sup> Caesar, *Bell. Civ.*, ii. 24 and 37.



and Masinissa to assail the camp of Syphax, while he moved himself towards that of Hasdrubal. Masinissa obtained an easy entrance into the lines of his countrymen, and straightway set fire to their inflammable habitations. The unfortunate men rose from their beds or from their wine-cups, and endeavoured to extinguish the flames. But the work had been too well done; and as they attempted to escape, they found that every avenue of the camp was beset by enemies. Fire was behind them, death by the sword before; and though Syphax escaped, his army was destroyed. The same fate befell Hasdrubal. On the first alarm he conjectured the truth, and made off, leaving his men a prey to Scipio. When morning broke the Romans pursued the fugitives; and it is not too much to say that the whole force on which Carthage depended for safety was cut off in this horrible way. The recital makes the blood run cold. Yet neither the act itself, nor the duplicity by which it was carried into execution, were ever thought to cast any slur on the fair fame of Scipio.

*Armies of  
Syphax and  
Hasdrubal  
destroyed by  
treachery.*

The Carthaginian government was in despair. But at this juncture a large body of Celtiberians offered their services to Syphax; and this prince was over-persuaded by the entreaties of Sophonisba to renew the struggle. Hasdrubal also exerted himself to collect a new army; and in the course of thirty days the two allied generals appeared on the great plains, which lie about 70 or 80 miles to the south-west of Utica and Carthage. Scipio, leaving his fleet and a division of his army to continue the blockade of Utica, advanced to give them battle without delay. The Celtiberians made a stout resistance; but, being deserted by the rest of the army, they were entirely cut to pieces. Hasdrubal fled to Carthage, Syphax to his own kingdom; so that the whole country was left to the mercy of the Romans. Scipio advanced towards Carthage, receiving the submission of the different towns by which he passed. Encamping at Tunis, within sight of the capital, he awaited the submission of the government.

*Second  
Carthaginian  
army  
defeated.*

Meanwhile Laelius and Masinissa, with the Italian and Numidian cavalry, went in pursuit of Syphax. The unlucky king made such resistance as was in his power; but he was again defeated, and his capital surrendered. When Masinissa entered Cirta, he was met by Sophonisba, formerly his betrothed, and now the wife of his rival. Her charms melted his heart; and, fearing lest Scipio might claim her as his captive to lead her in triumph by

*Masinissa  
and Sophon-  
isba.*

the side of Syphax, he took the bold step of marrying her at once. Scipio rebuked the young chief sternly for venturing to take possession of a Roman captive. Masinissa felt that he was unable to protect his unhappy bride ; but, resolved that at least she should have the option of escaping from the degradation of a Roman triumph, he sent her a cup of poison, telling her that herein lay her only possible deliverance. She took the potion, saying that she accepted the nuptial gift, and drained it to the dregs. When the tragical fate of Sophonisba reached the ears of Scipio, he feared that he had dealt too harshly with his Numidian ally. He sent for him, and gently reproving him for his haste, he publicly presented him with the most honourable testimonies to his bravery and fidelity which a Roman general could bestow, and probably intimated that at the close of the war he should become king of all Numidia. In the delights of satisfied ambition and the prospect of obtaining a powerful sovereignty, Masinissa forgot the sorrows of Sophonisba.

Meanwhile, the Carthaginian fleet attacked the Roman ships in the harbour of Utica, and gained some advantage, so that,

*Carthaginian  
success at  
sea.*

according to one account, Scipio now decided to abandon the siege of Utica altogether.<sup>1</sup> From

Italy also came a gleam of light. About two years before, Mago had landed near Genoa, and had been welcomed by the Ligurians and a portion of the Gauls, and had lately taken up a position in the Insubrian territory.

*Mago in Italy.*

This was known. It was not yet known that he had been defeated by the Romans after a severe struggle, and that, himself wounded, he had been obliged to seek refuge among the Ligurians.

After a severe struggle with their opponents the leaders of the war-party prevailed so far that, while they agreed to an

*Hannibal  
recalled.*

armistice for the present, orders were sent to Hannibal and Mago to return with such forces as they could bring. Mago obeyed the orders immediately, but died of his wound upon the passage. Hannibal also with bitter feelings prepared to obey. For nearly sixteen years the indomitable man had maintained himself on foreign ground ; and even now the remains of his veteran army clung to him with desperate fidelity. He felt that, so far as he was concerned, he had been more than successful ; if he had failed, it had been the fault of that ungrateful country, which had left him long years unsupported, and now was recalling him to defend

<sup>1</sup> Appian, viii. 30

her from the enemy. What Scipio was now to Carthage, that might Hannibal have been to Rome. Still he saw that no advantage could be gained by remaining longer in Italy; he therefore bade farewell to the foreign shores, so long his own, and set sail for that native land which had not seen him for nearly forty years.

Great was the joy at Rome when the news came that their dire enemy had been at length compelled to leave the shores of Italy. A public thanksgiving was decreed; sacrifices offered to all the gods of Rome; and special *Joy at Rome.* honours were voted to old Fabius, who had scarcely received this acknowledgment of his services when he was gathered to his fathers in extreme old age. He has the merit of being the first who successfully opposed Hannibal; but his somewhat narrow mind, and the jealous obstinacy which often accompanies increasing years, prevented him from seeing that there is a time for all things; that his own policy was excellent for retrieving the fortunes of the Republic, but that the weakness of Hannibal left the field open for the bolder measures of Scipio.

Hannibal landed at Leptis, to the south of Carthage, with his veterans, and after halting at Adrumetum to recruit his troops, advanced to Zama, a place about 80 miles to the *Hannibal in Africa.* south-west of Carthage. His approach gave fresh strength to the war-party, and various acts of violence showed Scipio that the armistice lately concluded would soon be broken. Scipio, therefore, early in the year (202 B.C.), advanced from Tunis towards the camp of his great opponent, and finding that spies had been sent to ascertain his strength, he ordered them to be led through his camp, and bade them make a full report of what they had seen. Hannibal felt that he had to deal with a superior force, led by a general only second in ability to himself. His own veterans were comparatively few in number; the remainder of his army were raw levies or allies little to be trusted; the bulk of the Numidian horse, his main arm in Italy, were now arrayed against him under the enterprising Masinissa. He therefore proposed a personal conference, in the faint hope that he might effect a treaty with Scipio. But it was too late. The generals parted from their conference with feelings of mutual esteem, but without agreeing upon terms of peace. It now became certain that the war must be decided by a trial of strength between the two great men, who, each triumphant in his own career, had never encountered one another at the head of armies.

Next day at sunrise both armies drew out. Hannibal marshalled his army in three lines: first his Gallic and

Ligurian auxiliaries, with Balearians and Moors as light troops ; *Battle of* in the second line the native Africans and Car-  
*Zama.* thaginians ; and in the rear, as a reserve, his Italian veterans. Both wings were flanked by cavalry ; the whole line of battle was covered by a formidable array of eighty elephants. To oppose him, Scipio also formed three lines according to the common practice of the Romans ; Laelius with the Italian cavalry was on the left, Masinissa with his Numidians on the right. The Roman army was probably superior, except in elephants ; and to baffle the attack of these monsters, Scipio drew up the maniples of his infantry not (as was usual) chequerwise, but each immediately behind its front-rank maniple, so as to leave open lanes through the army from front to rear.

The battle began by an attack of the elephants on the Roman light troops, who skirmished in front of the regular lines, and who, being overborne by the weight of the huge beasts, fled down the lanes which have been described. But when the elephants came within the ranks, the men on each side pricked them with their javelins, so that some of them rushed clear through the lanes above mentioned without turning to the right or left ; others turned, and, rushing towards either flank, threw the Carthaginian horse into disorder, so that Masinissa and Laelius, being greatly superior in this arm, routed the cavalry and drove them off the field. The battle now grew hot in the centre. The front lines of each army after a desperate struggle both fell back, and the second lines ought to have come forward ; but the auxiliaries of Hannibal's front line found the civic troops behind them so little disposed to take their turn in the conflict, that he was obliged to bring up his veterans to the front. Scipio, on the other hand, rallied his broken troops and brought up his second and third lines on either flank, so that the whole formed one dense phalanx. The veterans of Hannibal proved worthy of their leader, and the battle continued with great fury, till Laelius and Masinissa, returning with the cavalry from the pursuit, charged the Carthaginians in rear, and decided the fate of the day. The Romans left about 2000 on the field ; the Carthaginians not less than 20,000, besides a vast number who were taken prisoners.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> The so-called battle of Zama probably took place a good deal to the west of the well-known place of that name, at Naragara, on the Bagradas ; but this must remain uncertain. The time of year cannot be fixed either. The eclipse mentioned by Zonaras (ix. 14) is of no use, since the eclipse of 19th October, 202 B.C., was a very small one ; and in Livy (xxx. 36. 8) the text is doubtful.

Thus was Hannibal defeated, but not subdued. The battle of Zama has often been compared to that of Waterloo. In both, the two greatest generals of the respective parties met for the first time ; and in both, the more famous chief, fighting with an army hastily drawn together in defence of his country, was defeated. But in other points they were unlike. Waterloo left France helpless ; and her ruler had no hope but in withdrawing from her shores. After the battle of Zama, Hannibal could still have offered a long resistance ; and if he thought it best to make peace, it was that he might reform the government and prepare to renew the war at a future time.

After Scipio had returned to Tunis, he was visited by envoys from Carthage. He sent them back with the following conditions of peace : "The Carthaginians were to be left independent within their own territories ; they were to give up all prisoners and deserters, all their ships of war except ten triremes, and all their elephants ; they were not to make war out of Africa at all, nor in Africa without the consent of Rome ; they were to restore to Masinissa the dominions of his fathers ; they were to pay 10,000 talents of silver towards the expenses of the war, by instalments in the course of the next fifty years."<sup>1</sup> When the General Assembly of Carthage met to debate on these conditions, one of the leaders rose to advise the continuance of the war ; but Hannibal, angry at the folly of the man, pulled him from the tribune. A loud cry was raised ; upon which the general said that "for six-and-thirty years he had been fighting the battles of his country in foreign lands, and if in the camp he had forgotten the manners of the city, he prayed forgiveness." He then went on to show that all resistance, however prolonged, must prove fruitless ; and in the end the People agreed to accept the proposed terms. Upon this, Scipio sent his brother Lucius and two other envoys with a Carthaginian embassy to submit these terms to the Roman Senate and People. The Senate received Scipio's envoys in the Temple of Bellona, and welcomed them with the highest honours. The final decision was left to the People. The conditions of peace were no doubt favourable to Carthage, but all the Tribes voted that Scipio should be empowered to confirm them ; and the Fetials were ordered to pass over into Africa, carrying with them Italian flints to strike fire withal and sacred herbs from the Capitol, so that the sacrifices might

---

<sup>1</sup> 10,000 talents' weight of silver would be worth at the present day about £2,400,000 sterling.

be duly offered, and the treaty might be made in unexceptional form. In the beginning of the year 201 B.C., nearly seventeen years after Hannibal had left New Carthage on his march into Italy, peace was concluded, and Scipio set sail for Rome.

The Triumph of Scipio was the most splendid that had ever yet ascended to the Capitol. The enormous quantity of silver which he brought with him not only enriched his soldiers but relieved the state from the pressure of her debts. King Syphax (some say) followed his car; certainly a crowd of Carthaginian officers and African chiefs were there. The general himself, the universal gaze of men, was saluted by the name of the country he had conquered. No one before had obtained the honour of such a titular surname,<sup>1</sup> but the name of Scipio has come down to our own times indissolubly linked with that of AFRICANUS.

AUTHORITIES.—For Second Punic War: Polybius, iii.-xv; Livy, xxi.-xxx. Polybius is complete down to about 212 B.C.; thenceforward only fragments of his work exist, but some are very important. His account of the history of Scipio is probably not impartial, owing to his connection with the circle of the younger Scipio, but his general conception of history ensures a fair treatment of most events. *Cp.* literature cited by Holm, *Hist. of Gr.* (Eng. tr.), iv. 524. Livy is of great value for the later part of the war, in the absence of Polybius, but he frequently gives the Roman version. The present generation of critics are, however, tending to rate his historical merits higher than did their predecessors. Other writers (*e.g.* Plutarch, *Fabius Maximus*, *Marcellus*; Ap.ian, vii., viii.; Zon., viii., ix.; Diod., xxvi., xxvii.) occasionally supply hints, but their value cannot be estimated in a note. The account of the war by Arnold (edited separately by W. T. Arnold under the title of *The Second Punic War*, 1886) should be consulted throughout.

---

<sup>1</sup> Unless, as Mommsen thinks (iii. 44), Valerius Maximus *Messalla* assumed this name as conqueror of *Messana* in 263 B.C. The story of Coriolanus belongs to legend.





Lictors.

## CHAPTER XXXI

### GOVERNMENT, CONSTITUTIONAL CHANGES, AND FINANCES, UP TO THE CLOSE OF THE HANNIBALIC WAR

NOW that we have seen Rome first become mistress of Italy, and then, after a life and death struggle, rise superior to Carthage ; now that we shall have to follow her in her conquest of all the countries bordering on the Mediterranean, so that this sea became what in modern phrase might be called a Roman lake, we naturally inquire what was the form of government under which she made these great achievements, what the treatment of the subject foreigners, what the condition of the people, their manners and mode of life, their progress in art and literature.

About the time of the Punic Wars the framework of the Roman Constitution was complete. The Constitution was not created by a single legislator, like that of Sparta, nor due to the convulsive efforts of an oppressed commonalty, like that of modern France, but had grown up, like that of England, by slow degrees out of the struggles between the Patrician lords who had originally engrossed all political power, and the Plebeians, who had by successive steps obtained a share in all the privileges of the Patricians. The only trace remaining of

*Patricians  
and Plebeians;  
disappearance of  
severance.*

ancient severance was the regulation by which, of the two Consuls and the two Censors, one must be a Plebeian, and the other by custom was always a Patrician. In a few years even this partition of offices fell into disuse,<sup>1</sup> and no political distinction remained, save that persons of Patrician pedigree were excluded from the Tribunate of the Plebs, as Scottish Peers from sitting in the House of Commons.

In correspondence with the advance of Plebeian and the decay of Patrician families, a silent revolution had been wrought in most parts of the Constitution. The Assembly of the Curies had become a mere form.

*Decay of  
Comitia  
Curiata.*

They continued to meet even to Cicero's time, but their business had dwindled away to the regulation of the religious observances proper to the original *gentes*. Thirty lictors, who were present as the attendants of the presiding magistrate, alone appeared to represent the descendants of the Valerii, the Claudii, and the Postumii.<sup>2</sup>

With regard to the EXECUTIVE GOVERNMENT, the chief officers of state employed in the administration of Roman affairs remained as they had been settled after the Licinian Laws. At a later time it is well known that every Roman who aspired to the highest offices was obliged to ascend through a regular scale of honours. By the Lex Annalis (passed by Villius in 180 B.C.) an age was fixed before which each was unattainable. The first office so held was the Quaestorship, and the earliest age at which this could then be gained appears to have been about twenty-seven. Several years were then to elapse before a Roman could hold the first Curule office, that is, the Aedileship. But between this and each of the highest honours, the Praetorship and the Consulship, only two complete years were interposed. To be chosen Aedile a man must be at least thirty-six, to be Praetor at least thirty-nine, to be Consul at least forty-two. But though some limitations already existed, there seems to have been no settled rule. Many cases occur, both before and after the Second Punic War, in which men were elected to the Consulship at a very early age, and before they had held any other Curule office. Such was the case of Valerius Corvus in the Samnite War, of the great Scipio in the war with Hannibal. Even in later times the rule was occasionally dispensed with :

*Regulations  
for holding  
office.*

<sup>1</sup> Both Consuls were plebeian first in 172 B.C. ; both Censors first in 131.

<sup>2</sup> Cicero, *de Leg. Agr.*, ii. 10-12 ; *cf. ad Att.*, iv. 17. 2. See Ihne, iv. 9 ; and above, p. 81.

the younger Scipio was elected Consul, though he was but candidate for the Aedileship; Marius and Sulla never held the Aedileship.

There can be little doubt that this last-named office was that which was least acceptable to an active and ambitious man. The chief duties of the Aediles related to the care of the public buildings (whence their name), the celebration of the games and festivals, the order of the streets, and other matters belonging to the department of police. But the Quaestors were charged with business of a more important character. They were attached to the Consuls and Praetors as treasurers and paymasters. The tax-gatherers (*publicani*) paid into their hands all moneys received on account of the state, and out of these funds they disbursed all sums required for the use of the army, the fleet, or the civil administration. They were originally two in number, one for each Consul; but very soon they were doubled, and at the conquest of Italy they were increased to eight. Two always remained at home to conduct the business of the Treasury, the rest accompanied the Consuls and Praetors and Proconsuls to the most important provinces.

The office of Praetor was supplementary to that of the Consuls, and was at first chiefly judicial. The original Praetor was called Praetor Urbanus, or President of the City Courts. A second was added about the time when Sicily became subject to Rome, and a new court was erected for the decision of cases in which foreigners were concerned: hence the new magistrate was called Praetor Peregrinus. For the government of the two first Provinces, Sicily and Sardinia, two more Praetors were created, and when Spain was constituted as a double Province, two more, so that the whole number amounted to six. In the absence of the Consuls the Praetors presided in the Senate and in the Assembly.<sup>1</sup> They often commanded reserve armies in the field, but they were always subordinate to the Consuls, and to mark this subordinate position they were allowed only six lictors, whereas each Consul was attended by twelve.

Of the Consuls it is needless to speak in this place. Their position as the supreme executive officers of the state is sufficiently indicated in every page of the History.

To obtain each of these high offices the Roman was obliged to seek the suffrages of his fellow-citizens. They were open to the ambition of every one whose name had been entered by the Censors on the register of citizens,

*Duties of officers.*  
*Importance of wealth.*

---

<sup>1</sup> It is a disputed point whether the Praetor could preside in the Comitia Centuriata or not. See Mommisen, *Staatsrecht*, ii. 128.

provided he had reached the required age. No office, except the Censorship, was held for a longer period than twelve months; no officer received any pay or salary for his services. To defray expenses certain allowances were made from the Treasury by order of the Senate. To discharge routine duties and to conduct their correspondence each magistrate had a certain number of clerks (*scribae*), who formed what we should call the Civil Service.

But though the highest offices seemed thus absolutely open to every candidate, they were not so in practice. The Curule Aediles, for the expenses of the public games, had an allowance made them from the Treasury. But this allowance was far too small to defray the expenses of the spectacles which were expected by the People at the Great Roman Games, the Megalesian Festival, and others of less consequence.<sup>1</sup> Thus the choice was indirectly limited to those who could buy the favour of the electors by large expenditure. None could obtain the Aedileship but the wealthy,<sup>2</sup> and as all must generally pass through this office to the Consulship, none but the wealthy could rise to be Consul.

That which strikes the mind as most remarkable in the Executive Government of Rome is the short period for which each magistrate held office, and the danger of *Short tenure of office.* leaving appointments so important to the suffrages of the People at large. And this is still more striking when we remember that the same system was extended to the army itself as well as to its generals. The Romans had no standing army. Every Roman citizen between the complete ages of seventeen and forty-five, and possessing property worth at least 4000 pounds of copper, was placed on the military roll. From this roll four legions, two for each Consul, were enlisted every year, and in cases of necessity additional legions were raised. But at the close of the year's campaign these legionary soldiers had a right to be relieved. Nor were there any fixed officers. Each legion had six Tribunes and sixty Centurions, but these were chosen, like the Consuls and soldiers, fresh every year. The majority of the Tribunes were elected by the Comitia of the Tribes, and the remainder were nominated by the Consuls of the year,<sup>3</sup> the only limitation to such choice being that those

---

<sup>1</sup> The Praetor Urbanus was similarly responsible for the Apollinarian Games; the Plebeian Aediles for the Plebeian Games and those in honour of Ceres.

<sup>2</sup> *Cp.* Cic., *de Off.*, ii. 16, 57.

<sup>3</sup> *Cp.* p. 161.

appointed should have served in the legions at least five campaigns. The Centurions were then nominated by the Tribunes, subject to the approval of the Consuls.

Hence it appears that the Roman system, both in army and state, was strictly republican, that is, calculated to distribute public offices to as many citizens as possible and to prevent power being absorbed by any single man or classes of men. There were no professed statesmen or officers, but there was a large number of men who had served for a time in each capacity. There was no standing army, but there was a good militia. There was no regularly trained soldiery, but every citizen had served in his time several campaigns, and every one was something of a soldier.

*Republican  
nature of  
the system,*

But no Republic, however jealous, can rigidly carry out such a system: necessity will modify it in practice. During the Samnite Wars we find the same eminent men repeatedly elected to the Consulship, notwithstanding a provision that no man should hold this high office except at intervals of ten years. Valeirus Corvus was chosen Consul at three-and-twenty; he held the office four times in fourteen years. So also Papirius Cursor, Fabius Maximus, and others held the same sovereign office repeatedly at short intervals. In the year 326 B.C. another plan was adopted to secure permanency.<sup>1</sup> From this time it became common to continue a Consul or Praetor in his command for several successive years, with the title of Proconsul or Pro-praetor. The Proconsul also was allowed to keep part of his old army, with his Tribunes and Centurions. The hope of booty and desire to serve out his campaigns (for after a certain number of campaigns served, the legionary was exempt, even though he was much under forty-five years)<sup>2</sup> kept many soldiers in the field, and thus the nucleus of a regular army was formed by each commander. In the Punic Wars the ten-years' law was suspended altogether, and the Proconsuls were ordered to remain in office for years together.

*departed  
from in  
emergencies.*

But though the chief officers both in state and army were continually liable to change, there was a mighty power behind them, which did not change. This was the SENATE.

*Senate.*

The importance of this body can hardly be overstated. All

<sup>1</sup> Page 174.

<sup>2</sup> Such exemptions were called *emeriti*—*qui stipendia legitima fecissent*. The number of campaigns required was 20 for the infantry, 10 for the cavalry. *Cp.* Mommsen, iii. 347.

the acts of the Roman Republic ran in the name of the Senate and People,<sup>1</sup> as if the Senate were half the state, though its number hardly exceeded 300 members.

The Senate of Rome was perhaps the most remarkable assembly that the world has ever seen. Its members held their seats for life; once Senators always Senators, unless they were degraded for some dishonourable cause. But the Senatorial Peerage was not hereditary. No father could transmit the honour to his son. Each man must win it for himself.

The manner in which seats in the Senate were obtained is tolerably well ascertained. The members of this august body, all—or nearly all—owed their places to the votes of the People. In theory, indeed, the Censors still possessed the power really exercised by the Kings and early Consuls, of choosing the Senators at their own will and pleasure. But official powers, however

(1) *Office.* arbitrary, are always limited in practice. The Censors followed rules established by ancient precedent, and chose the Senate from those who had held the Quaestorship and higher magistracies.<sup>2</sup> In the interval between the two Censorships, that is in the course of five years, the number of ex-Quaestors alone must have amounted to at least forty, and this doubtless was sufficient to fill the number of vacancies which occurred in ordinary times. The first qualification then for a seat in the Senate was that of office. It is probable that to the qualification of office there was added a second, of property. Such was certainly the case in later times.<sup>3</sup> A third limitation, that of age, followed from the rule that the Senate was recruited from the list of official persons. No one could be a Senator till he was at least about thirty years of age.

Such is a sketch of the constitution of this great council during the best times of the Republic. It formed a true aristocracy. Its members, almost all, possessed the knowledge derived from the discharge of public office and from mature age. They were

<sup>1</sup> See Mommsen, in *Hermes*, iii. 262.

<sup>2</sup> This rule is said to have been first established by the *Plebiscitum Orvium*. The date of this measure is uncertain (perhaps it was carried not long after the Licinian Laws), and the only passage which mentions it (Festus s.v. *Praeteriti*) is very difficult to understand and to translate with confidence. See Herzog, i. 259, where it is cited in full. Mommsen thinks that the curule offices gave a right *de iure* to a seat in the Senate, the quaestorship only *de facto*: he supports his view by ingenious arguments, but by no direct evidence.

<sup>3</sup> Augustus finally fixed it at 1,000,000 sesterces (about £10,000).



recommended to their places by popular election, and yet secured from subserviency to popular will by the amount of their property. It was not by a mere figure of speech that the minister of Pyrrhus called the Roman Senate "an Assembly of Kings." Many of its members had exercised sovereign power ; many were preparing to exercise it.

The power of the Senate was equal to its dignity. It absorbed into its ranks a large proportion of the practical ability of the community. It was a standing council, in which all official functions were annual. And thus it is but natural that it should engross the chief business of the state.

In regard to legislation, it exercised an absolute control over the Assembly, because by custom no law could be submitted to its votes which had not originated in the Senate ; and thus the vote of the People could not do more than place a veto on a Senatorial Decree.

In respect to foreign affairs, the power of the Senate was absolute, except in declaring war or concluding treaties of peace—matters which were submitted to the votes of the People. They assigned to the Consuls and Prætors their respective provinces of administration and command ; they fixed the amount of the troops to be levied every year from the list of Roman citizens, and of the contingents to be furnished by the Italian allies. They prolonged the command of a general or superseded him at pleasure.<sup>1</sup> They estimated the sums necessary for the military chest ; nor could a sesterce be paid to the general without their order. If a Consul proved refractory, they could transfer his power for the time to a Dictator ; even if his success had been great, they could refuse him the honour of a triumph.<sup>2</sup> Ambassadors to foreign states were chosen by them and from them ; all disputes in Italy or beyond seas were referred to their sovereign arbitrement.

In the administration of home affairs, the regulation of religious matters was in their hands ; they exercised superintendence over the Pontiffs and other ministers of public worship. They appointed days for extraordinary festivals, for thanksgiving after victory, for humiliation after defeat. But, which was of highest importance, all the financial arrangements of the state were left to their discretion. The Censors, at periods usually not exceeding five years in duration, formed estimates of annual

<sup>1</sup> This was a usurpation of a power which belonged to the People.

<sup>2</sup> At any rate, they could refuse to vote him money towards the expenses of his triumph.

outlay, and provided ways and means for meeting these estimates, but always under the direction of the Senate.

In all these matters, both of home and foreign administration, their decrees had the power of law. In times of difficulty they had the power of suspending all rules of law, by the appointment of a Dictator, or by investing the Consuls with Dictatorial power.

Besides these administrative functions, they might resolve themselves into a High Court of Justice for the trial of extraordinary offences.<sup>1</sup> But in this matter they obtained far more definite authority by the Calpurnian Law, which about fifty years later (in 149 B.C.) established a standing Court of Justice to try cases of extortion in the Provinces, in which a Praetor acted as presiding judge and Senators were Jurymen.

It appears, then, that the Senate of Rome was not, like our Parliament, a merely deliberative and legislative body, but a great sovereign council, controlling every branch of administration and nearly all matters of legislation also. The Consuls and Praetors were its Ministers of Foreign and Home Affairs, the Censors its Ministers of Finance, the Quaestors its Treasurers and Paymasters, the Aediles its Superintendents of Police and Public Works. It was at the present time, and for many years later, the main-spring of the Roman Constitution.

Our attention must now be directed to the two great Legislative Assemblies of the Roman People, well known respectively under the names of the Assembly of the Centuries and the Assembly of the Tribes, which had now entirely superseded the ancient Assembly of the Curies.

At some time before the Second Punic War, a complete reform had been made in the CENTURIATE ASSEMBLY, as organised by Servius. When this was, we know not.<sup>2</sup> Nor do we know the precise nature of the reform. This only is certain, that the distribution of the whole People into Tribes was taken as the basis of division in the Centuriate Assembly as well as in the Assembly of the Tribes, and yet that the division into Classes and Centuries was still retained, as well as the division into *seniores* and *iuniores*.

It may be assumed that the whole People was convened according to its division into thirty-five Tribes; that in each Tribe account was taken of the five Classes, arranged according

<sup>1</sup> As in the case of the Bacchanalian Conspiracy in 186 B.C., p. 397.

<sup>2</sup> Niebuhr placed it in 304 B.C.; others in 241 B.C. or 220 B.C.

to an ascending scale of property;<sup>1</sup> and that in each Tribe each of the five Classes was subdivided into two Centuries, one of *seniores*, or men between forty-five and sixty, one of *iuniores* or men between eighteen and forty-five. On the whole, then, with the addition of eighteen Centuries of Knights, there would be 368 Centuries.<sup>2</sup> This plan, though it allowed far less influence to wealth than the plan of Servius, would yet leave a considerable advantage to the richer classes. For it is plain that the two Centuries of the first Class in each Tribe would contain far fewer members than the two Centuries of the second Class, those of the second fewer than those of the third, and all those of the first four together, probably, fewer than those of the fifth. Yet these four Classes having in all 280, or (with the Knights) 298 Centuries, would command an absolute majority; for the question was still decided not by the majority of persons, but by the majority of Centuries.

While the Centuriate Assembly was becoming more popular in its constitution, a still more democratic body had come into existence, namely, the PLEBEIAN ASSEMBLY IN TRIBES.

There can be no doubt that when the Centuriate Assembly was restored by the Patricians after the expulsion of Tarquin, it was intended to be the sole legislative body. The more recent Plebeian Assembly in Tribes was a spontaneous growth of popular will, not contemplated by statesmen. This assembly, originally intended to conduct the business of the Plebeian Order, gradually extended its power over the whole body politic; and its resolutions or ordinances (*plebiscita*) became laws.

The Tribunes were, as their name denotes, the chief authorities of the Tribes. They were originally invested with political power for the purpose of protecting the persons of the Plebeians from the arbitrary punishments inflicted by the Patrician magistrates. It was no doubt intended that this power should be only suspensive, so as to prevent sudden acts of violence. But the Tribunes soon assumed the license of standing absolutely between Plebeians and the law. Thus they established the celebrated right of intercession, which in course of time they extended to all matters. They forbade trials, stopped elections, put a veto on the passing of laws. So

<sup>1</sup> The sums attributed to the old Servian constitution are no doubt far too large. This was, according to Mommsen (i. 116; iii. 50), because the original census was *in land*; and those sums represent the money-value of certain measures of land at a much later period.

<sup>2</sup> Sanojca, *De com. cent. mutata ratione* (Jahresbericht d. zw. Obergymnasiums in Lemberg, 1893).

far, however, their power was only negative. But when the Plebeian Assembly obtained legislative rights, the Tribunes also obtained a positive authority. The power of the Tribunes and of the Plebeian Tribes implied each other. The Plebeian Assembly was dead without able and resolute Tribunes; the Tribunes were impotent without the democracy at their back.

This relation was at once established when the election of the Tribunes was committed to the Tribes themselves. The Tribunes soon began to summon the Tribes to discuss political questions; and the formidable authority which they now wielded appeared in the overthrow of the Decemvirate and the recognition of the Tribe Assembly as a Legislative body. The political powers gained by the Valerio-Horatian laws were confirmed and extended by the popular Dictators, Q. Publilius Philo and Q. Hortensius.<sup>1</sup>

Thus the Roman Constitution presents us with the apparent anomaly of two distinct legislative assemblies, each independent of the other; for laws passed in the one did not require the sanction of the other, as is the case with our Houses of Parliament.<sup>2</sup> Nor were any distinct provinces of action assigned respectively to each. This being so, we should expect to find the one clashing with the other; to hear of popular laws emanating from the one body, met with a counter-project from the other. But no such struggles are recorded. What, then, were the causes which prevented collisions which appear inevitable?

First, it must be remembered that, though the Centuriate Assembly had been made more democratic, yet the Tribe Assembly was very far indeed from a purely democratic body. In the latter, the suffrages were taken by the head in each of the thirty-five Tribes, and if eighteen Tribes voted one way, and seventeen another, the question was decided by the votes of the eighteen. But the eighteen rarely, if ever, contained an absolute majority of citizens. For the whole population of Rome, with all the

*Relation  
between these  
Assemblies.*

*Tribe  
Assembly  
not a pure  
democracy.*

<sup>1</sup> Page 116.

<sup>2</sup> If we hold the *comitia tributa* to be distinct from the *concilium plebis tributum* (p. 91), the matter becomes still more complicated. But there was of course no struggle between the Centuries as such and the Tribes as such. If the Consuls could summon the People in Tribes as well as in Centuries, then, using technical language, we could only look for a struggle between the *comitia centuriata* and *comitia tributa* on the one hand, and the *concilium plebis tributum* on the other. It is safest to speak of *Assemblies* of the People, so as to include the Tribe form as well as the Centuries, but this does not imply that any important difference can be traced between them.

freedmen,<sup>1</sup> were thrown into four Tribes only, and if these four Tribes were in the minority, there can be no doubt that the minority of Tribes represented a majority of voters. Thus, even in the more popular Assembly, there was not wanting a counterpoise to the will of the mere majority.

A still more effective check to collision is to be found in the fact that all measures proposed to the Tribe Assembly by the Tribunes, as well as the laws proposed by the *Sanction of* Consuls or other ministers of the state, must first *Senate.* receive the sanction of the Senate. The few exceptions which occur are where Tribunes propose a resolution granting to a popular Consul the Triumph refused by the Senate. But these exceptions only serve to prove the rule.

Our surprise that no collision is heard of between the two Assemblies now takes another form, and we are led to ask how it came that, if all measures must be first approved by the Senate, any substantial power at all could belong to the Tribes? It would seem that they *Some in-* also, like the Centuriate Assembly, could at most *dependence* exercise only a veto on measures emanating from the great *possessed by* Council. *Tribes.*

That this result did not follow is due to the rude but formidable counter-check provided by the Tribunate. The persons of the Tribunes were inviolable; but the Tribunes had power to place even Consuls under arrest. By the advance of their intercessory prerogative they gradually built up an authority capable of over-riding all other powers in the state.

We are now better able to appreciate the position of the Assemblies as legislative bodies. The Plebeian Assembly was presided over by officers of its own choice, invested with authority generally sufficient to extort from the Senate leave to bring in laws of a popular character. *Centuriate*

No such power resided in the Assemblies of the People: for the Consuls were little more than ministers of the Senate. It was natural that the more energetic will of the popular leaders should exalt their own Assembly; and as several legislative bodies could not coexist with full and independent powers, it was no less natural that the more aristocratic bodies should suffer decay. The Assemblies of the People more and more became a passive instrument in the hands of the Senate. The Plebeian Assembly rose to be the organ of popular opinion. *Assembly falls into disuse.*

In other matters, the powers of the Assemblies were more definitely marked, and the limits better observed.

In elections, the Centuriate Assembly always retained the right of choosing the chief officers of state, the Consuls, Praetors, and Censors. The Plebeian Assembly  
*Elections.* elected the Plebeian Tribunes and the Plebeian Aediles. An Assembly of the People in Tribes, whether exclusively Plebeian or not, chose the Curule Aediles, the Quaestors, the great majority of the Legionary Tribunes, and all inferior officers of state. And as the Centuries were generally obliged to elect their Praetors and Consuls out of those who had already been elected Quaestors and Aediles by the Tribes, it is manifest that the elective power of the former was controlled and over-ridden by the latter. In conferring *extraordinary* commands, such as that of Scipio in Spain, the Tribes were always consulted, not the Centuries.

In regard to jurisdiction, it has before been noticed that Rome was tender of the personal liberties of her citizens.  
*Jurisdiction.* Various laws of appeal provided for an open trial before his peers of any one charged with grave offences, such as would subject him to stripes, imprisonment, or death.<sup>1</sup> Now the Centuries alone formed a High Court of Justice for the trial of citizens; the Tribe Assembly never achieved this dangerous privilege. But the Tribunician power offered to the chief officers of the Tribes a ready means of interference; for they could use their right of intercession to prevent a trial, and thus screen real offenders from justice. But more frequently they acted on the offensive. There was a merciful provision of the law of Rome, by which a person liable to a state prosecution might withdraw from Italian soil at any time before his trial, and become the citizen of some allied city, such as Syracuse or Pergamus. But the Tribunes sometimes threw culprits into prison before trial, as in the case of App. Claudius the Decemvir and his father. Or, after a culprit had sought safety in voluntary exile, they proposed a bill of outlawry, by which he was "interdicted from fire and water" on Italian soil, and all his goods were confiscated. Offending Magistrates were also fined heavily, without trial, by special *plebiscita*, which resembled the Bills of Attainder familiar to the reader of English history.

These encroachments of the Tribunes were met by other unconstitutional measures on the part of the Senate. To bar the action of the Tribunes and to suspend the laws of appeal, they at one time had constant recourse to Dictatorial appointments. These appointments ceased after the Second Punic

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 114.



War; but after this, in critical times, the Senate assumed the right of investing the Consuls with Dictatorial power.

It must not here be forgotten that of late years circumstances had greatly exalted the power of the Senate and proportionally diminished the power of the Tribunes. In great wars, especially such as threaten the existence of a community, the voice of popular leaders is little heard. Reforms are forgotten. Agitation ceases. Each man applies his energies to avert present danger, rather than to achieve future improvements. The Senate, under the leading of old Fabius Cunctator, ruled absolutely for several years. Even elections to the Consulate which he deemed inopportune, were set aside,—a thing almost without example, before and after, in Roman constitutional history. Fabius was at length superseded by young Scipio, who in his turn became absolute, and at the close of the war might have made himself Dictator, had he been so pleased. At present, popular spirit had fallen asleep. Constitutional opposition there was none. The Senate seemed likely to retain in peace the power which war had necessarily thrown into their hands.

We will now give a brief account of the Provincial Government of Rome, in which the Latin and Italian allies are not included. Soon after the close of the Hannibalic War, Rome was in possession, nominally, of four Provinces, Sicily, Sardinia, Hither and Further Spain.

But of these, Sardinia and the Spains were almost to be conquered again. Sicily was the only Province as yet constituted on a solid foundation. To Sicily, therefore, we will confine our remarks; a course which is further recommended by the fact that we are better informed with regard to Sicily than with regard to any other of the foreign possessions of the Republic.

We must call to mind that, in speaking of Sicily as of Italy, we are not to think of the country as a whole, but as broken up into a number of civic communities, each being more or less isolated from the rest. At the close of the First Punic War, when the Romans had expelled the Carthaginians from the island, the greater part of it was formed into a Province; while the kingdom of Hiero, consisting of Syracuse, with six dependent communities,<sup>1</sup> was received into free alliance with Rome. But in the Second Punic War, Syracuse and all Sicily was reconquered by Marcellus and Laevinus, and the form of the Provincial communities was altered. The cities of Sicily were now divided into three

---

<sup>1</sup> Acrae, Leontini, Megara, Hiclorum, Netum, Tauromenium.

classes. First, there were those cities which had been taken by siege: these, twenty-six in number, were mulcted of their territory, which became part of the public land of Rome; their former citizens had perished in war, or had been sold as slaves, or were living as serfs on the soil which they had formerly owned. Secondly, there were a large number of communities, thirty-four in all, which retained the fee-simple of their land, but were burthened with payment of a tithe of corn, wine, oil, and other produce, according to a rule established by Hiero in the district subject to Syracuse. Thirdly, there were eight communities left independent, which were, like the Italians, free from all imposts.

These states were all left in possession of municipal institutions; they had the right of self-government in all local matters, with popular assemblies and councils, such as were common in Greek communities.<sup>1</sup> But all were subject to the authority of a governor, sent from Rome with the title of Praetor, whose business it was to adjudicate in all matters where the interests of Rome or of Roman citizens were concerned, and, above all, to provide for the regular payment of the imposts. In Sicily, which in those days was a well-cultivated and productive country, this department was so important that the Praetor was assisted by two Quaestors, one stationed at Syracuse, the other at Lilybaeum.<sup>2</sup>

This brief statement will show the principles of Roman Provincial government. Communities which, during the war of conquest, had joined the invaders at once or at a critical point in the war, were left free from all ordinary and annual imposts. Cities that were taken by force became, with their territory, the absolute property of Rome. Between these extremes there was a large class which retained full possession of their lands and complete local independence, but were subject to the payment of yearly imposts to the imperial treasury, which were levied on the produce of their land. All alike were obliged to contribute towards the expenses of the Praetor's court and government.

The most important distinction between the Italian and Provincial dominions of Rome consisted in taxation. It was a general rule that all Italian land was tax-free; and that all Provincial land, except such as was specified in treaties or in Decrees of the Senate, was subject to tax.

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* Mommsen, ii. 210.

<sup>2</sup> Probably Sicily was at first governed by Quaestors under the general supervision of the Consuls; the Praetor for Sicily was first appointed in 227 B.C.

*General  
principles of  
Provincial  
government.*

*Taxation.*

Hence the exemption of land from taxation was known by the technical name of *ius Italicum* or the Right of Italy.

This last distinction implies that the imperial revenues were raised chiefly from the Provinces. We will take this opportunity of giving a brief account of the different sources from which the revenues of Rome were raised.

The Imperial treasury was in the ancient Temple of Saturn, situated at the end of the Forum beneath the Capitol. Here the two Quaestors of the City deposited all the *Roman* moneys received on account of the state, and no *Treasury*. disbursements could be made without an order from an officer authorised by the Senate. The sources of receipt were two-fold, ordinary and extraordinary.

The ordinary revenues consisted of the proceeds and rent of public property, custom-duties, tolls, and the like, *Ordinary revenues*. and the tax levied on Provincial lands.<sup>1</sup>

The property of the state was, as has often been noticed, very large. Much of the public land, however, had been distributed to Colonies, and the rent received for the rest seems to have been small. Yet the quantity of undistributed land in Italy and Sicily was so great, that it must have yielded a considerable revenue. Besides this, the fisheries, with all mines and quarries, were considered public property. The manufacture of salt had been a state monopoly; the tax upon it was calculated anew in the Censorship of M. Livius, who thenceforth bore the name of Salinator, or the Salt-maker, but it probably yielded little or no profit to the state.<sup>2</sup>

Besides these rents and monopolies, custom-duties were levied on certain kinds of goods, both exports and imports, and tolls (called *portoria*) were demanded for passengers and goods carried by canals or across bridges and ferries.

There was also an *ad valorem* duty of five per cent. imposed on the manumission of slaves. This was not carried to the account of the year, but laid by as a reserve fund, not to be used except in great emergencies.

The revenue derived from the Provincial land-tax was only beginning to be productive, but in a few years it formed the chief income of the Republic.

It appears that for the civil government of the Republic the ordinary revenues were found sufficient. The current expenses, indeed, were small. The Italian and Provincial *Ordinary expenditure*. communities defrayed the expenses of their own

<sup>1</sup> See Mommsen, iii. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Ihne (iv. 160) argues on the other side.

administration. Rome herself, as we have said, claimed the services of her statesmen and administrators without paying them any public salaries.

In time of war, however, the ordinary revenues failed, and to meet the expenses of each year's campaign an extraordinary tax was levied as required. This was the *tributum* or Property-tax. Its mode of assessment marks its close association with war-expenses. We have seen above that the whole arrangement of the Centuriate Assembly was military. Not the least important of these was the Census or register of all citizens, arranged according to their age and property. It was made out by the Censors at intervals of five years, and served during the succeeding period as the basis of taxation. The necessities of each year determined the amount to be levied. It was usually one in a thousand, or one-tenth per cent. ;<sup>1</sup> but once, in the second Punic War, the rate was doubled. The Senate had the power of calling for this payment. After a time it became necessary to require wealthy individuals to furnish seamen, and to advance money by way of loan ; and contracts were formed with commercial companies to furnish stores and clothing for the army, in return for which they received orders on the treasury payable at some future time. The obligations thus contracted were not left as a national debt. The first instalment of repayment was made even before the submission of Carthage ; the second and third at successive intervals of four years.

At last, in the year 167 B.C., the payments exacted from the Provincials became so large that the Senate was enabled to dispense with extraordinary taxes altogether ; and thus the ordinary revenues sufficed for the expenses of all future wars, as well as for the civil administration.

The allied communities of Italy, the Municipia and Colonies, were free from all direct burthens, except in time of war. Then each community was required, according to a scale furnished by its own Censor, to supply contingents of soldiery to the Roman army, such contingents bearing a proportion to the number of legions levied by the Romans themselves in any given year. The Italian soldiery were fed by Rome, but their equipments and pay were provided at the expense of their own states ; and therefore it is plain that every

---

<sup>1</sup> This was the *simplex tributum*. The word *tributum* was used because this war-tax was collected in each *tribe* according to the assessment of the Censors. The tribe-officers who collected it were the *tribuni aerarii*. See *Dict. Ant. s.v.*

Italian community was indirectly subject to a war-tax.<sup>1</sup> But though these communities suffered the burthens of war like Rome, they did not like Rome profit by war. The war-tax paid by Roman citizens was in fact a compulsory loan, which was repaid from the treasury at the close of the war. But though Romans and Italians paid the tax alike, the repayment was confined to Romans. The soldiers of the Latin and Italian towns obtained their share of booty; but their citizens at home received no direct reimbursement for their outlay. Moneys paid into the Roman treasury were applicable to Roman purposes only. The Italians, though they shared the danger and the expense, were not allowed to share the profit. Here was a fertile field for discontent, which afterwards bore fatal fruits.

In the Provinces, on the other hand, little military service was required: but direct imposts were levied instead.

This system was itself galling and onerous. It was as if England were to defray the expenses of her own administration from the proceeds of a tax levied upon her Indian Empire. But the system was made much worse *Taxation in  
the Provinces.* by the way in which the taxes were collected. This was often done by contract. Every five years the taxes of the Provinces were put up to public auction; and that company of contractors which outbade the rest received the contract. The farmers of the taxes, therefore, offered to pay a certain sum to the imperial treasury for the right of collecting the taxes and imposts of each Province, gave security for payment, and then made what profit they could out of the taxes collected. The members of these companies were called *publicani*, and the farmers-general, or chiefs of the companies, bore the name of *mancipes*.<sup>2</sup> It is manifest that this system offered a premium on extortion: for the more the tax-collectors could wring from the Provincials, the more they would have for themselves. The extortions incident to this system form a principal topic in the Provincial history of Rome.

AUTHORITIES.—Besides the works dealing specially with Roman Constitution and Constitutional History (see p. 86), the following may be consulted with advantage:—Ihne, *Hist. of Rome*, iv. Bk. vi.; Pelham, *Outlines of Roman History*, Bk. iii. ch. 3. On the provinces, see W. T. Arnold, *Roman Provincial Administration* (Arnold Essay, 1879); Marquardt, *Röm. Staatsverw.*, i.

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* Mommsen, ii. 54.

<sup>2</sup> Deloume, *Les manieurs d'argent à Rome*.

## CHAPTER XXXII

### SOCIAL AND INTELLECTUAL CONDITION OF THE PEOPLE, MANNERS—RELIGION—LITERATURE—ART.

THE age of which we have been treating, from the Samnite War to the close of the Second Punic War, was always considered by the Romans, and is still considered by their admirers, to have been the golden age of the republic. *Golden Age of Rome.* A people which handed down the legends of Cincinnatus, Curius, Fabricius, Regulus, can hardly not have practised the thrift and honesty which they admired. The characters are no doubt idealised ; but they may be taken as types of their times. In the Roman country districts, and still more in the Apennine valleys, the habits of life were no doubt simple, honest, and perhaps rude, of Sabine rather than of Hellenic character, the life of countrymen rather than of dwellers in the town.

It has been remarked that the Italians, like the Greeks, must be regarded as members of cities or civic communities. But the walled towns which were the centres of each *The towns.* community were mostly the residence of the chief men and their dependents and slaves, while the mass of the free citizens were dispersed over the adjoining country district, dwelling on their own farms, and resorting to the town only to bring their produce to market or to take their part in the political business transacted at the general assemblies. Such was the case at Rome in early times. The great Patrician lords with their families dwelt in strong houses or castles on the Capitoline, Palatine and Quirinal Hills, while their clients thronged the lower parts adjacent. As the Plebeians increased in wealth and power, their great men established themselves at first upon the Caelian and Aventine, and afterwards indiscriminately on all the Hills.

In the country districts of Rome the greater part of the land



was still in the hands of small proprietors, who tilled their own lands by the aid of their sons and sons-in-law. In *The country districts.* the earliest times the dimensions of these Plebeian holdings were incredibly small, an allotment being computed at not more than 2 *iugera* (about  $1\frac{1}{4}$  acres).<sup>1</sup> Even with very fertile soil and unremitting labour, such a piece of land could barely maintain a family. But to eke out the produce of their tilled lands, every free citizen had a right to feed a certain number of cattle on the common pastures at the expense of a small payment to the state; and in this way even a large family might live in rude abundance. In no long time, however, the Plebeian allotments were increased to 7 *iugera* (about  $4\frac{1}{2}$  acres); and this increase of tilled lands indicates a corresponding improvement in the habits and comforts of the people,—an improvement attributed, as all benefits conferred on the Plebeians in early times were attributed, to King Servius. And this long remained the normal size of the small properties then so common in the Roman district. The farm and public pasture produced all that the family required,—not only food, but flax and wool which the matron and her daughters dressed and spun and wove, wood and stone for building and farm implements, everything except metals and salt, which were (as we have seen) state monopolies.

But a golden age generally comes to an end with increase of population. Mouths to be fed multiply; the yeomen sell their little farms and emigrate, or become satisfied with a lower scale of living as hired labourers. *Colonies to relieve over-population.* The Romans had a remedy for these evils in a home colonisation. The immense quantity of public land in the hands of the state, with the necessity of securing newly-conquered districts of Italy, led to the foundation of numerous Colonies between the Samnite and Punic Wars, and extended the means of material well-being to every one who was willing and able to work, and this not only for Romans, but for Latins and others who were invited to become citizens of the Colony.

If, however, the superfluous sons of families settled on lands in Samnium, or Apulia, or Cisalpine Gaul, others must have lost these lands; and the question naturally occurs: What had become of these people? *Slavery.* This question brings us to the worst point in ancient society,—that is, Slavery.

It was the practice of ancient nations to regard all conquered

---

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen argues (i. 239) that these allotments can only have been meant for garden-ground.

persons in the light of booty, as completely as cattle or lifeless goods. If indeed the enemy surrendered without a blow, they became subjects. But those who were taken after a struggle were for the most part sold into slavery. In early times this evil was small. Nor was it to be expected that the small proprietors could afford either to buy or to maintain slaves. They were acquired by the rich Patricians and Plebeians, who held large tracks of public land, or who had acquired large estates of their own. Before the Decemvirate, their debtors were their slaves. But this custom had been long abolished, and it was conquest which supplied slaves to the rich. After the conquest of Samnium, after the reduction of Cisalpine Gaul and Sicily, very large numbers of captives were brought to the hammer. These were the wretches on whose lands the poorer sort of Roman citizens settled. The slaves may generally be divided into two great classes, the urban or city slaves, and those of the country. They had no civil rights; they could not contract legal marriage; they had no power over their children; they could hold no property in their own name; their very savings were not their own, but held by consent of their master;<sup>1</sup> all law proceedings ran in the name of their masters. For crimes committed, they were tried by the public courts; and the masters were held liable for the damage done, but only to the extent of the slave's value. To kill, maim, or maltreat a slave, was considered as damage to his master, and could only be treated as such. No pain or suffering inflicted on a slave was punishable, unless loss had thereby accrued to the owner.

But human nature is too strong always to fulfil conditions so cruel. There is no doubt that the slaves of the household were often treated with kindness; often they became the confidential advisers of their masters. The steward or bailiff of a rich man's estate, his *villicus*, was a person of considerable power.<sup>2</sup> Still, the mass of the slaves, especially the agricultural slaves, were treated as mere cattle. Some poor drudges were the slaves of other slaves, such ownership being allowed by the masters. Cato recommends to sell off old and infirm slaves, so as to save the expense of keeping live lumber. Englishmen feel a pang at seeing a fine horse consigned in his old age to the drivers of public carriages; but Romans wasted no such sympathy on slaves who had spent their lives and strength in

---

<sup>1</sup> *Peculium* (i.e. *pecuniolum*) was the name of such savings; *cp.* Mommsen, i. 238.

<sup>2</sup> Mommsen, iii. 68.

cultivating their lands. Notwithstanding the better treatment of the house-slaves, the humane Cicero reproached himself with feeling too much sorrow for one who had been for years his tried and faithful servant. It was in the half-century following the Second Punic War, however, that slaves increased so much in Italy as to produce great effect upon the social condition of the people. At present the evil was only in its beginning.

Here it must be remarked that the practice of giving liberty to slaves was very common. The prospect of freedom as a reward for good conduct must have done much to prevent Roman bondsmen from sinking into that state of animal contentment and listless indifference which marked the negro slaves of modern times.

The freedmen filled no mean space in Roman society. Among them were to be found able and well-educated men who had held a high station in their native country, *The freed-* and often obtained great influence over the minds *men.* of their masters. Freedmen exercised most branches of retail trade, and formed the shopkeepers and petty traders and artizans of Rome: for Roman citizens, however poor, could in early times condescend to no business except that of agriculture. Rich men carried on trades by means of their slaves and freedmen; in later times freedmen often worked as artists under some Patrician roof, and many of the early poets were freedmen.<sup>1</sup>

We have seen that, before the close of the Samnite wars, App. Claudius conceived the plan of creating a political body out of the freedmen, but that they were again thrown back into the four City Tribes, so that now when the Tribes were thirty-five, the votes of the freedmen availed only as 4 to 31.<sup>2</sup>

Here then we trace the beginning of a great distinction, that afterwards was more strongly marked, between the population of the city and the population of the country,—between the rustic and the civic Tribes.

At the time of which we write, a patriarchal rule prevailed in the family. In early ages the refusal of the Patricians to recognise any right of legal marriage between themselves and the Plebeians must have frequently led to illicit *Family life.* connections. But this unnatural severance between the Orders was the first to give way; and after the Canuleian Law, the simple marriage-rite of the Plebeians was held equally binding

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen, ii. 83.

<sup>2</sup> For the subsequent history of this question, see Ihne, iv. 35.

upon all as the more solemn vows of the Patrician form.<sup>1</sup> It is a noteworthy fact, that Sp. Carvilius was the first person who put away his wife, and that this first example of divorce occurs as late as the year 231 B.C.<sup>2</sup> This observance of *Marriage.* marriage as a sacred bond is striking. From it was derived the pure and lofty character of the ancient Roman matron. At Rome it was not by clever and fascinating courtesans, such as Aspasia and Thaïs, but by wives and mothers, such as Lucretia and Volumnia in the legends, such as Cornelia the mother of the Gracchi in actual history, that noble wishes and heroic thoughts were inspired into the hearts of the men. The chastity and frugality of the women found an answer in the temperance and self-devotion of the men. This is the more remarkable, since by the Roman law married women had no personal rights: they were subject to their husbands as absolutely as if they had been slaves.

The same patriarchal power belonged to the father over his children, unless he thought fit to emancipate them, a process *Parental* which was conducted with the same forms as the *authority.* manumission of a slave. It was a terrible power; yet we seldom hear of its being abused. Such a system no doubt prevented all gentleness of filial love. The old Romans had but one word—*pictus*—to express the veneration due from children to parents and from men to gods. But the sterner exercise of parental authority, with the general purity of morals, preserved youth from that wild intemperance, both of action and thought, which has often injured nations.

There can be little doubt that the simple morality of the times, maintained by habitual deference to *Religion.* authority, was confirmed by the higher sanction of Religion.

The Religion of Rome was, as the legends assert, of Sabine origin. Much of its ceremonial, the names of many of its gods, *Its influence* were Etruscan: and Hellenic mythology began, at *on morality.* an early time, to mingle itself in the simple religious faith of the Sabine countrymen. But this is a matter of obscure antiquity. The important question in the history of all religions, is now far they exert power over the lives of their professors. That the old faith of Rome was not without such power in the

<sup>1</sup> If two Plebeians lived together for a year, this was enough to constitute *matrimonium* by *usus*. But the union of Patricians required certain religious rites, called *confarreatio*. See Marquardt, *Privatleben d. Römer*, 30. *Dict. Ant.* "MATRIMONIUM."

<sup>2</sup> Ihne (iv. 229) throws doubts on this traditional view.

times of which we speak is unquestionable.<sup>1</sup> The simple Roman husbandman lived and died, like his Sabine ancestors, in the fear of the gods ; he believed that there was something in the universe higher and better than himself ; that by these higher powers his life and actions were watched ; that to these powers good deeds and an honest life were pleasing, evil deeds and bad faith hateful. The principles thus established long remained, as is confirmed by the weighty testimony of Polybius. "If," says he, "you lend a single talent to a Greek, binding him by all possible securities, yet he will break faith. But Roman Magistrates, accustomed to have immense sums of money pass through their hands, are restrained from fraud simply by respect for the sanctity of an oath."

The Religion of Rome was wholly subject to the state. It had no clergy set apart and paid by special funds. The Pontiffs, Augurs, and Flamens, indeed, formed close corporations with the right of filling up vacancies in their respective colleges by coöptation ; but in later times they were elected at the Comitia.

But while morality, good faith, and self-denial prevailed among themselves, it is clear that the Romans laid no such restrictions upon their dealings with other nations. This great defect is common to Rome with all antiquity. The calmest Greek philosopher, Aristotle, regarded barbarians as naturally the slaves of Greeks. International Law was unknown, except in certain formalities observed in declaring war and making peace, and in the respect paid to the persons of ambassadors. This absence of common humanity and generosity to foreigners appears in many pages of this History, in none more strongly than in that which records the treatment of the Samnite leader, C. Pontius. Gleams of better feeling appear in the war with Pyrrhus : the chivalric character of the king awakened something of a kindred spirit in the stern and rigid Romans. But nothing could be more ungenerous than the conduct of Rome to Carthage after the Mercenary War ; and still baser pieces of diplomacy occur in the subsequent dealings of the Senate with the Achæans and with Carthage.

*Absence of  
humanity  
towards  
foreigners.*

We have now to speak of the intellectual condition of the people.

By the close of the First Punic War the language of the

---

<sup>1</sup> A story related by all our authorities (see Lewis, ii. 104) shows that religion imposed limits on the arbitrary punishment of slaves.

Romans had already been moulded into a clear, uniform, and nervous instrument of thought. The oldest specimen extant of the Latin tongue is a Hymn of the *Formation of Latin language.* Fratres Arvales, a rural priesthood, who used to go round the fields in spring, praying the earth to yield her increase. Its language is as different from the Latin of Horace as the English of Wyclif's Bible is from that of Dryden. Its antiquated forms recur in Inscriptions and Laws down to a late period; for the Romans, like ourselves, did not easily relinquish old forms. But fragments remain which were written between the First and Second Punic Wars; and these, if the ancient forms of spelling are altered, exhibit Latin in its complete form.

A change also had taken place in the versification. The oldest Roman rhythm is Saturnian,<sup>1</sup> a kind of verse which *Versification.* much resembled our own ballad-metre, being regulated by accent or cadence solely, without regard to the laws of quantity observed by Greek and later Latin writers. But at the time of the Punic Wars we find the forms of Greek metres already established.

The revolution here indicated is no doubt due to the Hellenic influences which began to prevail at Rome after the conquest of Lower Italy and Sicily. The *Beginnings of Roman literature.* destiny of Latin has been far different from that of our own tongue. While English can boast of a more vigorous native literature than any language except Greek, Latin is perhaps of all the most destitute of originality. The germs of a rude literature existed in the ancient lays and legends. The Romans, also, from the earliest times, seem to have been fond of dramatic representations. The Atellan Fables<sup>2</sup> were originally extemporaneous pieces, but received literary treatment in the time of Sulla, and survived in this form till the beginning of the Empire. The *mimi* (generally used as *exodia* or after-plays) perhaps still survive in the Pulcinello of modern Italy. The Fescennine verses were probably the original of the only kind of literature which the Romans claim as their own,—that is, the *satura* or satire, a lively and caustic criticism of the foibles and follies of the day.<sup>3</sup> Dramatic exhibitions are said to have been first borrowed from the Etruscans in the year 364 B.C., when a pestilence was

<sup>1</sup> The name appears to mean "old" or "antiquated."

<sup>2</sup> They take their name from Atella in Campania: hence the expression "Osci ludi."

<sup>3</sup> The name is supposed to be derived from *satura lanx* ("hodge-podge"), with reference to the miscellaneous nature of the contents.



raging at Rome ; but at this time the drama was a mere name, —the story being told by means of dancing and gesticulation, with music, but without words. The Roman drama however, such as we know it, was not so much borrowed or imitated as translated from the Greek originals. It arose in the period of tranquillity after the First Punic War, when the Temple of Janus was shut for a brief period. The vast increase of wealth which the Romans had lately won was of itself sufficient to give a stimulus to intellectual exertion as great as the Athenians received from their triumphs over the Persians. But the Romans were not called upon to make this exertion. In the conquered cities of Tarentum and Syracuse the Romans found a literature of unrivalled excellence, and it was not their nature to pursue with labour what they could adopt ready made. From this time dates the growth of the Graeco-Roman literature. In the well-known words of Horace, “captive Greece took captive her rude conqueror.”

The first author of whom we hear as presenting a finished drama to a Roman audience was a Greek named Andronicus. He was taken prisoner at the capture of Tarentum *Livius* in 272 B.C., and probably became the slave of *Andronicus*. M. Livius Salinator. Afterwards he was set free, when (according to custom) he adopted the gentile name of his late master, adding his own name as a family appellation. Thus he became known as Livius Andronicus. His first piece was represented about thirty years after his captivity, in which time he had mastered Latin completely, and added to it the polish of his native Greek. His plays continued to be read in the times of Cicero and Horace ; and though these authors speak of them with little respect, the fact that they were used as a text-book for boys at the school of Orbilius, when Horace himself was there, shows that they must have been written in a clear and grammatical style. Their titles—*Aegisthus*, *Ajax*, *Helena*, and the like—show from what source they were borrowed.

A brave stand against the new Hellenising fashion was made by Cn. Naevius, probably a Campanian by birth. His name shows that he was not a Greek : the fact that he served in the Roman armies during the First Punic War proves that he was a free citizen. In his earlier days he followed the example set by Andronicus, so far as to translate Greek dramas. The names preserved show that, among the masters of Attic Tragedy, Euripides was his favourite. Naevius, however, was of comic rather than of tragic vein, and he maintained the licence of the old Fescennine songs in attacking the

foibles of the great men of his day. He lampooned the conqueror of Hannibal for licentious practices in early youth, but we do not hear that Scipio condescended to notice the libel. Soon after, however, the poet ventured to assail the powerful family of the Metelli, saying that

fató Metélli Római fiunt cónsulés.  
(The Metelli gain their honours not by merit, but by destiny.)

The Metelli, or their family bard, retorted in Saturnian verse

dabúnt malúm Metélli, Naévió poétae.

And they were as good as their word. He was thrown into prison, and remained there long enough to compose two plays. He was set free by the Tribunes on writing a recantation of his libels. But he could not refrain from fresh attacks on the Senatorial Nobility, which at the close of the Second Punic War had become so powerful; and he was obliged to flee to Utica, where he died.<sup>1</sup> He employed his latter days in the work which made his name most famous, namely, in a sort of epic poem on the First Punic War, with accounts of early Roman history introduced. The loss of this poem of Naevius may be considered as the greatest loss which Latin literature has sustained.

The bold and independent character of Naevius appears from the epitaph he is said to have composed for himself. It is in Saturnian verse, and mournfully complains of the predominance which Greeks were daily gaining over the ancient Latin poetry :

inmórtalés mortáles sí forét fas flére,  
flerént divaé Caménae Naéviúm poétam :  
itáque póstquam est órçi tráditús thesaúro,  
oblíti súnť Rómaí loquíér linguá Latína.<sup>2</sup>

But at the very time when Naevius, with the ardour of youth, was beginning first to imitate and then to oppose the Greek models introduced by Livius Andronicus, was born the man who fixed the Greek metres and forms of poetry irrevocably in Latin usage, and crushed for ever the old Roman lays. This was Q.

*Ennius*, a native of Rudiae in Calabria, an Italian probably by blood, a Greek by education, whose birth-year is fixed at 239 B.C. In early youth he settled in Sardinia, and from this island he was brought to Rome by Cato in 204, when he was now in his thirty-sixth year. He lived in a

<sup>1</sup> The date of his death is uncertain ; see Mommsen, iii. 158.

<sup>2</sup> It is doubtful whether this epitaph, or that of Ennius, quoted below, are really by the poets themselves; more probably they are later compositions.

small house on the Aventine, and earned a frugal living for many years by teaching Greek to the young nobles. In this period he must have acquired that mastery over the Latin tongue which is so plainly marked in the fragments of his poems which remain. He died in 169 B.C. at the age of seventy. In his latter years he suffered both from poverty and disease, which he bore with fortitude ; the disease was caused by his too great fondness for jovial living. He fulfilled the forebodings of Naevius : for him, too, the Camenae, or Latin Muses, wept ; after his time Romans strove in all things to be Greek. The epitaph he is said to have written, to be placed under his bust, marks a consciousness of triumph :—

aspicite, o cives, senis Enni imaginis formam :  
hic vestrum panxit maxuma facta patrum.  
nemo me lacrumis decoret, nec funera fletu  
faxit cur ? volito vivus per ora virum.

As his works belong entirely to the age which form the subjects of the next Book, we will reserve our notice of them.

The first writers of prose at Rome were the chroniclers Q. Fabius Pictor and L. Cincius Alimentus, who were both in their manhood before the invasion of Hannibal. *Historians of Rome.* Fabius served in the Gallic War of 225, rose to be a Senator, and was sent on an embassy to consult the Delphic Oracle after the disaster of Cannae. Cincius was somewhat younger ; he also became a Senator. At one time he fell into the hands of Hannibal, and some of his statements with regard to the war were derived from the lips of the great Carthaginian himself. The principal matter treated by both these writers was that which then absorbed all interest ; they wrote chronicles of the Second Punic War, and both prefixed a summary of early Roman History. Cincius seems to have been the more trustworthy : family partialities often misled Fabius. It is to be noted that they both wrote in Greek, which was then the language of the learned, just as Latin was used by all European writers during the Middle Ages.

If Hellenic forms of thought and speech invaded the domain of literature, much more was this the case with the arts of design. There are not wanting examples to show *Early Roman Art.* that before this time sculpture and painting were held in honour at Rome. Statues were erected in the Forum to honour divers great men of olden time. Many temples were built in thanksgiving for victories, most of which were adorned by Etruscan or Greek artists.<sup>1</sup> The Temple of Salus was orna-

<sup>1</sup> The Temple of Capitoline Jupiter, dedicated by Tarquin, is said to have contained a terra-cotta statue by a Veientine artist ; Sicilian

mented about 305 B.C. by paintings from the hand of that C. Fabius who adopted the name of Pictor and transmitted it as an honour to his family. The Ogulnii, in their Aedileship (296 B.C.), set up a bronze group representing the Wolf suckling the Twins. The Consul Carvilius (in 293 B.C.) employed part of the spoils taken from the Samnites in setting up a colossal bronze statue on the Capitoline. A painting of the battle in which the Romans defeated Hiero in 263 adorned the wall of the Senate-House.

Of these works, and others not recorded by history, no trace remains except the famous Wolf now preserved in the Capitoline Museum. The Twins have been restored, but the animal is probably the original work noticed by Cicero and Livy.<sup>1</sup> It bears the well-known marks of the archaic Greek art in the sharp, rigid forms of the limbs and muscles, the peculiar expression of the face, and the regular knots of hair about the neck and head. Here, then, we trace Hellenic artists at Rome.<sup>2</sup> Others of the works mentioned are expressly assigned to Etruscan artists; and it may be remarked that Fabius, the only native artist of whom we hear, belonged to a family always associated in history with Etruscans.

But when Rome had conquered southern Italy, she was brought at once in contact with works of the finest Greek art. No coins of old Greece are so beautiful as those of her colonial settlements in the West; and it is in the coins of Rome that we first trace the indisputable effect of Greek art.

Up to the time when Italy was conquered, the Romans had used only copper money of a most clumsy and inconvenient kind. A pound of this metal by weight was stamped with the rude effigy of a ship's prow, and this was the original *as* or *libra*. Gradually the *as* was reduced in weight till by 268 B.C. it had become only  $\frac{1}{16}$ th of the *libra* by weight;<sup>3</sup> yet it retained its ancient name, just as our pound sterling of silver, originally equivalent to a pound Troy-weight, is now not more than  $\frac{1}{3}$ rd, or as the French *livre*, when its use was discontinued, was only about  $\frac{1}{72}$ nd of that weight. But even this diminished coin was clumsy for use, as trade

---

artists worked at the Temple of Ceres dedicated in 496 B.C. (Marquardt, *Privatleben d. Römer*, 621).

<sup>1</sup> Page 17. In the illustration the twins are omitted.

<sup>2</sup> Some consider the Wolf to be an Etruscan work. (Baumeister, *Denkmäler d. klass. Altertums*, p. 512).

<sup>3</sup> When the pound of weight ceased to be the same with the pound of currency, the former was usually designated *aes grave*.



*Aes signatum* (reverse). An old form of Roman bronze money.









increased with increasing empire. After the conquest of southern Italy the precious metals became more plentiful, and the coinage of the conquered cities supplied beautiful models. The first *denarius*, or silver piece of ten *asses*, was struck in the year 268 B.C., and is evidently imitated from the coins of Magna Graecia. The Roman generals who commanded in these districts stamped money for the use of their armies with the old insignia of the conquered cities. The workmanship is indeed inferior to the best specimens of Hellenic coins, but far superior to anything Roman, before or after. Gold coins of similar model were not struck till during the Hannibalic War (beginning about 217 B.C.). Roman coins belonging to the last century of the Republic, of which we possess a very great number, frequently bear the family emblems of the person who presided over the mint, or of the Consuls for whose use they were struck ; but the execution always remained rude and unattractive.

Afterwards, Roman conquest gave the means of supplying works of art by the easier mode of appropriation. In the conquest of Etruria, years before, the practice had been begun : from Vulsinii alone we read that 2000 statues were brought to Rome. In following years Agrigentum, Syracuse, Corinth, and other famous cities, sent the finest works of Hellenic art to decorate the public buildings and public places of the barbarous city of the Tiber, or in many cases to ornament the villas of the rapacious generals.

In the more intellectual even of the useful arts the Romans made no great progress. The contrivances of Archimedes for the defence of Syracuse struck them with amazement. In Cicero's time they usually carried the sciences of number and magnitude no further than was necessary for practical arithmetic and mensuration. In 293 B.C. L. Papirius Cursor the younger set up a sun-dial at Rome ; or, as others say, it was brought from Sicily thirty years later by the Consul M'. Valerius Messala ; but no one knew how to place it, so as to make the shadow of the gnomon an index of time. A water-clock, resembling our sand-glass, was not introduced till 159 B.C.

Nor were the common conveniences of life in an advanced state. To the time of the war with Pyrrhus, and probably later, the houses were roofed with shingles of wood, like the Alpine cottages of our days ; after that time earthen tiles began to supersede this rude material. Agriculture must have been roughly carried on by men who were as much soldiers as countrymen. The wine of Latium was so bad that Cineas, when he tasted

*Statues  
brought to  
Rome.*

*Mechanical  
arts.*

*House-  
building.*

*Agriculture.*

it, said—and the witticism was remembered—"he did not wonder that the mother of such wine was hung so high;" alluding to the Italian custom, still retained, of training the vine up elms and poplars, while in Greece it was trained (as in France and Germany) on short poles and exposed to all the heat of the sun.

A form of architecture called the Tuscan was mostly used, which bore an imperfect resemblance to that early Greek style usually called the Doric. But the existing remains

*Architecture.*

of the Republican period are too scanty to allow of any precise statements. The true arts of Rome were, then and always, the arts of the builder and engineer. It would not be wrong to call the Romans the greatest builders in the world. Some of their mighty works, works combining solidity of structure with beauty of form and utility of purpose, still remain for our admiration, having survived the decay of ages and the more destructive hands of barbarian conquerors. In every country subject to their sway, roads and bridges and aqueducts remain in sufficient number and perfection to justify all praise. We class the roads among the build-

*Roads.*

ings, according to their own phraseology,<sup>1</sup> and their construction deserves the name as justly as the works upon our own railways. The first great military road and the first aqueduct are due to the old Censor Appius Caecus, and they both remain to preserve the memory of the man, often self-willed and presumptuous, but resolute, firm of purpose, noble in conception, and audacious in execution. Other aqueducts and other roads rapidly followed; the spade and trowel were as much the instruments of Roman dominion as the sword and spear. By the close of the Punic Wars solid roads, carried by the engineer's art over broad and rapid streams, through difficult mountain-passes, across quaking morasses, had already linked Rome with Capua in the south, with Placentia and Cremona in the north. Such were the proud monuments of the Appii, the Aemilii, the Flaminii.

It may be said that these magnificent works, as well as the vast Amphitheatres and Baths which afterwards decorated

*Use of the arch.*

Rome and every petty city in her provinces, were due to the invention of the arch. This simple piece of mechanism, so wonderful in its results, first appears in the Great Cloaca. It was unknown to the Greeks, or at least not used by them in the best period of their architecture. It may be that the Romans borrowed it from the Etruscans;

<sup>1</sup> *Munire viam*, was their phrase.

the Cloaca is attributed to an Etruscan king, and similar works are discovered in ruined cities of Etruria. But if they borrowed the principle, they used it nobly, as witness the noble bridges still remaining, the copious streams carried over the plain for miles at the height of sixty or seventy feet from the level of the soil. If they had little feeling for beauty and delicacy in the use of the pencil or the chisel, their buildings are stamped with a greatness which exalted the power of the state while it disregarded the pleasure of the individual.

Their attention to practical utility in draining and watering their city is especially noted by Strabo in contrast with the indifference shown by the Greeks to these matters.<sup>1</sup> To the facts already stated may be added their *Sanitary rules.* rule, established in early times, that no one should be buried within the city,—a rule only recently adopted in our own country. From this time dates the beginning of those rows of sepulchral monuments which the traveller beheld on either side of the road as he entered the Eternal City. It was a gloomy custom, but better at least than leaving graveyards in the heart of crowded cities.

A striking proof of engineering skill is shown in the tunnels cut through solid rock for the purpose of draining off volcanic lakes: this art we may also believe to have been originally borrowed from the Etruscans. The first *Tunnels.* tunnel of which we hear was that by which the Alban Lake was partially let off during the siege of Veii, a work which was suggested by an Etruscan soothsayer. Other works of like kind still remain, though the time of their execution is not always known. Here shall be added the notice of one work of kindred sort, which happens by a rare coincidence to combine great utility with rarest beauty. The famous M<sup>o</sup>. Curius Dentatus, when Censor in 272, cut a passage through the rock, by which the waters of Lake Velinus were precipitated into the Nar. By this means he recovered for his newly-conquered Sabine clients a large portion of fertile land, and created the most lovely, if not the most sublime, of all waterfalls. The Falls of Terni, such is the famous name they now bear, were wrought by the hand of man. "Thousands of travellers visit them" says Niebuhr; "how few know that they are not the work of Nature!"<sup>2</sup>

AUTHORITIES.—For the life and manners of the Romans, see Marquardt, *Privatleben der Römer*; as well as the articles in *Dict.*

<sup>1</sup> Strabo, v. 235.

<sup>2</sup> See Furneaux' note on Tac., *Ann.*, i. 79. 3; *cp.* Cic. *ad Att.*, iv. 15. 5.

*Ant.* For Roman Religion : Marquardt, *Röm. Staatsverw.*, iii. For the history of Roman Literature : Teuffel, *History of Roman Literature*, i. (Eng tr. by G. C. W. Warr); Cruttwell, *History of Roman Literature*; Simcox, *History of Latin Literature*, i. ; Mackail, *Latin Literature*; Wordsworth, *Fragments and Specimens of Early Latin*. On the other subjects mentioned in this chapter, the reader should consult the corresponding articles in *Dict. Ant.*, with the literature there quoted.





Coin of Ptolemy Philadelphus (Head, *H.N.*, 713).

## BOOK V

# ROME AND THE CONQUEST OF THE WORLD

(B.C. 201—131.)

### CHAPTER XXXIII

#### INTRODUCTORY : STATE OF THE EASTERN WORLD

So far, the countries round the Mediterranean had been divided, as it were, into two worlds, the western and the eastern : the western, in which Rome and Carthage were struggling for mastery ; the eastern, in which the Macedonian successors of Alexander the Great were wasting their strength in wars. But from the moment that Philip V. of Macedon entered into alliance with Hannibal, the line of separation had been broken ; and Rome only waited her time to break in upon the enervated nations of the East. That time came, when the battle of Zama had delivered her from the fear of Carthage.

At the death of Alexander in 323 B.C., his vast empire fell into distinct portions. The generals of the great king at first governed these provinces as Viceroy's in the interest of Alexander's infant son. But this child was set aside ; and within twenty years of the king's death these imperial governors assumed the title of sovereigns. Ptolemy became king of Egypt ; Seleucus, of Babylonia and the East ; Antigonos, with his son Demetrius, of Syria and Asia Minor ; Lysimachus, of Thrace ; Cassander, of Macedonia, with authority over the whole of Greece.

Of these soldier-kings, the most ambitious of all were the kings of Syria, Antigonus and Demetrius. All the other sovereigns combined against these two ; a general war followed ; and at the battle of Ipsus in Phrygia, Antigonus lost his life, Demetrius his kingdom.<sup>1</sup> Seleucus became master of the greater part of Asia Minor and of northern Syria : Phoenicia and Coelé-Syria fell into the hands of the king of Egypt.

We must add a brief account of these kingdoms down to the period of the Second Punic War.

Egypt enjoyed long tranquillity. In the course of the eighty years which followed the battle of Ipsus, the kings of Egypt quietly extended their sway over parts of Arabia and Libya, as well as lower Syria, and became masters of Lycia and Caria, of Cyprus and the Cyclades. The flourishing republic of Rhodes was their ally. Trade flourished ; art and literature reached a height unknown since the best days of Athens : the natural sciences were cultivated with unexampled success. Alexandria increased daily in wealth and population, and became (as its great founder intended) the chief seat of trade between the East and West. Yet this prosperity was not long-lived. The decline of the monarchy may be dated from the accession of the fourth Ptolemy, surnamed Philopator (222 B.C.) ; and so rapid was it, that after his death in 205 B.C., towards the close of the Second Punic War, the ministers of his infant son Epiphanes were obliged to look around for some powerful patron to defend the inheritance of their master from the kings of Macedon and Syria, who had impudently agreed to divide it between them.

Now in the year 273 B.C., Philadelphus had formed an alliance with Rome ;<sup>2</sup> and her attitude of superiority after the struggle with Carthage now attracted the notice of all the Mediterranean nations. The Senate, therefore, were requested to become guardians of the boy-king, and they accepted the office.

After the death of Seleucus, the monarchy of SYRIA fell into decay. This monarch shifted the seat of government from Babylon to his new city of Antiocheia (Antioch) on the Orontes, and thus the eastern provinces were left open to the inroads of the Parthians. Asia Minor also was lost to the monarchy ; Caria and Lycia fell into the hands of the Egyptian sovereigns ; Bithynia, Cappadocia, and

<sup>1</sup> See above, p. 207.

<sup>2</sup> P. 217. The Romans offered to assist Egypt against Syria after the end of the First Punic War.

Pontus became independent principalities ; northern Phrygia was occupied by hosts of vagrant Gauls, who gave name to the district called Galatia ; a Greek eunuch, named Philetaerus, treasurer to King Lysimachus of Thrace, gained possession of the city of Pergamus. He transmitted his principality to his nephew Eumenes, and Attalus, another nephew, succeeding to Eumenes, took the title of King. Most of the Greek cities on the coast, with the islands of Lesbos, Chios, and Samos, became independent. Such was the condition of things in 223 B.C., when Antiochus III. ascended the throne, and turned his arms against the Parthians with so much success that he assumed the title of the Great.

Attalus, king of PERGAMUS, saw his advantage in siding with Rome. Threatened by the dominant power of the king of Syria, he at once threw himself into *Pergamus.* the arms of this powerful ally, and was of no small use to the Roman commanders.

The republic of RHODES rapidly recovered from the terrible siege which it had sustained from Demetrius Poliorcetes.<sup>1</sup> After Alexandria, Rhodes was the chief commercial place in the eastern part of the Mediterranean. *Rhodes.* The government was conducted on upright principles ; her citizens commanded the respect of all who had dealings with them. They would gladly have stood aloof from the Roman wars. But their old ally, the king of Egypt, was too weak to support them ; and the brutal conduct of the king of Macedonia forced them into alliance with Rome. Their excellent fleet was of great service to their new ally.

It remains to take a view of MACEDON itself.

A very short time after Demetrius the Besieger fled from the field of Ipsus, disrowned and helpless, we are surprised to find him in possession of the sceptre of Macedon and lord of Greece. *Macedonia.* After reigning at Pella for seven years, he was expelled from his new kingdom by a second coalition, headed by Lysimachus the veteran king of Thrace, and Pyrrhus the young king of Epirus. He made one more desperate attempt to recover his Asiatic dominions, when he fell into the hands of Seleucus, and died in captivity in the year 283 B.C. The same year died Ptolemy Soter ; and in 281, Lysimachus fell in battle against Seleucus, who thereby became sovereign of Thrace. Seleucus, the only survivor of Alexander's generals, would have won Macedon also, but in the moment of conquest he fell by the knife of an assassin.

---

<sup>1</sup> *The Student's Greece*, p. 548.

This assassin was Ptolemy Ceraunus, eldest son of the deceased king of Egypt. For a brief period this savage became king, and lent aid to Pyrrhus in his Italian campaigns. But Ceraunus did not long enjoy his ill-gotten spoil. He lost his life in endeavouring to stay the course of the Gauls who attacked the sacred heights of Delphi.

A period of confusion followed. The Gauls, expelled from Europe, settled in Asia Minor; and when Pyrrhus returned from Italy in 275 B.C., he found that the sceptre of Macedon had fallen into the hands of Antigonus Gonatas, son of Demetrius, who transmitted it to his son Demetrius II. When Demetrius II. died in 229 B.C., he left his son Philip, a child of seven or eight years old, to the charge of his cousin Antigonus Doson,<sup>1</sup> who took possession of the throne for himself, but in other respects acted with honour and good faith towards his young charge. He gave him a good education; and at his death in 220 B.C., he took care that Philip should be proclaimed king to the exclusion of his own children. Such an example of good faith deserves notice in this age of selfishness and corruption.

When Philip succeeded to the throne, he found the kingdom in a flourishing state. No foreign enemy threatened his shores; and unhappy Greece, torn by discord, was ready to welcome him as a protector.

The mere mention of the name of GREECE excites some interest in the mind of the most indifferent reader; and when Greece is mentioned, the first name that memory  
*Athens.* recalls is that of ATHENS. But there was little left of that glorious spirit which enabled Athens to throw back the Persian invader from her shores. After the last struggle for independence, when the name of Demosthenes sheds a dying glory over Athens, the people surrendered itself quietly to the protection of the kings of Macedon. Art, indeed, and literature still remained in their old abode. Even now the silken chains were being woven, which at a later time were to bind her Roman conquerors. Zeno the Stoic and Epicurus were establishing the rival doctrines which afterwards divided the Roman mind between them. Menander and Philemon and Diphilus were bringing on the stage those dramas of the New Comedy, which not long after delighted the Romans in the imperfect versions of Plautus and Terence. Yet for all this,

---

<sup>1</sup> Δώσων, *intending to give*; for he did not give up the throne to Philip till his death.

Athens, the star of Greece, had lost her brightness. An Athenian and a sycophant almost became convertible terms.<sup>1</sup>

In SPARTA, the old Dorian nobility had dwindled away to a few families, who engrossed the land and exercised tyrannical rule over the people. Agis IV., one of the *Sparta.* kings (244-241 B.C.) a young man of noble spirit, endeavoured to bring about a reform of the state, by abolishing all debts and admitting to the Spartan franchise a number of the Perioeci, among whom all lands were to be divided anew according to the system attributed to Lycurgus. But the old burgesses, led by the ephors and the other king, opposed him vehemently; and Agis was put to death. Then followed a re-action. Cleomenes III., son of the king who had opposed Agis, succeeded to the crown, and resumed the projects of that unhappy prince. But he showed more prudence in the execution of them; and for a time some appearance of vigour was restored to the enfeebled frame of the Spartan constitution.

But at that period chief notice belongs to a people who had hitherto played a very subordinate part in the history of Greece, the people of ACHAEA. From the time when the *Achaean League.* "long-haired Achaeans" fought against Troy, their name had almost vanished from the pages of history. We are told that the cities occupying a narrow strip of land on the south coast of the Corinthian Gulf had been united in a federation from early times; according to Polybius, they bore a high reputation among the Greeks, and were called in as arbitrators between rival states on more than one occasion. But we know very little of their history, and it is possible that the Macedonians had dissolved this league, which had never hitherto been of much political importance. It was about the year 280 B.C. that four of these towns united to resuscitate that confederation, which became famous under the name of the Achaean League.

Yet it was not to themselves, but to a foreigner, that this fame was due. Aratus, the true author of their greatness, was born at Sicyon in 271 B.C. Some of the Greek *Aratus.* cities were occupied by the garrisons of the king of Macedon, some were ruled by tyrants. Sicyon was in the latter case. Scarcely had Aratus reached the age of twenty, when he formed the plan of delivering his native city from her thralldom. Success justified his audacity; and Sicyon, by the advice of Aratus, joined the Achaean League (251 B.C.). Not

<sup>1</sup> Holm (*History of Greece*, Eng. tr., iv. 498) takes a more favourable view of Athens at this period.

many years after, he was elected General-in-chief, and formed the design of uniting all Peloponnesus under the League. He set Corinth free from her Macedonian garrison, and this important city joined the federation. Her example was followed by Megalopolis and by Argos; and by the year 227 B.C. the Achæan League had become the chief power of Peloponnesus. But Sparta still stood aloof; and Cleomenes had no mind to let his country become a province of the League. Aratus endeavoured to compel him. But Aratus was an unskilful general, and Cleomenes possessed great talents for war. It soon appeared that Sparta was more likely to become master of the Achæans than the Achæans of Sparta. In this state of things, Aratus scrupled not to undo the work which he had spent his best years in executing. He called in the aid of Antigonos Doson, or, in other words, he made the Achæan League subject to Macedon. The army of Antigonos, united to the forces of the League, was too much for Cleomenes. He was utterly defeated at the battle of Sellasia (221 B.C.), and died an exile in Egypt. Sparta fell into the hands of bloody tyrants; and Aratus henceforth appears as lieutenant of the king of Macedon.<sup>1</sup>

There was yet another warlike state always ready to take advantage of the weakness of its neighbours.

In the best times of Greece the AETOLIANS make little more figure than the Achæans. From the time when "yellow-haired Meleager" slew the boar of Calydon, we hear little of them. Dwelling in a mountainous district, they were a nation of free-booters, a sort of land-pirates, caring for nothing but plunder. They owned no king; but before this time their several tribes had formed a sort of league; and deputies met every year at Thermon, their chief city, to elect a Captain-general (*στρατηγός*). They had thriven on the weakness of their neighbours. Ambracia, the capital of Pyrrhus, was theirs; so was Naupactus, once the chief station of the Athenian navy in the Gulf of Corinth. Thermon rose to be a splendid city, and here the Aetolian chiefs lived in great magnificence. But they continued their marauding habits on a larger scale and in a more regular manner. It was chiefly by their selfish policy that the Romans were enabled to become masters of Greece.

The Aetolian chiefs thought that the death of Antigonos

---

<sup>1</sup> For a defence of the policy of Aratus, which is very generally condemned, see Shuckburgh, *Translation of Polybius*, Introduct., i. p. liv.



Doson presented a good opportunity for a foray into Peloponnesus. The time was well chosen. Philip was too young, they thought, to act with promptitude ; *Aetolians attack Peloponnesus.* Aratus was too unskilful a general to alarm them. For one year the marauders ravaged Arcadia and Argolis at will. But when they repeated their inroad in the following season, Philip came to aid the League, and the tide of war turned against the Aetolians.

The young king of Macedon showed great vigour. Not only did he expel the invaders from Peloponnesus, but he broke into their own country and surprised Thermon where all the treasures of the nation were deposited. *Successes of Philip of Macedon.* Here he made the fierce chiefs his enemies for ever ; for he carried off their treasure, plundered their houses and burnt down their temples.

Presently afterwards, Philip's attention was attracted by events which made his successes in Aetolia look pale and trifling. These events were Hannibal's first victories in Italy. It was in the year 217 B.C., when Philip was in Argolis, sitting as a spectator of the Nemean games, that he received the tidings of the battle of Trasimene. The young king's mind was fired with eager desire to take part in this more splendid drama. He made peace with the Aetolians, and thus ended what was called the Second Social War.

Nothing could be more imprudent than Philip's desire to take part in western politics. His position at home was most advantageous. His army was well disciplined ; the king of Egypt was too feeble to thwart him ; the king of Syria and the republic of Rhodes were willing to be his allies ; the Greek states of Asia and Europe were ready to own him as a protector ; the malcontent Aetolians had just felt his power. With prudence he might have formed an Eastern confederation, which would have offered a formidable front to Rome.

But his imagination, inflamed by Hannibal's glory, transported him to Italy ; and when the news of the great victory of Cannae followed that of Trasimene, he determined no longer to stand aloof. It must be added *Demetrius of Pharos.* that his natural ambition was urged on by a person whom he had just admitted into his counsels. This was Demetrius of Pharos, who by treachery had lost the Illyrian principality given him by Rome.<sup>1</sup> He took refuge with Philip, and in the autumn which followed the battle of Trasimene, the Senate had sent to demand the surrender of his person. But at that

moment, to be an enemy to Rome was to be the friend of Philip; and Demetrius became the king's chief adviser. His acquaintance with Roman politics recommended him; his unscrupulous advice suited the temper of Philip better than the cautious policy of Aratus, who ceased henceforth to have any weight in the counsels of Philip.

It has been above mentioned that, as soon as the news of the battle of Cannae arrived, Philip sent off ambassadors to offer terms of alliance to Hannibal; that the messengers fell into the hands of the Romans, and that consequently the treaty was not concluded till late in the year 215 B.C. In this treaty it was stipulated that Philip should send an army to support Hannibal in Italy; and that, in the event of a successful issue of the war, Illyria, with the Roman possessions on the eastern coast of the Adriatic, should become subject to Philip. The result of this treaty was the First Macedonian War.

*Philip and  
Hannibal in  
alliance.*

AUTHORITIES.—For the history of the various Greek states at this period, see *The Student's Greece*, and the literature there quoted.



Coin of Philip V. of Macedon (Head, *H.N.*, 204).

## CHAPTER XXXIV

### FIRST AND SECOND MACEDONIAN WAR: SETTLEMENT OF GREECE BY FLAMININUS. (214-194 B.C.)

No doubt Philip's wisest course would have been to abstain from mixing himself up with the affairs of Italy; but, having done so, he ought to have engaged heartily in the war. In 212 B.C. Hannibal became master of Tarentum. Then, if ever, would have been the time for the king to have despatched his Macedonian phalanx to support the Carthaginian in Italy. His inactivity is the more remarkable because before this time he had delivered himself entirely to the counsels of Demetrius, and even after the death of this minister did not hesitate to disembarass himself of the troublesome remonstrances of Aratus by poison. Thus was the author of the greatness of the Achaean League, so long the faithful servant of the kings of Macedon, requited for his services.

On discovering Philip's negotiations with Hannibal, the Senate had at once despatched M. Valerius Laevinus, with a small squadron, to watch his proceedings. This enterprising officer succeeded in checking Philip's feeble efforts; but he took no forward step till the year 211 B.C., when he entered into negotiations with the Aetolians, and soon found means to induce their greedy chiefs to form a treaty with Rome on terms that reveal their selfish policy. They were to join Rome in war upon Philip, all cities taken by the confederate forces were to be handed over to the Aetolians, but the inhabitants and movable property were to be left to the Romans; the Romans were to aid the Aetolians in possessing themselves of Acarnania. Attalus, king of Pergamus, also joined the allies.

*Alliance  
between Rome  
and the  
Aetolians.*

The news of this treaty roused Philip to something of his

former activity, and he baffled the assault of his enemies on every side. Laevinus, however, succeeded in taking the city of Anticyra in Locris, which was treated in the manner prescribed by treaty.

His successor was P. Sulpicius Galba, who was ordered to send home the legion which had hitherto been employed in Greece. The Senate were of opinion that a *Capture of Aegina.* squadron of ships, supported by Attalus at sea and by the Aetolians on land, was sufficient to hold Philip in check. Galba, thus hampered, was unable to do more than seize the island of Aegina. Here, as at Anticyra, the inhabitants were sold as slaves for the benefit of the Romans, while the place was left to the Aetolian chiefs, who handed it over to Attalus for the sum of 30 talents; and Aegina henceforth became his headquarters.

The Achaeans, notwithstanding the murder of Aratus, preferred maintaining their alliance with Philip to uniting themselves with greedy freebooters like the Aetolians. But the Lacedaemonians and Eleans joined the Aetolian League.

Philip with the Achaeans had, therefore, to enter upon a conflict with the Romans and Attalus by sea, with the Aetolians and Lacedaemonians by land, while the Illyrians threatened the northern frontiers from Macedonia, and the Thracians broke into the eastern districts.

To meet these multiplied enemies, Philip exerted a vigour and activity worthy of his best days. Fixing his headquarters at Demetrias (a strong fortress in the south of *Vigour of Philip.* Thessaly, erected by Demetrius Poliorcetes to command the passage from Macedonia into Greece), he sent troops to defend his allies from the attacks of the Aetolians. Attalus was happily detached from the League by an incursion made by Prusias of Bithynia into his kingdom of Pergamus; and Galba, left alone with a feeble squadron, was obliged to retire to Aegina.

In 207-6 B.C. fortune declared positively for Philip. In the Peloponnesus, Iphipoemen, the new general of the Achaean League, gained a decided superiority over Lacedaemon. The king invaded Aetolia, and again committed Thermon to the flames.

The Aetolians, finding themselves left to bear the brunt of the war, were glad to conclude a peace on terms favourable to Macedon. Scarcely was the peace concluded, *End of First Macedonian War.* when P. Sempronius Tuditanus arrived at Dyrrhachium with fresh forces, and Philip hastened over the mountains to attack him. But before any decisive action,

the Epirotes offered their mediation, and a treaty of peace was signed between Philip and Rome at Phoenice in Epirus. (205 B.C.).

Thus ended what is commonly called the First Macedonian War. The object of the Romans had been simply to prevent Philip from assisting Hannibal in Italy, and in this they had succeeded at a very small expense to themselves either in men or money.

That Philip entertained few thoughts of a lasting peace is shown by the fact that on Hannibal's return to Africa he sent him 4000 men, commanded by Sopater, a nobleman of the highest rank at the Macedonian Court, to assist in maintaining the war against Scipio. These men took part in the battle of Zama, and their commander with many of his men became prisoners. Philip had the impudence to send envoys to Rome, to demand their liberation. His envoys were dismissed with the stern answer, that "if Philip wished for war, he should have it."

*Assistance  
sent to Hanni-  
bal at Zama.*

Meantime the king of Macedon had been displaying a most unfortunate activity in the East and in Greece.

On the death of Ptolemy Philopator, in the very year of the Peace of Phoenice, Philip made a bargain with Antiochus, king of Syria, to divide the dominions that had devolved on the boy-king of Egypt, Ptolemy Epiphanes. This was the unprincipled Treaty of Partition which drove the ministers of young Ptolemy to place him under the guardianship of Rome.

*Bargain  
between Philip  
and Antiochus  
of Syria.*

In Greece the tyrannical disposition, which Philip had disclosed ever since Demetrius of Pharos became his chief counsellor, exhibited itself more and more. This man was killed in battle some time probably before the Peace of Phoenice, and was succeeded in the king's confidence by still more unscrupulous knaves, Heraclides, a Tarentine exile, and Dicaearchus, an Aetolian pirate. Philip now attempted to take off Philopoemen as he had already taken off Aratus, but without success; and the Achæan patriots, though they dreaded the Aetolian marauders, yet could no longer brook the oppressive tyranny of Philip. It was as yet uncertain what part they would take in the war.

*Tyranny of  
Philip.*

In 201 B.C. the king crossed the Hellespont, and capturing every city that opposed his progress, passed triumphantly into Caria. But then the Rhodian fleet, combined with that of Attalus, took the sea and blockaded him in Caria so closely that it was not till the spring of 200 B.C. that he effected his escape into Europe.

The Rhodians and Attalus now passed over to Greece, and promised the Athenians support if they would throw off the Macedonian yoke. Philip despatched an army to overawe Athens, while in person he laid siege to Abydos.

But, meantime, the injured powers had sent to complain at



Coin showing Lepidus crowning Ptolemy of Egypt  
(Stevenson, "PTOLEMAEUS").

Rome ; and one of the three Roman envoys, who had been sent *Embassy from Rome.* to cement the union between Rome and Egypt, visited Philip on his return journey, in order to remonstrate with him on his proceedings. This was M. Aemilius Lepidus, a young Senator of high and generous spirit, who afterwards became the first man in the republic. Laevinus was despatched anew to Greece with the fleet that had during the Punic War been employed on the coast of Sicily. But war was not yet formally declared.

On the Ides of March, the day on which at that period the Consuls entered upon office, these magistrates summoned the Senate. Despatches had just arrived from Laevinus, detailing in full the late conduct of Philip, and urging the necessity of prosecuting the war in earnest. Lepidus had found Philip before Abydos, and had remonstrated in plain and open language. "You speak thus," replied the king, "because you are a young man, and—a Roman. If," he added, "you wish for war, I am ready." The Consul, P. Sulpicius Galba, who had before succeeded Laevinus, was appointed anew to conduct the Macedonian war, and prepared to bring in a bill for the purpose before the Assembly of the Centuries.

Great pains had been taken to gain favour with the People ; and the Senate probably expected a ready acquiescence in the proposal. At the conclusion of the Hannibalic War, the victories of Rome had been celebrated with games of extraordinary pomp by the Aediles, one of whom was L. Quinctius Flaminius, brother of the future conqueror of Philip. The poorer class of citizens had been invited to purchase at a low rate the large supplies of grain sent over by Scipio from Africa. Portions of the public land in Apulia and Samnium were distributed to the veterans of Scipio.

*Difficulty of  
declaring war  
against  
Philip.*



There was, however, a general disinclination to make the sacrifices required by a new war. The citizens of Rome, as well as the Latins and Italians, were all liable to be drawn for service, unless they were past the military age or had already served their time. Every family had for years seen its best and strongest males withdrawn from rustic labour to bear arms against Carthage; all were anxious to avoid any return of the miseries which they had endured during Hannibal's occupation of Italy. The declaration of war was rejected by the vote of almost every Century.

But the Senate was not to be thus discouraged. The Consul was ordered to summon the Centuries to a second vote. Before the question was put, he addressed them in a set speech, in which he argued that the point for decision was, not whether they would go to war with Philip or not, but whether they would have that war in Italy or across the sea. The citizens, terrified at the thoughts of a new invasion, believed his arguments, and reversed their vote.

*The Centuries  
give a second  
vote.*

In consequence of these and other delays, Galba was not able to reach his province till near the end of the season; but he immediately sent on C. Claudius Centho with twenty ships to relieve Athens.

Philip was still engaged in the siege of Abydos, which held out with heroic bravery; when at length it was compelled to yield, the citizens took measures for destroying every living soul within the city. "Well," remarked the king, with the cynical wit for which he was famous, "we will call off the soldiers, and give them three days to kill themselves in." At this moment, Philip heard that the Romans were in Epirus and at Athens.

*Siege of  
Abydos.*

At once he crossed over to Demetrias. While he lay here, Centho arrived off Euboea, where he surprised the strong city of Chalcis. Philip marched promptly down Euboea; but Centho had already decamped, and the king made a sudden descent into Attica, in the hope of surprising Athens. Failing in this object, Philip wreaked his barbarous rage on the sacred groves and buildings round the city. The Achaeans, exasperated by this conduct, were still less inclined to take part with the reckless tyrant.

*Romans seize  
Chalcis.  
Philip near  
Athens.*

Early in the next year (199 B.C.) Galba, now Proconsul, began what may be called the second campaign. He advanced through the rugged and woody districts to the west of the Axios (Vardar), then called Eordaea and Elimiotis, evidently avoiding a descent into the level plain; and Philip seems to have shrunk from risking a

*Fruitless  
campaign of  
Galba.*

general action on ground unfavourable to the action of the phalanx. Galba at length returned to Apollonia. He had achieved nothing, and his army must have suffered greatly in its bootless campaign. With empty vain-gloriousness, he wrote word to the Senate that a laurel with which his ship's stern was decked had budded—a sure omen of victory ; but no laurel wreath was destined to adorn his brow.

Galba's second campaign took place after his successor, P. Villius Tappulus, had entered upon office ; but the latter did not arrive till late in the season, and for some time he was occupied in quelling a mutiny in the army. In the spring of 198 B.C. he took the field, but did not attempt the Macedonian passes as Galba had done. He had the merit of perceiving that Philip was most vulnerable in Thessaly, and that the army, supported by the fleet, might by its presence in that country deprive Philip of all influence in Greece. With the aim of penetrating into Thessaly, therefore, he marched up the valley of the Aoüs ; and in a narrow defile of this valley he found Philip strongly posted. While he was considering his next move, he received news that T. Quinctius Flaminius, the Consul of the year, had arrived at Corcyra to take the command.

Flaminius is as much the hero of the Macedonian war as is Scipio of the war with Hannibal. He also was a Patrician, and was elected to the Consulship at the age of thirty. Unlike Galba and Villius, he left Rome soon after the Ides of March, instead of allowing himself to be detained at Rome till it was time to go into winter quarters. His brother Lucius was intrusted with the command of the fleet.

The position occupied by Philip was at a point where the valley closes into a narrow gorge, which the Macedonians had occupied so skilfully that Flaminius hesitated to attempt a direct attack.<sup>1</sup> Both armies lay confronting each other for about six weeks, when an attempt was made to settle matters by negotiation. But Flaminius demanded that "the king should withdraw his garrisons from all Hellenic cities, make restitution for injuries past, and leave them independent for the future," and Philip broke off the conference, exclaiming that "no harder terms could be asked if he were beaten." It is probable that the Romans might have been altogether foiled, had not an Epirote chief named Charops shown

<sup>1</sup> This place seems to have been a little below Klissura, where a ridge strikes across the gorge and leaves a very narrow passage for the stream.

them a path by which the enemy's position might be turned. The Macedonians beat off the Roman assaults gallantly till they found themselves attacked in rear. Then they fled precipitately up the pass, past the site of the present town of Metzovo; and Philip, leaving the strongest fortresses of Thessaly still occupied by his garrisons, withdrew into Macedonia.

Flamininus remained for a time in Epirus, where he secured the goodwill of the people by his mild treatment. From Epirus he marched through Thessaly, and passed southward into Phocis, where the seaport of Anticyra served as a basis of operations.<sup>1</sup> He then laid siege to Elateia, a strong fortress which commanded the chief pass leading from Boeotia northwards.<sup>2</sup>

Meanwhile the Roman fleet, under the command of the general's brother, anchored at Cenchreae, the eastern haven of Corinth, for the purpose of laying siege to Corinth itself. Its presence would also no doubt influence the General Assembly of the Achaean League, which had met at Sicyon to receive an embassy from the Romans and their allies. The question for decision was whether they were to take part in the war, and if so, what part. Opinion had gradually been becoming more positive in favour of the Romans, and the leader of the Macedonian party had been banished; yet there was a third party, headed by Philopoemen, which desired neutrality. Great was the perplexity of the Assembly. If they declared in favour of the Romans, they would find themselves leagued with the barbarous Aetolians; if they remained neutral, they might find themselves left in a perilous state of isolation. It is probable that the neutral party would have carried the day, had not Philopoemen been absent. The speeches delivered by the envoys of both powers occupied the first day of the Assembly. On the next day the deputies sat silent, and were at length only provoked into murmurs and altercations. On the third day the majority voted for alliance with Rome; but the representatives of some states withdrew, and soon after, Argos was seized by the Macedonians, so that Corinth and Argos were both in the hands of Philip. Yet the

*Achaean  
League joins  
Rome.*

<sup>1</sup> This Anticyra seems to have been a different place from that which had been taken by Laevinus, and which was in Locris (p. 366). There was a third Anticyra on the Maliac Gulf. All three are said to have been famous for hellebore: see *Dict. Geogr. s.v.*, and the commentators on Horace, *A. P.*, 300.

<sup>2</sup> *Cp. The Student's Greece*, p. 506.

formal vote of the Assembly enabled Flaminius to declare himself protector of the liberties of Greece.

During the winter, both powers were active in negotiation. Philip was alarmed at the success of Flaminius. Flaminius was fearful of being superseded in the command.

Both parties therefore agreed to a conference, which was held near the Pass of Thermopylae. The king approached the *Conference at Thermopylae.* appointed place in his state galley, attended by a banished Achaean leader, a Boeotian and two Macedonian officers. Flaminius stood upon the shore surrounded by his allies, Amynder prince of the Athamanians, the envoy of Attalus, the Rhodian admiral, the chiefs of the Achaean League, and Phaeneas the purblind captain of the Aetolians. The Roman began by demanding that "Philip should restore freedom to the cities of Greece, and make restitution for injuries." He was followed by his several allies, who urged their own claims, not without vehemence. Philip kept his patience till the Aetolian chief broke in by saying, "this was no question of words: the long and short of it was that Philip must conquer or obey." "Ay," retorted the king in his sarcastic vein, "one may see that with half an eye." So closed the first day's conference. Next day Flaminius persuaded the allies to allow him to conduct the negotiations alone. On the third day an armistice for two months was agreed to, in order that both parties might send envoys to the Senate at Rome.

When Philip's chief envoy began a set speech before the Senate he was cut short by the question, "Whether the king was prepared to withdraw the garrisons from the three fortresses which in his biting way he used to call the *fetters of Greece*—Demetrius, Chalcis, and Corinth?" The envoy had received no instructions on this point, and was ordered to leave Rome.

Both parties therefore prepared for a decisive conflict. Flaminius was continued in the command as Proconsul. All Greece between Thessaly and the Isthmus was with him, except Acarnania and Boeotia. Acarnania might safely be neglected, but it was of high importance to secure Boeotia. An assembly was held at Thebes to discuss the propriety of submission, at which Attalus, now an old man, spoke with so much warmth that he fell down in a fit and died not long after. But the Consul had contrived to introduce a body of soldiers into Thebes, and the Assembly voted for alliance with Rome. Still more mortifying to Philip was it to see Nabis, tyrant of Lacedaemon, follow the general current. He had stooped to court the favour of this monster, and as an earnest of goodwill put Argos into his hands.

*Thebes and  
Sparta join  
Rome.*

Nabis took the bribe, and then concluded an alliance with Flaminius.

In 197 B.C., therefore, Flaminius advanced from Elateia to Thermopylae with all Greece at his back. Here he paused till he was joined by a division of Aetolian cavalry. *Battle of Philip* had already passed through the Vale of *Cynoscephalae*. Tempé into Thessaly. Constant wars had so drained the population of Macedonia, that the levies included veterans past the time of service and boys of the tender age of sixteen. The phalanx consisted of two divisions, each 8000 strong; and to this were added about 7000 irregular infantry and 2000 horse. The Roman foot was pretty nearly equal in number; but the Aetolian cavalry gave them a great advantage in this arm. After some manœuvring, Philip fell back upon Scotussa, where plains of waving corn, then just ripe, supplied forage. Flaminius followed; and the two armies encamped, unknowingly, on opposite sides of the same low range of hills, which from their appearance were called Cynoscephalae or the Dogheads. Here they lay for a whole day. The third day was stormy, and the air so darkened by mist and rain that the men could only see a few yards before them. Philip, however, detached a body of light troops to occupy the ridge, where they were seen and attacked by a Roman reconnoitring party. The Romans, being the weaker, were driven down the hill towards their camp, where they were supported by fresh troops, and the Macedonians were obliged to retire to the summit of the ridge. The mist now cleared off. The Macedonians, reinforced in their turn, again forced the Romans down the slope, and would have cut them to pieces had not the Aetolian cavalry held them in check. Flaminius now drew out the legions and advanced with his whole line of battle; while the Macedonian officers sent off message after message to the king, exaggerating their success and urging him to bring up the phalanxes and secure the victory. Philip was a good general, and had no mind to entangle his columns in uneven ground, but he suffered himself to be persuaded against his better judgment. The king himself led one phalanx on the right, while Nicanor was to follow with the other on the left.

On ordinary occasions the phalanx was drawn up sixteen men in file; but on this day Philip doubled the depth of his columns. Their weight was thus much increased; and as they bore down upon the Roman left with levelled lances, ten points against each soldier, the charge was irresistible. The legions gave way before it. But while this was taking place on the Roman left, Flaminius observed Nicanor's phalanx coming



over the brow of the hill, broken by the rough ground. He immediately sent up the elephants which formed part of his force, and following with his legionaries, charged before the enemy had found time to form. The left phalanx, attacked in this helpless condition, was driven over the hill in utter confusion; and at the same time a Roman tribune, with a detachment of the victorious legionaries, fell on the rear of the other phalanx and threw it into utter confusion. Philip saw that all was lost, and left the field. Not fewer than 8000 Macedonians were killed; 5000 were taken prisoners. The army was annihilated.

When the Romans reached the Macedonian camp, they found that their light-fingered allies, the Aetolians, had already plundered it. If this disgusted the soldiery, *Arrogance of Aetolians.* Flamininus himself was provoked by the arrogance with which their chiefs claimed the chief share in the victory of Cynoscephalæ. Their cavalry had doubtless done good service; but it was too much for Roman pride to hear an epigram recited, in which it was said that "Philip had been conquered by the Aetolians and the Latins."<sup>1</sup> The Aetolians had now ceased to be useful to the Romans, and from this time forth we find little harmony between them. Flamininus held a conference with Philip at Tempé; and the Aetolians were furious to find that the politic Roman was inclined to *Terms offered to Philip.* make peace with Philip on the old conditions, whereas they wished for nothing less than to deprive him of his crown. The Roman general, however, treated them with marked contempt. Philip paid down 200 talents as caution-money, and gave up his son Demetrius and other hostages, who were to be restored in case the Senate refused their assent to the treaty. But Flamininus was at this time completely trusted; and ten commissioners were sent with a decree of the Senate, prescribing the terms on which the settlement of Greece was to be made. They were the same as those which the Proconsul had accepted: Philip was required to pay 1000 talents, half at once and half in annual instalments for ten years.

On the arrival of the commissioners with this decree, the Aetolians endeavoured to raise the indignation of the Greeks. "The freedom promised was," they said, "an illusion. Greece would only find a change of masters. Macedonian garrisons will be replaced by Roman. The *fetters of Greece* would

---

<sup>1</sup> Αἰτωλῶν δμηθέντες ὑπ' Ἀρεος ἡδὲ Λατίνων. The epigram was written by Alcaeus of Messenæ. (Plut., *Flamin.*, 9.)



only be clasped tighter by a stronger hand." Flamininus exerted himself to weaken the effect of these representations, and induced the commissioners to make some concessions. The Greeks waited anxiously to hear the decree promulgated in its final form.

The commissioners repaired to Corinth, and it was generally known that their resolutions would be publicly announced at the approaching Isthmian Games. That city of old renown was thronged by the assembled Greeks, who came not so much to witness the national festival as to learn their country's fate from the lips of the conqueror. The day arrived. Flamininus took his seat among the spectators. Amid the expectation of all men, a trumpet sounded and a crier advanced into the arena, who proclaimed that, THE ROMAN SENATE AND T. QUINCTIUS THE GENERAL, HAVING CONQUERED KING PHILIP AND THE MACEDONIANS, DECLARED ALL THE GREEKS WHO HAD BEEN SUBJECT TO THE KING FREE AND INDEPENDENT. The glad news was more than men could believe; they gazed incredulously on each other; they asked their neighbours whether they had heard aright. Then a general cry arose that the proclamation should be repeated. And now, when doubt gave way to certainty, a deafening shout of joy burst from the assembled multitude. Men's minds were too much absorbed with serious topics to be interested by shows; the games were hurried over. When the Roman general was withdrawing at the end of the games, the crowd pressed so closely round him, eager to touch his hand and wreath his head with garlands, that he was well-nigh smothered under their tumultuous greeting.

*Freedom of  
Greece pro-  
claimed.*

This memorable event took place in the summer of 196 B.C., about a year after the battle of Cynoscephalæ.

Flamininus remained nearly two years in Greece after the day of the proclamation. Already the seeds of a new war were sown. Envoys had arrived from Antiochus, king of Syria, a rash and selfish monarch, who had some reasons for alarm. We have related how he had proposed to divide with Philip the possessions of the king of Egypt. But no sooner was Philip engaged in war with Rome than Antiochus seized the opportunity to occupy Asia Minor, and in the spring of the year 196 B.C. he crossed the Hellespont.

*Envoys from  
Antiochus of  
Syria.*

Hitherto, Flamininus had abstained from every step which could irritate a new enemy; but now he cared not any longer to humour the king of Syria. He dismissed the envoys with peremptory orders for Antiochus "to restore the Greek cities

in Asia to independence, and on no account to set foot in Europe." At the same time, he promised that commissioners should be sent to acquaint him more explicitly with the pleasure of the Senate.

Some things in Greece required the immediate attention of the general. It was necessary to secure the peace and safety of Peloponnesus by putting down Nabis, tyrant of Lacedaemon. No peaceful community could subsist by the side of this barbarian. How he gained his power we know not. He confirmed himself in it by a caricature of the reforms of Cleomenes, and distributed the lands among a number of enfranchised Helots. The rich and respectable citizens he banished or executed ; those who were suspected of wealth were put to the torture. His favourite engine for this purpose was a wooden figure representing his wife Apega, which clasped the unhappy recusant to breasts furnished with sharp spikes in place of nipples. He maintained a considerable fleet and army, which were employed in piracy and plunder.

The Roman general had no pretext for war against him. He had admitted him into alliance just before the battle of Cynoscephalae, and Nabis had not broken the terms. *Siege of Sparta.* Flamininus, therefore, resolved to act merely as the agent of the Achaeans, who had abundant grounds for complaint against the tyrant. He led the allies against Sparta, which, though formerly unwallcd, was now strongly fortified ; and the desperadoes who formed its garrison defended their last hope bravely. But the tyrant must have yielded at discretion, had not Flamininus, whose departure from Greece was now fast approaching, granted him fair terms. The Achaeans murmured, but in vain. Nabis was deprived of all the seaport towns of Laconia, which were declared free ;<sup>1</sup> was required to give up his fleet and pay a heavy fine ; and was prohibited from entering into any foreign alliances whatever.

Flamininus employed the few months that remained before his departure in settling the governments of the newly-emancipated places. *Policy of Flamininus.* Everywhere he gave preponderance to the aristocratical or Roman party, and attempted to create such a balance of power that each state should be afraid of going to war. He spared Philip in the north to check the power of the Aetolians, and left Nabis in the south to be a

---

<sup>1</sup> These communities joined the Achaean League ; the citizens were in after times named *Eleuthero-Lacones*.

thorn in the side of the Achaeans. He intended that no state in Greece should be strong enough to prevail over the rest, but that all should maintain a species of independence under the protection of Rome, which was to occupy the place filled by Macedon since the battle of Sellasia.

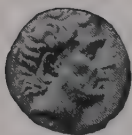
The spring of the year 194 B.C. now came on, and Flaminius prepared for departure. He assembled his Grecian allies at Corinth, and addressed them in a parting speech. *His parting speech.* He declared he had been actuated in all his measures by a sincere desire of promoting their good; he had spared Nabis only because he could not put him down without destroying the ancient city of Sparta; "his last act," he said, "should prove whether the word of Romans or of Aetolians was more trustworthy. He would show that the freedom of Greece was to be no illusion. He would withdraw the Roman garrisons from all the cities, even from those famous strongholds which were called the *fetters of Greece*. Corinth, Chalcis, and Demetrias should be pledges of his sincerity. And now," he added, "now that you have perfect liberty, show that you understand its value by maintaining peace and goodwill among yourselves. Let the Roman People know that you are worthy of the gift they have bestowed."

These words so touched the hearers, that with the excitable temper of a southern people they burst into tears; and the general himself was so much affected, that he was for a time unable to go on. After a pause, he asked, as a personal favour, that all Roman citizens who were in slavery among them should be set free and allowed to attend his triumph. The request was granted by acclamation; and the Achaeans alone redeemed 1200 Roman slaves at the expense of the state. These men had been among the prisoners sold as slaves by Hannibal during his occupation of Italy.

About two months after this memorable scene, Flaminius set sail from Oricum, after an absence of more than four years, during three of which he had been almost the *Triumph of Flaminius.* absolute sovereign of Greece. He landed at Brundisium with his army, and marched in a sort of festal procession along the Appian Way to Rome. The Senate met him outside the walls, and granted the triumph he had justly earned. The triumph lasted three days. The first two were taken up with processions of cars, carrying the spoils taken in the late war. On the third day, the general himself ascended to the Capitol, preceded by his prisoners and hostages, among whom were two kings' sons, Demetrius, son of Philip, and Armenes, son of Nabis. After him came his soldiers, all en-

riched by the war ; and lastly the liberated slaves, forming the most glorious part of the whole. Not Scipio himself had enjoyed a more splendid triumph. The character of Flaminius, indeed, could not challenge comparison with the heroic proportions of Scipio : yet there was no other Roman who could be compared with Flaminius.

AUTHORITIES.—Livy (xxii.-xxxiv.) is our chief source of knowledge, as Polybius is only fragmentary for this period. (For the relation of Livy to Polybius, see Nissen, *Untersuchungen über d. Quellen d. 4. u. 5. Dekade d. Livius* ; cp. Ihne, iii. 57). Of the minor authorities we may mention Appian, ix. ; Diodorus, xxviii. ; Dio, *fr.* 58 ; Plutarch, *Philopoemen* and *Flaminius*. On the principles which guided Roman policy with regard to Greece, and especially on the views of Flaminius, opposite opinions are represented by Mommsen and Ihne : cp. Mommsen, ii. 442, with Ihne, iii. 79.



Coin of Flaminius (Hill, *G. and R. Coins*, 99).



Coin of Antiochus the Great (Head, *H. N.*, 640).

## CHAPTER XXXV

### WAR WITH ANTIOCHUS, AND SETTLEMENT OF EASTERN AFFAIRS (196—188 B.C.)

IT has been already noticed that Antiochus crossed the Hellespont in the spring that followed the battle of Cynoscephalae. The commissioners of the Senate immediately went to meet him, and found him at Lysimacheia. They told him not to imagine it for his sake that the Romans had made war on Philip, and required him to quit Europe at once and to give up all the cities of Asia Minor which he had taken. Long and angry discussions followed, which were broken off by a false report of the death of young Ptolemy. The Syrian king returned in haste to Asia, that he might be ready for all contingencies.

*Antiochus  
ordered to  
quit Europe.*

At this crisis there was present at the court of Antiochus a man whose counsels, had they been followed, might have changed the history of the world.

After the conclusion of peace with Rome, Hannibal applied all his energies to the reform of the state. It was probably by means of the veterans whom he carried safe from the field of Zama, that he was in a position to control the government.<sup>1</sup> His first step was to put down the selfish oligarchy which had crippled his enterprises in Italy, and provide for a better administration of the finances. To this end he procured that a law should be passed, enacting that the Council of One Hundred and Four<sup>2</sup>

*Hannibal  
attempts to  
reform the  
Carthaginian  
constitution.*

<sup>1</sup> He seems to have held the office of *sufes*; Ihne, iii. 87.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 227.

should be elected not by themselves for life, but for one year only by the people, no member being eligible for re-election until an interval had elapsed. He then made a public statement, by which it appeared that the present revenue, properly administered, would amply suffice to defray all the expenses of the government, as well as to pay the tribute due to Rome. The old oligarchy could not brook to lose the gains of office without a struggle. They sent messages to Rome accusing Hannibal of engaging in secret negotiations with Antiochus. As soon as the Macedonian war was ended, the Senate sent commissioners to Carthage for the purpose of accusing Hannibal, notwithstanding the generous interposition of Scipio.

*His flight.* Hannibal perceived that he was not safe, and fled secretly from Africa. He reached Tyre in safety, and eventually found Antiochus at Ephesus. Here he exerted all his abilities to widen the breach between Rome and the Syrian monarch.

The counsels of Hannibal decided the wavering mind of Antiochus. The proposed plan of operations was this. Hannibal asked for 10,000 foot, 1000 horse, and 100 ships. With these he would sail to Carthage and make her declare war against Rome. He would then invade Italy, while Antiochus, with an overpowering force, should cross over into Greece and raise all the country against Rome.

*Advice to Antiochus.* The time was favourable. The Romans were engaged in war with the Spaniards, as well as with the Ligurians and the Gauls of northern Italy;<sup>1</sup> and the presence of *Intrigues of Aetolians.* Hannibal might have revived a contest as fierce as in the great Punic War. In Greece the discontent of the Aetolians had laid a train of fresh troubles. Even before Flamininus turned his back they began their intrigues and determined to set Greece in a flame. At the suggestion of Thoas, their chief, envoys were sent to Antiochus, Philip, and Nabis, urging these monarchs to war. Philip at once refused; he had suffered too much; he detested the Aetolians and was little satisfied with the selfish conduct of Antiochus. Nabis wanted little incitement; he flew to arms, assassinated all the Roman partisans in Lacedaemon, and sent marauding parties into the territory of the Achæan League; but he was soon compelled by Philopoemen to retire behind the walls of Sparta. Antiochus sent back Thoas with promises, and the Aetolians resolved at once to commence their movements. On a given day they attempted to gain possession of Chalcis, Demetrias,

---

<sup>1</sup> Pages 388, 390..



and Sparta. At Chalcis they failed ; Demetrias was betrayed by some of its inhabitants. In the attempt to seize on Sparta, Nabis indeed was killed ; but the Lacedaemonians cut the Aetolian force to pieces, and at length, yielding to the persuasions of Philopoeimen, declared Sparta a member of the Achæan League.

*Sparta joins  
Achæan  
League.*

These things took place in the summer of 192 B.C. On hearing of the first disturbances, the Senate had signified their will that Antiochus should quit Greece ; and they now sent Flamininus to retrieve their position in that country. Antiochus was in no mood to listen to him. But Thoas had just returned to Ephesus with news of the capture of Demetrias : if the king would but show himself, he said, Macedonia and all Greece would rise to welcome him.

*Flamininus  
sent to Greece.*

The only forces which Antiochus had ready were 10,000 foot and 500 horse, probably the troops assembled to execute the plan of Hannibal. The great Carthaginian had won the king's confidence by the tale of his boyish oath to bear eternal enmity against Rome. But the flattering words of Thoas estranged the king's mind from the great general ; and the lying Aetolian obtained absolute influence at court. Notwithstanding his promises to Hannibal, Antiochus determined to set sail for Europe, and thus virtually declared war against Rome with the paltry force above mentioned. He offered a solemn sacrifice at Troy. At Demetrias he was welcomed with loud acclamations. In the north of Greece, the Boeotians, always hostile to Rome, were with him ; in the Peloponnesus, the Messenians and the people of Elis, old enemies of the Achæan League, were ready to support him ; the Epirotes professed friendly feelings, and Amynder, the Athamanian, was persuaded to desert his old allies. The Thessalians, the Athenians, and above all the Achæans, held firmly to Rome.

*Antiochus  
enters Europe.*

Presently, he held a council of war at Demetrias. The Aetolians advised that the first thing needful was to secure possession of all Thessaly. All the rest approved except Hannibal, who sate silent. The king asked his opinion. He said that "his opinion was unchanged. He had thought before, and he thought still, that all the time spent in gaining the support of the Greeks was thrown away. They *must* side with the strongest, and if the king were victorious, would join him as a matter of course. It was ill-advised to have believed the false reports of the Aetolians, and to have ventured into Greece with so small a force ; but now the best thing to be done was to persuade Philip to take part with

*Advice of  
Hannibal.*

them ; or, if they failed, to prevent him from moving against them, by ordering an invasion of Macedonia ; to send for reinforcements without delay ; to station a portion of the fleet at Corcyra ; and to concentrate all the forces in Illyria, so as to meet the Romans there or (if possible) to invade Italy."

But this plan was too great for the petty mind of the king and his advisers. Winter was now at hand ; and, after showing some activity in occupying Thessaly, the king *Frivolity of Antiochus.* grew tired of the war and retired to the fortress of Chalcis in Euboea, which had previously opened its gates to him. Here the senseless monarch gave himself up to enjoyment. He married a fair daughter of the place, and celebrated his marriage with Oriental splendour. His soldiers on the mainland were not slow to follow the royal example. They passed the winter in idling and drinking, and Philopoemen regretted that he was no longer General of the League, or he would have cut off the whole army in detail.

Meanwhile the Senate were busily engaged in preparing for war. The conduct of Antiochus had so completely thrown the game into the hands of the Romans that it was easy to represent the war as one of simple defence. No one could say that they had provoked it. The Achaeans regarded them as their champions.

In the spring of the next year (191 B.C.) Antiochus roused himself and advanced into Acarnania. But he hastily retraced his steps on hearing that Philip, in concert with the Romans, was reconquering the Thessalian cities which had recently submitted to him, and that the Consul, M'. Acilius Glabrio, had entered Thessaly. From his headquarters at Chalcis Antiochus sent urgent messages to the Aetolians and his allies. The Roman Consul was approaching Thermopylae from the north, and unless he were checked here, Boeotia and Euboea, as well as Thessaly, would be lost.

The Pass of Thermopylae is formed, as is well known, by a spur of Mount Oeta, which comes close down upon the sea. The king intrenched himself in the narrowest *Battle of Thermopylae.* place, like Leonidas of old, but not in the spirit of Leonidas. The mountain-path, by which the Persian troops had found a way to the rear of the Greeks, was now committed to the charge of the Aetolians, who occupied the heights with a force of 2000 men. The Consul encamped in front of the Pass ; but before commencing the assault he sent his lieutenants, L. Valerius Flaccus and M. Porcius Cato, to

force their way over the mountain to the rear of the enemy. The Aetolians were unable to hold their ground against the assault of these officers. And, though the Syrians defended their intrenchments well, as soon as they found themselves attacked in rear, they threw down their arms and fled with precipitation. Antiochus himself was wounded in the mouth by a stone, and escaped with only 500 men to Chalcis. The Consul embraced Cato before the whole army, and, declaring that the whole merit of the victory lay with him, sent him home with news of the victory. He travelled with the greatest speed, landed in Italy, and in five days more announced to the Senate that Greece was delivered from the Syrians. When the Consul advanced into Boeotia, the king re-embarked for Ephesus, taking with him his bride, the only conquest which he retained.

Glabrio left Philip to complete the conquest of the north, and detached his lieutenant, Flaccus, to reduce the Aetolians, while he proceeded to lay siege to Naupactus, the chief station of their navy. He was thus engaged when Flamininus arrived in his camp. This politic statesman pointed out to the Consul that it would be an error to crush the Aetolians altogether, and thus to leave Philip, who had carried his arms to the northern boundaries of Aetolia, without any people strong enough to balance his power in upper Greece. Glabrio acquiesced, and concluded an armistice with the Aetolians.

Flamininus likewise compelled the Messenians and Eleans to give in their adhesion to the Achaean League. Thus at length all Peloponnesus was combined into one federate state, and the darling project of Aratus seemed to be fulfilled. But Philopoemen and the patriots looked sadly on. They felt that this consummation was due to foreign force, and was in fact a proof of weakness. This weakness appeared still more palpably shortly afterwards. The Achaeans laid claim to the island of Zacynthus, which had lately belonged to Philip. "Take care," said Flamininus, "what you do. Your League is like a tortoise, safe while it keeps its head within its shell, but in danger as soon as it ventures beyond. Peloponnesus is your shell." The League needed no further hint. It drew in its head, and Zacynthus passed into the hands of the Romans.

As soon as Antiochus had left Europe, he thought he was secure from the Romans. But Hannibal, who had prophesied the event of the last campaign and had now regained some

*Advice of  
Flamininus.*

*All Pelopon-  
nesus under  
Achaean  
League.*

measure of credit with the arrogant monarch, told him he only wondered they were not already in Asia.

The Consuls for the new year (190 B.C.) were L. Scipio the elder brother, and C. Laelius the bosom friend, of the great Africanus. Laelius was anxious for the command in the East, and the Senate were disposed to confer it on him; but Africanus rose in the Senate-house and said that, if they would give it to his brother, he would himself accompany him as lieutenant. This decided the question, and the two Scipios left the city as early as possible for Greece. They found Glabrio still engaged in besieging fortresses. Africanus had taken care that a number of his own veterans should be enlisted in his brother's army; and they both agreed that the war should be carried as soon as possible into Asia. L. Scipio therefore continued the armistice with the Aetolians, and sent an envoy to Philip to demand a free passage for the army through Macedonia and Thrace. Philip, eager to retain his conquests in northern Greece, showed great alacrity in the Roman service. He repaired the roads and bridges, laid in stores for the army along the line of march, and attended the Consul in person to the Hellespont.

The march of the Romans eastward convinced Antiochus that Hannibal was a true prophet. He had indeed already ordered large forces to be collected, and had despatched Hannibal into Phœnicia to bring up reinforcements for the fleet. But a Rhodian fleet had been ordered to cruise on the coast of Lycia for the purpose of intercepting Hannibal, and the brave islanders performed this service with complete success. Several sea-fights took place, with varying fortune, and finally the Rhodians, combined with the Roman ships, came in conflict with the Syrian fleet off Myonnesus, a promontory of Lydia. Here the Syrian admiral lost nearly half his fleet and left the sea at the command of the enemy.

This defeat so confounded Antiochus that he evacuated the strong fortress which he had constructed at Lysimacheia and retired to Sardis without leaving any force to oppose the passage of the Hellespont by the Romans. He had indeed collected a large army, gathering his levies from north and south. All kinds of men appeared in his ranks: Scythian and Galatian horsemen; heavy cavalry clad in complete armour, man and horse; scythed cars, like those of the western Celts; Cretan slingers; Arabian archers mounted on dromedaries; Indian elephants to the number of

fifty-four.<sup>1</sup> A corps of 16,000 men bore the redoubted name of the phalanx ; and the *élite* of the army, like that of Alexander, were called Argyraspids ; but though the names and arms were Macedonian, the men were the men of Xerxes and Darius.

The Roman army therefore landed on the Asiatic shore without opposition and marched southward into Lydia. Africanus, who was one of the Salian Priests of Mars, stayed in Europe for the due performance of certain solemn rites and sailed to Elaea for the purpose of joining the army before the battle. But here he was taken ill and obliged to remain while the army advanced towards the king's quarters at Thyatira. Antiochus awaited their attack upon the Hermus near Magnesia under Mount Sipylus. He was closely followed by the Consul, who crossed the little river Phrygius and took up a position, with his face towards the east, within three miles of the king's camp. Still Antiochus declined an engagement, till he found that the Romans were preparing to attack him in his intrenchment. Then he drew out his vast army in battle order.

It is needless to give a detailed account of the battle. The Syrian army was more than double that of the Romans. For Scipio had undertaken the invasion of Asia with a common Consular army, supported by somewhat more than 6000 allies, Achaeans, Pergamenes, and Macedonians ; but this army was more than enough to defeat the Syrians. The king fled, leaving 53,000 men upon the field. The Romans, it is said, lost less than 400.

By the single battle of Magnesia, Antiochus the Great lost all his conquests in Asia Minor. He did not deem himself safe till he reached Apameia, in the south of Phrygia, where he found his son Seleucus and some of his friends. From this place he sent ambassadors to the Consul to treat for peace. L. Scipio was at Sardis with his brother Africanus, who informed the envoys of the conditions. The peace was ratified at Rome, and the final terms were these : Antiochus was to surrender all his possessions north and west of Mount Taurus, and pay down a sum of 3000 talents, with a tribute of 1000 for twelve succeeding years. All his ships of war (except ten, and all his elephants were to be given up for ever ; he was to abstain from all interference with European

<sup>1</sup> The Romans had a few African elephants, an inferior kind. They first used elephants in the Macedonian war (Livy, xxxi. 36), but they never relied much on these animals.



matters ; nor was he to hire mercenaries in countries subject to Rome. The persons of Hannibal the Carthaginian and Thoas the Aetolian, with some others, were to be surrendered to the Romans.

L. Scipio repaired straightway to Rome to enjoy his splendid but easy triumph. In imitation of his brother, he assumed the *Effect on the* aftername of Asiaticus. The booty he had made *Romans.* was great beyond example, the sums he paid into the treasury enormous. The Macedonian and Syrian wars laid the foundation of those prodigious fortunes which afterwards distinguished the Roman nobles, and introduced that gorgeous but barbaric luxury which corrupted the manners of the whole people and led to incurable evils in the state.

The Senate now had leisure to punish the Aetolians. Soon after the departure of the Scipios for Asia, false reports reached

*Fulvius*  
*Nobilior re-*  
*duces*  
*Aetolians.* Greece of successes gained by Antiochus, and the Aetolians, flying to arms, drove Philip from his late conquests to the west of Mount Pindus. On this news war was instantly proclaimed. M. Fulvius

Nobilior, one of the Consuls for the year 189, took the command in Greece, while his colleague, Cn. Manlius Vulso, succeeded L. Scipio in Asia. Fulvius immediately laid siege to Ambracia, while Perseus the son of Philip, the Achaeans, Epirotes and Acarnanians, assailed Aetolia on all sides. Ambracia, a noble and well-fortified town, the ancient capital of Pyrrhus, was bravely defended ;<sup>1</sup> but the Aetolian chiefs, finding their condition desperate, hastened to send an embassy to Rome with full submission. Philip was now as anxious to annihilate the Aetolians, as the Aetolians had formerly been eager to destroy him ; but as Flaminius had saved Philip from the Aetolians, so he now interfered to save the Aetolians from Philip. The Senate listened to his arguments, and allowed them to become the vassals of Rome. The Roman wars in Greece were now ended for some years.

Manlius, on arriving in Asia, was much disappointed by finding that the war had been finished by the battle of Magnesia.

*Manlius*  
*Vulso and the*  
*Galatians.* But he was too anxious for plunder and a triumph not to seek for war, and an occasion presented itself in the circumstance that the Galatians had served in the ranks of the Syrian army at Magnesia.

It has before been mentioned that Galatia was a district of northern Phrygia, which had been seized by a host of Gauls,

---

<sup>1</sup> Polybius (xxi. 27-8) gives an account of this interesting siege. Ennius described it in a tragedy, *Ambracia*.



who had been driven out of Greece about a century before. In the heart of Asia they retained their Celtic habits and names. By continual plundering they had amassed great stores of wealth.<sup>1</sup>

When the Consul advanced into their country, the Galatians retired into their mountain fastnesses, but without avail. In two great battles they were defeated by the Romans, and plundered of all their riches. In course of time these Asiatic Gauls gradually became assimilated to the Greeks.

Manlius spent a second year as Proconsul in Asia Minor. In company with the ten commissioners of the Senate, who had been sent to confirm the peace made with the Great King, he received ambassadors from the various states, and distributed the possessions of Antiochus in Asia Minor, according to a decree of the Senate.

*Asiatic possessions of Antiochus distributed.*

Eumenes, king of Pergamus, who had served the Romans faithfully during the late war, was rewarded by the gift of Mysia, Lydia, Phrygia, and part of Caria, with those Thracian towns which Antiochus had quickly conquered and had as quickly abandoned.<sup>2</sup> The rest of Caria, with Lycia, was given to the Rhodians. Caria and Lycia rightly belonged to Ptolemy Epiphanes, but that prince seems to have offended the Senate by marrying a daughter of King Antiochus.

The Galatian war, insignificant as it was, became the root of great evils. It was the first time that a Roman general had ventured to make war without the authority of the Senate; and when Manlius applied for a triumph, the majority of the commissioners, who had been present in Asia during the time of his enterprise, opposed it warmly; but Manlius had too many friends in the Senate, and no doubt there were too many members of the House who looked forward to like opportunities, to allow the question to be fairly considered; and the Consul was suffered to celebrate his triumph over the Galatians. His example was followed too often in after-times.

*Effects of the Galatian war.*

AUTHORITIES.—Besides the account in Livy (xxxiii.-xxxviii.), and the extensive fragments of Polybius, Appian, xi., Justin, xxxi., and Plutarch's *Philopoemen*, *Flaminius*, and *Cato maior* are especially useful.

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* Mommsen, ii. 401.

<sup>2</sup> Mommsen, ii. 474.



Coin of Graccurre in Spain, which changed its name from Ilurcis in honour of Tib. Sempronius Gracchus (Stevenson, "GRACCURRE").

## CHAPTER XXXVI

### WARS IN THE WEST CONTEMPORANEOUS WITH THE MACEDONIAN AND SYRIAN WARS (200-175 B.C.)

WHILE two or three Consuls were winning riches and honours in the East at an easy rate, others were engaged in the West with far more stubborn adversaries. Tedious wars with the barbarians in northern Italy, and with the brave tribes of central Spain, offered little to attract greedy or ambitious Senators; and yet in these districts many generals were compelled to keep watch and ward for years.<sup>1</sup>

It was about the year 200 B.C. that the Senate received news of a general rising in northern Italy. The Gauls, who took part in the movement, were the old enemies of Rome—the Boians south of the Po, with the Insubrians and Cenomanians on the far side of that great river. A new enemy was behind, the Ligurians, a wild people of uncertain race, who occupied the mountainous district of the Maritime Alps and Upper Apennines, from near the Rhone to the confines of Etruria.<sup>2</sup>

Four or five campaigns sufficed to reduce the Gallic tribes beyond the Po; and the Boians were left to carry on the conflict single-handed. Soon after, the Ligurians renewed their inroads. In 193 B.C., bands of these marauders appeared before Pisa and Placentia at once. But in 191, about the time when Glabrio was forcing the Pass of Thermopylae, his colleague, P. Scipio Nasica, received the final submission of the Boians. They purchased peace at the price of half their territory; but the half which

<sup>1</sup> See Ihne, iii. 374.

<sup>2</sup> The Romans had been in conflict with them before, *e.g.* in 238 B.C., but those wars had not been serious.

remained was more than enough for their numbers, diminished by nine years' deadly war with Rome. In the next year (190) C. Laelius, disappointed of the command against Antiochus, was employed in settling the conquered country. The Colonies of Placentia and Cremona, which had suffered greatly since the time of Hannibal's first appearance in Italy, were re-peopled by 6000 families of Roman and Latin citizens. Part of the confiscated lands were assigned to a new Colony at Felsina, which assumed the name of Bononia, or (as it is now called) *Bologna*.

*Placentia and  
Cremona.  
Bononia.*

But to subdue the Ligurians in their mountains required long years of desultory warfare. These nimble mountaineers, lean and sinewy in form, inured to hardship, unencumbered with baggage, acquainted with every bye-path and fastness in their native hills, carried on a sort of guerrilla warfare, which the Romans found as difficult to deal with as regular armies have always found in similar cases. Whenever the enemy presented a front, they were sure to be defeated; but even then the bulk of the force escaped by mountain paths and met again in some well-known resort. Often they surprised careless or over-confident commanders and cut off large bodies of Roman troops. But year after year the Roman columns penetrated further and further into the Ligurian fastnesses. One tribe after another submitted. L. Aemilius Paullus, son of him who fell at Cannae, and himself destined to become one of Rome's most famous men, in 180 B.C. received the submission of one of their bravest tribes, the Ingaunians; and next year the Apuans, who marched with Etruria along the Macra, were transplanted into Samnium to the number of 40,000 souls, and their lands were confiscated to the use of the Roman People.

*Conquest of  
Ligurians.*

The submission of northern Italy was no doubt hastened by the construction of military roads. M. Aemilius Lepidus, Consul for the year 187 B.C., the same who irritated Philip by his peremptory manner, constructed the great road which bore his name, through the new Colony of Bononia to Placentia, being a continuation of the Flaminian Way, or Great North Road, made by C. Flaminius in 220 from Rome to Ariminum; while Flaminius the son, being the colleague of Lepidus, made a branch road from Bononia across the Apennines to Arretium. Soon after, on the line of the Aemilian Road, between Bononia and Placentia, the Senate planted the Colonies of Mutina (*Modena*) and Parma. The frontiers of Etruria and Liguria were guarded by the colonies of Pisae, Luca, and Luna. Thus did

*Via Aemilia.*

*Colonies  
founded.*

Rome secure her conquests in the north as in the south. This district of Cisalpine Gaul with Italian Liguria proved one of the most valuable possessions of the Roman Empire. The Gallic towns became Latin in language and feeling, as well as in government ; and some notable Romans of later times, among whom may be named Livy the historian, a Paduan by birth, sprang from the loins of these Latinised Celts.

We must now follow the tide of Roman conquest in the Spanish Peninsula. That part of Spain which had been conquered by Scipio was divided into two Provinces, *Spain*. known as Hispania Citerior and Ulterior, each being ruled by a Praetor or Proconsul. But these Provinces in fact included only a small portion of the Peninsula. *Hither Spain* ran along the coast southward to a point beyond Cartagena, its western boundary being as yet indeterminate : *Further Spain* contained little more than modern Andalusia.<sup>1</sup> The rest of Spain was still unconquered. The Celtiberians, a brave race, who inhabited the chief parts of Castille, dwelt in numerous cities strong both by nature and art. The Lusitanians, who occupied the mountainous districts of western Spain and Portugal, between the Douro and Guadiana, were shepherds or guerrillas as the case required ; now tending their flocks on the hill-sides, now making armed forays into the heart of the Further Province. The Gallaecians and Cantabrians, between the Douro and the Bay of Biscay, had as yet scarcely heard of the Roman name.

The formation of Spanish Provinces took place apparently in 197 B.C., when we first hear of six Praetors, two being destined to govern Spain. A general outbreak followed, *Cato*. which may be attributed to the fear entertained by the Spaniards that the Romans meditated the eventual conquest of all their tribes. When M. Porcius Cato, Consul in the year 195 B.C., entered on office, he was despatched at once to the Hither Province to subdue the insurrection. This remarkable man had already served as Legionary Tribune under Fabius in the Hannibalic War, and had been Quaestor under the great Scipio in Sicily. We have also recorded, by anticipation, the glory he won by turning the Pass of Thermopylae in the campaign of Glabrio. But his military fame chiefly depends upon his operations in Spain.

---

<sup>1</sup> It is, however, possible that the two Provinces, when they were first constituted, consisted (1) of the old Carthaginian Province ; (2) of the district usually occupied by the Romans during the Second Punic War. The Ebro would in that case have formed the boundary between them.

When he landed at Emporiae (*Ampurias*), he found the whole country, up to the very walls of this place, in arms. He gave proof of his determined temper by dismissing the speculators who usually contracted to supply the army with victuals: "for," said he, "I will make the war support itself." He spent some time in training his troops for the desultory warfare of the Spaniards, occasionally dashing into the country occupied by the enemy, and inuring his men to every hardship. He shared all privations with the common soldiers, and became popular among them by his blunt manners and rough jests. Sometimes he rode through the ranks armed with a rude countryman's javelin, called *sparus*, and chastised offenders not over gently with his own hand.

When this training had lasted long enough to give the general and his men confidence in each other, Cato led them forth to attack the Spaniards, who were encamped in force near Emporiae, and defeated them with great slaughter. The whole of Spain north of the Ebro thereupon made its submission; but on a report that the Consul had returned to Rome, the whole country again rose in arms. Cato instantly took the field and had no difficulty in again reducing the insurgents. To the rapid military movements by which he terrified his opponents, he added a diplomatic trick, which shows the disconnected condition of the tribes he had to deal with. To the chiefs of every strong place in northern Spain he addressed letters, commanding them, on pain of suffering Roman vengeance, to dismantle their fortifications immediately, and took care that every letter should be delivered on the same day. Each chief supposed the order was addressed to himself alone; and each, fearing Cato's severity for himself, obeyed the order.

Thus in a few weeks Cato reduced the whole Northern Province to submission. No doubt he committed great atrocities. Numbers fell by the sword; more still were taken and sold as slaves; many put themselves to death. But no Roman general hesitated to use harsh measures; no one thought of censuring him for doing so. He returned to Rome laden with booty and honour. It must be mentioned to his credit that he reserved no plunder for himself, though he bestowed a handsome largess on each of his soldiers. "Better," he said, "that many men should have plenty of silver than that a few should have plenty of gold."

The Senate were so well satisfied with his successes that they decreed a Thanksgiving of three days; and the triumph

which he celebrated was the first which Rome had witnessed since the triumph of Scipio over Hannibal. *His triumph.* It was happy for Cato's vanity that Flaminius returned home a few weeks later, or the glory of the Spanish triumph would have been eclipsed by the greater splendour of the Macedonian.

It is probable, however, that the measures taken by Cato for the future government of the Spanish provinces sowed the seeds of future evil. He laid regular taxes and imposts on the Spanish subjects of Rome, especially on the mines of iron, silver, and gold, which in those days made Spain an object of contention. It was foreseen by Scipio that the severe measures of Cato would irritate the Spaniards; and his apprehensions were justified. For many years Rome was engaged in continual wars with the Spaniards. But in the year 179 B.C., sixteen years after the Consulship of Cato, the limits of the Upper Province seem to have been finally settled, and a general pacification brought about. This happy result was due to Tib. Sempronius Gracchus, father of the famous Gracchi. He was himself a man of ability and courage, and ruled with a moderation little known and less valued among Romans. Many communities which had been deprived of home and land, received new settlements, for which they were required to pay certain yearly dues and to perform military service at the order of the Roman governor. No city was henceforth to raise fortifications. In other respects they were allowed to govern themselves without interference. Such is all that we know of the famous pacification of Gracchus.

Here may be added a notice of some other conquests made by Rome in this same period. The Sardinians and Corsicans, who had first risen against Rome in the Second Punic War, again appeared in arms in the year 181 B.C., for what cause or with what justice we know not. This petty war lingered on for several years. But after his return from Spain Tib. Gracchus obtained the Consulship, and his vigorous hand reduced the islands to submission. His measures do not seem to have been marked with the same forbearance which distinguished him in Spain; for so great was the number of prisoners brought home and sold that the slave-market was glutted, and "Sardinians for sale" (*Sardi venales*) became a proverbial expression for anything that was cheap and common.

The conquest of the northern shores of the Adriatic took



place about the same time. In the year 183 B.C., a son of the great Marcellus, being Consul for the year, had occasion to march into Venetia to repel a threatened irruption of Celtic tribes from the north. Having effected his purpose with little difficulty, he wrote to the Senate to point out the great advantage which the republic would derive from the possession of the peninsula between the modern towns of Trieste and Fiume, which then as now bore the name of Istria. His proposal to invade the country was sanctioned by the Senate; and, soon after, possession of the conquered territory was secured by the Latin Colony of Aquileia, which became a place of great importance as a barrier against the northern barbarians. When it was destroyed by Attila, its refugees founded the famous city of Venice.

AUTHORITIES.—These wars were not regarded at Rome as important or interesting, and this may be one reason why our accounts of them are so unsatisfactory, varying between disconnected outlines and suspicious panegyrics. Most of our knowledge, such as it is, comes from Livy. Appian, vi., Plutarch, *Cato maior* and *Aemilius Paullus*, may be added.

## CHAPTER XXXVII

CIVIL HISTORY DURING THE MACEDONIAN AND SYRIAN WARS :  
CORRUPTION OF MANNERS : SENATORIAL PREDOMINANCE :  
SCIPIO AND CATO. (230-172 B.C.)

THOUGH it was with great difficulty that the citizens were induced to consent to the Macedonian War, to the Senators war was welcome even at that time of extreme depression. By commands, embassies, and commissions to foreign courts, they expected to find means of repairing their past losses and enriching themselves ; and they were not mistaken. And after the wars in the East a great change seems to have been wrought in the feelings of the people also. The yeomen of Italy saw their brethren returning home laden with booty. A royal road to riches is always thronged, and we hear no more of disinclination to declare war. It was seldom necessary to resort to the census-roll for compulsory enlistment. The legions were filled by volunteers.

A great change now began to be introduced into the constitution of the Roman armies. During the Punic Wars, it had often been found impossible to dismiss the legions levied

*General desire  
for war at  
Rome.*

for the year after the year's campaign was over. And what had hitherto been the exception now became the rule. A general usually kept the men who first took service under him during his whole command, and often handed them over to his successor. Thus the old militia of the republic changed its character, and a race of professional soldiers came into being. There was not, indeed, a standing army in our sense of the word. The soldiery were not so much servants of the state as attached to the person of a successful general, whom they regarded as their patron. This new state of things reached its height under Marius and Caesar ; but it took its origin with Scipio. Scipio was refused by the Senate the levies which he deemed necessary for the invasion of Africa, and he raised volunteers on his own credit. These men were rewarded with grants of land in southern Italy. But their swords were at the command of any leader who offered

a chance of fresh booty. Many enlisted for service in the Macedonian and Syrian wars. This tendency to regard a soldier's business as a profession, rather than as the occasional duty of a citizen, received a great impulse from the invasion of Galatia by Cn. Manlius Vulso, an enterprise undertaken to gratify the Consul's ambition and rewarded by great largesses to the soldiery.

Thus the lust of conquest became general. The Senate had now no difficulty in carrying war-votes. Wars were no longer defensive, even in pretence. Increase of empire was the hardly-concealed motive of action. The most detestable practices were employed to create intestine dissensions in all countries, to encourage one potentate against another, to provoke quiet and independent states by acts of intolerable arrogance, to bring about by what means soever an appeal to Roman arbitration. Senatorial commissions were continually crossing the sea to Greece and Asia, to Carthage and Egypt. Diplomatic arts of the basest kind were becoming part of the profession of Senator. The rude simplicity of the old Roman character was degenerating into brutal arrogance, or was used as a cloak for the meanest and most hypocritical ends.

*Effects of war  
on Roman  
character.*

The Senate itself was every day becoming more confined and oligarchical. We have before shown<sup>1</sup> how the superior offices of the state were barred against men of moderate fortune. The old distinctions of blood had ceased ; in the year 172 B.C. both Consuls were Plebeian. But a new Nobility was rising, composed of the wealthy Senatorial families. Here wealth was the mother of wealth : a family once ennobled by office had so many opportunities of making money that every day it became more difficult for an upstart or New Man (as persons were called whose progenitors had not held office) to make his way to the Consulship, or even into the Senate. Those who could place in their vestibules or carry out to funerals the greatest number of the images of ancestors distinguished by office, were the most noble. The Senate was fast becoming an oligarchical council, almost hereditary in certain families.

*New nobility  
of wealth.*

It will readily be perceived how fatal must have been the influence exercised on manners and morals by these changes. It has been said with melancholy truth that at the moment when the history of the republic begins to extend itself so as to embrace the whole civilised world, it

*Decay of  
morals.*

loses all its moral interest. The Romans before their conquests were (as we have seen) a hardy, thrifty, self-denying, religious race, but withal ignorant, rude, destitute of common charity and humanity in their dealings with foreigners. When enormous wealth and power are suddenly placed in the hands of such a people, the results are certain. The proverbs of every nation testify to the arrogance and vices of rich upstarts; and the Romans were no exceptions to the rule. They were much in the condition of savages exposed to the first influences of civilisation, who eagerly imbibe its new vices and retain their own grossness.

The Roman historians with one voice concur in these representations. "The Asiatic army," says Livy, "first introduced among us couches of rich workmanship, cloths of delicate texture, and all kinds of costly furniture. They set the fashion of sumptuous banquets, at which the guests were at once regaled with the choicest viands and charmed with voluptuous music. Cooks, who had formerly been the cheapest kind of slave, now became the most valuable."<sup>1</sup>

The effect of the rapidly increasing wealth on political morality is proved by the frequent laws against *Bribery*. bribery at elections, which may be dated from the year 181 B.C.<sup>2</sup>

Some incidents have been preserved which prove the rising profligacy. Lucius Flamininus, brother of the famous Titus, was elected Consul in 192 B.C. and sent to Cisalpine Gaul. He had taken with him a beautiful Carthaginian boy, who indulged in loud complaints at being taken away from Rome just before the exhibition of the great gladiatorial games. It happened that a Gallic chieftain fled with his family to seek for protection in the Roman camp. The fugitive was brought to the Consul's tent, where he was feasting with his unworthy minion. "Now," said Lucius, "you shall be rewarded for not seeing the gladiators." So speaking, he struck down the suppliant with his sword and stabbed him in the side, that his dying agonies might amuse the cruel boy.

A sure sign of corruption appears in the dissolute manners that were discovered among the women. In 186 B.C., the Consul Postumius was accidentally informed that there were, not only in Rome but in many Italian

<sup>1</sup> Livy, xxxix. 6.

<sup>2</sup> There were earlier laws *de ambitu*; but these were intended by the Nobility to check the New Men from *canvassing*. Now *canvassing* and *bribery* became synonymous, and were expressed by the same word—*ambitus*.

towns, secret societies in which young men and women were dedicated to Bacchus; and that, under the cloak of religious ceremonies, every kind of licence and debauchery was practised. The Senate issued a stringent decree for the repression of

MARCIVS L. S. POSTVMIVS L. COSSENATVM CONSOLVERVNT. NOCTOBAPVD AEDEM  
 DVELONAI SCARFAM CLAVDI M. F. VALERIVS P. Q. MINVCICF. DEBACANALIBVS QVEIFOIDERATEI  
 ESENT. ITA EXDEICENDVM CENSVERE. NEIQVISEORVM SACANAL HABVISE VELET. SEIQVES  
 ESENTQVEISBELDEICERENT. NECEVS ESEBACANAL HABERE. EEIS VTEI AD PRVRBANVM  
 ROMAM VENIRENT. DEQVEEIS REBVS VBEI EORVM VTR AAVDITAESENT VTEI SENATVM  
 NOSTER DE CERNERET. DVM NE MINVS SENATORIBVS CADESENT. RES COSOLERETVR  
 BACAS VIR NEQVISADIESE VELET. CEIVIS ROMANVS NEVENOMINVS LATINVS NEVESOCIVM  
 QVISQVAM NISEI PRVRBANVM ADIESENTISQVE SENATVOS SENTENTIA DVM NE  
 MINVS SENATORIBVS CADESENT. QVOM EA RES COSOLERETVR IOVSISSENT CE SVERE  
 SACERDOS NEQVISVIRESET MAGISTER NEQVEVI NEQVE MVIER QVISQVAM ESET  
 NEVE PECUNIAM QVISQVAM EORVM COMQVISE VI ET NEVE MAGISTRATVM  
 NEVE PROMAGISTRATVO NEQVE VIRVM NEQVE MYELEM QYTQVAM FECISEVELET  
 NEVE POSTHAC INTER SED CONIOVRA E NEVE COMVOISE NEVE CONSPONDISE  
 NEVE CONPROME SISE VELET NEVE QVISQVAM FIDEM INTER SED DE DISE VELET  
 SACRA IN DQVOLTOD NE QVISQVAM FECISEVELET NEVE IN DPLICOD NEVE IN  
 PREIVATOD NEVE EXSTRAD VRBEM SACRA QVISQVAM FECISEVELET NISEI  
 PRVRBANVM ADIESET ISQVE DE SENATVOS SENTENTIA DVM NE MINVS  
 SENATORIBVS CADESENT QVOM EA RES COSOLERETVR IOVSISSENT CENSVERE  
 HOMINES PLOVS OINVORSEI VIREI ATQVE MYLIERES SACRA NEQVISQVAM  
 FECISEVELET NEVE INTERIBEVIREI PLOVS DVOBVS MYLIERIBVS PLOVS TRIBVS  
 VISE VELENT NISEI DE PRVRBANI SENATVOSQVE SENTENTIA VTEI SVPRAD  
 SCRIPTVM EST HAICE VTEI IN COVENTIONID EXDEICATIS NE MINVS TRINVM  
 NOVNDINVM SENATVOSQVE SENTENTIAM VTEI SCIENCES ESET EORVM  
 SENTENTIA ITA EVIT SEIQVESENT QVEI ARVORVM EAD FE CISENT VAM SVPRAD  
 SCRIPTVM EST EEIS REM CAPVT ALEM FACIENDAM CENSVESE ATQVE VTEI  
 HOCE IN TABOLAM AHENAM INCEIDERETIS ITA SENATVS AIQVOM CENSUIT  
 VTEI QVE EAM FIGIER IOVBEATIS VREI FACILV MED GNOSCIER POTISIT ATQVE  
 VTEI EA BACANALIA SEIQVASVNT EXSTRAD QVAM SEIQVID BEI SACRI EST  
 ITA VTEI SVPRAD SCRIPTVM EST IN DIEBVS QVIBVS VOBEISTABELAI DATAI  
 ERVNT FACIATIS VTEI DISMOTA SIENT IN AGRO TEVRANO

Bacchanalian orgies. Numbers of men were put to death; the women were handed over to the heads of their respective families, for the law did not permit the public execution of a female.<sup>1</sup>

A few years later, Piso, the Consul for 180 B.C., died suddenly.

<sup>1</sup> For an examination of this conspiracy, see Ihne, iv. 272. The extent *senatusconsultum de bacchanalibus* is printed (e.g.) in Bruns, *Fontes Iuris Romani*, and Wordsworth, *Fragments and Specimens of Early Latin*. A reproduction of it is given here.

His wife was accused of poisoning him. It was believed that *Accusations of poisoning.* this was a not uncommon practice. Whatever was the truth, it is clear that such crimes could hardly have been imputed to Roman matrons, if their lives had not given some colour to the charge.

The state of parties in the Senate in the earlier part of this period is singular. When Scipio returned to Rome as the conqueror of Hannibal, he was saluted by the people as the saviour of Italy. He might then have put himself at the head of a popular party and crushed the ascendancy lately gained by the Senate. He had been elected Consul by the people, certainly not with the goodwill of the Senatorial majority; he had won his triumph by setting their known opinion at defiance. He was still the idol of the people. It was proposed to set up his statue in the Forum, in the Comitium, in the Senate-house, on the Capitol, in the very Temple of Jupiter. Nay, there was a general wish to make him Dictator for life, in the hope that by the same vigour and address which had marked his military career he might put an end to the social evils, the debt, the misery, which followed the dreadful Hannibalic War.

Scipio was still in the prime of life, not more than thirty-five years of age.<sup>1</sup> But he had no taste for the cares and toils of a party-leader. He put aside the honours offered him with the same calm disdain with which he had declined the crown offered him by the Celtiberians. It is always difficult for a soldier who from early years has held high command to acquire the tact necessary for managing the war of parties. Hannibal, indeed, had shown himself as able in statesmanship as in war; but it was by the despotic method of the camp. He was backed by his veterans; by their aid he made himself master of Carthage, and ruled it with imperial sway. Scipio perhaps might have done the same at Rome. But he was not like Hannibal. Notwithstanding the time he had passed in military commands, he had not lost his taste for peaceful pursuits. He used to say that "he was never less alone than when alone," so fond was he of literature and art. Those who were intimate with him loved him dearly. But he never concealed a certain proud indifference for opinion, whether of the Senate or the people, which soon dimmed his popularity. He preferred the society of the poet Ennius to the applause of the people or the favour of the Senate.

In 199 B.C., he was chosen Censor; his friendly colleague, P.

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 305.



Aelius Paetus, named him Chief of the Senate, and he retained this high rank till the Censorship of Cato in 184, one year before his death. In 194, he held the Consulship for a second time, and his popularity received a mortal blow from his own hand. The Censors of that year proposed to appropriate the front places in the Theatre to the Senatorial Order, and Scipio supported the proposal.

But it was not till after his return from Asia that his enemies ventured to attack him openly. Those enemies were no doubt the leaders of the old Senatorial party. But the person who led the assault bore the famous name of Cato.

M. Porcius Cato was born at the provincial town of Tusculum in the year 234 B.C., so that he was nearly of the same age as the great Scipio. Cato's patrimony lay in the Sabine country, near the humble dwelling once occupied *Cato.*

by the great Curius Dentatus. The youth looked with reverence on the hearth at which Curius was roasting his turnips when he rejected the Samnite gold, and resolved to make the rustic hero his model. He used to work with his slaves, wearing the same coarse dress, and partaking of the same simple fare. His natural power of speaking he exercised by pleading in the law-courts of the neighbouring town. His shrewd remarks passed current in the country; and the fame of the youthful orator reached the ears of L. Valerius Flaccus, a young nobleman of the neighbourhood, himself a determined friend of the ancient Roman manners. Flaccus had discernment enough to see what was in Cato; he became his friend, and persuaded him to go to Rome, there to enter on a public life. The honourable intimacy thus begun continued throughout life. Flaccus and Cato were colleagues in almost every office of state.

Cato at once attached himself to the party of Fabius, who at that time dispensed all the honours of the Republic. He served under the old general at Capua and at Tarentum; and being elected Quaestor in 205 B.C., was sent with Scipio to Sicily. When Cato returned to Rome, the favour of the old Senatorial party, and the popularity he had won by unabashed self-confidence, blunt bearing, and caustic eloquence, enabled him to gain the highest honours with little difficulty. He was Praetor in Sardinia in 198 B.C., at the age of thirty-six, and gained credit by the uprightness of his administration, though he was thought too severe against the practice of usury. He was Consul in his fortieth year; and we have already followed his able conduct of the Spanish war. Four years later he returned to Rome with the despatch announcing the

victory of Thermopylae, which he himself had mainly contributed to gain.

Such was the man who, in the year 187 B.C., led the attack upon Scipio. From his first connection with Fabius, he had conceived an inveterate hatred against his patron's rival; and as Scipio was the leader of the new Hellenic manners, so Cato constituted himself protector of the old Roman life.

*Cato as  
opponent of  
Hellenism.*

Cato seems to have thought that all evil was due to the introduction of Greek customs. No doubt Greece was at that time fast verging to that miserable state in which she still lies. But the corruption of Rome would have followed, if there had been no Greece to corrupt. The vices for which Romans became notorious were not Hellenic. It was not part of the nature of Greeks to spend large sums in gluttonous eating and coarse sensuality. Pericles boasted that his countrymen cultivated their taste for the beautiful without extravagance:<sup>1</sup> and the same might be said of their pleasures; they are and were a frugal race. No doubt the quick-witted and unscrupulous Greeks who, as slaves or freedmen, thronged the houses of Roman nobles, were more adroit ministers of vice than the duller natives of other lands; but they obeyed rather than guided the propensities of their masters; and it must not be forgotten that the philosophers, statesmen, and artists of Greece flocked to Rome, as well as her parasites and panders. Those who cultivated Greek letters and art were the noblest sons of Rome,—Scipio himself, Aemilius Paullus, and the like. The second Scipio was, as we shall see, trained by the precepts and friendship of a Greek statesman.

The first attack upon Scipio was judiciously made through his brother Asiaticus, who was required by the Tribune Petillius to produce an account of receipts and expenditure during his Asiatic command. Africanus bade his brother fetch the books, and then taking them from his hands tore them into fragments before the Senate, saying that "it was unworthy to call a man to account for a few thousands who had paid millions into the Treasury." This contemptuous disregard of opinion and law was now made the ground of accusation against Scipio himself. On other occasions he had been guilty of similar acts of arrogance. When the Quaestors refused to pay him certain moneys without legal authority, he demanded the keys of the Treasury himself, saying that "one who had closed the Treasury by his successes

*Attack on  
Scipio  
Asiaticus.*

<sup>1</sup> φιλοκαλοῦμεν μετ' εὐτελείας (Thuc., ii. 40).

had the best right to open it." These and other instances of contempt were brought before the People, and the great man himself was formally impeached by the Tribune Naevius.<sup>1</sup> Scipio rose to answer. He took no notice of the charges laid against him, but gave an elaborate history of his life and services. The glory of the man revived; the memory of old times returned; all hearts yearned towards him who had driven the fell African from the shores of Italy; the sun set before the Assembly had passed to a vote. Next day was the anniversary of the battle of Zama. Scipio appeared with a laurel-wreath on his head, escorted by a splendid retinue of friends and followers. "Romans," he said, "on this day I defeated Hannibal. I am on my way to the Capitol to render thanks to the great gods of the city. Follow me, Romans, and pray to those gods that you may always have leaders such as I am." The effect of these words was electrical. The multitude rose with one accord, and followed the hero up the Sacred Ascent. The Tribune was left alone with his attendants.

This was the last day of Scipio's greatness. The cool animosity of Cato pursued him with untiring zeal, and another Tribune was urged to renew the prosecution. On the day appointed the great man did not appear: he had left Rome. Asiaticus alleged sickness as the cause of his brother's absence, and prayed for an adjournment. After some question, the plea was allowed; but the accusers turned upon the advocate. This was politic. It is not likely that a vote of condemnation could have been obtained against Africanus: his character was unblemished, and late events had shown that the memory of the past was not dead; but Asiaticus was not above suspicion. It was said that of the Syrian spoils a large sum due to the Treasury had found its way into his private coffers, and the scene in the Senate-house confirmed the belief.

So soon as Africanus heard of the proceedings against his brother, he hastened to Rome, and reached the Forum in time to see his person seized by the officer of the Tribune. Without hesitation he rescued Lucius by force from custody. It seemed as if now there was to be a beginning of those bloody frays which disgraced the city in later times; but this dire extremity was averted by another Tribune. This was Tib. Sempronius Gracchus, who was so honourably distinguished a short time

<sup>1</sup> For the difficulties connected with these trials, see Ihne, iv. 326, *sqq.*

after for humanity in Spain.<sup>1</sup> "He did not interfere," he said, "from any wish to thwart the action of law. He was still, as he had ever been, an enemy of the Scipios; yet, to prevent worse evils, he would himself bar the arrest of L. Scipio. It was better that the will of the People should be frustrated by one of their own Tribunes than by the arrogance of a private citizen." He then forbade all further attempts to seize the person of Asiaticus.

The great Scipio felt that his name could no longer work like a spell upon the people. He retired to his villa at Liternum, where he lived some years longer in retirement; and when he found his end approaching, he ordered himself to be buried there. "Ungrateful city!" he said, "thou shalt not even have my ashes." He died in the year 183 B.C., in the fifty-third year of his age. The three statues of himself, his brother, and the poet Ennius, were placed in the family tomb of the Scipios, which stood outside the Porta Capena at Rome.<sup>2</sup> He was too lordly to be the useful citizen of a republic, too generous to become her master. His later career threw a shadow over services which were worth more to Rome than those of any other of her sons.

In the self-same year Hannibal breathed his last. After the loss of his last hope by the destruction of the Syrian host at Magnesia, he at length found a resting-place at the court of Prusias of Bithynia. Soon after this, the Senate sent Flaminius to the court of Prusias to demand explanations of several acts of apparent hostility, and the envoy took upon himself to demand from the king the person of his illustrious guest. Prusias dared not say nay; but the great Carthaginian, to avoid falling into the hands of his implacable foes, swallowed a dose of poison, which, according to the common story, he carried with him constantly in the hollow of a ring. He was sixty-four years of age. Life had long ceased to be valuable to him, because opposition to Rome had become hopeless. He died as he lived, faithful to the service of that avenging deity to whom he had been bound in boyhood by his father Hamilcar.

The fall of Scipio threw all power into the hands of the old Senatorial party. The names of the great Cornelian gens and of other gentes friendly to Scipio nearly disappear, for a season, from the Fasti. The noble

<sup>1</sup> Page 392.

<sup>2</sup> Livy, xxxviii. 56; Canina, *Via Appia*, i. 46, ii. 10. For an account and criticism of the extant portraits of Scipio, see Bernoulli, *Römische Ikonographie*, i. 32.

Aemilius Paullus was unable to obtain the Consulship till a late age. But Cato no longer held by the Senatorial party. His first connection with it arose from the fact that it represented his old patron, Fabius. These Senatorial chiefs, it must be noted, were as much devoted to Hellenic fashions as the Scipios; but they loved the vices of Greece rather than her refinement, and the gilding laid on only brought into relief the coarseness of the material. They had supported Cato up to his Consulship, because he was a useful hound to run down Scipio; but when he offered himself for the Censorship in 189, they used all their influence against him, and he was defeated. They knew well that he was a sworn friend of the old Roman rusticity, and would not tolerate their vulgar luxuries any more than the refined elegance of Scipio; he might be useful to them as an opponent of that great man; but as Censor he might turn and rend them all. This was the period of Cato's greatness. The Forum rang with his voice; his bitter gibes and caustic sarcasms against the vices of the ruling oligarchy were repeated everywhere; the People began to recognise him as their champion. At the next election of Censors (184 B.C.) he again came forward, with his friend Flaccus by his side; and though they were opposed by six distinguished candidates, the favour of the People prevailed, and the two friends were elected.

Cato was now in full possession of the immense arbitrary powers wielded by the Censor, and determined to put down luxury with a strong hand. During his Consulship, *Censorship of Cato.* it had been proposed to repeal the Oppian law,<sup>1</sup> and he had thundered against the proposal, but in vain,—the ladies were too strong for him. But now it was his turn. Hitherto no property had been included in the Censor's register, except land and houses. Cato ordered all valuable slaves to be rated at ten times their actual value, and then taxed; and he laid a heavy tax on the dress and equipages of the women, if they exceeded a certain sum. He struck seven Senators off the list, some for paltry causes. One was degraded for kissing his wife in the presence of their daughter; another for an unseasonable jest; but all honest men must have applauded when L. Flaminius suffered. It looked like personal rancour when, at the grand review of the Knights, he deprived L. Scipio of his horse.

In the management of public works, Cato showed judgment equal to his vigour. He provided for the repair of the aque-

ducts and reservoirs, and took great pains to amend the drainage of the city. He encouraged a fair and open competition for the contracts of tax collection, and so much offended the powerful companies of *publicani* that, after he laid down his office, he was prosecuted and compelled to pay a fine of two talents.

It is manifest also that Cato had given quite a new significance to the Censorial office. The fearless onslaught made by him on all abuses had stirred up a nest of hornets.

*His character.*

Forty-four times he was accused before the People, yet, except on the occasion just mentioned, he always came off free. More familiar to us than almost any of the great men of Rome, we see him with his keen grey eyes and red hair, his harsh features and spare athletic frame, strong by natural constitution and hardened by exercise, clad even at Rome in the coarsest rustic garb, and hear him attacking with plain but nervous eloquence the luxury and corruption of the Nobles. Yet Cato was no demagogue; indeed, in his way, he was as haughty as any noble in the land. His mind was of that hard and narrow kind, that, when he had formed opinions or conceived prejudices, nothing could move him. In private business he was ruled by calculation solely. He was a great farmer: his book on agriculture is still in our hands,<sup>1</sup> and contains a curious mixture of shrewd sense, calculating selfishness, and superstitious fancies. He encouraged pasturage as the most profitable employment of land in Italy, though by so doing he gave direct encouragement to slave labour.<sup>2</sup> He condemned usury, and yet evaded the law which forbade Senators to engage in trade, by lending his money to the trading companies. He was humane towards Roman citizens, but he advised a farmer to sell off such of his slaves as might become useless from age or infirmity. His self-sufficiency was intolerable. He was one of those men who, having done everything for themselves, have come to think themselves infallible. The Sabine farmer made himself a perpetual Censor, and would fain have laid down the law for every one. He excused bungling magistrates; "for not every one," he said, "is a Cato." In domestic life, he insisted on ruling the nursery, and prescribing for the sick.

In later years his asperities somewhat softened. He wrote on the antiquities of Rome; he brought the poet Ennius from Sardinia; he even condescended to learn Greek. After all

---

<sup>1</sup> See Mommsen, iii. 65.

<sup>2</sup> Page 462.



deductions from his merits, it must be allowed that Cato, almost alone among the men of his time, had clear principles and acted up to them. He was a true Roman of the old school, with great force of mind and great talents for administration. The summary of his life and character will show how little the world had to hope from the domination of Rome.

AUTHORITIES.—For the career and censorship of Cato: Livy, xxxix. 40-44; Plutarch, *Cato maior*; Cicero, *de senectute*, *Brutus*. On the state of parties in Rome at this time, see Mommsen, iii. 43; Ihne, iv. 311.



Coin of Perseus. (Head, *H.N.*, 206.)

## CHAPTER XXXVIII

### THE THIRD MACEDONIAN WAR, OR WAR OF PERSEUS (185—167 B.C.)

PHILIP had of late shown complete submission to Rome ; but he saw that there must come a limit to such submission, and he secretly prepared for war by improving the internal resources of Macedon. For a time his ungovernable temper was controlled by prudence. He organised an improved system of taxation ; he opened again the gold-mines of Mount Pangaeus, which had supplied treasure to his great predecessor Philip the Second.<sup>1</sup> He replenished his wasted population by large draughts of brave barbarians from Thrace. He drew closer his alliance with Prusias of Bithynia, the enemy of Eumenes. He ventured to seize Aenos and Maroneia, two Thracian cities lately evacuated by Antiochus.

Reports of this activity were soon transmitted to Rome by Eumenes, and the Senate sent a commission of inquiry (185 B.C.).

Philip was summoned to appear before them at Tempé, and the proud monarch complied. But when he found that he was to be stripped of all his Thessalian possessions, his assumed calmness gave way, and he broke into an angry threat. "The sun," he said, "had not quite set yet."<sup>2</sup> The complaints of Aenos and Maroneia were reserved for the judgment of the Senate. That judgment was given against him ; and Philip, resolved to gratify his vengeance, ordered a general massacre of the wretched Maroneians. But as soon as his passion subsided, he became much alarmed, and despatched his

*Commission sent by the Senate.*

*Demetrius as hostage at Rome.*

<sup>1</sup> *The Student's Greece*, p. 491.

<sup>2</sup> Perhaps with reference to Theocritus, i. 102.

younger son Demetrius, who had lived for some years as a hostage at Rome, to make intercession in his behalf.

The mission of Demetrius was the beginning of great misery to his father. The young man was received by the Senate in the most flattering manner. But, at the same time, they encouraged every complaint against Philip. And when Demetrius stood forth in the Senate-house to offer a defence for his father, the Chief of the Senate cut him short by asking whether he had no written instructions. The young prince incautiously produced papers, which were evidently intended as mere private memoranda, and contained bitter complaints of Philip's treatment by Rome. Upon this, the Senate at once gave judgment against the king; "but," it was added, "they would forgive him for the sake of Demetrius; he must remember that he owed this forbearance entirely to the young prince, his son" (183 B.C.).

The rest of Philip's life was embittered by family intrigues. Demetrius was the favourite of the Macedonians and, even where there is no positive reason, suspicion is apt to grow up between a reigning monarch and a popular young prince. Such suspicion was, not without cause, aggravated by the honours paid to Demetrius at Rome, and by the foolish fondness shown by the young prince for everything Roman. There was, moreover, an eye watching the young prince with more of jealousy than even Philip was likely to feel. Perseus, the king's elder son, was born of a concubine. He was far less popular than Demetrius, and felt that his succession was in danger. He gained his father's ear, and led him to believe that Demetrius was practising against the life of his elder brother. Two confidential agents were sent to Rome to collect evidence against the young prince.

Meanwhile, the king silently continued his preparations. Jealousy and suspicion had led him to put many of his great nobles to death, and he now imprisoned their sons, quoting the Epic line, which says that it is but foolish work to slay the father and spare the child.<sup>1</sup> He endeavoured to balance the suspected fidelity of the Macedonians by transporting whole families from the cities on the coast into Emathia, and replacing them by Thracians. He formed a bold scheme for assailing the Romans at home, by inducing the Bastarnians, a Sarmatian tribe beyond the Danube, to exterminate the Dardanians and seize their territory, and then, leaving their families there, to pour into Italy by the

<sup>1</sup> νήπιος, ὃς πατέρα κτείνας υἱοὺς καταλείπει.

northern end of the Adriatic. It was perhaps in connection with this great plan, that he made a tour to the passes of Haemus (the Balkan), of which Livy speaks in language that we might use of a person visiting the regions of Siberia.<sup>1</sup>

On his way to these regions, he sent back Demetrius to Macedonia under the charge of Didas, governor of Paeonia. This *Death of* man, under pretence of sympathy, led Demetrius to *Demetrius.* form and to confess a scheme for flying to Italy and claiming the protection of the Senate. Philip was at once informed of this; and some time after his return home, came the envoys from Rome with what seemed to confirm all that Perseus had alleged; they were the bearers of letters purporting to be written by Flamininus to the king, taking the criminal intentions of Demetrius for granted, and deprecating his father's wrath. The unhappy king, who had long wished to disbelieve, gave orders for his son's death. Didas attempted to take him off by poison; but, apparently, the potion was not strong enough, and ruffians were sent into his chamber who suffocated him with brutal violence.

This event took place in 181 B.C. The old king did not long survive. He discovered that the letters of Flamininus *Death of* were forged, and it is said that he meditated *Philip.* disinheriting Perseus. But mortal sickness overtook him at Amphipolis. Perseus, informed of his father's state, was master of the kingdom before Philip's death was generally known (179 B.C.).

The great abilities possessed by Philip were always shown on emergencies. But ordinarily his savage passions deprived him of the advantages he might have gained, and it was the popular belief that the misery of his latter days was a divine retribution for the crimes of his life. Perseus had neither the same abilities nor the same passions. In manner he was dignified and reserved; in government he was generally prudent and temperate. But he had two defects, which in his position were almost more fatal than his father's ferocity, — avarice and timidity.

The first measures of his reign were marked by prudence and moderation. After regulating affairs at home, he visited Greece *Measures of* and endeavoured to conciliate the various states, *Perseus.* especially the Achaeans. In most of these states tyrants had seized the government with the connivance or aid of Rome; so that the patriotic party was inclined to join him, as formerly the same party had been fain to accept the aid of Rome against the tyranny of Philip.

---

<sup>1</sup> Livy, xl. 21.

The Senate had their eye upon the movements of Perseus ; but it was not till the year 172 B.C. that incidents occurred which brought on immediate hostilities.

It had been their policy in Asia to increase the power of Eumenes of Pergamus, as a balance to the power both of Macedonia and Syria. Eumenes was anxious also to extend his possessions in Greece ; but the Achæan League, secretly inclined to take part with Perseus, baffled all his endeavours ; and he appeared at Rome as the formal accuser of the king of Macedon. He was heard with favour ; and, after a secret debate, the Senate appointed a day for hearing the envoy sent by Perseus to offer explanations. The man perceived that the matter had been prejudged. "His master," he said, "was ready to explain ; but if they were bent on war, for war he was also prepared." He then hastened home to warn Perseus that hostilities must soon begin.

Matters were precipitated by an attempt on the life of Eumenes. At Rome he had been rewarded with the gift of a curule chair and ivory staff, the highest honours which the republic could bestow upon a foreigner ; and, on his return homewards, he landed at Cirrha to pay a devotional visit at Delphi. He was ascending the steep road which led to the Temple, when he was knocked down by some large stones thrown from a wall which skirted the road. He was taken up for dead ; but was carried to Aegina, where he recovered. The assassins had escaped. But it was said that they bore letters of introduction from Perseus ; and a chief citizen of Brundisium came forward to state that he also had been offered bribes from the king to poison some of the Roman Senators.

It is difficult to say how much of these accusations was true. But the Senate gave ready credence to the informers, and immediate war was determined upon.

On the very day on which the Consuls for 171 B.C. entered on office, a decree was framed for obtaining from the Centuries a declaration of war ; and this time the vote passed in the affirmative without demur. The command fell to P. Licinius Crassus. While he was preparing for his expedition, commissioners were sent to different parts of Greece to intimidate the states and prevent them from taking part with Perseus. The chief person among them was Q. Marcius Philippus, whose father had been a friend of Philip, and had borrowed a new family name from that monarch.

*Eumenes  
accuses  
Perseus.*

*Attempted  
murder of  
Eumenes.*

*War declared  
against  
Perseus.*

Perseus invited him to a conference, which was readily accepted by the Roman envoy, for he knew that the Senate wished to gain time. The two negotiators were on opposite sides of the Peneüs, and it was a question of etiquette as to which party should cross the river. The Roman decided it in his own favour by an indifferent jest. "It is meet," said

*Philippus  
deceives  
Perseus.*

he, "that the *son* should come to the *father*." The plausible manners of Philippus beguiled Perseus.

He prayed for an armistice in order to send an embassy to the Senate, which Philippus granted with apparent unwillingness. He then returned to Rome, and had the impudence to boast in open Senate of the successful fraud by which he had gained time; and the Senate, with the exception of a few honourable men, had the effrontery to approve conduct which much resembled swindling. Philippus was sent back to Greece with full powers to act on the part of Rome.

It was with reason that the Romans were anxious to gain

*First cam-  
paign :  
Crassus.*

time. The resources of Macedon had been steadily increasing during a peace of nearly thirty years : the treasury was full. Perseus had a well-ap-

pointed army of nearly 40,000 foot and 4000 horse. To oppose this force, Crassus landed in Epirus with a full Consular army.

When Perseus discovered the fraud that had been practised upon him, he formed an entrenched camp on the western slope of Ossa, favourably situated for foraging in the plain of the Peneüs and for commanding his communications with Macedon by the Pass of Tempé. Meanwhile Crassus had threaded the passes of western Thessaly without molestation and advanced to Larissa, where he crossed the Peneüs. Presently after this came Eumenes, now recovered from his wounds, with his brother Attalus, at the head of 4000 foot and 1000 horse. These additions to his force, with Achæan and Aetolian auxiliaries, and some Numidian horse, who joined somewhat later, made his army nearly equal in number to that of Perseus, though it was much inferior in quality.

The Consul felt this inferiority, and steadily declined battle, till Perseus appeared before the gates of his camp. Then Crassus gave battle, and was defeated with considerable loss. Perseus, however, did not venture to attack the Roman entrenchments, and allowed Crassus to decamp across the Peneüs. The blame of the defeat was laid upon the Aetolians, and five chiefs of that nation were sent to be tried before the Senate.

Perseus took advantage of his success to offer peace on the



terms of the treaty of Flamininus ; but the Consul audaciously refused to listen to any conditions short of absolute submission. Even this defiance failed to rouse the spirit of the king. He sent a second message, offering to increase the tribute paid by his father ; but the same contemptuous reply met his advances.

The new Consul A. Hostilius Mancinus arrived early in the season to take the command (170 B.C.). He entered Thessaly from the south, and made an attempt to force the Cambunian passes, but was repulsed, and Appius Claudius, who was ordered to invade Macedonia from Illyricum, was utterly discomfited.

*Second campaign:  
Hostilius  
Mancinus.*

The success of the Macedonians had given life to the smouldering discontent of Greece. Some states, as Haliartus and Coroneia in Boeotia, actually revolted. The Epirotes had hitherto scrupulously observed their obligations. But the ear of the Roman commanders was gained by Charops, grandson of that Charops who had assisted Flamininus to turn the Pass of Klissura, and the Epirotes were so exasperated by his calumnies that they were ready to join Perseus. Nor did the king take any steps to support these attempts at insurrection ; the Boeotian cities were taken and treated with such barbarity, that even the Senate interfered on their behalf. On both sides the war languished.

The Consul who followed Hostilius (in 169 B.C.) was Q. Marcius Philippus, the cajoler of Perseus. Philippus, though he was past sixty and of unwieldy corpulence, displayed more vigour than his predecessors. Avoiding the gorge of Tempé and the Cambunian Passes, he carried his army by a difficult path over the southern shoulder of Mount Olympus, and appeared within a few miles of Dium, where Perseus was lying in fancied security. The king, panic-stricken, ordered a precipitate retreat to Pydna, and sent off two of his confidential ministers,—one to Pella to throw his treasure into the sea, the other to Thessalonica to burn his arsenal.

*Third campaign:  
Philippus.*

Philippus, astonished at his own success, followed the king for two days' march beyond Dium ; but want of provisions obliged him to retreat to Dium, whence he moved along the coast to Tempé, where the Macedonian fortresses surrendered at discretion. When he heard of the Consul's retreat, Perseus returned to Dium. Ashamed of his own pusillanimity, he censured his officers for suffering the Romans to pass over Mount Olympus ; and ordered the ministers, whom he had commissioned to destroy his arsenal and sink his treasure, to

be put to death, in the idle hope that the truth might be concealed.

The only substantial success gained by the Consul Philippus was the opening of the Pass of Tempé. Public feeling at Rome began to show signs of impatience. The Senate perceived that they must no longer dally with the war; it was resolved by common consent to promote the election of L. Aemilius Paullus to the Consulship. This eminent man, the brother-in-law of Scipio, had for some years been living in retirement. He was now past sixty, and had more than once been rejected as a candidate for the Consulship, but in the hour of need more than once he was called upon to serve the state.

He resolved, however, first to make the present state of things fully known. He therefore insisted on sending commissioners to report on the condition of both the armies. This report was not encouraging. Perseus was still at Dium with all his forces round him. The Consul was at Heracleum, a little north of Tempé, and his army in a wretched state. The fleet was as ill off as the army. Eumenes had withdrawn. Both he and the Rhodians had shown symptoms of disaffection to Rome. Epirus was in insurrection. Genthius, king of Illyria, was expected to join Perseus.

Paullus deemed the occasion worthy of all attention. No legionary tribunes were appointed but men of proved experience. The army in Macedonia was made up to more than 30,000 men. One Praetor, Cn. Octavius, took the command of the fleet. L. Anicius, the Praetor Peregrinus, was despatched with a considerable force of infantry and cavalry to attack Genthius at home. An army of reserve was formed in Italy.

The commanders left Rome early in April of the year 168 B.C. Paullus, accompanied by his two sons, and by young Scipio Nasica, son of the "best man,"<sup>1</sup> travelled post-haste to Brundisium; crossed to Corcyra in one day; in five days more reached Delphi, where he stayed to offer sacrifice to Apollo; and in five days more joined the army above Tempé. A few punishments checked disorder, and his strict regulations restored discipline. The fame of the new Consul alarmed the feeble Perseus. Nor was his alarm lessened by hearing that the Praetor Anicius had pursued Genthius to Scodra, and had compelled the chief to surrender at discretion.

Yet the defensive measures taken by Perseus were good. He

had drawn entrenchments along the deep bed of the Enipeus<sup>1</sup> from the base of Mount Olympus to the sea ; and Paullus thought the Macedonian position too strong *Measures of Perseus.* to be assailed in front. He therefore sent Nasica round the mountain by the north, while he amused the enemy by a feigned attack upon his lines. Nasica, after an arduous march, turned the right flank of the Macedonian lines ; and Perseus fell back to the plain of Pydna, which was well adapted for the movements of the phalanxes. Paullus followed close, but resolved not to risk a battle till he had secured his camp. Just at this time there was an eclipse of the moon ; on which C. Sulpicius Gallus, one of the legionary tribunes, who had studied *Eclipse of the moon.* astronomy, addressed the soldiers and explained the natural cause of the phenomenon, thus preventing the alarm which this portent would have caused to the Romans.<sup>2</sup> The Macedonians, on the other hand, were horror-struck : the eclipse seemed to threaten the fall of the monarchy.

The next day a decisive conflict was brought on by accident, as at Cynoscephalae. About three in the afternoon a Roman horse broke loose and was followed by a few *Battle of Pydna.* soldiers into the bed of the small stream which separated the two armies. The horse was seized by an outpost of Thracians ; a scuffle ensued, and so many men came up on both sides to take part in the fray that both King and Consul drew out their whole armies in battle order. On the Macedonian side, the two phalanxes, the Brass and Silver Shields, formed the main body, flanked by the light troops and cavalry comprising a large force of Thracian auxiliaries. Paullus rode, unhelmeted, with his grey hair loose, along their line, and looked, as he afterwards said, with alarm at the formidable mass of bristling pikes. The battle began. In vain the Italian soldiers showed more than their accustomed bravery. The weight of the phalanxes was irresistible ; and the legions fell back, but so as to draw the enemy to the base of the hills which skirted the plain. As the ground became less even, the compact masses of the phalanxes began to show gaps here and there. Into every chink that opened, Roman soldiers penetrated. Once more the phalanx was tried against the legions

<sup>1</sup> Ihne, iii. 234.

<sup>2</sup> Cic., *de rep.*, i. 15. Livy represents him as *predicting* it, and so perhaps does Cicero in another place (*de sen.*, 14, 49). Modern calculations have fixed this eclipse to the night of the 21st of June of the reformed calendar ; but according to the Romans it was on the 3rd of September. So far was their reckoning from the true time. *Cp.* Ihne, iii. 249.

and failed. The heavy infantry, encumbered by their long pikes, were cut down man by man; not less than 20,000 fell, and 11,000 were made prisoners. The Macedonian army was annihilated.

After the disastrous day of Pydna, Perseus fled to Pella, his capital, which he reached at midnight. On the third day after the battle he reached Amphipolis, where he stayed only to see his beloved treasures put on board ship. Then, with his children he made straight for the sacred asylum of Samothrace. His only followers were Evander a Cretan, and two Greek exiles, with a guard of 500 Cretans.

Paullus followed the king to Amphipolis, but was too late to catch him, and despatched Octavius with the fleet to Samothrace. On the arrival of the Romans, the wretched king was deserted by his Cretan guards, who carried off on board ship the gold which he loved more than life. His younger children were betrayed by their keeper to Octavius. Then, deserted by every one, he surrendered with his eldest son, and was conveyed to the Consul's quarters near Amphipolis. He was received by Paullus with courtesy, but was given to understand that the Macedonian monarchy had ceased to exist.

Great was the joy at Rome at news of the decisive victories won by Anicius in Illyria, and by Paullus in Macedonia. Paullus remained in Greece during the winter, and was continued in command for the next year as Proconsul. During the summer, in company with his second son, better known afterwards as the younger Scipio, he visited the most famous places in Greece, Delphi, the Euripus, Athens, Argos, Sparta, Megalopolis, and Olympia. After his return to Amphipolis, arrived ten commissioners bearing the orders of the Senate with regard to the future government of the country. The people crowded eagerly to the place, as on a former occasion the Greeks had crowded to Corinth, but with hopes and feelings far different. In the midst of a dead silence, Paullus recited the ordinances in Latin; Octavius repeated them in Greek. "The whole country was to be divided into four districts—one between the Nestus and the Strymon, the second between the Strymon and Axios, the third between the Axios and Mount Olympus, while the fourth included the inland districts bordering on Epirus and Illyria. The capital cities of each respectively were to be Amphipolis, Thessalonica, Pella, Pelagonia. Each district was to constitute a separate republic, and the citizens of each were forbidden to enter into any connubial or commercial relations with those of another. The tribute paid to Rome was to be only half what they had hitherto

paid to the king. They were prohibited from working their gold and silver mines, from importing salt, and from cutting timber for ships."

The isolation of Macedonia was thus effectually provided for, while the people were amused with a show of liberty and pleased by a remission of taxes. Paullus drew up, for the government of the four republics, a clear and impartial code of laws. The administration of each was placed in the hands of a Senate; but as all who had hitherto taken part in the government were transported to Italy, the persons who held rule were helpless and ignorant, and the country fell into utter disorganisation.

The Greeks laid their complaints at the feet of Paullus; but the Senatorial envoys turned a deaf ear to all prayers. Full power was left in the hands of the Romanizing tyrants.

In Epirus, a shocking work still remained to be done: the Epirotes were to be punished for their insurrection. By the express command of the Senate, Paullus sent for *Massacre in Epirus.* ten of the chief citizens from each of seventy towns specified by name, and ordered that all their gold and silver should by a given day be brought out into the public place. On that day detachments of his army entered each of the seventy towns, seizing the precious metals and all the free inhabitants. The walls of every town were demolished, the wretched captives, to the number of 150,000, were sold as slaves, and the money was distributed to the soldiery. It is grievous to have to relate such an act of Aemilius Paullus. It may be imagined what must have been the public feeling of a nation, when the government could deliberately issue such an order, when the best of its citizens thought himself bound to execute it without hesitation or reserve, when no historian speaks of it with so much as a word of censure.

The close of the year 167 B.C. witnessed the return of the conquerors. Paullus sailed from Oricum in a splendid galley of sixteen banks of oars, laden with trophies. He passed up the Tiber amid the acclamations of the multitude who lined the banks.

His triumph took place in the last days of November.<sup>1</sup> It was the most gorgeous spectacle which had yet feasted the eyes of the Roman populace. The Forum was fitted out with rising seats like a theatre, that all might see the processions as they passed. On the first day the statues

<sup>1</sup> The grant was opposed by one of his military tribunes in the *comitia tributa*, and nearly rejected. The reason was the general's refusal to allow unrestrained license of spoil.



and paintings taken were exhibited on 250 cars ; on the second, the splendid arms and accoutrements of the Macedonian officers, piled in a long train of waggons, passed along the Sacred Way ; then followed 3000 men, walking in parties of four, each party in charge of a vase full of silver coin ; and the procession closed with another set, who bore the silver plate used at the tables of Perseus and his nobles. On the third and great day the procession began with a body of trumpeters, followed by 120 youths, each leading a stately bull, with his horns gilded, garlanded with ribands and flowers. Then came men carrying gold coin in vases, and the gold plate and the precious stones. Next followed the royal car of Perseus, laden with his armour and surmounted by the diadem of Macedon. After it came the children of Perseus, two boys and a girl, with their attendants ; then Perseus himself, with his queen, stupefied with grief. Last of all was seen the triumphal car of the Proconsul, preceded by men bearing 400 crowns of gold, the gifts of the cities of Greece, followed by his two eldest sons on horseback, together with all his army in its order.

But Paullus, amid all this glory, was reminded that he was mortal. The two sons, who shared his triumph, had been adopted into other families, the elder by Q. Fabius *Death of his sons.* Maximus, son of the old Dictator, the second by P. Scipio, the son of Africanus. But he had two younger boys still left to brighten his home, when he returned to the city. Of these, one died five days before his triumph, the other three days after. The stern father was moved as such men are wont to be moved by heavy calamities ; but with the true feeling of a Roman he lightened his private woe by representing it as a public good. In a speech, which he made to the people according to custom on surrendering his command, he recounted his successes ; “but,” he said, “at every new success he had dreaded the wrath of Nemesis, and he thanked the gods that the blow had fallen upon himself, and not upon his country. No one was left to bear the name of Paullus. But he repined not at this domestic sorrow ; he rejoiced that Rome was happy, though he was miserable.”

The treasure taken in the Macedonian war paid all debts contracted in its progress ; and the tribute annually exacted from Macedon, added to the revenues of other *Increase of revenue.* Provinces, enabled the government to dispense with all direct taxes upon Roman citizens in future wars. Such a tax was only once imposed anew, at a disastrous crisis.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> In 43 B.C. during the struggles after the murder of Julius Caesar.



The captive monarch, with his son Alexander, was kept in durance at Alba Fucensis; his two other children died soon after the triumph. It is gratifying to know that *Fate of* Paullus interfered to procure the liberation of *Perseus*. Perseus from a loathsome dungeon to which he had at first been consigned. The unhappy king did not long survive his degradation. His surviving son, Alexander, was set free after a while, and lived long at Rome in the condition of a public clerk. Such was the destiny of the last heir of the monarchy of Macedon.

AUTHORITIES.—Livy (xlii.–xlv.) and the large fragments of Polybius, supplemented by Appian, ix., Plutarch (*Aemilius Paullus*: *cp.* Ihne, iii. 246; Schwarze, *Quibus fontibus Plutarchus in vita L. Aem. Paulli usus sit*, Leipsic, 1891), Diodorus, xxx., xxxi., Zonaras, ix. 21–23, Justin, xxxii., xxxiii., occasional allusions in Strabo, Pausanias, etc.



Coin of Lepidus, representing Paullus triumphing over Perseus and his children (Stevenson, "PAULLUS").



Coin of Eumenes II. of Pergamus, bearing head of Philetaerus, the founder of the dynasty. (Head, *H.N.*, 460.)

## CHAPTER XXXIX

GENERAL HISTORY BETWEEN THE WAR WITH PERSEUS AND THE LAST WARS WITH GREECE AND CARTHAGE. (183—149 B.C.)

THE years which followed the fall of Macedon present little to interest the reader ; yet in that time the seeds were sown for future conquests. The reduction of Carthage, *Roman* Greece, and Macedon to the condition of Roman *diplomacy.* Provinces was the consequence of the diplomatic art, which senators learned every day to practise with more unscrupulousness.

In the East the Senate assumed a more imperious tone : kings bowed down before them and became their vassals.

In Greece, every state was subject to tyrants who ruled under the patronage of Rome. Athens alone was left untortured, for she had ever been the submissive servant of the Senate.

In Syria, Seleucus IV. had been succeeded by his brother Antiochus Epiphanes, or (as he was nicknamed from his rash and reckless nature) Epimanes. Antiochus took advantage of civil war in Egypt, Rome being then engaged in the third Macedonian war, to invade that famous country (170 B.C.). His progress was arrested in a summary fashion. In the year of the battle of Pydna, three commissioners, of whom the chief was C. Popillius Laenas, were despatched to stop him. They found the king near Alexandria, when they demanded and obtained an immediate audience. Antiochus advanced graciously with extended hand, but Popillius held out a written decree of the Senate, by which the king was required to leave Egypt at peace. The king demanded time for deliberation, upon which the insolent Roman drew a

circle round him with his staff, and told him that before he stepped out of that circle an answer must be given. Confounded by his abruptness, Antiochus submitted, and withdrew his troops.

In Achaea, after the death of Philopoemen in 183 B.C., Lycortas had become chief of the League. He would willingly have pursued the bold policy of Philopoemen, and maintained the independence of the Federation. But his son Polybius, with Stratius and the other patriotic leaders, felt their real weakness; and an agreement was made with the leaders of the Roman party to send an embassy to Rome, in order to settle the terms on which certain Lacedaemonian exiles were to be allowed to return (B.C. 180). In this embassy was Callicrates, who at once sold himself to the Senate, and assured them that, so long as Lycortas and the popular chiefs were in power, the League would never act in the interests of Rome; that if they would place him in power, he would undertake that the Achaeans should give them no more trouble; and that similar policy might be pursued with advantage in every state of Greece. After the battle of Pydna, commissioners were sent to the Assembly of the Achaean League, to declare that the Senate had received information that certain leading Achaean statesmen had supported Perseus; they now demanded that the Assembly should pass a vote of condemnation to death against all such persons;—the names should be made known when the vote was passed. But the Assembly justly objected to this question being put to the vote, insisting that the names of the accused should first be stated. After some hesitation the commissioners named all who had held the office of General for some years. Xenon, one of the number, rose and indignantly offered to prove his innocence either there or before the Senate. With this last incautious offer the commissioners eagerly closed, and Callicrates drew up a list of more than 1000 suspected persons, including Polybius (his father Lycortas was dead), Stratius, and every man of note in the cities of the League. But the Senate had no intention of bringing them to trial. They were distributed among the cities of Etruria, to be kept in close custody, all except Polybius, who was allowed to reside in the house of Aemilius Paullus. Callicrates was now left master of the Peloponnese.

The treatment of the Rhodians was most dishonourable to Rome. The islanders had ventured to reduce their insurgent subjects, the Lycians, without authority from the Senate. They had also, at the suggestion of the

*Achaean  
prisoners  
taken to Rome.*

*Treatment of  
Rhodes.*

wily Philippus, offered to mediate between Rome and Macedon ; and the ambassadors charged with this business arrived in Italy about the same time that Paullus was setting forth. They were not admitted to an audience till the news of the battle of Pydna arrived, when they were dismissed with a contemptuous reproof. Soon after this, the Rhodians were deprived not only of Lycia and Caria, but also of several cities ; and a fatal blow was aimed at their commerce by declaring Delos a free port under Roman protection. By this single act their custom-dues fell from 1,000,000 *drachmae* per annum to 150,000.

Nor did the kings fare better than the free states. Eumenes of Pergamus, so long the favourite of the Senate, had shown some coolness to Rome in the war with Perseus.<sup>1</sup> His brother Attalus, however, had remained in the Roman camp, and was sent to Rome with congratulations after the battle of Pydna. The leaders of the Senate now insidiously advised him to demand a portion of his brother's dominions for himself, and also secretly urged Prusias of Bithynia<sup>2</sup> to lay complaints against the king of Pergamus ; but all their insidious arts were baffled, and Eumenes died upon the throne. He left an infant son, who ultimately succeeded to the throne, but his immediate successor was his brother, who took the name of Attalus Philadelphus. Polybius gives a high character of Eumenes ; it is to the credit of all concerned that his brother, notwithstanding great temptation, continued to act as his faithful minister.

Prusias was among the first to offer congratulations after the battle of Pydna. This mean-spirited prince went about with his head shaven, and dressed as if he had been a slave and had just received his liberty from the Romans. The Senate were not displeased with this abject flattery. But though they had encouraged him to quarrel with Eumenes, yet, when he ventured to make war and was at the gates of Pergamus, they imperiously ordered him to make peace.

The reckless king of Syria, prevented from his attempts on Egypt by the famous circle of Popilius, found employment nearer home. He had before this time conquered Judaea, and had insulted the religious feelings of the people by offering swine's flesh on the altar of Jehovah. His gross and outrageous tyranny at length roused the shrinking

<sup>1</sup> On his alleged intrigues with Perseus, see Mommsen, ii. 511 ; Ihne, iii. 238, 273.

<sup>2</sup> On the two kings bearing this name, see Holm, *History of Greece* (Eng. tr.), iv. 384.

energies of the Jews. Mattathias and his heroic sons raised the standard of the Maccabees about the year 168 B.C., and unaccustomed lustre was shed upon the arms of Israel. Antiochus Epiphanes died in 164, and left the heritage of this war to his young son Antiochus Eupator. But there was a competitor for the throne, whose claims were in every way superior. This was Demetrius, son of Seleucus, the elder brother and predecessor of Epiphanes. He was at that time a youth of twenty-three years, and had been long detained at Rome as a hostage. On the death of his uncle, he applied to the Senate for his rightful inheritance. That astute council preferred to have an infant on the throne of Syria, and sent Cn. Octavius, with two other commissioners, to act as regents. Octavius was assassinated on his landing; and suspicion fell on Lysias, a kinsman of the royal family, who had assumed the regency as guardian of the boy Antiochus. At that moment Demetrius appeared in Syria, and was *Demetrius, king of Syria.* proclaimed king. The soldiery acknowledged him, and murdered both the young king and his guardian; and the Senate thought it best to confirm him in possession of the throne. He endeavoured to propitiate their favour by every means. But the Senate lent a favouring ear to the ambassadors of Judas Maccabaeus, who was now the leader of the Jews, and in the year 161 B.C. concluded a formal covenant with him. They did not, however, lend him any armed assistance; and for a time the Jews maintained a brave but precarious struggle for independence.

In Egypt civil wars between different claimants to the crown, gave the Senate several opportunities for interfering; we have seen how their envoys checked Antiochus *Low state of Egypt.* Epiphanes in his attempt upon Egypt. In 146 B.C., Ptolemy Physcon (Fat-paunch) succeeded to the monarchy. The low state to which Egypt had now sunk is aptly typified by the name of its king.

Thus, without using actual force, the Senate weakened every government in the East. It was needless to employ the legions and to spend money in crushing governments which were so weak and so divided. When "the pear was ripe," it was sure to fall into the ready hand of Rome. Her emblem at this time ought to have been the Serpent rather than the Eagle.

Neither were her arms much more actively employed in Western conquest. In 166 B.C. the Consuls C. Sulpicius Gallus, the astronomer, and M. Marcellus, grandson of *War in south-ern Gaul.* the famous Marcellus, pushed the legions for the first time across the Maritime Alps, and obtained a double

triumph over the Gauls and Ligurians, who peopled the western slopes of the range. And twelve years later (154) the Consul Q. Opimius was sent to drive back the Oxybians, a Ligurian tribe, who had descended to the coasts of the Mediterranean and assaulted Antipolis and Nicaea (*Antibes* and *Nice*), two cities subject to Massilia, then and always a faithful ally of Rome. Such were the first steps towards the conquest of Gaul.

A few years before this last campaign, the Dalmatians, an Illyrian tribe, who occupied the coast land south of Istria, incurred the anger of Rome by making inroads into lower Illyria. Scipio Nasica, the friend of Aemilius Paullus, brought this petty war to a triumphant conclusion in 155 B.C. The whole coast of the Adriatic was now subject to Roman power.

The same period is not marked by any remarkable incidents at home.

Aemilius Paullus held the office of Censor three years after his triumph; and four years later he was gathered to his fathers, having completed his threescore years and ten. His funeral was honoured with splendid games, and with the first performance of the *Adelphi* of Terence, in the composition of which it is said that the poet was assisted by the son of the deceased, young Scipio, who was then in his twenty-fifth year. Paullus left behind him a name unspotted, except by the devastation of Epirus. He professed the austere philosophy of the Stoics, which he applied to maintain the simplicity of the old Roman manners,—so far was it from true that in all cases corruption flowed from Hellenic sources. At his death, it appeared that his whole property amounted to little more than sixty talents, little more than the great Scipio had bestowed upon each of his two daughters.

Old Cato still maintained the battle against luxury. He warmly supported the sumptuary laws of Fannius, which were passed in 161 B.C. to limit the expenses of banquets. He buried his eldest son with austere frugality.

This son had married the daughter of Aemilius Paullus, and thus the old man had been drawn into connection with the Scipios. This connection, together with age, seems to have exerted a softening influence upon the old Censor. In his latter days he had extended the love which he had always shown for Roman literature to that of Greece. The language of Homer and Demosthenes could boast no more signal triumph, than that it conquered the stubborn pride of Cato.



Yet the old Censor continued to wage war against the fashionable learning. His notion of education was, that the youth should engage as early as possible in the active struggles of the Forum: all speculative studies were, in his belief, calculated to unfit men for practical life. In 161 B.C. the Senate, probably by his advice, authorised the Praetor Pomponius to banish all philosophers and rhetoricians from Rome; and six years later (155), a notable occasion offered itself for enforcing his principles. In that year the Athenians sent an embassy to Rome to pray for the remission of a fine imposed upon their city by the Senate for certain depredations committed in the Oropian territory. To add weight to their prayers, they named as their envoys the chiefs of the three great schools which then divided the philosophic world,—Diogenes the Stoic, Critolaus the Peripatetic, and Carneades the famous founder of the New Academy. These ingenious reasoners were welcomed by the younger members of the Roman Nobility. C. Acilius, a Senator, himself acted as their interpreter. Crowds of young Romans came to hear the acute logic of Diogenes, the persuasive rhetoric of Critolaus, and the subtle speculation of Carneades, whose philosophy was so unbiassed that he was not only ready to maintain either side in any argument, but was never known to betray an opinion of his own. Old Cato, though he cared little for justice when the question lay between Rome and foreigners, could not brook to see the principles of right and wrong treated as indifferent questions, and was alarmed lest the practical principles and habits of Roman youth might give way to a taste for sophistical trifling. The fine was reduced, and the residue was never exacted; but at Cato's instance, the Senate ordered the ingenious strangers to quit Rome immediately.

*Expulsion of  
philosophers  
and rhetori-  
cians from  
Rome.*

*Embassy from  
Athens.*

After the uneventful period of which we have been speaking, war broke out in Spain, speedily followed by others in the Carthaginian territory, in Macedonia, and in Greece. These last we will reserve for separate chapters; but of the first it will be convenient to speak here.

The treaty of Tib. Gracchus in 179 B.C. was followed by a long tranquillity:<sup>1</sup> yet there was much reason for discontent. The oppression of the Praetors, and the extortion of the tax collectors, were constant; and

*Three Spanish  
governors  
accused.*

<sup>1</sup> The Latin colony of Carteia on the Bay of Gibraltar (171 B.C.) was the first transmarine Italian settlement; its inhabitants were chiefly the children of Roman soldiers and Spanish wives. Scipio had previously founded the town of Italica (near Seville) for his veterans, in 206 B.C.

after eight years envoys from both Provinces appeared with formal complaints before the Senate. At that time the war with Perseus was just beginning, and therefore there was no disposition to provoke the hostility of the Spaniards. Courts, each consisting of five Senators, were named to hear each charge; and the Spanish envoys were left to name their own advocates. The persons chosen were Cato, Scipio Nasica, known as the "best man,"<sup>1</sup> Aemilius Paullus and Sulpicius Gallus. The first governor indicted before this Court was acquitted. In the second and third trials the proceedings were adjourned, and both the accused persons sought safety in voluntary exile (171 B.C.). In this Senatorial Court we may recognise the germ of the famous Law of L. Calpurnius Piso Frugi for the recovery of undue exactions on the part of provincial governors.<sup>2</sup>

About seventeen years after this imperfect attempt at redress, the smouldering fire of war broke out. The citizens of Segeda, in the upper valley of the Tagus, began to augment and fortify their town, contrary to an article in the treaty of *Outbreak of war in Spain.* Gracchus. To resist the Consul Fulvius Nobilior,<sup>3</sup> the Segedians formed an alliance with the Arevacians, whose capital was Numantia, a brave tribe which occupied the mountainous country in which the Douro takes its rise. Fulvius handed over his command to M. Marcellus after an inglorious campaign. The new commander assumed the offensive with so much vigour that the enemy sued for a renewal of the treaty of Gracchus. The Senate, however, ordered the war to go on, and Lucullus, the new Consul, gave notice for fresh levies to be made. A scene now followed which might have shown the Senate that their power was not destined to be perpetual. When Lucullus held his levy, none were willing to enlist, and the Tribunes of the Plebs committed both Consuls to prison *Patriotism of young Scipio.* for enforcing enlistment. In this difficulty, young Scipio, the second son of Paullus, who had lived up to over the age of thirty in retirement, came forward as a mediator. He had been just offered a lucrative mission to

<sup>1</sup> Page 313.

<sup>2</sup> The *Lex Calpurnia de pecuniis repetundis* was passed twenty-two years later, 149 B.C.

<sup>3</sup> Consul for the year 153 B.C. To expedite the departure of the army, the Consuls were directed to assume office on the Calends of January, instead of the Ides of March, which had hitherto been the first day of the official year; and thus began the practice of beginning the year with the 1st of January. *Cp.* Mommsen, *Staatsr.*, i.<sup>3</sup> 597; *die Rechtsfrage zwischen Cäsar und Senat*, § 2.

Macedonia ; but he declined it and said that he would serve however and wherever the Senate thought fit. This patriotic conduct had its effect. Scipio was elected one of the legionary tribunes, and the levies were concluded (152 B.C.).

Though Marcellus had agreed on terms of peace with the enemy, Lucullus made an unprovoked inroad into the country of the Vaccaeans, who lay to the west of Numantia. *Treachery of Lucullus.* The town of Cauca capitulated, but Lucullus, with scandalous ill-faith, put all the inhabitants to the sword. He then attacked a fortress not far from the modern Valladolid. Here a tall Spaniard, splendidly armed, rode forth and challenged any Roman to single combat. Scipio accepted the challenge, and slew his gigantic adversary (151 B.C.)

For the last three years, the Lusitanian shepherds had resumed their inroads into the Further Province. While Lucullus was wantonly assailing the Vaccaeans, *Defeat of Galba.* the Praetor Ser. Sulpicius Galba invaded Lusitania. The mountaineers dispersed before the legions, but fell upon the Praetor at a disadvantage, and so effectually routed him that he escaped only with a few horse over the mountains into Baetica. Here he collected his routed army and passed the winter in the extreme south of Lusitania, meditating vengeance.

Early in the next spring he marched northward, while Lucullus also crossed the Guadiana and began to waste the country with fire and sword. The people offered submission. Galba answered with apparent kindness. *His treachery.* "He was grieved," he said, "to see the poverty of the country. If the inhabitants would meet him at a place specified, he would assign them lands." The simple people believed him, and came to the number of 7000. Galba having divided them into three bodies, fell on each body separately with his whole force, and cut it to pieces. This infamous piece of treachery crushed the spirit of the Lusitanians. But retributive justice waited her time. Among those who escaped the sword of Galba was a young shepherd, named Viriathus, of whom we shall hear another time.

Galba was brought to trial in 149 B.C., not so much for treachery to the enemy as because he divided so small a portion of the booty and kept back the larger share for himself. *His trial.* Old Cato spoke with honest indignation against the un-Roman perfidy of the governor. But Galba was extremely eloquent and extremely rich. The Centuries made themselves partakers in his infamy by a vote of acquittal, and five years after he was elected Consul by their

votes. Corruption was descending to all orders and degrees of men.

We will here add, by way of contrast to Galba's baseness, some account of the man who in the next few years played the most important part among the generals of Rome.

P. Scipio, sometimes called Aemilianus to distinguish him from his great namesake, has already been mentioned more

*Scipio* than once. His youth is remarkable for his inti-  
*Aemilianus.* macy with an exile, Polybius, the Achaean states-

man, the historian of Roman conquest. The Greek had doubtless become acquainted with Paullus and his sons during the Macedonian War; it was at the request of the

young men that he was allowed to reside in the house of Paullus, while his fellow-exiles were buried in Etrurian prisons. Polybius was at this time probably about thirty-eight years of age; Scipio about eighteen. The youth's habits were reserved and shy. He was fonder of field-sports than of the Forum.

When the Achaean exile first came to Rome, he attached himself chiefly to Fabius, the elder brother, whose manners

*Friendship* were more frank and cordial. But one day when  
*with Polybius.* Fabius had gone (as usual) to the Forum, Scipio,

with an ingenuous blush, complained of the neglect shown to himself. "And yet," said he, "I am myself to blame. Men

think me indolent, because I love not the strife of the Forum, and deem me unworthy of the great name I bear." Polybius

perceived that he had mistaken the character of the young man (it is from himself that we learn the facts), and offered his best services in advancing his education. "Book-learning you and

your brother may get from any of my countrymen. But for the lessons of practical life, my experience may enable me to serve you." Young Scipio seized the hand of his new friend, and

passionately exclaimed: "If you will but make me your chief care, I shall prove unworthy neither of my great father, nor of him whose adopted name I bear."<sup>1</sup> Polybius undertook his

work not without fear, for he saw the temptations which would beset a young man so noble and so wealthy. But the seed was

sown on no ungrateful soil. Young Scipio followed his father in adopting the practical philosophy of the Stoics, and resisted the besetting sins of the day,—selfishness and sensuality. If

he seldom set foot in the Forum, he shunned no laborious exercises; many hours he spent in hunting the boar or the deer, accompanied by Polybius, who shared his ardour for the chase. The wife of the great Scipio, his aunt by blood and

---

<sup>1</sup> Polybius, xxxii. 9, 10.

grandmother by adoption, had used a costly equipage and large retinue. At her death Scipio, who inherited her property, with thoughtful generosity gave it all to his mother Papiria. At the same time, he was called on to make up half the dowry of the two daughters of the great Scipio, of which half had been left unpaid. The law allowed him three years for payment; but he paid down the whole fifty talents in one sum, to the surprise of Nasica and Gracchus, husbands of the ladies. At the death of his natural father, he inherited a moiety of his fortune, which he at once relinquished in favour of his less wealthy brother Fabius, and undertook of his own accord to bear half the expense of the gladiatorial show, which Fabius, as the eldest son, was called on to exhibit. "These things," says Polybius, "would be excellent anywhere; but at Rome, where no one gives anything without need, nor pays a talent before the time prescribed by law, they were perfect miracles."

AUTHORITIES.—For the Maccabæan rising: 1 Maccabees; Josephus; *cp.* Schürer, *History of the Jewish People*, Div. i. vol. i.

For the general history the fragments of Polybius are most valuable, but the historian was probably too favourable to the younger Scipio, and his great influence over the subsequent writers compels us to take their statements with caution where Scipio is concerned. The complete Livy ends with Book XLV. (167 B.C.): thenceforward he is only represented by short Epitomes, and though they are most useful to us, we have good reason for believing that they do not always give the historian's meaning accurately. For Spain, Appian (vi.) gives us some help.



Coin of the first of the *four districts* of Macedonia, which existed from 167 to 146 B.C.: page 414. (Head, *H.N.*, 208.)

## CHAPTER XL

### THE LAST WARS WITH MACEDON AND GREECE: FALL OF CORINTH. (151—145 B.C.)

IN the same year in which Lucullus and Galba took command in Spain, the Senate was induced to perform an act of tardy justice in the release of the Achaean captives. The abduction of the best men in Greece had given free scope to the oppressions of the tyrants favoured by Rome. In the Achaean Assembly alone there was still spirit enough to check Callicrates, who never ventured to assail the persons and property of his fellow-citizens. Meantime years rolled on; the captives still languished in Etruscan prisons; hope deferred and sickness were fast thinning their numbers; the Assembly asked that only Polybius and Stratius might return, but the request was met by a peremptory negative. At last, Scipio induced Cato to intercede for these unhappy men. The manner of the old Censor's intercession is characteristic. The debate had lasted long and the issue was doubtful, when Cato rose, and, without a word about justice or humanity, simply said: "Have we really nothing to do but to sit here all day, debating whether a parcel of old Greeks are to have their coffins made here or at home?" The question was decided by this unfeeling argument, and the prisoners, who in sixteen years had dwindled from more than 1000 to less than 300, were set free. But when Polybius prayed that his comrades might be restored to their former rank and honours, the old senator smiled and told him "he was acting like Ulysses, when he ventured back into the cave of the Cyclops to recover his cap and belt."

The men released in this ungracious way had passed the best



part of their lives in captivity. The elder and more experienced of the prisoners were dead. The survivors returned with feelings embittered against Rome; *Violent anti-Roman policy.* they were rash and ignorant, and, what was worse, they had lost all sense of honour and all principle, and were ready to expose their country to any danger in order to gratify their own passions. When Polybius reached Greece he found his countrymen acting with such reckless violence that he was glad to accompany Scipio to the siege of Carthage. Diaeus had now succeeded Callicrates as leader of the Achaean League, and like him advocated every violent and unprincipled measure.

Meanwhile (in 149 B.C.) a pretender to the throne of Macedon appeared. He was a young man named Andriscus, a native of Adramyttium, who gave himself out as Philip, a *Andriscus, the grandson of the luckless monarch of that name. pseudo-Philip.* The state of Macedonia, divided into four republics, each in a state of compulsory excommunication, was so distracted, that in the year 151 the people had sent an embassy to Rome, praying that Scipio might be sent to settle their affairs, and he had only been prevented from undertaking the task by the self-imposed duty of accompanying the army of Lucullus into Spain. The Pretender, however, met with so little success in his first attempt that he fled to the court of Demetrius at Antioch, and this prince sent him to Rome. The Senate treated the matter lightly, and the adventurer was allowed to escape. Some Thracian chiefs received him, and with troops furnished by them he penetrated into Thessaly. The Roman Praetor, Juventius Thalna, was defeated and slain by the Pretender (148 B.C.).

The temporary success of Pseudo-Philippus (as the Romans called him) encouraged Diaeus to declare war against the Lacedaemonians, notwithstanding a friendly warning from the new Praetor, Q. Metellus, who had been sent with a considerable force to crush the Macedonian Pretender. Rome, argued Diaeus, was at war with Carthage and with Macedon; now was the time to break their bonds. *Achaean League attacks Sparta.*

Metellus soon finished the Macedonian war. At his approach Andriscus hastily retired from Thessaly, and was given up to the Roman Praetor by a Thracian chief *Metellus defeats Andriscus.* whose protection he had sought.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In 142 B.C. another pretended son of Perseus appeared, but he was easily put down by the quaestor Tremellius.

Presently after, a commission arrived at Corinth, headed by L. Aurelius Orestes, who summoned the chiefs of the League to hear the sentence pronounced by the Senate in consequence of their recent assertion of independence in making war against Lacedaemon. He informed them that they must relinquish all claims of sovereignty over Corinth, Argos, and Lacedaemon—a doom which reduced the Achæan League nearly to the condition from which Aratus first raised it. The chiefs reported what they had heard to the Assembly. A furious burst of passion rose, which Diaeus did not attempt to restrain, and all the Lacedaemonians present were seized, under the belief that their state had prompted the Roman sentence. Orestes and the Romans hardly escaped personal violence.

Orestes instantly returned to Rome; and the Senate, still preferring diplomacy to force, sent a second commission headed by Sextus Julius Caesar, with instructions to use gentle language, and merely to demand satisfaction for the recent outrage at Corinth. After many delays, Caesar could get no positive answer to his demands, upon which he returned to Rome and gave a report of these proceedings.

Metellus hoped to win the glory of pacifying Greece, as well as of conquering Macedonia. He sent some of his chief officers to endeavour to bring the Achæans to their senses. But their leaders were too far committed, and it was determined to attempt the conquest of all Greece by force of arms. At the beginning of 146 B.C. Critolaus, who was General for the year, marched against Heracleia in the Maliac Gulf, which had rebelled against the League; here he was joined by the Thebans, always the inveterate enemies of Rome. Metellus did not hesitate to advance from Macedonia so as to protect Heracleia, and on the tidings of his approach the braggart chief of the Achæans withdrew his army in all haste, not endeavouring to make a stand even at Thermopylae. He was overtaken by the Roman commander near Scarpheia in Locris, where his army dispersed, and he was never heard of again. Metellus pushed on straight towards the Isthmus. Thebes he found deserted by her inhabitants: misery and desolation appeared everywhere.

Diaeus again took the command and prepared to defend Corinth. But popular terror had succeeded to popular passion; few citizens would enlist under his banner; though he emancipated a number of slaves, he could not muster more than 15,000 men.

When Metellus was within sight of Corinth, Mummius, one of the Consuls for the year, who had been sent to settle matters in Greece, landed on the Isthmus with his legions and assumed the command. The Romans treated the enemy with so much contempt that one of their outposts was surprised; and Diaeus, flushed with this small success, drew out his forces before the city. Mummius eagerly accepted the challenge, and the battle began. The Achæan cavalry fled at the first onset; the infantry was soon broken, and Diaeus fled without attempting further resistance. The Romans might have entered the city at once; but seeing the strength of the Acropolis and suspecting treachery, Mummius held back, and a day or two elapsed before he took possession of his unresisting prey. But the city was treated as if it had been taken by assault; the men were put to the sword, the women and children reserved to be sold by auction. All treasures, all pictures, all the works of the famous artists who had moulded Corinthian bronze<sup>1</sup> into effigies of living force and symmetry, were seized by the Consul on behalf of the state; then, at a given signal, fire was applied, and Corinth was reduced to a heap of ashes.<sup>2</sup>

*Mummius defeats Diaeus at Corinth.*

*Sack of Corinth.*

Mummius, a New Man, was distinguished by the rudeness rather than by the simplicity of an Italian boor. He was not greedy; for he reserved little for himself and, when he died, his daughter found not enough left for her dowry; but his abstinence seems to have proceeded from indifference rather than self-denial. He cared not for the works of Grecian art. He suffered his soldiers to use one of the choicest works of the painter Aristides as a draught-board; but when Attalus bought the painting for a large sum, the Consul imagined it must be a talisman and ordered it to be sent to Rome. Every one knows his speech to the seamen who contracted to carry the statues and pictures of Corinth to Rome. "If they lost them," he said, "they must replace them with others of equal value."<sup>3</sup>

*Mummius and the works of art.*

In the autumn ten commissioners arrived, as usual, with draughts of decrees for settling the future condition of Macedon and Greece. Polybius, who seems to have come from witnessing the conflagration of Carthage just in time to behold that of Corinth, had the melancholy satisfaction of being called to their counsels,—

*Settlement of Greece. Services of Polybius.*

<sup>1</sup> Respecting the story that this mixture was an accidental result of the fusion of various metals when the city was burnt, see *Dict. Ant.*, "ÆS."

<sup>2</sup> Mommsen (iii. 272) sees in this the influence of the mercantile party at Rome and of commercial jealousy.

<sup>3</sup> Velleius, i. 13.

a favour which he owed to his friendship with Scipio. A wretched sycophant proposed to the commissioners to destroy the statue of Philopoemen; but Polybius prevented this dishonour by showing that this eminent man had always endeavoured to keep peace with Rome. At the same time he declined to accept any part of the confiscated property of Diaeus. Politically he was able to render important services. In later times, all Greece south of Macedonia and Epirus appears under the name of the province of Achaia, Corinth being the residence of the Roman governor.<sup>1</sup> For the present, however, the various communities were left what was called free, that is, they were not governed directly by a Praetor or Proconsul. But they paid an annual tribute to Rome, and were obliged to submit all disputes to the governor of Macedonia.<sup>2</sup> Polybius was left in Greece to settle the new constitutions of the several communities, and to adjust them to the circumstances and wants of each place. His grateful countrymen raised a statue to his honour, and placed an inscription on the pedestal, which declared that, if Greece had followed his advice, she would not have fallen.

Such was the issue of the last struggle for Grecian liberty. It was conducted by unworthy men, and was unworthy of the name it bore. Polybius had always opposed attempts at useless and destructive insurrection. He considered it happy for Greece that one battle and the ruin of one city consummated her fate. Indeed it was a proverb of the day that "Greece was saved by her speedy fall."<sup>3</sup>

Whatever was the case with Greece, it is highly probable that Macedonia, in conjunction with Epirus, was formed into a regular Roman Province at this time, with institutions for municipal government in the several cities, much the same as those which had been established in Greece.

Metellus and Mummius both returned to Rome before the close of 146 B.C., and were honoured with triumphs. That of Metellus probably preceded the great triumph in which Scipio carried the spoils of Carthage in procession to the Capitol; that of Mummius followed soon after. In memory of their respective services, Metellus

<sup>1</sup> See Acts of the Apostles, xviii. 12. It is not certain at what time the Province of Achaia was formally constituted. Achaia was certainly a Province in the time of Augustus, probably before. See Mommsen, iii. 271; Holm, *History of Greece* (Eng. tr.), iv. 424.

<sup>2</sup> Some confiscations of land were made: see Ihne, iii. 316.

<sup>3</sup> Cp. Plutarch, *Themistocles*, 29.

was afterwards known by the name of Macedonicus, while Mummius, who appears to have had no third name of his own, was not ashamed to assume the title of Achaïcus.

AUTHORITIES.—The fragments of Polybius and the Epitomes of Livy, supplemented by Zonaras, ix. 28, 31, Pausanias, vii., and scattered allusions elsewhere.

## CHAPTER XLI

THIRD PUNIC WAR. FALL OF CARTHAGE. (150-146 B.C.)

BEFORE Corinth fell, Carthage also had ceased to exist. We saw Hannibal reform the corrupt administration of his native city and put her in the way of recovering even from the heavy blow which she had suffered after the defeat of Zama. We saw him compelled to leave Africa at the instance of the Roman Senate. But his acts lived after him, and the trade of Carthage revived rapidly.

The Senate could not look with equanimity on this state of affairs ; and Masinissa was well assured that he might count on the support of Rome if he enriched himself at the expense of his neighbours. Relying on this belief, the unscrupulous Numidian overran and plundered the most fertile provinces dependent upon Carthage ; and the Carthaginians, finding the Senate deaf to all complaints, at last prayed to be allowed to plead their cause before some fair tribunal, or, if not, to use arms in self-defence. "The Carthaginians," they said, "would rather be the slaves of Rome than subject to the depredations of Masinissa. Better die at once than live at the mercy of that Numidian robber !" Nevertheless they were again put off with promises and delays.

It appears that at this time parties ran high at Carthage. The old oligarchical party, which had expelled Hannibal, was disposed to maintain peace at any price. But the popular party gradually got the upper hand, and the new government resolved openly to oppose the encroachments of Masinissa. It was at this time that Cato, in his old age, was seized by a sort of fanatic desire for the destruction of Carthage. So long as the hateful rival flourished, he contended there could be no safety for Rome. In 157 B.C. a commission was sent to Africa, headed by Cato himself, with full powers to settle all disputes between Carthage

*Commission  
headed by  
Cato.*



and Masinissa. The commissioners offered their arbitration, which Masinissa of course accepted; but the Carthaginians naturally demurred to throw themselves on the mercy of Cato. The commissioners returned to Rome, and Cato, rising in the Senate, gave a glowing description of the power and wealth of Carthage, and declared that what he had seen convinced him that Rome could not be safe while so great a rival was at her door. Unfolding his gown, he produced some giant figs, and said: "These figs grow but three days' sail from Rome." From that day forth he ended every speech he made, whatever was the subject, with the words,—*"my opinion is, that Carthage must be destroyed—delenda est Carthago."*<sup>1</sup> Scipio Nasica, who for his prudence and sagacity had received the name of Corculum,<sup>2</sup> opposed this opinion with all his eloquence, but in vain. The Senate only waited for an opportunity to interfere.

That opportunity soon offered itself. The banished oligarchy sought the aid of Masinissa, and the old chief promptly led a large army into the territory of Carthage. The new government had levied a considerable force, *Masinissa attacks Carthage.* which they put under the command of an officer named Hasdrubal. It was not long before a battle was fought, in which the Numidians won the day. It happened that young Scipio had just then been sent by Lucullus from Spain to obtain a supply of elephants from Masinissa; and he was a spectator of the battle from a neighbouring eminence,—*"a sight,"* as he used to say in later years, *"that only two had enjoyed before him,—Jupiter from Ida, and Neptune from Samothrace, when they looked down upon the battles of the Greeks and Trojans."*<sup>3</sup> It must have been a remarkable sight to behold old Masinissa, then about ninety, charge like a boy of nineteen at the head of his wild Numidian horse.

Masinissa soon reduced the army of the enemy to such straits that Hasdrubal was compelled to yield. The popular party was once more deprived of power; and the wealthy *War declared by Rome.* merchants, who now recovered the government, prepared to make amends for the breach in the treaty, by which they were forbidden to make war without the consent of Rome.<sup>4</sup> They proclaimed Hasdrubal and the leaders of the war party guilty of high treason, and sent envoys to Rome with humble apologies. But these envoys could obtain no definite statement of demands from the Senate; and a second embassy

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* Cicero, *de off.*, i. 23, 79.

<sup>2</sup> See Lewis' and Short's note on this word.

<sup>3</sup> Hom., *Il.*, viii. 51, xiii. 12.

<sup>4</sup> Page 319.

was sent with full powers to treat. But it was too late. War had already been declared, and the Consuls for the year 149 B.C., L. Censorinus and M<sup>l</sup>. Manilius, had already left Rome for Sicily. The ambassadors resolved to place Carthage and all her possessions at the absolute disposal of the Senate. It was answered that they had done well. The Fathers pledged their word that the people of Carthage should be left free, if 300 of the noblest youths were given up as hostages to the Consuls ; from them the government should learn the further commands of the Senate.

The Carthaginian government complied with the demand, not without secret alarm as to what these "further commands" might be. A heart-rending scene ensued when *Treachery of the Romans.* the 300 hostages were torn from their parents' arms. At Lilybaeum the Consuls received these pledges of submission ; the poor boys were sent to Rome. The Consuls, however, proceeded to embark their troops, and anchored in the harbour of Utica, which had joined the Romans, while the legions took up their quarters in the old camp of Scipio at the mouth of the Bagradas. Here another deputation from the trembling government of Carthage appeared before the Consuls, who received them sitting in state with their officers around them and the army drawn out in order. The deputies recapitulated the acts of submission which Carthage had made, and humbly asked what more could be required. Censorinus replied that "as Carthage was now under the protection of Rome, they would no longer have occasion to engage in war : they must therefore give up all their arms and engines without reserve." This hard condition also was accepted. The force of the city may be in some measure estimated from the fact that 200,000 suits of armour and 2000 catapults were delivered up and conveyed to the Roman camp. The chiefs of the government now imagined that they had drained the cup of humiliation to the dregs. But they were grievously mistaken. The Consuls thought that the city was now wholly disabled, and they let drop the mask. Censorinus calmly informed the unhappy men that "so long as the city was by the sea, Rome could not feel sure of their submission : therefore it was the will of the Senate that they must remove to some point ten miles distant from the coast : *Carthage must be destroyed.*" On hearing their final doom, the wretched Carthaginians fell stupefied to the ground ; and when they found utterance, broke into passionate exclamations against the perjured Senate. The Consuls waited in stern silence till these paroxysms were past ; and when the miserable men represented, in terms of penitent humility, "that the Senate

had guaranteed the freedom of Carthage, that such a measure must destroy this freedom by destroying her commerce and her means of subsistence," Censorinus replied, with the same cold brevity as before, that "the guarantee of the Senate referred to the people of Carthage, not to her houses. In short, the will of the Senate was as he had declared it: it must be done, and done quickly."

The envoys, being also the chiefs of the government, feared to carry back these ill-omened commands. Some of them absconded; the rest approached the city, and found every avenue lined with people eager to learn their destiny. They spoke no word, but their downcast looks and gloomy silence proclaimed them messengers of evil. The crowd followed to the Council-chamber, where they delivered their report with closed doors. A cry of horror burst from the assembled Councillors, and the crowd, impatient of delay, broke open the doors, and demanded to know the fatal news. It was impossible to conceal the truth. The popular fury knew no bounds. The members of the government who had advised the several acts of submission, were obliged to flee for their lives. All Italians found within the city were massacred. All parties agreed in taking measures to defend themselves to the uttermost, rather than die the lingering death to which the Romans had condemned them. Hasdrubal, lately proclaimed a traitor, had levied a force of 20,000 men; he was now invited to become the general of the Republic. Another Hasdrubal, grandson of Masinissa, was invested with command within the city. A message was sent to the Consuls, requesting an armistice of thirty days, in order to send an embassy to Rome: this was refused. Despair gave unnatural courage. The temples and public buildings were converted into workshops; men and women worked day and night manufacturing arms; every day 100 shields were turned out, 300 swords, 500 pikes and javelins, 1000 catapult-bolts. The women cut off their long hair to be twisted into strings for the new catapults.

The Consuls, who were men of the Forum rather than the camp, had remained at Utica, daily expecting that Carthage would comply with their last demands. When at length they appeared before the city, they were not a little disappointed at finding that it would be necessary to undertake a regular siege. They dallied for a time, hoping that on reflection the Carthaginians would give up all thoughts of an armed defence. The conduct of Masinissa contributed to their difficulties. The wily old chief had no mind

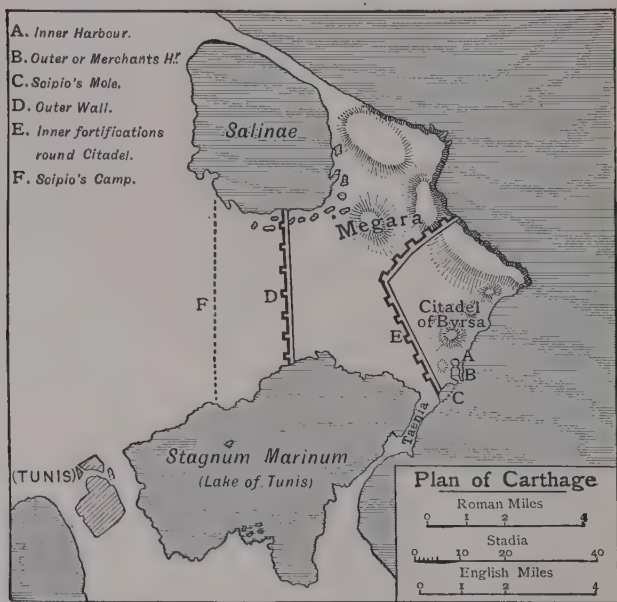
*Desperate preparations of Carthaginians.*

*Policy of Masinissa.*

that, after Carthage had been weakened by his arms, Rome should come in and take the lion's share, and he stood aloof.

When it became clear that Carthage must be formally besieged, the Consuls still no doubt expected an easy triumph; but the defence that followed was one of the most heroic that the world has seen. In order to understand its details, it will be necessary to describe briefly the site of Carthage.

Carthage stood on a peninsula which was joined to the mainland of Tunis by an isthmus less than four miles wide. The city itself measured more than twenty miles round, but did not occupy the whole



Walker & Bostall sc.

peninsula. The portion occupied by the city seems to have been the south-eastern end, the northern part being a suburb, called Megara,<sup>1</sup> chiefly occupied by gardens. The coast line

<sup>1</sup> This term is probably connected with a Semitic root meaning "cave," and refers to the rude earth-dwellings outside the Byrsa or Citadel. Virgil's *magalia* (*Aen.*, i. 421, iv. 259) represents the same word. Cf. Schröder, *Phönizische Sprache*, 104; Benson, *Cyprian*, 510. El Marsa, which probably is Megara, is still garden-ground of the Tunisians.

for the most part offered a natural defence ; but the land-side, across the isthmus, was fortified by all the art of the engineer. Three walls, of which the outermost was  $6\frac{1}{2}$  feet thick, protected the city ; these walls rose in two stories to the height of 45 feet, being flanked at intervals by towers which reached double that height. Behind this outermost wall were constructed casemates, with stalls for 300 elephants and 4000 horses, and barracks for 24,000 men, besides all necessary stores and magazines. This wall probably ran in such a direction as to include the Byrsa<sup>1</sup> or Citadel, and then was continued till it met the north-eastern shore. The suburb of Megara was defended by a single wall. Near the southern corner of the inner fortifications, was the entrance to a rectangular basin, called the Outer or Merchants' Harbour, used for trading vessels. Inside this again, and so much drawn back as to be concealed from view of the outer haven, lay the Inner Harbour or Harbour of the Navy, called the Cothon.<sup>2</sup> In its centre was a small island, from which the governor of the port could overlook the two harbours. Both island and harbour were surrounded by docks for the reception of 220 ships, embellished with Ionic columns, so as to give the whole the appearance of stately colonnades. The entrance of this basin was only 70 feet broad, and was kept closed by strong chains drawn across it. The Citadel was of course the highest and strongest part of the city. It measured about two miles round.

The Consuls divided their army, Manilius assaulting the triple wall from the isthmus, Censorinus directing his attack from the harbour, where the defences seemed least strong. But all their assaults were gallantly repelled. The season was passing, and the hot weather caused the army to suffer greatly. Censorinus returned home to hold the Comitia ; and the army, commanded by Manilius, was exposed to great danger in rear from Hasdrubal's army. On one occasion complete ruin was averted by the promptness of Scipio Aemilianus, who was serving under the Consul.

*First campaign.  
Repulse of  
Manilius and  
Censorinus.*

<sup>1</sup> Page 227.

<sup>2</sup> There is little doubt that this is a Semitic word meaning "artificially constructed," though its derivation is still matter of controversy. The same term is used for the harbour at Adrumetum (Caes., *B. Afr.*, 62, 63). Meltzer argues (*Neue Jahrb. f. Phil. u. Päd.*, cxlix. 129) that Cothon is the name of the two harbours taken together, not of the inner harbour only. The view in the text is supported by Mommsen (iii. 248); but we can hardly suppose that the Greek κώθων = *cuθ* has anything to do with the origin of the title, though it may have influenced Greek writers (e.g. Diod., iii. 44).

The Senate began to repent of having neglected Masinissa, and sent ambassadors to beg for his assistance. But the old chief was dead before they arrived. His character will have shown itself sufficiently from the facts already mentioned. He showed no scruples in acquiring territory ; but it must be added to his credit, that he did much towards humanising the wild tribes who owned his sway and turned many uncultivated tracts into fruitful fields.<sup>1</sup> In following years Italy imported much of her corn from these districts.

Of his numerous offspring only three were legitimate. On his death-bed he desired that Scipio, to whom he was attached as the heir of the great Africanus, should undertake to settle the question of the succession. Scipio divided the royal authority among the three princes, giving Cirta and the Palace to Micipsa, the eldest son ; Golossa, the second, was to be general ; the administration of justice was committed to the youngest, Mastanabal. Golossa joined the Romans at the head of a body of troops, and thus freed the Consul from the fear of seeing the Numidians take part with Carthage.

During the winter Himilco Phameas, commander of the enemy's cavalry, the terror of the Roman foraging parties, seeing that Carthage must at length fall, determined to make a merit of timely submission to Rome ; and Manilius was overjoyed to see this redoubted foe ride into camp in company with Scipio, followed by a squadron of African horse. Tidings now came that L. Calpurnius Piso,<sup>2</sup> Consul for the year 148 B.C., was on his way to supersede him ; and Manilius sent off Scipio, with Phameas as a trophy of success, to Rome. The army escorted their favourite officer to the coast, and prayed him to come back as Consul ; for all were persuaded that none but a Scipio was destined to take Carthage. The Senate received Scipio with high distinction and rewarded the traitor Phameas with splendid presents. His desertion was the only piece of success which two Consuls and a great army had won in a long campaign.

The summer of 148 B.C. passed still less prosperously. Piso did not attempt to assault the city, but employed his fleet and army in attacking several sea-port towns, mostly with ill success. Disorder spread amongst the soldiery ; and the Consul went into winter-quarters at Utica. Meantime the spirits of the Carthaginians rose.

*Himilco  
Phameas  
deserts to the  
Romans.*

*Second cam-  
paign. Ill-  
success of Piso.*

<sup>1</sup> See the panegyric of Mommsen (ii. 382).

<sup>2</sup> This Piso was on the Caesoninus branch of the family, whereas the author of the Calpurnian law (p. 424) was of the Frugi branch.



Their bitter enemy, old Cato, was now dead. Bithyas, a Numidian chief, deserted from Golossa with a large body of cavalry. The Numidian Hasdrubal, who commanded the garrison, being suspected of intriguing with his uncle Golossa, was put to death. News also arrived of the fresh troubles in Macedonia, and it was hoped that the Romans might be altogether baffled.

Meanwhile discontent rose high at Rome. Both Senate and People had expected to reap a rich booty at Carthage with little trouble, and its fall seemed as far off as ever. *Scipio elected Consul.* It was well known that Scipio was the darling of the army. Old Cato had said of him, in a line of Homer, that

“Only he has living force, the rest are fleeting shades.”<sup>1</sup>

The People clamoured for his election as Consul, though by the Lex Annalis he was not eligible, for he was only about thirty-seven years of age, and was now a candidate for the Aedileship. He was, however, elected to the Consulship; and the command in Africa was given him by a special decree.

Early in the next year (147 B.C.) Scipio set sail for Utica with new levies, attended probably by Polybius and by C. Laelius, son of that Laelius who had enjoyed the confidence of Africanus. The Consul fixed his head-quarters *Third campaign.* in a camp near Carthage; and here his first business was to restore discipline in the disorganised army. He ordered the crowd of idlers and hucksters, who were following the camp for plunder or petty traffic, to leave it immediately; and enforced strict discipline.

As soon as he could trust his men, he pushed forward his camp to the isthmus and directed a night attack upon the suburb of Megara. Planks were laid from a detached tower to the wall, and thus a party of *Capture of Megara.* soldiers descended into the place and threw the gate open to their comrades. The loss of this suburb of gardens must have been of great moment to the Carthaginians; for it deprived them of a great source of provisions. Hasdrubal showed his vexation by torturing his prisoners on the battlements and then throwing them headlong down the walls. In vain the Council endeavoured to restrain him; the savage soldier was now lord of Carthage, and determined to commit himself and his men to a desperate defence. He was a greedy tyrant, who fed his gross

---

<sup>1</sup> οἶος πέπνυται τοὶ δὲ σκιάλ' ἀίσουσιν (Hom., *Od.*, x. 495); a quotation which shows that the old man had made progress in his late lore.

corpulence by luxurious living, while others were starving ; and affected the pompous demeanour of an Oriental despot rather than the simplicity of a patriot soldier.<sup>1</sup> His men alone shared the provisions, which now began to come scantily into the city. The unhappy townsmen began to feel the miseries of want.

For not only had Scipio taken Megara : he had drawn strong lines across the isthmus so as to cut off the city from all land supplies ; and the fleet blockaded the harbour, so  
*Great siege-works.* as to make it difficult to send in provisions by sea. Still, light vessels contrived to press into the harbour under full sail, when the wind blew strong landwards and prevented the Roman ships from keeping the sea. Scipio determined to cut off even these precarious supplies by throwing an embankment across the mouth of the harbour.<sup>2</sup> The work was one of infinite labour, and made but slow progress. The Carthaginians, however, saw that it must ultimately succeed, and began to cut a canal from the inside, so as to open a new entrance from the sea into their harbour. Before the end of the year this work was completed, and moreover, a fleet of fifty ships had been secretly built in the inner port. By the time Scipio's embankment was finished, the Romans had the mortification to see this new fleet sail out by the new entrance ; so that it seemed as if all their labour had been thrown away. For two days however the Carthaginian ships remained inactive ; but on the third they attacked the Roman fleet. The battle lasted till evening with some advantage to the Carthaginians. But as the latter fell back to the new entrance, they found the passage impeded by small craft ; and in the confusion which ensued, the Romans succeeded in destroying the greater part of the new fleet.

At the beginning of spring (146 B.C.), Scipio resumed the offensive. While he was engaged in an attack upon the Cothon,  
*Fourth campaign.* Laelius succeeded in forcing an entrance at another point, Tib. Gracchus being the first to mount the walls ; and at evening the Roman legions bivouacked in the market-place of Carthage. But a long and terrible struggle was still before them. From the market-place three streets converged towards the Citadel ; and the houses on each side, rising to the height of six stories, were occupied by the  
*Sack of Carthage.* Carthaginians. A series of street-fights ensued. The Romans were obliged to carry the first houses in each street by assault, and then to force their way by break-

<sup>1</sup> Ihne (iii. 365) throws doubts on the character given by Polybius to Hasdrubal.

<sup>2</sup> This embankment may have assisted in choking up the harbour, and reducing it to its present condition.

ing through from house to house and driving the enemy along the flat roofs. The cross streets or lanes were passed by bridges of planks. Thus they slowly advanced to the wall of Byrsa. When they had reached this point, the city was set on fire behind them. Six days and nights the flames continued to rage; and as they slackened, the Roman legionaries were employed as pioneers to clear thoroughfares for free passage of men and horses.

During the great labour of the last days Scipio alone sought no rest. At length, worn out by anxiety and fatigue, he sat down to rest on an eminence commanding a view of the splendid Temple of Aesculapius, which crowned the heights of Byrsa. He had not long been here, when the Carthaginian garrison, seeing no longer any hope, offered to surrender the Citadel, on condition of their lives being spared. Scipio consented for all except Roman deserters; and 50,000 men and women defiled out of a gap made in the wall of Byrsa, as prisoners of war. Then Hasdrubal and his family with 900 deserters retired into the Temple of Aesculapius. Here they made a gallant defence, till they were worn out by famine and want of sleep and toil. Then the commandant's heart failed him; and slipping out alone, he threw himself at the feet of Scipio and craved for pardon. The de- *Surrender of Hasdrubal.* deserters in desperation set fire to the temple; and the wife of Hasdrubal, filled with shame and grief at the base cowardice of her husband, reproached him with bitter sarcasm and cast herself with her children into the flames. Hasdrubal's life was spared to grace the triumph of the conqueror; most of the deserters perished in the flames; those who escaped, or were taken elsewhere, were trampled to death by elephants.

It was during these scenes of horror that Scipio, with Polybius at his side, gazed upon the burning city, and involuntarily vented his high-wrought feeling in the well-known verses of Homer:<sup>1</sup>

"The day shall come, when Sacred Troy shall be levelled with the plain,  
And Priam and the people of that good warrior slain."

"Assyria," he said, "had fallen, and Persia and Macedon. Carthage was burning. Rome's day might come next!"

For several days the soldiery were allowed to range the ruined city, glutting their wild passions. Yet enough of statues and valuables of all sorts fell into the hands of the Proconsul,

<sup>1</sup> Hom., *Il.* iv. 164: ἔσσεται ἡμαρ, ὅταν ποτ' ὀλώλῃ Ἴλιος ἱρή,  
καὶ Πριάμος καὶ λαὸς ἑὺμμελὶς Πριάμοιο.

to adorn a triumph little less magnificent than that in which he had followed his father Paullus one-and-twenty years before.

Scipio had written laconically to the Senate that "Carthage was taken, and the army waited for further orders." Amid the *Fate of Carthage.* exultation of all classes, a decree was passed that the walls should be destroyed and every house within them levelled to the ground. A solemn curse was pronounced by Scipio on any one who should rebuild a town on the same site. Not many years after, C. Gracchus was sent to found a colony on the site of Carthage,—a design which failed; and its failure was attributed to the curse of Scipio. But the same design was renewed by the great Julius, and accomplished by Augustus.<sup>1</sup> This Colony rose to be a noble city, and in the second century of the Christian era might be regarded as the metropolis of western Christendom.

Utica, for her timely submission, was rewarded with a portion of the dominions of Carthage. The remaining territory was formed into a Province under the name of Africa, and placed under the government of a Roman Magistrate, being added to the empire in the same year as the Province of Macedonia.

Such was the end of Carthage, after an existence of more than seven centuries.

**AUTHORITIES.**—Besides the fragments of Polybius, the epitomes of Livy, and Appian, viii.: Diodorus, xxxii., Zonaras, ix. 29, 30, Plutarch, *Cato maior*, are useful. For the topography of Carthage, see Meltzer, *Geschichte der Karthager*, ii. 153, 520.

---

<sup>1</sup> Appian, viii. 136; *cp.* Mommsen, *Provinces* (Eng. tr.), ii. 330.



Denarius of the Cassia family, alluding to the Cassian *lex tabellaria*:  
page 448. (Stevenson, "CASSIA.")

## CHAPTER XLII

### SPANISH WARS: FALL OF NUMANTIA. (149-133 B.C.)

WHILE Rome was engaged in war with Carthage, the Lusitanians resumed their inroads,<sup>1</sup> and soon found a leader in the gallant Viriathus, who had escaped from the massacre of Galba. No Roman general could gain any positive advantage over this indefatigable enemy, and in the year 143 B.C. the war assumed a much more serious aspect. The brave Arevacians of Numantia and its adjacent districts again appeared in the field. For several years we find two Roman commanders engaged in Spain, one opposed to the Arevacians and their Celtiberian allies in the north, the other carrying on an irregular warfare against Viriathus and the Lusitanians in the south.

The conduct of the Celtiberian War was committed to Q. Metellus Macedonicus, who had been elected Consul for the year 143. He remained in command for two years, and was so successful in his measures that by the close of the second campaign he had driven the enemy from the field and left them no standing ground except in their two strong cities, Termantia and Numantia. But he was disappointed, as in Greece, by finding his anticipated success prevented by the arrival of Q. Pompeius, Consul for the year 141 B.C.

Pompeius and his successor Popillius Laenas, could make no impression upon the Numantians. C. Hostilius Mancinus, Consul for the year 137, suffered a memorable reverse. Mancinus set out for his Province amid general alarm, excited by the unfavourable omens at his inaugural sacrifices. He was attended as Quaestor by young Tib. Gracchus, who had already distinguished him-

<sup>1</sup> On the Chronology, see Mommsen, iii. 221.

self at the siege of Carthage. Mancinus found the army before Numantia in a state of complete disorganisation, and after suffering several defeats he deemed it necessary to retire from his camp before the city and take refuge in the old camp of Fulvius Nobilior. Hence he sent a herald with offers to treat, on condition that his army should be spared. The enemy consented, but only on the understanding that young Gracchus was to make himself responsible for the execution of the treaty. Articles of peace were accordingly signed by Mancinus himself, with the consent of Gracchus and all the chief officers of the army.

In Lusitania also the fortune of Rome was in the decline. Q. Fabius Servilianus, Consul for the year 142 B.C., was defeated by Viriathus, and his army driven to the edge of a precipitous rock from which escape was impossible. The Lusitanian captain offered liberal terms, which were gladly accepted by the Proconsul. This peace was approved by the Senate, and Viriathus was acknowledged as the ally of Rome (141 B.C.).

*Lusitanian  
War. Defeat  
of Fabius  
Servilianus.*

But Q. Servilius Caepio, brother by blood of Servilianus and Consul for 140 B.C., was little satisfied by the prospect of an inactive command. By importunity he wrung from the Senate permission to break the peace so lately concluded by his brother and ratified by themselves,—a permission basely given and more basely used. Caepio assailed Viriathus, when he little expected an attack, with so much vigour that the chief was fain to send envoys to enter into negotiations with the Consul; and Caepio privily bribed the messengers to assassinate their master. They were too successful in their purpose, and returned to claim their blood money from the Consul. But he, with double treachery, disowned the act and referred them to the Senate for their reward.

*Treachery of  
Servilius  
Caepio.*

*Murder of  
Viriathus.*

The Lusitanian War lingered on for a short time, but it was in fact ended by the death of Viriathus. He was (as even writers who favour the Romans allow) brave, generous,<sup>1</sup> active, vigilant, patient, faithful to his word; and the manner in which he baffled all fair and open assault of the disciplined armies of Rome gives a high conception of his qualities as a guerrilla chief. His countrymen, sensible of their loss, honoured him with a splendid military funeral. The Roman authorities, with a wise moderation which might well have been adopted years before, assigned lands to a portion of the mountaineers within the

<sup>1</sup> Cicero, *de off.*, ii. 11, 40.



Province, thus at length making good the broken promises of Galba.

Such was the discreditable termination of the Lusitanian War. We must now return to Mancinus and his treaty.

He was recalled to defend his conduct before the Senate. He pleaded that the army was so demoralised that no man could wield it with effect, and admitted that he had concluded a treaty with Numantia without the authority of the Senate and People. A bill was then brought before the Tribes for delivering up to the Numantians the persons of Mancinus himself and all who had been parties to the treaty. Young Gracchus upheld the treaty, which indeed was mainly his own work ; but the Senate resolved to cancel it. Scipio, the brother-in-law of Gracchus, then made a speech against the proposal to deliver up the persons of the officers ; and finally the People voted for giving up Mancinus alone as an expiatory offering. Accordingly the chief of the college of heralds, called the *pater patratus*, was ordered to carry him with due solemnity to Numantia. But the Spaniards, like the Samnites of old, refused to accept such a compensation ; one man's body, they said, was no equivalent for the advantage they had lost. Mancinus, therefore, returned to Rome. But when he took his place in the Senate, the Tribune Rutilius ordered him to leave the Curia, because, he said, one who had been delivered over to the enemy with religious ceremony was no longer a citizen of Rome and could not recover his rights by simply returning to his country. A special law was introduced to restore Mancinus to his former position.<sup>1</sup>

Dec. Junius Brutus, Consul for 138 B.C., an able officer, was entrusted with the pacification of Lusitania : the town of Valencia owes its origin to a colony of this people planted there by him. After finishing this business, he carried his arms northward across the Tagus, the Douro, and the Minho, and after three successful campaigns received homage from the tribes of the western Pyrenees. He was the first Roman who reached the shores of the Bay of Biscay and saw the sun set in the waters of the Atlantic ; and he was not unjustly honoured with the name of Callaicus<sup>2</sup> for his successes.

*Junius Brutus  
conquers  
Gallaecia.*

<sup>1</sup> Such a recovery was called *postliminium*. For the legal opinions on both sides, see Cicero, *de Orat.*, i. 40 ; *Top.*, 8 ; *pro Caccina*, 34. The rights of the question have already been discussed in speaking of the similar transaction at the Furculae Caudinae (p. 179).

<sup>2</sup> From Callaecia or Gallaecia, the ancient name of the district in the north-west of Spain, still called Gallicia.

But Numantia still defied the arms of Rome. Men began to clamour for a Consul fit to command; and in the year 135 B.C. all eyes fell upon Scipio. His qualities as a general had been tested by success at Carthage, and circumstances had since occurred which raised him to great popularity.

After his triumph in 146 B.C., Scipio had continued to lead the simple life in which he had been bred, and which not all the wealth he inherited from his adoptive father induced him to abandon. He affected an austerity of manners which almost emulated that of Cato, though he was free from the censorious dogmatism and rude eccentricities of that celebrated man. In 142 B.C. he was Censor in conjunction with Mummius, who so thwarted all the efforts of his colleague to promote reforms that the latter publicly exclaimed, "I should have been able to do my duty, either with a colleague or without one." Scipio had gained a clear conception of the unsound state of things which long-continued wars and Senatorial government had produced. In the prayer which he offered on laying down the Censor's office, he altered the usual form; and instead of asking that "the gods would *increase and magnify* the power of Rome," he said, "I pray that they may *preserve* it: it is great enough already."

His frugal life carried with it a guarantee of honesty and devotion to public interests, which would alone have secured him public favour. But several of his acts gained him more direct popularity. The son of his kinsman Nasica, nicknamed Serapio, had joined the high oligarchical party. But the son of Aemilius Paullus, on the few occasions on which he appeared in public, took the popular side. In 137, the Tribune Cassius proposed a law for taking votes by secret ballot,<sup>1</sup> with the intention of neutralising the undue influence of the Senators. Scipio seems to have used his influence in favour of this law. But if by this policy popularity increased, his favour with the Senate proportionably fell. Indeed, six years before, when he was canvassing for the Censorship, App. Claudius, a rival candidate, seeing the motley crowd which followed him, exclaimed:—"Ah, Aemilius, it would trouble thy spirit to

---

<sup>1</sup> These *leges tabellariae* (as the Romans called them, *tabella* being their word for a voting-tablet) were four in number: 1. *The Gabinian* (139 B.C.), introducing the use of the ballot at elections. 2. *The Cassian* (137), introducing it in all state-trials, except in the case of high treason (*perduellio*). 3. *The Papirian* (131), introducing it into the legislative assemblies. 4. *The Caelian* (107), which cancelled the single exception made by the Cassian Law. See *Dict. Ant.*, "TABELLA."

see thy son followed by such a crew." Yet he courted not popularity: he seldom even visited the Forum, though he spoke with force and eloquence when he chose. When the same Appius boasted that *he* knew all who frequented the Forum by name, Scipio replied:—"True, I do not know many of my fellow-citizens by name, but I have taken care that all should know me." Popularity came unasked, and the people cast their eyes upon him to retrieve the dishonour of the Roman arms in Spain. Legally *Scipio elected to a second Consulship.* he could not hold the Consulship, for a law had been lately passed forbidding a second election in any case.<sup>1</sup> But Scipio received the votes of every Century, though he was not a candidate.

He was about fifty years of age when he took office, and he proceeded to execute his commission with the same steady vigour which distinguished him on other occasions. He found the demoralisation of the army not less than it *Discipline restored.* had been described, and he applied himself to correct it with the same severity that his father had used in Macedonia, and he himself had used before Carthage. All courtesans and hucksters, together with fortune-tellers, who drove a lucrative trade in the dispirited army, he commanded to quit the camp. All waggons and beasts of burthen he ordered to be sold, except those that were needed for actual service. No cooking utensils were allowed except a spit, a camp-kettle, and a drinking-cup. Bedsteads were forbidden: the general himself slept upon a straw pallet.

After some time spent in training his army, he led it to Numantia by a circuitous route. As he approached the place he was joined by young Jugurtha, bastard son of *Siege of Numantia.* Mastanabal, who came from Numidia with twelve elephants and a large body of light troops. By this time the season for war was nearly over, and he ordered two entrenched camps to be formed for winter-quarters. In one he fixed himself, the other he put under the command of his brother Fabius.

With the beginning of spring (133 B.C.) he began to draw lines of circumvallation round the city, and declined all attempts made by the Numantians to provoke a general action,—a circumstance which is rather surprising, if it be true that the available troops of the Spanish city amounted to no more than 8000 men.

Numantia lay on a steep hill, not far from the source of the

<sup>1</sup> App., *B.C.*, i. 19; Livy (*Epit.*), lvi.; *cp.* Mommsen, iii. 299.

Douro. The blockade was so strict and the inhabitants were so ill provided, that in no long time they were reduced to feed on boiled leather, and at length (horrible to tell) on the bodies of the dead. In vain those who retained sufficient strength attempted sallies by day and night; Scipio had established a complete system of telegraphic signs, so that he might be informed of any sortie and might add additional troops to the point assailed. In vain did the young men of Lutia, a city of the Arevacians, about 30 miles distant, propose to relieve their brave neighbours. Scipio, informed of the movement, promptly marched to that place with a division of light troops, and, having compelled the government to surrender 400 of the most active sympathisers, he cut off their hands and returned. Such was the cruelty which the most enlightened men of Rome permitted themselves to use towards barbarians.

The wretched Numantians now inquired on what terms they might be admitted to surrender. The reply was, that on that very day they must lay down their arms and on the next appear at a given place. They prayed for another day's delay. In the interval a certain number of brave men, resolved not to submit on any terms, put themselves to death; the remnant came forth from the gates. Their squalid apparel and wasted forms made even the Romans turn away in horror from their own work. Scipio selected fifty to walk in his triumphal procession, and sold the rest. The town was so effectually destroyed that its very site cannot be discovered.

Such was the destructive, but not glorious work, which earned for Scipio the name of Numantinus, as the ruin of Carthage had given him a better title than adoption to that of Africanus.<sup>1</sup>

Commissioners were sent, according to custom, to reorganise the Spanish Provinces. The conquests of Scipio and of Dec. Brutus were comprehended in the limits of the Hither Province, and for some years Spain remained in tranquillity.

There was no enemy now left on the coast-lands of the Mediterranean to dispute the sovereignty of Rome. At least six Provinces, each fit to be a kingdom, owned her sway,

---

<sup>1</sup> Cicero (*de off.*, i. 12, 38) speaks of the war with Numantia as a struggle for very existence on the part of the Romans. This exaggerated estimate may help to explain the savage measures which were thought necessary.

and poured yearly taxes into her revenue. The kings of Asia Minor, of Syria, of Egypt, were her obedient vassals.

AUTHORITIES.—Livy (Epit.), liii.-lvii., lix. ; Polybius, xxxv. 1-4 ; Appian, vi. ; Diodorus, xxxiii. ; Dio, *fr.*, 73, 75 ; Eutropius, iv. 16, 17 ; Velleius, ii. 1, 4 ; Orosius, v. 4-7. There are incidental allusions elsewhere, but a glance at this list will show that our knowledge is very fragmentary. In Long's *Decline of the Roman Republic*, the student will find a full and careful account of the statements of our original authorities for the period from these Spanish Wars to the end of the Republic.

## CHAPTER XLIII

### FIRST SLAVE WAR IN SICILY. (134-131 B.C.)

WHILE Numantia was yet defying the Roman generals, a war broke out near home of a more dreadful kind than any distant contest with foreigners could be,—the insurrection of the slaves in Sicily. Some remarks have already been made on the rapid increase in the number of slaves which attended the career of Roman conquest; and it was observed that, while domestic slaves usually were well treated, the agricultural slaves were thrust down to a condition resembling that of the oxen which laboured on the land.<sup>1</sup> The evils which such oppression might engender were now proved by terrible experience.

Every one knows that in the early times of Rome the work of the farm was the only kind of manual labour deemed worthy of a free citizen. This feeling long survived, as may be seen from the praise bestowed on agriculture by Cicero,<sup>2</sup> whose enthusiasm was caught from one of his favourite heroes, old Cato the Censor, whose treatise on agriculture has been noticed. The taste for books of farming continued. Varro the antiquarian, a friend of Cicero, has left an excellent treatise on the subject. A little later came the famous *Georgics* of Virgil, followed at no long interval by the elaborate dissertations of Columella, who refers to a number of Roman writers on the same subject. It is manifest that the subject of agriculture possessed a strong and enduring charm for the Roman mind.

But, from the times of the Hannibalic War, agriculture lost ground in Italy. When Cato was asked what was the most profitable use of slaves in farming, he said, "Good grazing."

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 339.

<sup>2</sup> "Omnium autem rerum ex quibus aliquid acquiritur nihil est agri cultura melius, nihil uberius, nihil dulcius, nihil homine libero dignius."—*De off.*, i. 42, 151.



What next? "Tolerable grazing." What next? "Bad grazing." What next? "Corn growing."<sup>1</sup> Later Roman writers, with one accord, deplore the diminished productiveness of land.

This result was due in part, no doubt, to war, but much more to other causes. Corn could be imported with facility from the southern lands of Sicily, from Egypt, and from *Decline of* Numidia, while a great part of Italy was little *agriculture.* suited for the production of grain crops. These causes found a powerful assistant in the growth of large estates and the profitable employment of slaves as shepherds and herdsmen.

A few examples will show the prodigious increase that there must have been in the number of slaves after the Second Punic War. To punish the Bruttians for the fidelity with *Number of* which they adhered to the cause of Hannibal, the *slaves.* whole nation were made slaves; 150,000 Epirotes were sold by Aemilius Paullus; 50,000 Carthaginians by Scipio. These numbers are accidentally preserved; and if, according to this scale, we calculate the hosts of unhappy men sold into slavery during the Syrian, Macedonian, Illyrian, Grecian, and Spanish wars, we shall be prepared to hear that slaves fit only for unskilled labour were plentiful and cheap.

There was also a slave-trade regularly carried on in the East. The barbarous tribes on the coasts of the Black Sea were always ready to sell their own flesh and blood; Thrace and Sarmatia supplied many slaves; but Syria and the adjacent parts of western Asia were the Guinea-Coast of the Romans. The entrepôt of this trade was Delos, which had been made a free port by Rome after the conquest of Macedonia.<sup>2</sup> Strabo tells us that in one day 10,000 slaves were sold there in open market. Such were the vile uses to which was put the Sacred Island, once the treasury of Greece, when her states were banded together to secure their freedom against the Persian.

It is evident that hosts of slaves, lately free men and many of them soldiers, must become dangerous to the owners. Nor was their treatment such as to conciliate. They were turned out upon the hills, made responsible for the *Slaves in* safety of the cattle put under their charge, and *Apulia become* compelled to provide themselves with the common necessities of life. A body of these wretched men asked their master for clothing: "What," he asked, "are there no travellers with clothes on?" The atrocious hint was soon taken: the shepherd slaves of lower Italy became banditti, and to travel

<sup>1</sup> Cicero, *de off.*, ii. 25, 89.

<sup>2</sup> Page 420.

through Apulia without an armed retinue was a perilous adventure. From assailing travellers, the marauders began to plunder the smaller country-houses; and all but the rich were obliged to desert the country and flock into the towns. So early as the year 185 B.C., 7000 slaves in Apulia were condemned for brigandage by a Praetor sent specially to enquire into various disorders in that country. When these men were not employed upon the hills, they were shut up in large prison-like buildings (*ergastula*), where they could talk together of their wrongs and form schemes of vengeance.<sup>1</sup>

The Sicilian landowners emulated their Italian brethren; and it was their tyrannical conduct that led to the frightful insurrection, which reveals to us somewhat of the real state of society which existed under the rule of Rome.

In Sicily, as in lower Italy, pasturage had become the chief use for the land, the herds being driven up into the mountain pastures during the summer months, and about October returning towards the plains: and the same causes which were at work in Italy were at work, on a smaller scale, in Sicily. The city of Enna, once famous for the worship of Demeter, had become the centre of a pastoral district, and of the neighbouring landowners Damophilus was the wealthiest. He was famous for the multitude of his slave-herdsmen and for his cruel treatment of them, and his wife Megallis emulated her lord in the barbarities which she practised on the female slaves. At length the cup was full, and 400 of his bondsmen took counsels of vengeance against Damophilus.

At Enna there lived another rich proprietor, named Antigones; and among his slaves was a Syrian, known by the Greek name of Eunus (Εὔνοῦς). This man was a kind of wizard, who pretended to have revelations of the future, and practised a mode of breathing fire which passed for a supernatural power. At length he gave out that his Syrian gods had declared to him that he should be king hereafter. His master treated him as a jester, and at banquets used to call him in to make sport for his guests; and they, entering into his humour, used to beg him to remember them when he gained his sceptre. But to the confederate slaves of Damophilus, Eunus seemed in truth a Prophet and a King sent to deliver them. The whole body entered the city of Enna, with Eunus at their head breathing fire.

The wretched city now felt the vengeance of men brutalised

<sup>1</sup> On slave-risings in Italy, see Mommsen, iii. 102, 309, 380.

by oppression. Clad in skins, armed with stakes burnt at the end, with reaping hooks, spits, or whatever arms *Capture of Enna.* rage supplied, they broke into the houses and massacred all persons of free condition from the old man and matron to the infant at the breast. Crowds of slaves joined them; every man's foes were those of his own household. Damophilus was dragged to the theatre and slain. Megallis was given over to the female slaves, who first tortured her and then cast her down the crag on which the city stands.

Eunus thus saw the wildest of his dreams fulfilled. He assumed the diadem, took the royal name of Antiochus, and called his followers Syrians. The *ergastula* were broken open, and numbers of slaves sallied forth to join him. Soon he was at the head of 10,000 men. He showed no little *Achaëus as general.* discretion in the choice of officers. Achaëus, a Greek, was made general of the army, and he exerted himself to preserve order and moderate excesses.

A few days after the massacre at Enna, Cleon, a Cilician slave, raised a similar insurrection near Agrigentum. He also was soon at the head of several *Cleon at Agrigentum.* thousand men.

The Romans in Sicily, who had looked on in blank dismay, now formed hopes that the two leaders might quarrel,—hopes soon disappointed by the tidings that Cleon had acknowledged the sovereign authority of King Antiochus.

There was no Roman magistrate present in Sicily when the insurrection broke out. The Praetor of the last year had returned to Italy; and his successor now arrived, *Defeat of a Praetor.* ignorant of all that was passing. He contrived to collect 8000 soldiers in the island, and took the field against the slaves, who by this time numbered 20,000. He was utterly defeated, and the insurrection spread over the whole island.

The consternation at Rome was great. No one could tell where the evil would stop. Movements broke out in various parts of the empire; but the magistrates were on the alert, and all attempts were crushed forcibly. At Rome itself one hundred and fifty slaves, detected in organising an outbreak, were put to death without mercy.

The insurrection seemed to the Senate so serious that they despatched the Consul, C. Fulvius Flaccus, colleague of Scipio in the year 134 B.C., to crush it. But it does not seem that Flaccus obtained any advantage over the insurgents. In the next year L. Calpurnius Piso succeeded in wresting Messina from the enemy, and advanced to Enna, a place strongly

defended by nature, which he was unable to take. His successor, P. Rupilius, a friend of Scipio, began his campaign with the siege of Tauromenium. The slaves offered a desperate resistance. Reduced to straits for want of food, they devoured the children and women, and at length began to prey upon each other. Even then the place was only taken by treachery. All the captured slaves were put to the torture and thrown down a precipice. The Consul now advanced to Enna, the last stronghold of Eunus and his followers. As their fate was inevitable, Cleon of Agrigentum chose a soldier's death, and, sallying forth with all who breathed the same spirit as himself, he fell fighting and died shortly after of his wounds. Of the end of Achæus we are not informed. Eunus, with a body-guard of a few hundred men, fled to the neighbouring hills; but, despairing of escape, the greater part of the wretched men slew one another. The mock king himself was taken in a cave, with his cook, baker, bathing-man, and jester. He showed a pusillanimity far unlike the desperate courage of the rest, and died eaten by vermin in a dungeon at Murgantia.

Thus was crushed for a time this perilous insurrection, the result of the slave-system established by Roman conquest. The well-being of Sicily was so seriously impaired that, even before the conclusion of the war, it was thought expedient to have recourse to wisdom more than human. The Sibylline Books were consulted. The oracular page ordered the propitiation of "Ceres the most ancient"; and a solemn deputation of priests proceeded to the august temple of the Goddess in the city of Enna.<sup>1</sup> This circumstance, seemingly unimportant, becomes significant when it is considered that the war really originated in the neglect of agricultural labours and was at its height during the notable year in which Tib. Gracchus was bringing to all men's knowledge the reduced condition of the farmers of Italy.

Rupilius remained as Proconsul in Sicily during the year 131 B.C., and ten commissioners were sent to assist him in drawing up laws for the better regulation of the agricultural districts. The code formerly established by Hiero at Syracuse was taken as the basis of the legislation, a measure which gave great satisfaction to all the Greek communities. The whole land was required to pay a tithe of its produce to the Romans, except the free cities<sup>2</sup> and some others, which were allowed to pay a fixed annual sum. The collection of these

<sup>1</sup> Cic., *in Verr.* (ii.), iv. 49, 108.

<sup>2</sup> Page 334.

tithes was to be let to Roman contractors. But to prevent extortion, Courts of Appeal were provided. All disputes between citizens of the same town were left to be decided in the town courts; those between citizens of different towns, by judges drawn by lot under the eye of the Praetor; those between a town community and an individual, by the Senate of some other city; those between a Roman citizen and a Sicilian, by a judge belonging to the same nation as the defendant. There can be no doubt that the general condition of the Sicilian landowners was considerably improved by this system; and agriculture again flourished in Sicily as it had done in former times.

AUTHORITIES.—Livy (Epit.), lvi.; Diodorus, xxxiv.; Florus, iii. 19; Orosius, v. 9. Our knowledge of the settlement by Rupilius rests on Cicero's Verrine Orations. (*Cp.* Long's *Cicero*, i., Exc., 9.)



Coin of P. Crassus, showing the *recognitio equitum*.  
(Stevenson, "LICINIA").

## CHAPTER XLIV

### THE CONDITION OF ROME AND HER PEOPLE AT THE CLOSE OF THE PERIOD OF CONQUEST

AN attempt was made to review the condition of Rome and her subjects at the point of time when she had just passed through the terrible ordeal of the Hannibalic War. Since that, we have followed her rapid ascent to absolute dominion. And here again we may pause to note the changes that had taken place in her political and social system. For though no violent changes are recorded, yet silently and surely great alterations had been wrought in almost all sorts and conditions of Roman citizens.

We have had continually to recognise the increasing power of the Senate and the growth of a new Nobility, as compact as the old Patrician oligarchy, and wielding a mightier power. The mark of Nobility was not now, as of old, birth within the pale of the Patriciate, but birth within the number of those families who could count up successive honours for generations. Those were now most noble who possessed the longest file of images, that is those whose ancestors had held the greatest number of Curule offices.

That which secured political supremacy to the Senate was what is familiarly called the Power of the Purse. No people can be free unless they have some control over the expenditure of public money; and at Rome all financial matters were, as we have seen, wholly in the hands of the Senate. No war indeed could be undertaken without a vote of the People; and when the People were obliged to pay the expenses of the war, it was sometimes not easy to procure that vote. Such had been the case in the Second Macedonian War.<sup>1</sup> But the large sums which poured into the treasury for the next few years made this tax lighter

*The new Nobility.*

*Power of the Purse in the hands of the Senate.*

<sup>1</sup> Page 369.



every year, till with the conquest of Macedon it ceased altogether.<sup>1</sup> Henceforth, therefore, there was not even an indirect control over the public purse, and no hindrance was offered to a vote for declaring war. Even Cato, in his determination to destroy Carthage, lent himself to the policy of his Order. All lucrative employments were seized by the members of the great Senatorial families. It was only when difficult services were required, such as the conquest of Macedon or the reduction of Carthage and Numantia, that the Senate were obliged to resort to the services of independent men like Aemilius Paullus or his son Scipio.

But while the Senatorial Nobility seemed to be in secure possession of nearly all honours, there were not wanting signs to show that this possession was precarious. In the first place, there had grown up of late years a body of wealthy families who were debarred from political honours ; and in the second place, the condition of the rustic population was every day becoming so bad as to excite the sympathy of the generous and to alarm the fears of the selfish.

The wealthy class of which we speak was chiefly composed of the tax-collectors, public contractors, and other persons engaged in commercial pursuits. Just before the Second Punic War a law had been passed (*Lex Claudia*) to make it illegal for Senators to engage in any kind of commercial adventure ; and to supply the constant demand caused by the wars that followed, companies were formed, with a sufficient capital to undertake contracts for supplying the army and navy. When one Province after another was conquered, similar companies contracted to collect the imposts laid upon the new subjects of Rome, and this soon became a large and profitable business. The Provincial imposts were put up to public auction ; the company which offered the largest sum, if they could give proper security, received the contract ; they paid into the Treasury the sum which they had offered, and all that they collected over and above this sum they divided amongst themselves : a system well contrived to encourage extortion. It was from this wealthy class of contractors and commercial men that C. Gracchus (as we shall see) created a new order of citizens to balance the Senators. This was the Equestrian Order, the members of which were called Equites or Knights,—a new application of an old name which demands explanation.

*Growth of a  
wealthy non-  
Senatorial  
class.*

It has been noticed that by the institutions attributed to

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 416.

king Servius the Equites were raised to the number of 1800.

*The Equites.* They were the wealthiest men at Rome, and formed a real body of Knights or Chivalry, who served on horseback in the army of the city, as all the other Centuries served on foot. They were furnished with a horse and money for its keep at the public expense, or rather by a special tax laid on the property of spinsters, widows and orphans, who were exempt from all other dues.

As the city increased in power there were many citizens who were as wealthy as the Equites,<sup>1</sup> and yet were not of their number; and at the siege of Veii many of these citizens came forward and offered to serve as horse-soldiers at their own expense. Hence arose the distinction of Knights with a Public, and Knights with a Private Horse (*equites publico and privato equo*). After this time, the cavalry seem to have been regularly furnished by families of a certain amount of property; and the horse bestowed by the state became a badge of honour, which was retained by Senators and Consulars, though they were no longer liable to serve in the army. The whole system was remodelled, as it appears, in the Censorship of Fabius and Decius, who were commissioned to counteract the measures of Appius Claudius. It was then ordained that every year, on the day of the battle of Regillus, the Knights who had a Public Horse, clad in purple and wreathed with olive, should ride in procession from the Temple of Mars outside the city through the Forum to the Capitol, passing in front of the Temple of Castor and Pollux (*transvectio equitum*). Every five years also they were inspected, each Knight being required to lead his horse past the Censors, who had power to deprive any man of his rank by taking away his horse (*recognitio equitum*). Such a punishment was inflicted by Livius and Néro, the conquerors of Metaurus, each upon the other, and upon L. Scipio by Cato. In process of time the distinction between the titular Equites and the horse-soldiers of the army became more and more pronounced, and the possession of a public horse became a sort of honorary distinction held in high esteem. The Cavaliers became distinct from the Cavalry.

But a great and complete change took place in the time of C. Gracchus, by a law of which we shall speak hereafter,<sup>2</sup> which virtually threw into the Equestrian Order all who

<sup>1</sup> The Census of the Equites in earlier times is not known, but was (it may be presumed) larger than that of the First Class. In later times it was fixed at 400,000 sesterces (about £3500); see Horace, *Epist.*, i. 1. 58.

<sup>2</sup> Page 497.

possessed a certain amount of property, and thus created a sort of lesser Nobility to counterbalance the Senatorial Order. About this time, as it seems, a man lost his place in the Equestrian Order by becoming a Senator;<sup>1</sup> and all the Equites were either wealthy contractors and merchants, or young men of Senatorial families, who had not themselves reached Senatorial dignity. The antagonism of the Equites and the Senate forms one of the most striking points in the internal history of Rome for the fifty years after the time of Gracchus. And here we find one of the quarters from which the dominion of the Senate was threatened.

More immediate danger was to be apprehended from the state of the rural population, not only in the Roman territory itself, but throughout the allied cities of Italy.

In the early times of Rome military service was a privilege confined to persons of a certain property. Citizens with a fixed yearly income of smaller amount than gave a position in the Classes were employed on board the ships; but those who had no appreciable property were used only as slingers and archers to skirmish in front of the regular battalions of the legion. And the same practice seems to have prevailed in the Italian communities, who always furnished more than half the Roman armies. In the great defeats of the Hannibalic War, therefore, the losses fell not on mercenary armies but on the substantial burgesses of the towns and the stout yeomen of the country. There can be no doubt that in this dreadful war the rural inhabitants of the Roman territory, and of Italy generally, must have been more than decimated. And it was probably due to this cause that, from the time of Flamininus, persons who had hitherto only been allowed to serve as seamen began to be enrolled in the legions along with the wealthier citizens.<sup>2</sup> But even this was not sufficient to fill up the gaps caused by the incessant wars that followed, down to the fall of Numantia. Italy was drained of her best blood, and many a farm lost the stout limbs of its proprietors.

To this must be added that the wars, being now carried on beyond seas, drew off the legionaries from their country work much more completely than the Italian wars. The men could no longer return home when the cam-

<sup>1</sup> The two positions appear to have been compatible in 129 B.C. (the dramatic date of Cicero's *Republic*), but to have been separated very soon after (Cic., *Rep.*, iv. 2).

<sup>2</sup> That Flamininus originated the practice appears at least probable from Plutarch, *Flamin.*, 18.

paign was over, but were kept for several years in foreign lands ; and even if they returned to their country, they had often contracted licentious tastes and formed irregular habits which ill suited the frugal life of an Italian husbandman. Those, therefore, who had small estates were eager to turn them into money, that they might enjoy the irregular pleasures of the city ; those who had nothing to sell migrated without hindrance. Thus the rural population was more and more thinned, while the towns, and Rome most of all, swarmed with needy and reckless men, ready for outrage.

The small proprietors found it extremely easy to part with their estates and holdings. For the great Senatorial families were every day growing richer by the commands and governments which were multiplied after every successive war ; and, being prohibited from commerce, they were glad to invest their gains in buying up land in the neighbourhood of their own estates. From this time forth began those *latifundia* or great estates which Pliny believed to be the real cause of the depopulation and decay of Italy.<sup>1</sup>

It might appear, indeed, that these estates, being stripped of their labourers, would not be very valuable. But this was compensated by the great abundance and cheapness of slaves,—a point which has been sufficiently illustrated in our account of the Sicilian slave war. Whole districts were thrown into pasturage because free labourers were wanting, and their place was supplied by wretched captives who, though unequal to the labours of the plough or spade, were able to watch flocks and tend herds. Even when tillage was still found profitable in Italy, it changed its character. It was then, probably, that what is called the *métayer* system, which prevails so largely there at the present day, first took its rise ; the system, that is, in which the tenant and landlord are partners in the crops,<sup>2</sup> the landlord furnishing land, farm-buildings, and seed, the tenant supplying the farm-implements and the labour.

Here, then, was a second cause of discontent, which rendered the established order of things insecure, and might at any time cause peril to the government of the Senate.

Meantime, with the decline of the rural population, the population of the city had constantly been increasing. Even in the time of the Samnite Wars the Censor Appius had found the freedmen sufficiently

<sup>1</sup> Plin., *H.N.*, xviii. 6. 35.

<sup>2</sup> *Métayer* properly means *partner* : the Latin term was *partiarius*. For an account of this system, see Mill, *Political Economy*, Bk. ii. ch. 8.

numerous to form a powerful support of the Patricians against the Plebeians.<sup>1</sup> So we shall find them in the next half-century generally taking part with the Nobility against the champions of the rural population,—a fact of great importance in estimating the relation of parties at Rome. The people of the city, contemptuously called the “forensic mob,” were mostly confined to four votes out of thirty-five, and therefore in a general way they had little weight against the country people, who had thirty-one votes out of thirty-five. It is, therefore, the Country Tribes which in Roman history are commonly known by the name of “the People,” and it was this part of the nation which supported the patriotic statesmen who endeavoured to restore the old yeomanry of Italy ; while the haughtiest of the aristocracy are allied with the Tribes of the City. It was Appius, the proud Patrician, who endeavoured to spread the populace over all the Tribes ; it was by the popular Censors, Fabius and Decius, that they were thrown back into the four City Tribes. When they had again broken these bonds, the rule of Fabius and Decius was renewed by a man described by the Roman historians as a mere demagogue, namely C. Flaminius, who fell at the Lake Trasimene ; and it was the father of the Gracchi who confined them even to a single Tribe. Cato, the most popular man of his day, was all in favour of the rural population, and it was their sufferings that first awakened the sympathies of Tib. Gracchus. We must not, then, import our notions of “popular men” into this portion of Roman History. By “popular men” we mean those who favour the people of the towns ; at Rome the term meant those who supported the people of the country. There was, properly speaking, no large and independent Middle Class, consisting of shopkeepers and small traders of all kinds, such as are found in all parts of western Europe ; for these crafts were filled by the freedmen and dependents of the rich. The conflict lay, therefore, between the Nobility and the country voters, though in a few years the Equestrian Order stepped in as a new Nobility to embroil the strife.

An important consequence of this relation of parties was that by dexterous management the Nobility were able to obtain great influence in the Comitia. Popular choice was already much limited by the fact that wealth was required for the discharge of public office. It was further limited by the fact that at many seasons of the year the country people of the more distant Tribes could not leave their harvesting to give their votes at Rome. In this case the great

*Influence of the  
Nobility in the  
Comitia.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 192.

landowners and all who were not obliged personally to labour on their estates, represented the Country Tribes. Thus we may understand why, at some seasons, the Nobility carried elections against the will of the popular party, while at other times this party obtained easy victories over the Nobility.

AUTHORITIES. — See *Dict. Ant.*, “EQUITES,” “NOBILES,” “TRIBUS.”





Medallion of Terence (Bernoulli, *Römische Ikonographie*, i. 67).

## CHAPTER XLV

### MANNERS AND MORALS : LITERATURE AND ART,

ENOUGH has been said in more than one chapter of the foregoing Book to prove the rapid decline in morality which followed the Punic Wars. The rankness of vice was felt by all Romans of better feeling and truer patriotism. In consequence of the growing corruption of the age, an attempt was made to check the evil in a manner characteristic of the Roman mind, namely, by the moral superintendence of the Censors. Cato, the very type of a Roman, wielded this enormous power without compromise ; and if penal edicts could have arrested social changes or enforced moral obligations, the Censorial power in the hands of such a man as Cato must have done it. But though his spirit descended in some measure upon succeeding Censors, the undertaking proved vain.

Sumptuary laws, laws against bribery, and the like, were also tried by those who still clung to the hope of reviving the old Roman simplicity. The history of all nations, or rather the history of human nature, teaches us the vanity of such endeavours. They were not more successful at Rome than they have since been in other lands.

It must not, however, be imagined that there were no exceptions to the rule of corrupt and licentious living, which began to prevail at Rome in this period. In the foregoing chapters many such have been specified, and if the records of the time were more complete, names now for-

gotten might be added to the list. But in the most upright Romans, such as Cato, there is something harsh and repulsive ; and now, more remarkably than ever, was their acknowledgment of social duties confined to the circle of their own countrymen. Nothing can be more detestable than the public morality of Rome throughout her career of conquest. No arts were too base to be used by her statesmen and generals. In the fulfilment of positive contracts, indeed, their good faith was much greater than the Greeks were accustomed to ; and Polybius, in a passage already cited, gives them high praise in this particular. But the religious feelings which he attributes to them were fast decaying. Those who lived in open profligacy could know nothing of religion but its formalities, which it was necessary for every Roman to observe because they were inextricably entangled with political business and military enterprises. Men of education sought a substitute in Greek philosophy ; and here it may be noticed that the best Romans, such as Aemilius Paullus and the younger Scipio, professed the stern and practical doctrines of the Stoic school.

Nor was the progress of corruption checked by the great Censor of modern times, public opinion. This force can never fully operate in large communities except through *Public opinion.* the Press. Whatever be the abuses of the Press, and they are great, its uses are greater far. At Athens the place of this potent instrument was in some measure supplied by the free and vigorous satire of the comic poets. But at Rome even this was wanting.<sup>1</sup> The rude Roman took little pleasure in exquisite poetry and keen wit, such as that with which Aristophanes or Eupolis enchained the ear of an Athenian audience ; nay, the wild buffoonery with which even Attic poets were obliged to amuse the multitude, failed to please those whose youth had been spent in the camp and on the battle-field. Yet there was a Literature at Rome, and we will here resume the account of it from the point at which we before broke off.

It has been said that the native poetry of Rome suddenly gave way to an invasion from Greece ; and that Naevius, though he made a brave stand against the prevailing taste, yet lived to see the triumph of the Hellenizing poets. The *Ennius.* vigour and force with which Ennius used the heroic metre of Homer may be seen from a few specimens which Virgil borrowed and incorporated with slight alterations in his great

---

<sup>1</sup> See the remarks of Mommsen (iii. 148) on the small scope allowed to Roman comedians.

Epic.<sup>1</sup> Ennius, like Livius Andronicus and Naevius, wrote tragedies and comedies, which he translated from the Greek. But the work on which his fame rested was his great epic poem entitled the *Annals of Rome*, in eighteen books. The first seven of these contained a rapid narrative of the early history: in the remaining eleven, more recent events were treated on a fuller scale. He boasts that he was the first who abandoned the rude metre used "by Fauns and bards," and studied the elegancies of style; and he is acknowledged by Lucretius as the poet

Who first from lovely Helicon brought down  
The leaves of an imperishable crown,  
For all Italia's sons to hold in high renown.<sup>2</sup>

Nor was his boast empty. It is manifest that Ennius, by his poem on the great Punic War, formed and settled the Latin language, much as Shakspeare and the Translators of the Bible formed and settled English. No doubt Virgil culled the fairest flowers; but even the fastidious taste of Horace could recognise true poetic spirit in some lines of Ennius, though, at a later period of his life, he sneered at the old bard's pretensions.<sup>3</sup> The devotion of Cicero to Ennius is absolute. So long did his popularity last that Seneca, writing in the time of Nero, calls the Roman People *populus Ennianus*, and portions of his poems were commonly recited in the theatres down to the time of the Emperor Aurelius.

Meantime, besides tragedy there had arisen at Rome a comic drama, of high excellence. Comic entertainments of a rude kind had prevailed from early times. But the Fescennine Dialogues and the Atellane Fables, of which we spoke in a former page, had no relation to what was *Comedy*. This, like tragedy, was merely transplanted from Greece. Probably all the old poets, from Livius

<sup>1</sup> As, ——— "Postquam Discordia taetra  
Belli ferratos postis portasque refregit,"—Ennius.  
"Impulit ipsa manu portas, et cardine verso  
Belli ferratos rupit Saturnia postes."—Virgil, *Aen.*, vii. 621.

"Qui caelum versat stellis fulgentibus aptum."—Ennius.  
"Axem humero torquet stellis ardentibus aptum."—*Aen.*, iv. 482.

"Quae neque Dardaniis campis potuere perire,  
Nec cum capta capi, nec cum combusta cremari."—Ennius.  
———"Num Sigeis occumbere campis,  
Num capti potuere capi? num incensa cremavit  
Troia viros?"—*Aen.*, vii. 294.

<sup>2</sup> *Lucr.*, i. 118.

<sup>3</sup> He recognises the poetic spirit in *Sat.*, i. 4. 60 *sqq.*; he adopts a depreciatory tone in *Epist.*, ii. 1. 50 *sqq.*

Andronicus to Ennius, who translated Greek tragedies for the Roman stage, also translated Greek comedies. Naevius, as we have seen, tried a more independent course, and was persecuted for his pains. The comedies, in which he attacked the Metelli and others, must have rather resembled the Old Comedy of Athens, in which it was usual to indulge in the most open personalities. But the Roman comic dramas known to us are borrowed from the New Comedy of Menander and Diphilus, in which the characters represent, not particular persons but whole classes of society. That these half-Greek dramas would have little effect on Romans, will appear when we have given some account of the chief comic poets and their works.

T. Maccius Plautus was a native Italian, having been born at Sarsina, a petty town of Umbria, probably about 254 B.C.

*Plautus.* He appears to have led a careless, jovial life, frequenting taverns and entering into the humours of the people, rather than seeking the patronage of the great. His plays were not without reward; but he was sometimes obliged to labour like a slave for his daily bread. He died in 184 B.C. at a good old age. Twenty of his comedies still remain.

P. Terentius Afer appears to have been born at Carthage about the year 195 B.C., and was therefore some sixty years younger than Plautus. In his youth he was the

*Terence.* slave of a wealthy Roman, named Terentius Lucanus, whose *nomen* he adopted (according to custom) on obtaining his freedom. His first play was the *Andria*, which he brought out in 166 B.C., and it won him the acquaintance and patronage of Scipio Aemilianus and Laelius, who were then young men studying Greek with Polybius. His *Adelphi* was acted (by a strange abuse) at the funeral games of Aemilius Paullus, and the charge that he was assisted by his young patrons in translating this play is at least not discountenanced by the poet.<sup>1</sup> He died at the early age of thirty-five; and probably the six comedies which we still possess entire were all that he ever wrote.

The characteristic excellences of the two poets correspond with the manners of their lives. As far as the plots go, there is little to praise. The same generic characters appear and reappear in every play. Both Plautus and Terence content themselves with giving us, at

*Characteristics  
of Plautus and  
Terence.*

<sup>1</sup> For he says in the Prologue:—

“Nam quod isti dicunt malivoli, *homines nobilis*  
*Hunc adiutare adsidueque una scribere,*  
Quod illi maledictum vemens esse existunt,  
Eam laudem hic ducit maxumam.”

second hand, weak fathers who leave their sons to the care of roguish slaves; and represent the sons as determined to woo and win penniless girls, in which aim they were aided by the clever knavery of the slaves. In the end, a reconciliation is brought about by the discovery that the dreaded mistress is the lost daughter of a brother or some particular friend of the father; so that the young man gains his point, and the slave, instead of being punished for his trickery, is rewarded for his adroitness. Sometimes a Captain Bobadil, such as in Greece were common after the Macedonian wars, stupid, braggart, and rich with plunder, is made a butt for all kinds of jokes, verbal and practical, and he is attended by a parasite, who flatters him extravagantly and is rewarded (as his name shows) by a place at the Captain's table.

But the tone and manner in which these unpromising characters were employed by the two writers are extremely different. Plautus, coarser and more free-spoken, admits much of broad Roman humour, and introduces many Roman customs into his scenes. Terence, veiling even immoral thoughts in a style polished almost to coldness, keeps closer to his Attic original, and seldom ventures to mar its unity by foreign admixture. The parasite in Plautus tickles his master's vanity by a coarseness of flattery that would have put Falstaff to the blush; the parasite of Terence falls into his lord's vein with such easy assentation, that a less stupid man might be deceived.<sup>1</sup> The son in Plautus, thwarted in his desires, prays for his father's death, that he may bestow the inheritance on his mistress;<sup>2</sup> the son in Terence, grieved for the deceit he has practised upon his father, breaks into passionate self-reproach.<sup>3</sup> There is a racy freshness in the style of Plautus which well deserves the praise bestowed by Cicero,<sup>4</sup> and was so admired

<sup>1</sup> In the *Miles Gloriosus* of Plautus, the parasite flatters Pyrgopolinices thus (Act i. Sc. 1, l. 25):—

—— “You broke,” he says,  
“In India with your fist an elephant's arm.”

And again (l. 42):—

“I do remember—let me see—an *hundred*  
Cryphiolathronians, and *thirty* Sardians,  
And *threescore* Macedonians—that's the number  
Of men you slaughtered in a single day.

Pyrgop. What's the sum total of the men?  
Parasite. *Seven thousand!*”

The parasite in the *Eunuchus* of Terence is much more delicate in his flattery.

<sup>2</sup> *Mostellaria*, Act. i. Sc. 3, l. 76.

<sup>3</sup> As Pamphilus in the *Andria*, Act v. Sc. 3.

<sup>4</sup> *De Off.*, i. 29, 104.

by some Roman critics as to draw from them the extravagant praise that "if the Muses spoke Latin, they would use the tongue of Plautus:" and if Horace speaks slightly of him, as of Ennius,<sup>1</sup> it must be said that he was provoked by the fashion which in his day prevailed of over-rating the old Roman writers. The style of Terence is a very model of precision, elegance, and purity, as is testified by Cicero and by Caesar, though the latter laments a certain deficiency of comic vigour, which made him only "half a Menander."<sup>2</sup>

Besides these two famous writers, may be mentioned Caecilius, a comic poet, whose date is intermediate between that of Plautus and Terence, and who was coupled with Terence in a manner that implies his excellence.<sup>3</sup> He was a Milanese by birth, and, like Terence, came to Rome as a slave.

Another comic poet of somewhat later date deserves particular notice. This was L. Afranius, who ventured, like Naevius, to write comedies on Italian subjects, though he still seems to have drawn upon Menander for his dialogue.<sup>4</sup>

To these short notices of the comic poets, we may add a still shorter account of the two tragic writers who flourished at the same time.

M. Pacuvius, sister's son of Ennius, was born two years before Hannibal crossed the Alps, and lived to the age of nearly ninety, so that he died about thirty years later than Terence. Most of his tragedies, like those of his predecessors, were borrowed from the Greek. But he wrote one play named *Paullus*, of which the hero was the conqueror of Macedon.

L. Attius, or Accius, was born in 170 B.C., and lived to an

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.*, ii. 1. 58 sqq., 170 sqq.; *A. P.*, 270 sqq.

<sup>2</sup> "Quiddam come loquens atque omnia dulcia dicens."—Cicero, *ap. Suet.*, *Ter.*, 5.

"Tu quoque, tu in summis, o dimidiata Menander,

Poneris, et merito, puri sermonis amator.

Lenibus atque utinam scriptis adiuncta foret vis

Comica, ut aequato virtus polleret honore

Cum Graecis, neque in hac despectus parte iaceres.

Unum hoc maceror ac doleo tibi deesse, Terenti."—Caesar, *ap. Suet.*, *ib.*

<sup>3</sup> "Vincere Caecilius gravitate, Terentius arte."—Hor., *Epist.*, ii. 1. 59. This was the popular opinion, not Horace's.

<sup>4</sup> "Dicitur Afrani *toga* convenisse Menandro," says Horace (*Epist.*, ii. 1. 57). Comedies in which the Dramatis Personae were Latin and wore Latin dresses, were called *fabulae togatae*, while those in which the Greek names and dresses were retained, which was usually the case, were called *palliatae*. See Mommsen, iii. 164.



advanced age. He also, besides his Greek translations, produced two plays with Roman arguments, the *Brutus* and the *Decius*. The subjects were the delivery of Rome from the Tarquins and the self-sacrifice of that Decius who fell at the battle of Sentinum. They were produced, as the name of the first testifies, under the patronage of Dec. Brutus Callaicus, who carried the Roman arms to the verge of the Atlantic, and who entered into a generous rivalry with Scipio in patronage of poetry. The few remains of Attius are terse and vigorous; and the loss of his historical plays cannot but be matter of regret.<sup>1</sup>

Enough has been said to show that this literature can have produced very little effect upon the manners and morals of Rome. It was wholly of foreign growth. What interest could the people at large take in the Grecian dramas? "What was Hecuba to them, or they to Hecuba?" The Roman drama was an exotic which subsisted by the patronage of the great men, who spoke Greek as readily as Latin. The Roman dramatic poets were mostly slaves or freedmen, whose object was to please the great family to which they were attached. When any one, as Naevius, attempted to tread a freer course, his mouth was stopped by persecution.

The common life and interests of a Roman citizen made him every year less disposed for intellectual amusements. From childhood he was used to the splendid games, which every succeeding Aedile tried to make more splendid. Triumph after triumph raised a love of gorgeous exhibitions, which was ill-satisfied by the poetry and fictitious action of the stage.

---

<sup>1</sup> These historical plays were no doubt the dramas known under the name of the *fabulae praetextatae*, because the chief persons wore the *praetexta* or state-robe of curule magistrates. Horace commends the fashion of plays on Roman history :

"Nec minimum meruere decus, vestigia Graeca  
Ausi deserere, et celebrare domestica facta."—*A. P.*, 286.

Popular opinion represented Pacuvius as the Euripides, Attius as the Sophocles of Roman tragedy :

— "Aufert  
Pacuvius *docti* famam *senis*, Attius *alti*."—*Hor.*, *Epist.*, ii. 1. 55.

One of the vigorous sayings of Attius is the famous tyrant's maxim, "Oderint dum metuant." The pithy line—"Virtuti sis par, dispar fortunis patris"—has been amplified by Virgil into—

"Disce, puer, virtutem ex me verumque laborem,  
Fortunam ex aliis." (*Aen.*, xii. 435)—

unless indeed Virgil, like Attius, borrowed directly from Sophocles, *Aj.*, 550.

Above all, the bloody sports of the gladiatorial combats, which were first exhibited at the funeral games of a Brutus (264 B.C.), created a craving for strong and real excitements which no dramatic illusions could supply. This tendency in the vulgar was seconded by the old Roman spirit, which regarded the drama as a foreign innovation, calculated to enervate and corrupt. Dramatic representations at Rome were but occasional, and the theatres were but temporary booths, removed when the festival-time was past. Shortly before the year 150 B.C. the Censors wished to perpetuate the memory of their office by building a theatre, probably of stone; but P. Scipio Nasica, a rigid stickler for old Roman customs, interfered to stop the work, although it was far advanced; nor was any stone theatre erected at Rome till the second Consulship of Pompey the Great, all but one century later. But the theatres, such as they were, were not so much used for dramatic purposes in the proper sense of the word, as for the representation of gorgeous spectacles and magnificent processions. In a tragedy, whose subject was the Fall of Troy, it was not the fate of Priam or the sorrows of Andromaché that touched the hearts of the audience, but a host of soldiers in foreign arms and strange apparel that amused their eyes. In Horace's time this corruption of taste had reached its height. The taste of the people, he says, is all for bear-baiting and boxing-matches. Nor could the educated classes boast of a better taste. The love of military shows and spectacles had overpowered all merely intellectual pleasures.<sup>1</sup>

One species of poetry remains to be mentioned, which arose in the same period and for which alone the Romans can claim the merit of original invention,—that, namely, *Satire*, which Horace and Juvenal have made so well known under the name of Satire. It originated, doubtless, with those rustic effusions called the Fescennine Dialogues, which had served from early times to attack the foibles and fashions of the day. This rude instrument was taken up by a great poet, who used it so as not only to assail and censure but also to convey positive instruction.<sup>2</sup> This poet

<sup>1</sup> Hor., *Epist.*, ii. i. 185 sqq.

<sup>2</sup> Its originality is expressly asserted by Horace, who calls Lucilius "*Græcis intacti carminis auctor*" (*Sat.*, i. 10. 66). Juvenal's definition of Satire is well known:

"Quicquid agunt homines,—votum, timor, ira, voluptas,  
Gaudia, discursus,—nostri est farrago libelli." (*Sat.*, i. 85).

The word *satura* is said to mean a *medley* (p. 344)—a sense well suited to this definition.

was named C. Lucilius. He was born at Suessa Aurunca in 180 B.C., served in the Equites under Scipio in the Numantine war, and continued on intimate terms with the younger Laelius, after the death of his more illustrious friend. He died about the year 103 B.C. at Naples, to which place he had retired from the civil broils which disturbed the city. The muse of Lucilius was very fluent. Of his numerous Satires only fragments now remain; but many of these show that he possessed a vigour of thought and pungency of style not unworthy of the master of Horace and Juvenal. In the Augustan age, indeed, the admiration for Lucilius was so great, that Horace thought it necessary to moderate the fervour of his admirers, and gave so much offence that he was obliged to enter into an explanation of the Satire which he had written upon the first writer of Satires.<sup>1</sup>

Little need here be added with respect to prose literature. It became a fashionable employment for Romans of high family to compose narratives of portions of Roman history, after the example set by Fabius Pictor and Cincius Alimentus. The instruction of the people could but little be consulted, when books were all written by hand and were therefore both scarce and costly. But any such purpose was disavowed by the fact that most of these chroniclers wrote in Greek, just as the English, French, and German authors of the Middle Ages wrote in Latin.

The study of law had before this begun to be common at Rome, and men little fitted for military life courted popular favour by giving legal advice to numerous clients. But this subject belongs properly to the succeeding age. Men of the Forum were still expected to take the command of armies, even when their inefficiency was certain. Such was the case with the Consuls who began the Third Punic War.

But there was a kindred pursuit, which already brought fame and profit to those who professed it, namely, the art of public speaking. The practice of indicting great offenders before the People, or prosecuting them in the law-courts, encouraged forensic oratory. Deliberative or Parliamentary speaking found an open field, not only in the Senate, but in the great Assemblies of the People. And the faculties of the Romans seem to have readily adapted themselves to the requirement. In his work on the orators of

<sup>1</sup> The first attack was in *Sat.*, i. 4. 6 *sqq.* The explanation is *Sat.*, i. 10. 1 *sqq.*

Rome,<sup>1</sup> Cicero enumerates some even of this early date, whose speeches were still thought worth reading. Such was Appius Claudius the Censor, whose dying eloquence led the Senate to reject the persuasive offers of Cineas ; such was old Cato, for many years the favourite orator of the Forum ; such was Ser. Sulpicius Galba, whose pathetic language procured his own acquittal from the charge of oppression in Spain. The study of the art of speaking was, indeed, the chief part of a young Roman's education. When he had gone through some grammatical teaching and read some of the old poets, he passed into the school of a rhetorical master, and learned to repeat famous speeches, such as those of Galba, and to frame speeches of his own on imaginary subjects. But the old Romans objected to these novel practices. Greek rhetoricians were their chief abomination. In the year 161 B.C. a decree of the Senate was launched even against Latin philosophers and rhetoricians ; and the Praetor Pomponius was instructed to see that no such persons remained at Rome. Of the prompt measures taken by Cato to remove Carneades six years later we have spoken. But the fashion was gradually tolerated and finally prevailed.

Roman art became more and more a mere name, except so far as engineering and building came into that province. We have nothing to add here to the remarks made in a former chapter. The story of Mummius and the Corinthian statues is, in a somewhat grotesque form, an epitome of genuine Roman taste and feeling in respect to the fine arts.

AUTHORITIES.—For Roman Literature, besides the works quoted in the note to ch. xxxii., the student may consult Sellar, *Roman Poets of the Republic* ; Tyrrell, *Latin Poetry* ; Mommsen, Bk. iii. ch. xiv.

---

<sup>1</sup> *De claris oratoribus liber, qui dicitur Brutus.*





Roman Forum, looking west.



## BOOK VI

# FIRST PERIOD OF CIVIL WARS

---

### CHAPTER XLVI

TIBERIUS GRACCHUS. (133 B.C.)

IT appears that before the time of Scipio's election to conduct the Numantian war, it had become a prevalent opinion that some measures were necessary to arrest the social evils of which we have spoken above. The fright-<sup>*Need of reform.*</sup>ful excesses of the servile war called attention still more strongly to the subject ; and while Scipio was engaged in the Numantian war, a leader appeared who was endowed with courage, firmness, self-confidence, ability, eloquence, and every requisite for political success, except a large experience and a larger share of patience and self-control.

Tib. Sempronius Gracchus was son of one of the few Romans in whom public spirit prevailed over the spirit of party. Though personally hostile to the Scipios, we saw him mediate between them and their foes.<sup>*Cornelia.*</sup> Africanus acknowledged his generosity by offering him the hand of Cornelia, his younger daughter ; and from this marriage eleven sons and one daughter were born in rapid succession. But the father died before his eldest son reached man's estate, and Cornelia was left a widow with her children. The daughter lived, and became wife to Scipio Aemilianus ; but of all the eleven sons only two grew up, —Tiberius, and Gaius who was nine years younger. To the education of these precious relics Cornelia devoted all the energies of her masculine mind. She even refused an offer to share the throne of the king of Egypt. Her dearest task was to

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 402.

watch the opening capacities of her boys. Such was her hope of their greatness that, though she was daughter of the great Scipio, she preferred to be known as the mother of the Gracchi.

According to the fashion of the day, Greek teachers were called in to educate the boys. Blossius of Cumæ, and *Tiberius* *Gracchus*, phanes a Mitylenæan exile, are mentioned as the instructors, and in later life as the friends, of Tiberius. Scarcely had Tiberius assumed the garb of manhood when he was elected into the College of Augurs. At a banquet given after his installation, App. Claudius, the Chief of the Senate, offered him his daughter's hand in marriage. When the proud Senator returned home, he told his wife that he had that day betrothed their daughter. "Ah!" she cried, "she is too young: it had been well to wait a while,—unless, indeed, young Gracchus is the man." When yet quite a youth, he accompanied Scipio to Carthage, where he was the first to scale the walls.

The personal importance of Gracchus was strengthened by the marriage of Scipio with his only sister. But this marriage proved unhappy. Sempronia had no charms of person. Scipio's austere manners were little pleasing to a bride; nor were any children born to form a bond of union between them.

In the year 137 B.C., Gracchus served as Quæstor in Spain under Mancinus, and his anger was kindled against the Senate *His election as* on account of their refusal to ratify the treaty *Tribune.* made by his chief.<sup>1</sup> But it would be wrong to attribute his political zeal mainly, if at all, to personal motives: we learn from his brother Gaius that his indignation had already been roused when he travelled through Etruria to Spain, and noted the broad lands tilled, not by yeomen as of old, but by slaves. In the year that the slave war broke out, he became candidate for the Tribunate. He spoke his sentiments freely, and public opinion designated him as the man who was to undertake the thankless office of reformer. In all places of public resort the walls were covered with inscriptions calling on him to vindicate the rights of all Roman citizens to a share in the state lands. He was triumphantly elected.

From the day on which he entered upon office, he began to prepare men for his projected legislation by eloquent speeches, in which he compared the present state of Italy with her olden time, deploring the decay of her yeomen and farmers and the

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 447.

lack of Italians to serve in the legions. All his arguments pointed towards some measures for restoring the class of small landed proprietors, who were dwindling fast away.

In a short time his plan was matured and his Bill brought forward. He proposed to revive the Licinian Law of 367 B.C.,<sup>1</sup> by which it was enacted that no head of a family *His agrarian* should hold more than 500 *iugera* (about 312 *proposals* acres) of the public land; but to render the rule less stringent, he added that two sons of the family might hold half that quantity in addition, so that the whole amount of public land in one family might never exceed 1000 *iugera*. Whoever was in possession of more was to give up the excess at once to the state; but to obviate complaints of injustice, he proposed that those who gave up possession should be entitled to a fair compensation for any improvements they had made during the term of their possession. All public lands were to be vested in three commissioners (*triumviri*), who were to be elected by the Tribes. Their business was to distribute the public lands to all citizens in needy circumstances; and, to prevent lands so distributed being again absorbed into the estates of the rich landowners, the sale of the new allotments was altogether prohibited.

The greater part of these public lands had fallen into the hands of the rich landowners. They had held them on payment of a small yearly rent, for generations; and many of these persons had forgotten perhaps that their *Opposition* possession could be disturbed. After the first surprise was over, the voices of these landholders began to be heard; but as yet the majority of the Senate showed no disfavour to the law of Gracchus.<sup>2</sup> The persons interested alleged that the measure, though it pretended only to interfere with state lands, did in fact interfere with the rights of private property; for these lands were held on public lease and had been made matters of purchase and sale, moneys were secured on them for the benefit of widows and orphans, tombs had been erected on them: if this law passed, no man's land could be called his own.

If Gracchus had proposed a forcible and immediate resumption of all state lands, without compensation for moneys spent on them, these arguments would have had more *The proposal not unjust* weight. Rights arise by prescription; and if the

<sup>1</sup> Page 144.

<sup>2</sup> Appian and Plutarch call their opponents not *senators* (βουλευται or γέροντες), but οἱ κτηματικοί or οἱ πλούσιοι (*possessores*), *wealthy landholders*.

state had for a long course of time tacitly recognised a right of private property in these lands, it would have been a manifest injustice thus abruptly to resume possession. But the Licinian Law was evidence that the state claimed a right to interfere with the tenure of the public lands. That the Romans felt no doubt about the right is shown by the fact that in framing his law Tiberius was assisted by his father-in-law App. Claudius, the Chief of the Senate, and by P. Mucius Scaevola, Consul of the year, the best lawyer at Rome, and a man of unquestionable integrity. The right was clear : the only question was as to the expediency of the measure.

It was certain that the law would be carried in all the country Tribes, because it was precisely in these Tribes that the strength of Gracchus lay, and all his arguments show that he knew it. It was to the country people, who had lost or were afraid of losing their little tenements, that he spoke. "The wild animals of Italy," said he, "have their dens and lairs : the men who have fought for Italy have air and light,—nothing more. They are styled masters of the world, though they have not a clod of earth they can call their own." One course only remained open to the landowners for thwarting the bold Tribune, and this was to gain over one of his brother Tribunes to interpose the fatal veto. They fixed on M. Octavius. For a time he was inexorable, but at length he gave way to their arguments and promised to interfere. On the night before the day on which the law was to be proposed, the holders of public land went to rest with light hearts.

The eventful day came, on which Gracchus was to move his law. The Forum was crowded with people expecting the completion of the great measure which was to restore some share in the broad lands of Italy to the sons of those who had won them. Strange faces were seen everywhere ; vine-dressers from Campania and the Auruncan hills, peasants from the Sabine and Aequian valleys, farmers of valley and plain from the Clanis to the Vulturnus.

Gracchus rose. His speech was received with loud applause by the eager multitude. When he had ended, he turned to the clerk, and bade him read over the words of the law before it was put to the vote. Then Octavius stood up and forbade the man to read. Gracchus was left powerless. After much debate he broke up the Assembly, declaring that he would again bring on his defeated bill upon the next regular day of meeting.

The intervening time was spent in preparing for the contest.

Gracchus retaliated upon the veto of Octavius by laying an interdict on all public functionaries, shutting up the courts of justice and the offices of police, and putting a seal upon the doors of the Treasury. Further, he struck the compensation clauses out of his bill, and now simply proposed that the state should resume possession of all lands held by individuals in contravention of the Licinian Law.

On the day of the second Assembly, Gracchus appeared in the Forum with an armed force. Again he ordered the clerk to read the bill; again Octavius stood forth and barred all proceedings. A violent scene followed, and a riot seemed inevitable, when two Senators, friends of Gracchus,—one named Fulvius Flaccus—earnestly besought him to refer the whole matter to the Senate. Gracchus consented. But his late impatient conduct had weakened whatever influence his name possessed in the great council, and his appearance was the signal for a burst of reproaches. He hastily left the House, and returning to the Forum gave out that on the next day of Assembly he would for the third time propose his measure; and that, if Octavius persisted in opposition, he would move the People to depose their unfaithful Tribune.

As the day approached, Gracchus made every effort to avoid this desperate necessity; but Octavius repelled every advance, and on the morning of the third Assembly, Gracchus rose at once and moved that Octavius should be deprived of the trust which he had betrayed.

The country Tribe which obtained by lot the prerogative of voting first, was called, and its suffrage was given for the deposition of Octavius; sixteen Tribes followed in the same sense; the eighteenth would give a majority of the thirty-five, and its vote would determine the question. As this Tribe came up to vote, Gracchus stopped the proceedings, and besought Octavius not to force on the irrevocable step. The Tribune wavered; but he caught the eye of his rich friends, and turned coldly from Tiberius. Then the eighteenth Tribe was called, and by its vote Octavius was in a moment stripped of his sacred office.

The bill itself was then passed by acclamation, and the three commissioners destined to execute its provisions were elected,—Tiberius himself, his father-in-law App. Claudius, and his younger brother Gaius, who was then serving under Scipio in Spain. The law was not deemed safe unless it was intrusted for execution to Tiberius and his kinsmen.

In a few weeks Gracchus had risen to the summit of power. He seldom stirred from home without being followed by a *The bequest of* crowd. The Numantian war and the Servile *Attalus.*

war still lingered, and the government of the Senate was not in a condition to defy attack. That body now was thoroughly alarmed, and Gracchus soon proceeded to measures which touched them in their tenderest point. Attalus Philometor, king of Pergamus, the last descendant of the first Attalus, was just dead, and had bequeathed his kingdom with all his lands and treasure to the Roman People. In ordinary times the Senate, as the administrator of all foreign and financial affairs, would at once have assumed the disposition of

*Unconstitutional proposal* this bequest ; but Gracchus promptly gave notice *by Gracchus.* that he would propose a bill to enact that the

moneys of Attalus should be distributed to those who were to receive allotments of public land, in order to assist them in purchasing stock, in erecting farm-buildings, and the like ; and he added that he would bring the subject of its government before the People without allowing the Senate to interfere. He thus openly announced a revolution.

When Gracchus next appeared in the Senate-house, he was accused of receiving a purple robe and diadem from the envoy

*Accusation by* of the late king of Pergamus. T. Annius, an old *Annius.*

Senator, who had been Consul twenty years before, openly taxed him with having violated the Constitution by deposing his colleague. Gracchus, stung to the quick by this last assault, summoned the old Consular to answer an indictment before the People. Annius appeared ; but before Gracchus could speak, he said : " I suppose, if one of your brother Tribunes offers to protect me, you will fly into a passion and depose him also ? " Gracchus saw the effect produced upon his hearers, and broke up the Assembly.

Moreover, many of his well-wishers had been alarmed by a law, by which he proposed to make the *triumviri* judges without appeal on disputed questions with regard to property in land. Many allotments of public land had been granted, of which the titles had been lost ; and every person holding under such conditions saw his property placed at the mercy of irresponsible judges.

Gracchus felt that his popularity was shaken, and at the next Assembly he thought it necessary to make a set speech

*Gracchus defends his* to vindicate his conduct in deposing Octavius. *conduct.* The sum of his arguments amounts to a plea of necessity. It is true that the Constitution of Rome

provided no remedy against the abuse of power by an officer,



except the shortness of time during which he held office and his liability to indictment at the close of that time. The Tribunician authority, originally demanded to protect the People, might be turned against the People. But was not it open to Gracchus to propose a law by which the veto of a single Tribune might be limited in its effect? Or might he not have waited patiently for the election of a new set of Tribunes, and taken care that all were tried friends of his law? Instead of this he preferred a *coup d'état*, and thus set an example which was sure to be turned against himself.

The leader of the Senate in opposing Gracchus was his cousin the Pontifex Maximus, P. Scipio Nasica. The threats of the party made it plain that in the next year, *He seeks re-election.* when his person was no longer protected by the sanctity of the Tribunician office, he would be vigorously assailed. He therefore determined to offer himself for re-election at the approaching Assembly of the Tribes. But his election was far from secure. Harvest-work occupied the country voters; many had grown cold; the mass of those who resided in the city were clients and dependents of the Nobility. It was to regain and extend his popularity that he now brought forward three measures calculated to please all classes except the Senatorial families. First, he proposed to diminish the necessary period of military service. Secondly, he announced a reform of the superior law-courts, by which the juries were to be taken, not from the Senators only, but in equal numbers from the Senators and Knights,—a measure which was sure to please the wealthy contractors and tax-collectors. Thirdly, he provided an appeal in all cases from the law-courts to the Assembly of the People.

These measures, which were the first drafts of laws afterwards carried by his brother Gaius, were only brought forward by Tiberius. But this was enough to restore at least a portion of his popularity.

When the day of the election came, the Prerogative Tribe gave its vote for Gracchus; so also the next. But it was objected that the same man could not be chosen *Opposition on constitutional grounds.* in two successive years; and after a hot debate the Assembly was adjourned till next day.

It wanted yet some hours of nightfall. Gracchus came forth into the Forum, clad in black, and leading his young son by the hand. In anticipation of his untimely end, he committed this precious charge to his fellow-citizens. All hearts were touched. The people surrounded him with eager gesticulations

and escorted him home, bidding him be of good cheer for the morrow. Many of his warmest adherents kept guard at the doors all night.

The adjourned Assembly met next morning upon the Capitol, and the area in front of the Temple of Jupiter was filled chiefly by the adherents of Gracchus, among whom the *Death of Gracchus.* Tribune was himself conspicuous, in company with his friend Blossius of Cumæ. The Senate also assembled hard by, in the Temple of Faith.

A great tumult arose among the voters; in the midst of which Fulvius Flaccus came out of the Senate to inform Gracchus that, though the Consul Scaevola refused to act against him, his death was resolved upon. Then the friends of Gracchus girded up their gowns and armed themselves with staves, for the purpose of repelling force by force. In the midst of the uproar Gracchus raised his hand to his head, probably to indicate that his life was in danger. His enemies cried that he was asking for a crown. Exaggerated reports were carried into the Senate-house, and Nasica exclaimed: "The Consul is betraying the Republic; those who would save their country, follow me!" So saying, he drew the skirt of his gown over his head, after the manner used by the Pontifex Maximus in solemn acts of worship.<sup>1</sup> A number of Senators followed, and the people respectfully made way. But the Nobles and their partisans broke up the benches that had been set out for the Assembly, and began an assault upon the adherents of Gracchus, who fled in disorder. Gracchus abandoned all thoughts of resistance; he left his gown in the hands of one who sought to detain him, and made towards the Temple of Jupiter. But the priests had closed the doors; and in his haste he stumbled over a dead body and fell. As he was rising, one of his own colleagues struck him on the head with a stool; another claimed the honour of repeating the blow; and before the statues of the old kings at the portico of the Temple the Tribune lay dead. Many of his adherents were slain with him; many were forced over the edge of the Tarpeian Rock, and were killed by their fall. Not fewer than three hundred lost their lives in the fray.

Gaius had just returned from Spain, and asked leave to bury his brother's corpse. This was refused. The triumphant party ordered the bodies of Tiberius and his friends to be thrown into the Tiber before morning.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* p. 167. Appian (*B.C.*, i. 16) suggests alternative interpretations of this action.

Thus flowed the first blood that was shed in civil strife at Rome.

Tiberius Gracchus must be allowed the name of Great, if greatness be measured by the effects produced upon society by the action of a single mind, rather than by the length of time during which power is held, or the success that follows upon bold enterprises. He held office hardly more than seven months;<sup>1</sup> and in that short time he so shook the power of the Senate that it never entirely recovered from the blow. His nature was noble; his views and wishes those of a true patriot. But he was impatient of opposition, and by his abrupt and violent conduct provoked a resistance which he might have avoided. When the moment of action came, his temper was too gentle, or his will too irresolute, to take the bold course which his own conduct and that of the Senate had rendered necessary.

When Scipio, in the camp before Numantia, heard of his kinsman's end, he exclaimed in the words of Homer:—

“So perish all and every one who dares such deeds as he!”<sup>2</sup>

But the sequel will show that it was not so much of the political measures of Gracchus that Scipio disapproved, as of the impatience which he had shown and the violence which he had used in carrying them. Such defects of character were of all most displeasing to a soldier and a Stoic.

**AUTHORITIES.**—For the time between Polybius and Cicero, our authorities are very fragmentary and unsatisfactory, and this is the more annoying as the work of Polybius, even where it is not complete, has given us a sound historical basis during the period which we have been describing. (*Cp.* Mommsen, iv. 247). The writings of the numerous historians who dealt with the Gracchi and Sulla are practically all lost, though the influence of authors of opposing tendencies may perhaps be traced in the story as it has reached us. See Wijnne, *de fide et auctoritate Appiani*; Van Geer, *de fontibus Plutarchi in vitis Gracchorum*; Nitzsch, *Römische Annalistik*; Schäfer (quoted in note to ch. iv.).

For the general conditions in Rome and Italy which explain the career of Tiberius Gracchus, see Nitzsch, *Die Gracchen*; Mommsen, Bk. iii. ch. 11 and 12; Pelham, *Outlines of Roman History*, Bk. iii. ch. 3. On his career and proposals, our chief authorities are Appian, *B.C.*, i. 9-17, and Plutarch, *Tib. Gracchus*. (The two are compared in detail by G. E. Underhill, in his edition of *Plutarch's Lives of the Gracchi*, Introd. ¶ 2). Something can be added from Livy (*Epit.*, lviii., *Dio fr.*, 83, and elsewhere.

<sup>1</sup> For the Tribunes entered on office on the IV. Id. Decembr. = the 10th of December; and the new election was held in the July following.

<sup>2</sup> ὡς ἀπόλοιτο καὶ ἄλλος, ὅτις τοιαῦτά γε ῥέζοι—Hom., *Od.*, i. 47.

## CHAPTER XLVII

RETURN AND DEATH OF SCIPIO THE YOUNGER. (133-129 B.C.)

THE struggle had now fairly begun between the oligarchy and democracy. This struggle was to last till the Dictator Sulla for a time restored the Senate to sovereignty, which was wrested from them again by a Dictator yet more potent than Sulla. But we should be wrong to assume that the Senate and the oligarchy were always identical. At times they were so, for at times the violent party among the Nobles were in command of a majority in the Senate; but a moderate party always existed, who stood between the Nobility and the democracy. It was the violent party, headed by Nasica, not the body itself, which was responsible for the death of Gracchus. The Senate did not support them.

The People were allowed to proceed quietly to the election of a new commissioner in the place of Gracchus, and their choice fell on P. Licinius Crassus (brother by blood of the Consul Scaevola), who had been adopted into the family of the Crassi. His daughter had lately been married to young Gaius Gracchus, and he now became the acknowledged head of the party.

Nor did the Senate attempt to shield Nasica from popular indignation. He was branded as the murderer of Gracchus, and was obliged to quit Italy, though, as Chief Pontifex, he was prohibited from doing so. No long time after he died at Pergamus, and Crassus succeeded him in the Pontificate.

But early in the next year (132 B.C.) the Senate was induced to give the new Consuls a commission to inquire into the conduct of those who had abetted Gracchus. They began their proceedings by associating with themselves C. Laelius, a man of known moderation.

Before the enquiry began, Blossius sought an interview with Laelius to explain the part he had taken in the late disturbances. He excused himself on the ground that he had only

*Prevalence of moderate party in the Senate.*

*Commission to try the adherents of Gracchus.*

followed the Tribune's orders. "That," said Laelius, "is no excuse. What would you have done if he had ordered you to set the Capitol on fire?" "Gracchus," said Blossius, "could never have given such an order." "But if he had!" insisted Laelius. "Then," said Blossius, "I would have done it." This bold partisan, however, was suffered to escape. Diophanes of Mitylené, one of the preceptors of Gracchus, was arrested by the Consuls and put to death. Others also lost their lives, and some escaped death by exile. These whole proceedings were in violation of the laws of appeal; for the Consuls had no legal power to try and condemn within the city.

It was probably not till the autumn of this year that Scipio celebrated his Numantian triumph. It was not gorgeous with spoils and a long train of captives, for the Numantians had buried themselves and their possessions beneath the ruins of their city. But the presence of Scipio, at this moment, was or might be pregnant with results; and as he passed in procession to the Capitol, many eyes turned to him with expectation. It might be thought that his approval of the death of Gracchus sufficiently indicated what part he intended to take. But it was possible for him to disapprove of the conduct of Gracchus without disapproving of his purpose. The countrymen of Latium and Italy had fought under him at Carthage and at Numantia. It was known that among the rest he had shown especial honour to a young soldier of Arpinum, of humble birth and rude manners. On one occasion he had invited this youth to supper, and placed him by his side; and when some flatterer asked where a general could be found to succeed him, "Perhaps here," he said, laying his hand on the young soldier's arm. The name of the youth was C. Marius.

Whatever doubt might rest on Scipio's intentions, he soon made it clear that he had no intention of holding out a hand to the civic populace. One of the partisans of Gracchus, by name C. Papirius Carbo, a man of ready wit, but in character turbulent, reckless, and unprincipled, hoped to raise himself to importance by means of this rabble. He was Tribune for the year 131 B.C., when he carried a law for introducing the use of the ballot into the legislative assemblies of the People. He also brought forward another bill, making it legal to re-elect a Tribune to a second year of office. Scipio and Laelius opposed the measure, and the former spoke so warmly against it that it was rejected by the Tribes, though young C. Gracchus came forward to speak in its favour. It was then that Carbo publicly demanded of Scipio what he thought of the death of Gracchus. "That he

was rightly put to death," Scipio promptly replied. At these words an angry shout was raised. Scipio turned sternly to the quarter from which it came,—“Peace,” he said, “ye stepsons of Italy: remember who it was that brought you in chains to Rome.”

In the course of the same year an incident occurred which also parted Scipio from Crassus. The Consuls for the year were Crassus himself and L. Valerius Flaccus. *Crassus appointed to command in Asia.* The former was Pontifex Maximus, the latter was Flamen of Mars. It happened that one Aristonicus, a bastard brother of the last Attalus,<sup>1</sup> had raised an insurrection in a district near Pergamus, and matters had become so serious that a consular army was required. Both Consuls were eager for command; but by reason of their sacred offices they were both legally unable to leave Italy, and Scipio's tried skill in war pointed him out as the fittest man for command. Yet such was the popularity of Crassus that, out of thirty-five Tribes, two only voted for Scipio and the rest for him. Considering a vote of the People as superior to the law, he completed his levies and set out for Pergamus, never to return. Scipio seems to have retired from Rome in disgust.

In this same year the Censorship was held by Q. Metellus and Q. Pompeius,—a memorable event, since now for the first time two men of Plebeian blood were elected to the *Two Plebeian Censors.* most august magistracy of the state. It is rather matter of wonder that an artificial distinction, which for most practical purposes was obsolete, should have been so long retained in the Censorship, than that it should now have ceased.

If Crassus had returned he might have taken active steps to diminish the violence which the democratic leaders were beginning to encourage. But early in the year 130 *Death of Crassus.* B.C. he was defeated by Aristonicus in a pitched battle, and taken prisoner. The Roman statesman and jurist, deeming slavery intolerable, purposely struck the barbarian who had captured him in the face, and was instantly cut down. His head was carried to Aristonicus: his body interred at Smyrna.<sup>2</sup>

About the same time died Ap. Claudius. The natural leader of the Gracchan party would now have been C. Gracchus. But this young man had withdrawn from public

<sup>1</sup> Page 482.

<sup>2</sup> The revolt of Aristonicus was brought to a close by M. Perpenna and M'. Aquillius, the latter of whom, with the aid of Senatorial commissioners, settled the Roman Province of *Asia* in 129 B.C.



life at the advice of his mother Cornelia. Consequently fresh power fell into the hands of the reckless Carbo, who was supported by Fulvius Flaccus; and the whole character of the party became more positively democratic.

These leaders sought to recover their popularity with the Country Tribes by calling the agrarian law into fresh life. Of the three commissioners elected for the year C. Gracchus still appeared on the list; the vacancies made by the deaths of Crassus and Ap. Claudius were filled by Carbo and Flaccus. *Activity of the agrarian commissioners.*

The rich landholders had endeavoured to baffle the law by passive resistance. To foil this policy, Carbo and his colleagues issued a proclamation, calling for informations against all who had not duly registered themselves as holders of public land. The call was readily obeyed, and the triumvirs were soon overburdened with names. The next step was to decide on the rights of the present holders, and to determine the boundaries between the private and the public lands in each estate. This was a task of extreme delicacy, and here the loss of Crassus was sensibly felt. The ignorant and reckless Carbo raised up a host of formidable opponents.

Portions of the public land had often been alienated by grant or sale, not only to Romans, but to Italians. The holders were now, in consequence of Carbo's proclamation, suddenly called upon to produce their title-deeds, *Offence given to Italians.* which in many cases were missing: so that a vast number of these holders were liable to be stripped of lands which were undoubtedly their own. Further, in cases where persons held property, partly public and partly private, there were no documents to show which part was public and which private. The commissioners acted in the most arbitrary way, and exasperated a vast number of persons through all Italy; and thus a new popular party was called forth, which exercised a most important influence on the events of the next fifty years. In Carbo's rash haste to win the Roman countrymen he recked not of the hostility of Latins and Italians; and those who had lately worshipped Gracchus now rose like one man to oppose those who now pretended to represent Gracchus.

These new opponents of the agrarian law had no mind to join the Roman oligarchs, but turned to Scipio and supplicated him to undertake their cause. They had volunteered to fill the army of the great Scipio when the Senate had no money to give him,<sup>1</sup> and the *Scipio undertakes the cause of the Italians.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 312.

younger Scipio had always manifested sympathy with them. Averse as he was from party politics, he did not shrink from the task, and the moderate party in the Senate welcomed his return. He began by moving that a decree should issue for withdrawing from the triumvirs the judicial power with which they had been invested by Gracchus, and transferring the jurisdiction to the Consuls. The decree passed, and the task was committed to C. Sempronius Tuditanus, a man of refined taste, fonder of art and literature than of business. But news came of a movement among the Iapydes, a people on the Illyrian frontier; and Tuditanus eagerly seized this excuse for hastening to the army, feeling confident that he could better cope with barbarous enemies than with the more barbarous perplexities of the law.

All the proceedings were thus cut short. The Senate had taken away jurisdiction from the triumvirs; the Consul to whom it was committed had fled. General discontent arose. Scipio was accused of having sacrificed Roman interests to the Italians. His enemies spread reports that he intended to repeal the Sempronian Law by force, and to let loose his Italian soldiery upon the people of Rome.

Scipio felt that it was necessary to explain his motives, and announced his purpose of delivering set speeches, one day in the Senate, and the day after in the Forum. The *Death of Scipio.* first only of these purposes was fulfilled. By his speech in the Senate he pledged himself to oppose the execution of the agrarian law; his speech next day was to be a defence of the rights of the Latins and Italians. The Senate loudly applauded; and Scipio was escorted home by the mass of the Senators with a jubilant crowd of Italians. Many thought this the most glorious day of his life.

He retired to rest early, in good health. In the morning he was found dead in his bed. By his side lay the tablets on which he had been noting down the heads of the oration which he had intended to make next day.

The death of Scipio struck consternation into the hearts of the Senators. Metellus exclaimed that he had been murdered. It *Suspicion of murder.* is said that on the neck marks as of strangulation appeared, and when he was carried out to burial the head was covered, contrary to custom. At the moment suspicion attached to C. Gracchus, to his sister Sempronius, and to Cornelia herself. But these unfounded rumours soon passed over; and it was confidently affirmed that Carbo was the murderer. Cicero speaks of it as an undoubted fact;

the character, as well as the subsequent history, of the man justifies the belief.<sup>1</sup>

Thus died the younger Africanus. No public honours attested his public services. The funeral feast was furnished in the most thrifty manner by his nephew Q. Tubero, a rigid Stoic, who was glad thus to remind the people of their ingratitude.

Scipio possessed no lofty genius like the great man whose name he bore ; yet there was at Rome no one of his own time to be compared with him. To say that he was the best general of the day is little praise, for *Character of Scipio.* military talent was at that time scarce ; but no doubt his abilities for war would have won him glory in the best times of the republic. His disinterested generosity has been already noticed ; at his death he was found to be no richer than when he succeeded to the inheritance of the great Scipio. His habitual reserve led him to shun public displays. But the austere manner and severe gravity which he commonly affected gave way among his friends ; and there is nothing that more raises our esteem for Scipio than the warm attachment borne to him by such men as Polybius, as well as Laelius, Rupilius, and others, whom Cicero has introduced into his dialogues.<sup>2</sup> Scipio has usually been represented as a stiff adherent of the oligarchy, but the facts of history disprove this opinion. He might have lived some years to moderate the fury of party strife, to awe the factious, and to support just claims ; for at his death he numbered no more than five-and-fifty years. His death at this moment was perhaps the greatest loss that the Republic could have suffered.<sup>3</sup>

AUTHORITIES.—Livy (Epit.), lix., lx.; Appian, *B.C.*, i. 18-21 ; Plutarch, *Tiberius* and *Gaius Gracchus* ; Velleius, ii. 4 ; Orosius, v. 8, 10 ; fragments of the speeches of Gaius Gracchus (see Underhill, *Plutarch's Lives of the Gracchi*, p. 79). The writings of Cicero tell us a good deal about the characters and careers of the leading men of this time, and incidents regarding them are found in collections like those of Aulus Gellius and Valerius Maximus. Several inscriptions illustrate the proceedings of the land commission : see *C.I.L.*, i. 552-5, 583, 1504.

<sup>1</sup> Ihne (iv. 417) argues in favour of a natural death.

<sup>2</sup> The *Laelius*, the *Cato maior*, and the *Respublica*. The time at which the latter is supposed to be held is just before the death of Scipio.

<sup>3</sup> Mommsen (iii. 339) has an eloquent panegyric on Scipio.



Roman wearing toga.

## CHAPTER XLVIII

### GAIUS GRACCHUS AND HIS TIMES. (128-121 B.C.)

THE sudden death of Scipio was followed by a calm. The turbulent Carbo vanishes from the scene, till nine years later he re-appears as a champion of the violent oligarchical party. C. Gracchus was still living in retirement. Fulvius Flaccus was content to let the agrarian law sleep, in face of the portentous difficulties created by the measures of the triumvirs. Nor was there anything in foreign affairs to ruffle the general calm. But under this external tranquillity a leaven of agitation was at work. It was not to be expected that the new-born jealousy which had sprung up between the Romans on the one side and the Latins and Italians on the other, would fall asleep. Proposals, however, were set afloat for reconciling these two opposing interests. The Italians were led to hope that they might be made citizens of Rome, on condition that they should not resist the execution of the agrarian law. The Romans deemed that they might secure to themselves sole possession of the public land.

But the burgesses of Rome soon perceived that the admission of the Latins and Italians to the Roman franchise would

reduce themselves to comparative insignificance. All the benefits now derived from the Provinces by Romans exclusively must then be shared with a vastly increased number of citizens, and the profits as well as the power of a Roman must be materially diminished. In the year 126 B.C. a large number of Italian strangers flocked to Rome, eager for the promised boon. But by this time public opinion at Rome was so far changed that M. Junius Pennus, one of the Tribunes, brought forward what we may call a severe Alien Act, by which all strangers were compelled to quit Rome. The successors of Gracchus, however, remained constant to the Italians, and Gaius himself was induced to speak in their interest. But he was unsuccessful. The law of Pennus was passed; and from this time may be dated that angry contest of feeling between Romans and Italians which after thirty-six years found vent in a bloody war.

*Opposition  
between  
Romans and  
Italians.*

When Gaius delivered this speech, he had been elected Quaestor and was appointed to serve under the Consul L. Aurelius Orestes, when this officer undertook to reduce the Sardinian mountaineers, who had been subjugated by the father of young Gracchus fifty years before.<sup>1</sup> After the first year's operations Orestes was at a loss how to get clothing for his troops; and from this difficulty he was relieved by his Quaestor, who by appealing to the memory of his father and by his own persuasive eloquence induced the Sardinians to give freely what the soldiers wanted. Shortly after, envoys arrived at Rome from Micipsa, son of Masinissa, saying that from respect for Gracchus the king had sent supplies of corn to Sardinia. The Senate angrily dismissed the embassy.<sup>2</sup> Orestes was directed to remain as Proconsul in his Province, and his Quaestor was ordered to continue in office for a second year.

*C. Gracchus in  
Sardinia.*

Meanwhile the country party had succeeded in carrying the election of their present chief, Fulvius Flaccus, to the Consulship for 125 B.C. He was a man of little force of oratory, but his activity and audacity gave him power, and his unchangeable attachment to the memory of Tib. Gracchus made him respectable. No sooner was he in the Consul's chair than he gave full proof of his headlong temerity by giving notice of a bill for extending the franchise to all the Latin and Italian allies. It was a Reform Bill

*Fulvius  
Flaccus,  
Consul.*

<sup>1</sup> B.C. 177. See p. 392.

<sup>2</sup> Ihne (iv. 439) gives reasons for rejecting these stories.

sweeping beyond all example. No addition had been made to the Roman territory or the number of Tribes since 241 B.C., a period of one hundred and sixteen years, and now at one stroke it was proposed to add to the register a population much more numerous than the whole existing number of Roman burgesses. The Tribes felt their interest to be at stake, and the measure of Flaccus was highly unpopular at Rome.

At this moment, the Senate adroitly contrived to detach Flaccus upon foreign service. The people of Massilia, old allies of Rome,<sup>1</sup> sent to demand protection against the Salluvians, a neighbouring Ligurian tribe, and Flaccus was ordered to take command of the army destined to relieve them. He remained in Gaul for two years, and was honoured with a triumph in the year 123 B.C. Meantime his great measure for extending the franchise fell to the ground.

But the hopes excited by the impetuous Consul were not easily relinquished. The excitement was great throughout Italy, and in one of the Latin Colonies the smouldering fire burst into flame.

Fregellae was a large and flourishing city on the Latin road. It was one of the eighteen Colonies which had remained faithful to Rome in the Hannibalic war. It had seen the full franchise conferred on its neighbours at Formiae, Fundi, and Arpinum soon after the close of that war. And now the cup was dashed from the very lip. Fregellae flew to arms, without concert with any other towns; and L. Opimius, one of the Praetors, a man of prompt resolution and devoid of pity, was ordered by the Senate to crush the insurrection. The place seems to have been betrayed to him by treachery, and Opimius took summary vengeance on the unfortunate inhabitants. The walls were pulled down, and the Colony, stripped of all its rights, was reduced to the condition of a mere *conciliabulum*. The punishment inflicted on Fregellae for a time silenced the claims of the Italians.

Thus triumphant, the Senate determined to keep the chiefs of the Gracchan party absent from Rome. Flaccus had not yet finished his Gallic wars; and an order was sent to detain C. Gracchus for a third year in Sardinia. But the young Quaestor perceived the drift of this order, and returned to Rome about the middle of the year 124 B.C., to the no small consternation of the Senate. He was instantly summoned before the Censors then in office to account for his conduct, in order that he might be branded with a public

*C. Gracchus  
elected  
Tribune.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen, ii. 46.



stigma, and thus disqualified from taking his seat in the Senate-house. He made his defence to the people in a set speech, in which he declared that the Senate had no right to keep him employed as Quaestor for more than one year. "No one," he added, "can say that I have received a penny in presents, or have put any one to charges on my own account. The purse which I took out full I have brought back empty; though I could name persons who took out casks filled with wine and brought them home charged with money." No charge could be made good against him; and he at once came forward as candidate for the Tribunate. The Senate exerted all their influence to prevent his election, and succeeded so far that his name stood only fourth on the list. But as soon as he entered office, no one disputed his title to be first.

The die was now cast. For nine years he had held back from public life; but the vexatious course pursued by the Senate roused him to action; the pent-up energy of his passionate nature burst forth, and he threw aside all restraints both of fear and of prudence.

Hitherto there had been no proof of the young speaker's powers. Twice only had he spoken on public affairs, and both times he had been on the losing side. But years of diligent study had passed; and he became the *His eloquence.* greatest orator that Rome had yet seen. Much as Cicero disliked Gracchus, he speaks with lively admiration of his genius, and laments the loss which Latin literature has sustained by his early death. The care which the young orator bestowed on preparation was extraordinary; he was the first that used regular gesticulation; in his most fiery outbursts his voice was so modulated as never to offend the ear.<sup>1</sup>

His first measures are marked by that which was the ruling passion of his life,—a burning desire to avenge his brother's death. Nasica was beyond his reach. But others, who had persecuted the friends and followers of Tiberius, were yet alive, and he inveighed against their cruel severity on all occasions. *Measures against his brother's enemies.* "Your ancestors," he exclaimed, "suffered not *their* Tribunes to be trampled down. But *you*,—you let these men beat Tiberius to death and murder his friends without a trial!"

Accordingly he brought a bill before the Tribes, aimed at Popilius, one of the Consuls for the year 132 B.C., who had been the head of the special commission appointed after the death

---

<sup>1</sup> The story was that he always had a slave behind him who gave him the right note by a pitch-pipe. —Cic., *de Orat.*, iii. 60, 225.

of Tiberius. It declared any magistrate guilty of treason who had punished a citizen capitally without the consent of the People. Popilius left Rome before his trial, and only escaped condemnation by retiring into exile.

The young Tribune also moved that any one who should have been deprived of office by a vote of the People should be incapable of holding any other office,—an enactment evidently pointed at his brother's old opponent Octavius. Fortunately for the honour of Gracchus, he was stopped in his career of vengeance by the intercession of his mother.

He now turned his thoughts to measures of a public nature, and brought forward a series of important bills long known as the Sempronian Laws, so sweeping in their design as to show that he meditated no less than a thorough change in the Constitution.<sup>1</sup> These laws may be divided into two classes: first, those which were intended to ameliorate the condition of the People; secondly, those which aimed at diminishing the power of the Senate.

(1) Foremost in the first class we may place the famous measure by which the state undertook to furnish corn at a low price to all Roman citizens. It provided that anyone possessing the Roman franchise should be allowed to purchase grain from public stores at  $6\frac{1}{3}$  *asses* the *modius*, or about 25 *asses* the bushel; the losses incident to such sale being borne by the Treasury.

Public measures for distributing corn in times of scarcity had long been familiar to Roman statesmen,<sup>2</sup> and individuals had sought popularity by doles to the poor. But now, for the first time, was the right of claiming doles established by law. The necessary results of such a measure must have been, and were, very fatal. In 78 B.C. the law was revived, but the quantity sold was limited to five *modii* ( $1\frac{1}{4}$  bushels) a month for each person.<sup>3</sup> Laws of this kind were ready instruments in the hands of demagogues, and at length the profligate Clodius enacted that these  $1\frac{1}{4}$  bushels should be given away without payment.<sup>4</sup> The Dictator Caesar found no fewer than 320,000 citizens in the monthly receipt of his dole. He reduced the number to 150,000;

<sup>1</sup> This is also the view of Mommsen: on the other side, see Ihne, iv. 445.

<sup>2</sup> In 203 B.C., corn from Spain was distributed at a low price (Livy, xxx. 26).

<sup>3</sup> Probably the number of citizens qualified to receive corn was limited at the same time: see Mommsen, iv. 289.

<sup>4</sup> Compare also the proposal of Saturninus, p. 532.

and Augustus fixed it at a maximum of 200,000 souls.<sup>1</sup> Such was the mass of paupers saddled upon the Imperial government, by the unwise law of Gracchus.

(2) There was also a bill for renewing and extending the agrarian law of his brother, which was coupled with a measure for planting new Colonies in divers parts of Italy, <sup>(2) *Lex agraria.*</sup> and one even in the Provinces. In connection with these plans we may mention the great activity shown by Gracchus in superintending the construction of new roads in Italy.

We now pass on to the measures which aimed at depriving the Senate of the great administrative power which of late years it had engrossed. *Measures directed against the Senate.*

(1.) The first of these touched their judicial power. It has been mentioned, that by the famous Calpurnian Law (149 B.C.) all Provincial Magistrates accused of corrupt <sup>(1) *Lex iudiciaria.*</sup> dealings in their government were to be tried before a Praetor as presiding judge, and a jury of Senators. This was the first regular and permanent Court of Justice established at Rome.<sup>2</sup> The principle of the Calpurnian Law was gradually extended to other grave offences; and in all the superior courts the Juries were composed of Senators.

These courts had given little satisfaction. In all important cases of corruption, especially such as occurred in the Provinces, the offenders were themselves Senators. Some of the judges had been guilty of like offences, others hoped for opportunities of committing like offences; extortion was looked upon as a venial crime; prosecutions became a trial of party strength, and the culprit was usually absolved.

Gracchus now took the judicial power altogether out of the hands of the Senate, and transferred it to a body of 300 persons, to be chosen periodically from all citizens who possessed the Equestrian rate of property.<sup>3</sup> By this measure he smote the Senate with a two-edged sword. For not only did he deprive it of the means of shielding its own members, but he also gave a political constitution to a rival Order. The Equestrian Order, as a political body, entirely distinct from a mere military class, now first received distinct recognition.

<sup>1</sup> 200,000 persons, receiving monthly  $1\frac{1}{4}$  bushels, would receive in the year 375,000 quarters. Taking wheat at 50s. the quarter, the corn-bounty would cost, in our money, £937,500 per annum.

<sup>2</sup> These permanent courts were called *quaestiones perpetuae*.

<sup>3</sup> This register was called *album iudicum*.

It is doubtful whether this measure of reform was followed by the good effects intended by Gracchus. If the governors of Provinces were Senators, the farmers of the taxes were Equites.<sup>1</sup> In regard to the very important Province of Asia, Gracchus made matters worse by arranging that annual tithes should be imposed, and that the right of collecting these, as well as the indirect taxes, should be let by auction, not in the Province itself, but at Rome. The new juries had their personal reasons for acquitting corrupt magistrates; for without the countenance of these magistrates they could not demand money from the provincials beyond what was strictly legal. The constitution of these juries formed a chief ground of political contest during the remainder of the Republican period.

(2.) Another measure which fettered the power and patronage of the Senate was the Sempronian law for the assignment of the Consular Provinces. Hitherto the Senate had refrained from determining these Provinces till after the elections; and they thus had a ready way of marking displeasure by allotting unprofitable governments to Consuls whom they disliked. But Gracchus now ordained that the two Consular Provinces should be fixed before the election, and that the new Consuls, immediately after their election, should settle between themselves what Province each was to administer, either by lot or by agreement (*sortitio* or *comparatio*). It was a wise and equitable provision, which remained in force as long as the republic lasted.

This account of the chief Sempronian laws shows the spirit which animated Gracchus. It is plain that his main purpose was to diminish the increased and increasing power of the Senate. It is plain also that the result of his measures was to add greatly to democratic power, and to open the way to future demagogues of less patriotic aims. It was no doubt a confusion between the purpose and the result of the Sempronian legislation that swelled the cry against Gracchus in after times. It is clear, however, that he had no chance of amending the corrupt government of the Senatorial oligarchy, unless he first weakened their power; and if he fancied that administrative functions might safely be controlled by a large and fluctuating popular Assembly, something may be forgiven to political inexperience.<sup>2</sup> Representative

*Lex de provinciis consularibus.*

*Objects and results of his legislation.*

<sup>1</sup> See pages 337, 459.

<sup>2</sup> We are told that he endeavoured to reform the order of voting in the Comitia. This may have been with the object of rendering the Assembly more reliable; but our only authority (Sall., *de rep. ord.* 2. 8) gives us no clear details.

bodies are a modern invention ; and the wisest of the ancients found no halting-place between aristocracy and democracy. Gracchus was not without misgivings as to the effects of his legislation. But it was too late to draw back ; and his zeal was quickened by the return of Fulvius Flaccus from Gaul.

By his measures Gracchus had so won all suffrages that he and his friend Flaccus were absolute masters of the Assembly. The elections of Curule officers for the next year *Fannius* were at hand, and Gracchus told the People he had *electd Consul.* a favour to ask. Every one expected that he would demand his own election to the Consulship ; but to the surprise of all he solicited the votes of the people for C. Fannius Strabo, who was elected as a matter of course, to the rejection of L. Opimius the Senatorial candidate.

The Tribunician elections followed. Flaccus, though he had been Consul, appeared as candidate for an office that had been raised by the Gracchi to sovereign power. But Gracchus was not by his side : for it had not been *Gracchus re-* yet made legal that the same man should be re-*electd* elected Tribune. However, there were not candidates enough *Tribunc.* for the ten places ; and the people, exercising the absolute right of choice which in this contingency was allowed, re-elected Gracchus by a unanimous vote.<sup>1</sup> Not more than seven months of his first year's Tribunate were over ; and he was secure of power for the next seventeen months at least. He now put forth all the tremendous power of the office. The Senate sat powerless, and Gaius Gracchus became for a time the virtual sovereign of the Empire.

We must now return to the agrarian law. In furtherance of this law, Gaius proposed to plant Colonies in divers parts of Italy. Capua and Tarentum were fixed upon *His colonies.* as the first of these new settlements ; but here he showed no democratic tendencies ; for no allotments were given to citizens, however poor, unless their character was respectable ; only a small number of colonists were to be sent to each place ; a rent was to be paid by each occupier to the state.

The Senate was not slow to take advantage of these unpopular provisions. Among the new Tribunes was M. Livius Drusus, a young man of high birth, rich, eloquent, ambitious, resolute, who undertook to outbid *Livius Drusus* Gracchus ; and thus the agent of the Nobility *outbids* became a demagogue. He proposed to found no fewer than *Gracchus.*

<sup>1</sup> Appian, *B.C.*, i. 21 ; but see Ihne, iv. 468.



twelve Colonies at once, each to consist of 3000 poor families, to be chosen without respect to character. All these Colonists were to hold their allotments rent-free. Drusus openly avowed that he made these propositions in favour of the poor on the part of the Senate; and declared in significant terms that he would not himself accept any part in the honour or emolument to be derived from the office of founding these Colonies, whereas Gracchus had himself superintended all the public works which he had originated.

In the course of this second Tribune, immediately on re-election, Gracchus came forward with a Bill for extending the Roman franchise, certainly to the citizens of all Latin Colonies, probably to all free Italian communities.<sup>1</sup> Here we recognise the hand of Flaccus, who had in his Consulship raised this momentous question, and had now sought the Tribune in order to press the measure to a successful issue.

There can be no doubt that some change in this direction was necessary. The admission of the Latins and Italians to full citizenship would infuse a quantity of new blood into the decaying frame of the Roman People; and, by extending to all Italians the benefits of the agrarian law, there was really a good hope of reviving that hardy race of yeomen who were regretted by all Roman statesmen. Scipio had induced the Senate for a moment to take up their cause; but after the revolt of Fregellae, all thoughts of an extension of the franchise had been dropped. The difficulty was how to favour the Italians without provoking the Roman Tribesmen. It is manifest that the project was still unpopular in the Forum, for Gracchus laboured to show that the Roman People and the Italians had one grievance in common, namely, the tyranny of the Senatorial oligarchy. "The other day," he told them, "the chief magistrate of Teanum had been stripped naked and scourged, because the Consul's lady complained that the public baths there had not been properly cleaned for her use." . . . "How great is the insolence of the young Nobles, a single example would show. One of them was travelling through Apulia in a litter, and a countryman, meeting the bearers, asked whether they had got a dead man inside. For this word, the young lord ordered the poor man to be beaten with the cords of the litter so severely that he died."

The chiefs of the Senate perceived that his proposal to

---

<sup>1</sup> The exact details are uncertain: Ihne, iv. 469.



enfranchise the Italians had sapped the popularity of the Tribune at Rome. The Consul Fannius, notwithstanding the part Gracchus had taken in his *vehement opposition*, election, vehemently opposed the measure. He was induced by the Senate to revive the Alien Act of Pennus and expel foreigners from Rome. The Senate soon after ventured a step further; at their instigation the Tribune Drusus put a veto on the law for enfranchising the Latins.

At this time also, plans were on foot for extending the Italian system of colonisation to the Provinces. In this very year, C. Sextius Calvinus, who had succeeded Flaccus as Proconsul in Gaul, founded the town of Aquae Sextiae, still called *Aix*, in southern Gaul; four years later Narbo Martius (*Narbonne*), was planted further westward in the same country. But Gracchus had been the first who proposed to plant a colony of Roman citizens beyond the Italian Peninsula,<sup>1</sup> and the place he fixed upon was Carthage. The new colony was to be called Junonia, and it was dexterously contrived that Gracchus himself, with Flaccus and another, should be the commissioners for distributing the lands and marking the limits of the settlement. In this way, the formidable Tribune and his most active supporter were obliged to quit Rome just when their presence was most needed to revive their drooping popularity.

The commissioners applied themselves to their task with so much assiduity that they returned to Rome in time for the Consular elections. The ruthless Opimius was again candidate, and Gracchus exerted himself to the utmost to re-organise his party, but in vain. Popular feeling was strongly marked by the triumphant election of Opimius to the Consulship, in company with Q. Fabius, son of Scipio's elder brother, a political opponent of Gracchus.

The Tribunician elections followed, and were equally significant of the temper of the people. Re-election seems to have been made legal, but neither Gracchus nor Flaccus was re-elected. The remainder of the year indeed passed by quietly. But in the year 121 B.C. Opimius became Consul, and evidently danger was at hand.

Gracchus and his friends prudently refrained from all offensive steps; but as he would give no grounds for proceeding against him, Opimius resolved to make them. News arrived from the new Colony at Carthage to the effect that it had

---

<sup>1</sup> Carteia in Spain (p. 423) was a *Latin* colony.

been planted on the ground cursed by Scipio ; the wrath of the gods had been shown by the fact that *Bad news from Carthage.* wolves had torn down the boundary-posts. The Senate met, and the Tribunes at their request called a meeting of the Tribes upon the Capitol, to rescind the law for colonising Carthage. The place was ominous, for there Tib. Gracchus had been slain.

On the appointed morning the impetuous Flaccus appeared with a large retinue armed with daggers. Gracchus followed with a considerable suite. Flaccus spoke vehemently to the Tribes, while Gracchus stood aloof in the portico of the temple in which Opimius was offering sacrifice. Here he was encountered by Antyllus, a retainer of the Consul, who insolently pushed his way through the crowd, crying, "Make way for honest men." Gracchus cast an angry look upon the man, who presently fell pierced by many wounds. A cry of murder was raised, and the crowd fled in alarm to the Forum. Gracchus retired to his house, regretting the rash imprudence of his followers. Meantime the body of the slain man was paraded before the eyes of the terrified people. The Senate issued a decree, by which Gracchus was proclaimed a public enemy and Opimius invested with Dictatorial power. The Consul took station during the night in the Temple of Castor, by the side of the Forum, summoning the Senate to attend armed at a special sitting early next morning, and sent round to the Knights, desiring them also to come armed to the Forum. Each man was to bring two armed slaves. With this force he occupied the Capitol at daybreak, and prepared to execute the will of the Senate.

Gracchus was irresolute ; but Flaccus summoned to his house all who were ready to resist Senatorial authority. Here he armed them with the Celtic weapons which he had brought home from his Gallic campaigns, and kept up their courage by deep potations of wine. Early in the morning he occupied a strong position on the Aventine, where he was joined by Gracchus, who sighed over the necessity of using force.

When the Senate met, the popular leaders were summoned to attend in their places and explain the proceedings of the previous day. They answered by proclaiming liberty to all the slaves who should join them. *Death of Gracchus.* Nothing could more show the desperate aspect which the struggle had assumed. Yet before blood flowed, Gracchus insisted on trying negotiation, and Q. Flaccus, a handsome youth of eighteen, son of the ex-Tribune, was sent. But the

Consul was resolved to use his Dictatorial power ; and the only answer he returned was that the leaders must appear before the Senate and explain their conduct ; and when young Quintus came back with a fresh message, Opimius arrested him. He now set a price on the heads of Gracchus and Fulvius Flaccus, and ordered an immediate attack upon the Aventine. Under arms appeared the noblest men at Rome, P. Lentulus, Chief of the Senate, old Metellus Macedonicus, and many others. For their leader they chose not the Consul, but Dec. Junius Brutus, the Spanish conqueror.<sup>1</sup> The attack was opened under cover of a shower of arrows from a body of Cretan bowmen. Little or no resistance was offered. Flaccus fled with his eldest son. Gracchus retired into the Temple of Diana, where he was hardly prevented from putting an end to his own life by two faithful friends, the Knights Pomponius and Laetorius. Urged by them to flee, he threw himself on his knees, and prayed the goddess to punish the unworthy people of Rome by everlasting slavery. All three then took their way down to the Porta Trigemina, hotly pursued. 'Pomponius made a stand in the gateway to cover his friend's escape across the Sublician Bridge, and fell pierced with many wounds. Laetorius showed no less devotion by gallantly turning to bay upon the bridge till he knew that Gracchus was safe over, when he sprang into the river and perished. Gracchus with a single slave reached the grove of Furina, and here both were found dead. The faithful slave had slain his master and then killed himself upon the body. One Septimuleius brought in the head of Gracchus, and was rewarded by the fierce Opimius with its weight of gold.

Flaccus and his eldest son had found shelter in the workshop of a friend. The Consul's myrmidons tracked them, and threatened to set fire to the house. The owner, alarmed for his property, allowed another to betray the fugitive, though he did not choose to speak the word himself.<sup>2</sup> They were dragged forth and slain. The handsome youth who had been arrested before the assault began was allowed to choose the manner of his death.

Great numbers of the partisans of Gracchus were thrown into prison and put to death without trial. The stream of Tiber flowed thick with their corpses. The inconstant mob plundered their houses without molestation. Their widows and friends were forbidden by Consular edict to

<sup>1</sup> According to Nepos he was father-in-law of Gracchus. *Cp.* Plut., *Tib. Gracch.*, 21. 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Cp.* Lewis, i. 438, referred to on p. 22.

wear mourning. When the bloody work was done, the city was purged by a formal lustration ; and the Consul, by order of the Senate, laid the foundations of a Temple of Concord. Under the inscription placed on it by Opimius was found one morning another to this effect :

“ Workers of Discord raise a shrine to Concord.”<sup>1</sup>

But none dared openly avow themselves friends of the Gracchi. The son of Gaius is never heard of ; and except Sempronia, the widow of Scipio, none of the race remained. Cornelia retired to Misenum, where she lived for many years, not so much sorrowing for the loss of her sons as dwelling with delight on the memory of their acts. Many visited her in retirement, chiefly learned Greeks, to hear the story of the bold reformers. Calmly and loftily she told the tale, declaring that her sons had found worthy graves in the Temples of the Gods. In after days her statue in bronze was set up in the Forum, with the Greek sandals on her feet which had been made a reproach to her illustrious father. Beneath it were placed these words only :—CORNELIA, THE MOTHER OF THE GRACCHI.

AUTHORITIES.—Appian, *B.C.*, i. 18-26 ; Plutarch, *C. Gracchus* ; Livy (Epit.), lix., lx. ; Velleius, ii. 4-7. There are some valuable allusions in Cicero: *e.g.* to the law on the consular provinces (Cic., *de prov. cons.* 2, 3), and to C. Gracchus' arrangements in Asia (*Verr.*, (ii.) iii. 6, 12 ; *ad Att.*, i. 17. 9). *Cp.* notes to ch. xlvii. Appian, *B.C.*, i. 27, gives the subsequent history of the lands dealt with by the Gracchi: *cp.* Underhill, *Plutarch's Lives of the Gracchi*, p. xliii. The two important inscriptions belonging to these years, the *lex Acilia repetundarum* (about 122 B.C.) and the *lex agraria* of 111 B.C., are printed in Bruns, *Fontes Iuris Romani*: *cp.* the notes of Mommsen in *C.I.L.*, i., pp. 49, 75. On the relation of C. Gracchus to the Senate, see *Cl. Rev.*, x. 278. Mommsen's admirable chapter on C. Gracchus departs very widely from the form in which the story has reached us.

---

<sup>1</sup> ἔργον ἀπορίας ναὺν ὁμονοίας ποιεῖ.—Plut., *C. Gracch.*, 17. The translation may be allowed, in order to preserve the play on the words, though ἀπόνοια does not mean *discord*. No doubt the writer intended an allusion to the dedication of the Temple of Concord by Camillus; see p. 147.



Coin representing Jugurtha surrendering to Sulla  
(Hill, *G. and R. Coins*, Pl. xii. 3).

## CHAPTER XLIX

### JUGURTHA AND HIS TIMES. (120-104 B.C.)

THE cruel times which followed made the best men of both parties regret the untimely end of those who had sacrificed wealth, rank, tranquillity, in the hope of reforming the state by peaceful methods. It is not the less true because it is an epigram, that "the blood of the Gracchi was the seed sown, and Marius was the fruit." But Marius, though the most ruthless, was not the worst of the successors of the Gracchi. So savage were the party quarrels which followed, that good men shrank in despair from the cause of reform and the conduct of the popular party was abandoned to needy demagogues. Such is the common course of revolutions. They begin with noble aspirations ; they end in reckless violence. At length all public spirit is lost ; and men sighing for tranquillity, seek it in the strong rule of an armed soldier. It is a thrice-told tale.

As the murder of Tiberius had been avenged upon Nasica and Popilius, so there was found a Tribune bold enough to indict Opimius. The accuser bore the time-honoured name of Decius ; the defender was that Carbo who was more than suspected of Scipio's murder, and who was now Consul (120 B.C.) ; his eloquence and the terror that prevailed procured an acquittal. But Carbo, though he earned the gratitude of the Nobility by defending their champion, did not find his eloquence equally effectual in defending himself. It was at that time the practice of young Romans who aspired to distinction to attract public notice by indicting some great offender before the People. L. Licinius Crassus, a kinsman or connection of C. Gracchus, though only one-and-twenty years of age, felt within him that power of speech which in later days gained him the

appellation of the Orator, and he singled out Carbo for attack. So fierce was the invective of the young accuser that Carbo put an end to his own life by poison.

The Nobility probably cared little for the life of a worthless renegade. The best men in the Senate, indeed, regretted what they considered the necessity of taking up arms against Gracchus. First among those was *The Metelli*, old Metellus Macedonicus, who died full of honours as of years, six years after the death of C. Gracchus. He left four sons. Before his death two of them had been Consuls; the third was Consul at his father's death; the fourth became Consul two years later. But his two nephews, sons of his brother Calvus, were more distinguished than his own offspring. Quintus the younger, under the title of Numidicus, shortly afterwards became the most eminent man in the ranks of the Nobility. In the course of twenty-two years the Metelli enjoyed six Consulships and four Censorships, besides five triumphs. Such an aggregation of honours in one family was without example. The worst fault of the Metelli was pride; but if they were not beloved, they were at least respected by the People.

A person who plays a large part in the events of the next years was M. Aemilius Scaurus, a man of more dubious character. Horace names him with some of the greatest men of olden time;<sup>1</sup> Cicero calls him the guardian of the state;<sup>2</sup> but Sallust represents him as disgracing his great qualities by an inordinate love of money.<sup>3</sup> It appears that in his earlier days he was infected by the corruption of his compeers, while in later life his prudence was so great as to stand for principle. He was born in 163 B.C. so that at the fall of C. Gracchus he had reached that ripe age which was required for the Consulship. Though he belonged to a great Patrician *gens*, his family was so obscure that he was accounted a New Man. His father had been a charcoal merchant, and left his son so poor that the future ruler of the Empire had at one time contemplated following the trade of a money-changer. But he was encouraged to try the chances of political life; and in 115 B.C. he reached the Consulate. By his ability and discretion he so won the confidence of the Senate that on the death of old Metellus he was named Princeps. He was a man less seen than felt. His oratory wanted fire; but

<sup>1</sup> "Regulum, et Scauros, animaeque magnae Prodigum Paullum superante Poeno."—*Od.*, i. 12. 37.

<sup>2</sup> *Pro Scauro*; *cp. pro Fonteio*, 11 and 17. In *de off.*, i. 22, 76, he is said to be as great a man as Marius.

<sup>3</sup> *Sall.*, *Jug.*, 15. 4; *cp. Cic.*, *de Orat.*, ii. 70, 283.



his talents for business, and his dexterity in the management of parties, made him the most important person in the field of politics from the fall of Gracchus till the rise of Sulla.

The more prudent or more severe among the Senators believed that reform in the state might be averted by a reformation of manners. But in vain. The business of Jugurtha, of which we shall have to speak presently, brought into full light the venality and corruption of the dominant statesmen.

We have said little of the wars of Rome since the fall of Numantia and the termination of the servile war. They were not considerable. The kingdom of Pergamus had been formed into the Province of Asia. The eldest son of old Metellus earned the title of *Subjugator of Balearic Isles, and of a Dalmatian revolt.* Balearicus for subduing the Balearic Isles in 123 B.C. ;<sup>1</sup> his eldest nephew that of Dalmaticus for putting down an outbreak of the Dalmatians 119 B.C.

More attention was excited by wars in the south of Gaul, and more permanent effects followed. The success of Fulvius Flaccus, the friend of the Gracchi, in defending Marseilles, has been already noticed. C. Sextius, *War in south Gaul.* who succeeded to the command, brought the war to an end, and secured his conquests by founding the colony of Aquæ Sextiæ (122 B.C.) which under the name of *Aix* still attracts visitors for the sake of its hot springs. These conquests brought the Romans in contact with the Allobrogi, between the Rhone and the Isère ; and this people threw themselves on the protection of Bituitus, chief of the Arvernians (*Auvergne*). Q. Fabius, Consul for 121 B.C., while his colleague Opimius was crushing C. Gracchus, crossed the Isère. A desperate battle ensued near that river, in which the Consul, with 30,000 men, is said to have so completely routed 200,000 Gauls that in the battle and pursuit no less than 120,000 fell. Fabius was suffering from a quartan ague, but in the heat of conflict shook off his disease. He assumed the title of Allobrogicus with better right than many who were decorated with these national surnames. The Allobrogi in this campaign were assisted by the Arvernians, a name which carries us forward to later times. But their great defeat forced the Gauls to submit and sue for peace ; otherwise the triumphs of Caesar might have been anticipated by some Senatorial commander. For the present the dominion of Rome was firmly established in the angle of Gaul between the Alps and Pyrenees, a district which still preserves its Roman name, "the *Province of Transalpine Gaul.*"

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen, iii. 233.

Province," in the French "Provence;" where also the modern town of *Narbonne* represents the colony of *Narbo Martius*, founded by the Consul Q. Marcius Rex in the year 118 B.C. The whole northern coast of the Mediterranean, from the Pillars of Hercules to Syria, now owned the sovereignty of Rome.

Attention was now for a time rivetted upon the affairs of Africa. The kingdom of Masinissa, as we said, had been divided among his three sons, Micipsa, Gulussa, and Mastanabal. The last two had died, and left Micipsa sole king of Numidia. The old friendship between this country and Rome was cemented by the flourishing corn-trade that grew up there, which supplied the failing crops of Italy. Micipsa died in 118 B.C., leaving two sons, Adherbal and Hiempsal. By their side stood *Jugurtha*. *Jugurtha*, a bastard son of Mastanabal. This young man was considerably older than his cousins. Sixteen years before he had served with credit under Scipio at Numantia. The young nobles of Scipio's camp suggested to the African prince that, at the death of Micipsa, he should purchase the support of Rome and seize the Numidian crown. "At Rome," they said, "all things might be had for money." The intriguing character of Jugurtha escaped not the discernment of Scipio. At parting, he said: "Trust to your own good qualities, and power will come of itself. Seek it by base arts, and you will lose all." Old Micipsa left Jugurtha as joint ruler with his two young sons.

It is possible that if the princes had submitted passively, Jugurtha might have been contented with a divided sovereignty; but Hiempsal showed a spirit impatient of control. When Jugurtha proposed that the decrees made by Micipsa in the last five years of his dotage should be abrogated, the young prince gave a ready assent; "for," said he, "with these will fall the ordinance by which you claim a share of supreme power." The *Jugurtha and Adherbal* unscrupulous Jugurtha ordered Hiempsal to be assassinated; and Adherbal in alarm took up arms. The people were with him, but the military chiefs were with Jugurtha; and Adherbal was obliged to fly into the Roman Province of Libya, whence he took ship to plead his own cause before the Senate. General feeling was strong in his favour; but the wily Jugurtha bethought him of the advice tendered by his Roman friends, and sent envoys to Rome laden with gold. Adherbal was heard with cold attention, while many Senators supported the cause of Jugurtha. It was decided that a commission of ten should be sent to Numidia, with instructions to divide the kingdom between Adherbal and his unscrupulous cousin. L. Opimius was placed at the head of the commission, and was

easily won by the gold of Jugurtha. The eastern half, which had been the patrimony of Masinissa, and was for the most part a sandy desert, was assigned to Adherbal. The western and richer portion, which had formerly been subject to Syphax, was given to Jugurtha.

Jugurtha soon showed that he did not mean to rest content with a portion of Numidia. He forced his rival to shut himself up in Cirta, the almost impregnable city which formed his capital; and the Italian residents, on whom he mainly relied, obliged him to surrender on condition that his life should be spared. No sooner had Jugurtha got possession of his cousin, than he ordered him to be put to death by torture (112 B.C.).<sup>1</sup>

So great was the power of Jugurtha's gold, that the matter would have been hushed up, had not C. Memmius, Tribune-elect, come forward in the Forum, and boldly exposed the intrigues of Jugurtha with the Senate. The conscience-stricken majority shrank back; war was declared against the faithless Numidian, and the command fell to L. Calpurnius Bestia, one of the Consuls-elect for the next year (111 B.C.).

Bestia began the campaign with vigour; but suddenly his onward movement was arrested, and Jugurtha appeared in camp. Events followed which convinced men that the commanders had taken bribes, and Memmius lost not a moment in moving that the Praetor L. Cassius should be commissioned to bring Jugurtha to Rome under a safe-conduct, in order that he might give evidence against the persons accused of corrupt dealings. Jugurtha did not hesitate to attend Cassius to Rome, where he appeared in the garb of a suppliant. The People would have executed summary vengeance on the culprit, had not Memmius interfered to maintain the sanctity of the safe-conduct. But he ordered Jugurtha to stand forth, detailed at length the crimes with which he was charged, and concluded by urging him to place his hopes of safety in a simple confession of the truth. When Memmius resumed his seat, one of his colleagues, C. Baebius by name, rose and forbade Jugurtha to reply. It was manifest that this Tribunician veto had been purchased by African gold, and a terrible storm arose in the Forum.

---

<sup>1</sup> He is also said by Sallust (*Jug.*, 26) to have put to death the Italian residents in Cirta. This would account for the Roman declaration of war, but there are difficulties in the story: see Ihne, v. 21.

But Baebius stood firm, and the sanctity of his office was allowed to protect his unworthy client.

Jugurtha yet lingered at Rome ; and the conduct of the war for the next year (110 B.C.) was allotted to Sp. Postumius Albinus.

*Murder of* Albinus had already entered into negotiations with  
*Massiva.* Massiva, son of Gulussa the second son of Masi-  
nissa, who was also then residing at Rome. Jugurtha discovered  
the intrigue, and procured the assassination of the young prince.  
This piece of effrontery was too much even for the Senate, and  
Jugurtha received an order to quit the city instantly. He  
obeyed ; and as he passed out of the gates, he looked back and  
said : " A city for sale if she can find a purchaser ! "

Albinus was baffled at every point by the dexterous African.  
His brother Aulus suffered himself to be surprised, and only  
*Defeat of* saved his army by allowing it to pass under the  
*Aulus Al-* yoke and agreeing to evacuate Numidia. But the  
*binus.* Senate hastily repudiated the engagements made  
by Aulus, and the command for the next year (109 B.C.) was  
conferred upon the Consul Q. Metellus, nephew of old  
Macedonicus.

It was time for the Senate to show that they had upright and  
capable men in their ranks. The scandal caused by the conduct  
*Commission of* of Numidian affairs was so great that, even before  
*enquiry.* the election of Metellus, C. Mamilius, Tribune of  
the Plebs, had brought forward a bill for appointing a commis-  
sion of three, to inquire into the conduct of all who had been  
concerned in Jugurtha's affairs. Scaurus was placed at the  
head of this triumvirate. Several of the leading Senators were  
found guilty, and went into voluntary exile. Among them were  
Bestia and Albinus, the two Consuls who had conducted the war,  
and one whose fate can excite no commiseration,—the cruel and  
corrupt Opimius.

Metellus was obliged to devote much time to restoring habits  
*Metellus in* of discipline by the same severe methods which had  
*command.* been employed by Scipio. In his work he was much  
assisted by his chief lieutenant, a man who soon after became  
famous wherever the name of Rome was known.

Gaius Marius was already approaching the age of fifty. He  
was born at Cereatae (*Casamare*) near Arpinum, a Volscian town,  
*C. Marius.* which had been incorporated into the Roman Tribes.  
His family seems to have been respectable, but he  
was the first who obtained imperial honours. In his rustic origin  
and habits he may be compared to Cato ; but he had none of the  
intellectual ambition which distinguished that singular person.  
He scorned the custom which led young Romans to study Greek

and cultivate the art of rhetoric as the readiest way of rising to honours. "Greek," he said, "was the language of slaves : he would none of it." His rough temper and coarse manners disqualified him for political life. For war he possessed an instinctive genius. When not yet twenty-five he had been designated by Scipio as the future general of Rome.<sup>1</sup> But the predominance of the Senatorial families, and his own poverty, made it difficult for him to rise. In 119 B.C., when he was thirty-eight years old, he held the office of Tribune, and had an opportunity of showing his audacity. He had brought forward a bill designed to prevent certain frauds practised at the elections, which was opposed by the Consul Metellus, elder brother of that Metellus who now commanded against Jugurtha. The family of Marius was dependent upon the Metelli ; but the dauntless Tribune ordered the Consul into custody, and the Senate was compelled to allow the bill to pass.

To choose such a man for his lieutenant is a proof of the integrity and the discernment of Metellus. It is true that Marius had lately allied himself to the oligarchy by a marriage with Julia, an aunt of the great Caesar. But the affront put upon the Consul's brother ten years before, was not of a kind to be forgotten ; and the proud noble can have had little in common with the rough soldier, except determination to conduct the war with honest energy.

Late in the year Metellus took the field. The ready wit of Jugurtha soon told him that he must now meet force by force, and by a skilful disposition of his troops he succeeded in surprising the Romans on their march. *First campaign of Metellus.* But, after a long and harassing series of assaults, the Numidians were beaten off and left forty elephants dead. This was the most considerable battle on which Jugurtha ventured during the war. He henceforth carried on a guerrilla warfare, relying mainly upon his fortresses, of which Cirta was amongst the strongest. Metellus was left to ravage the country with little opposition ; but when he attacked the fortress of Zama, he failed ; the season was too far advanced for a siege, and he retired for winter-quarters into the Roman Province.

Jugurtha saw that his cause was hopeless. Personally he might long elude capture. But the Romans were sure to gain possession of all his kingdom and all his strongholds, and he would be reduced to the condition of *Negotiations for peace.* a homeless wanderer. He therefore offered to treat ; and Metellus, though his term of command had been prolonged to

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 487.



another year, was not unwilling to listen to overtures. He demanded that the prince should give pledges of good faith, by paying down 200,000 pounds of silver, by giving up all his elephants with a quantity of horses and arms, and by surrendering all deserters. These demands were complied with, and then Metellus required the surrender of Jugurtha's own person. It was evident that the worst defeat could hardly reduce him to greater extremities; and at the same time he discovered that Metellus was tampering with his chief officers. He at once broke off the negotiations and prepared to continue the war.

Meanwhile the conduct of Marius began to excite distrust in the mind of the general. When he named the rude soldier his lieutenant, he expected doubtless that the offer of *Ambition of Marius.* serving under a Metellus would be honour sufficient. But the military talents of Marius had become manifest, and he had become a favourite with the soldiery. "If he had half the army," he used to say, "he would soon make an end of the war." He gave out that he meant to offer himself as candidate for the Consulship, and requested leave of absence as soon as he could be spared. "It will be time for you to seek the Consulship," said Metellus, "when my son" (a youth of twenty years old) "can be your colleague:"—ungenerous words, that rankled for ever in the heart of Marius.

The next year's campaign had begun before Marius obtained leave to repair to Rome. The elections were to come on in *Marius elected Consul.* twelve days. In less than a week he reached Rome, and there he used the same language which the camp had been accustomed to hear: "Make me Consul, and you shall soon have Jugurtha, dead or alive, at Rome." He was elected by an overpowering majority. The death of Gracchus had been avenged. The people exulted in raising to the chief magistracy one whose chief claim was that he was a New Man and the best soldier of Rome.

The second campaign of Metellus was conducted with vigour. Marius was absent,—a fact which made it manifest that the general was not wholly indebted to his lieutenant. *Second campaign of Metellus.* Cirta surrendered; and Jugurtha, compelled to abandon Numidia, took refuge in the desert. Metellus pursued him, through incredible difficulties, to his stronghold of Thala. The place was taken; but Jugurtha escaped, changed his quarters daily, and suffered no one to know where he was to pass the next night. At length he fled to the court of Bocchus, king of Mauretania, whose daughter he had married. It was not long before Metellus heard that Bocchus was advancing against Cirta, and he prepared to meet



this new enemy. At this crisis he received the unwelcome news that Marius was appointed to supersede him.

After the election of the popular favourite, the Senate had decreed that Metellus should be continued in command. But the Tribune Mancinus, encouraged by the success of his predecessors Memmius and Mamilius, moved in the Assembly of the Tribes that the command should be transferred to Marius; and the measure passed by acclamation. *Command transferred to Marius.*

Marius immediately set about his preparations. He harangued the People with expressions of vehement scorn against all the Senatorial commanders, "men of old pedigree, but ignorant of war; who never saw an army till they became generals, and then set about studying Greek books of tactics.<sup>1</sup> *He was a New Man; he had no images to show; he knew no Greek; he had no skill in setting out banquets, and cared not for stage-plays; he did not esteem a cook a better man than an honest farm-bailiff: but he had images of his own,—spears, trappings, standards, prizes won by valour, and scars upon his breast.*"

He did not, however, confine himself to words. Though he had spoken of only needing half the army of Metellus, he made levies on a large scale; and here he introduced an innovation which demands special notice. In early times military service was confined to those citizens who had a considerable stake in the country. After the Second Punic War the area of service had been extended, probably by Flamininus.<sup>2</sup> Marius now enlisted even those who were entered on the Censor's register as possessing no appreciable amount of property (*capite censi*). Marius shipped the infantry which he had levied at once for Africa, leaving his Quaestor, L. Cornelius Sulla, to follow with the cavalry.

Metellus shed tears of vexation when he heard that he was to lose the prize; and not choosing to undergo the humiliation of surrendering his command to his late lieutenant, he took ship for Rome. Here he was well received. *Return of Metellus to Rome.* It could not be concealed that Jugurtha was a fugitive, dis-crowned and landless, and that the war was virtually ended. Metellus without arrogance assumed the title of Numidicus.

<sup>1</sup> "Praeposteri homines." Sall., *Jug.*, 85.

<sup>2</sup> P. 461. It may be inferred from Polybius (vi. 19. 2) and Livy (x. 21. 3) that all citizens, even the lowest, were always liable legally to be called out for service: but it had not been the custom to summon them, except possibly in very grave crises, and Marius was the first to break through this rule.

Sallust, a bitter enemy to the aristocracy, allows that he was regarded with equal favour both by Senate and People.

Marius did not find it easy to fulfil his promise to seize the person of Jugurtha. The active Numidian still maintained himself in the desert. In vain the long and difficult march of Metellus to Thala was outdone by the longer and more difficult march of Marius to Capsa: Jugurtha still saved himself and his treasure. To get possession of his person it was necessary to negotiate with Bocchus, and Marius was no adept in diplomatic arts. But he had with him one who in these arts was second to none.

L. Cornelius Sulla had just arrived. This remarkable man was now thirty-one years old, nearly twenty years younger than the general. His family, though a branch of the great Cornelian *gens*, had remained almost without honours since the days of P. Rufinus, who had been ejected from the Senate by Fabricius for possessing more than ten pounds of silver plate. Sulla had inherited little from his father, and was reduced to take a mean lodging in the same house with a poor freedman, who in his greatness reminded him of the fact. He made himself master both of Greek and Latin literature, and in early years imbibed a taste for dramatic art. His habits were dissolute, as his appearance testified. His complexion, naturally fair, became pallid and blotched; but his bright blue eyes showed the vigorous spirit within. When he rode into the camp of Marius he had seen no active service, and the stern Consul looked with contempt on the effeminate debauchee whom lot had assigned him as a Quaestor. But with happy versatility Sulla adapted himself to the rough manners of the general, and entered with ready zest into the joviality of the soldiery. His aptitude for business was such that before the end of the campaign he was the chief adviser of Marius.

Marius had unadvisedly provoked Bocchus by an inroad into Mauretania; and as the army was retiring to winter at Cirta it was suddenly surrounded by swarms of Numidian and Moorish horsemen. The enemy, indeed, were beaten off; but before they reached their destination the Romans were again attacked, and a severe conflict followed, in which the Moors were at length defeated with great carnage. Bocchus now showed a disposition to negotiate, and requested that Sulla, who on a former occasion had been sent by the Senate to his court, might be deputed to negotiate with him. Marius unwillingly consented; but even Sulla's dexterity was baffled by the arts of Jugurtha, and he returned without result. In a short time, however, Bocchus repented, and requested that

Sulla might be sent back again. At a secret interview held by night, the Moorish king proposed to banish Jugurtha from his kingdom. Sulla replied that he was obliged to insist upon the surrender of Jugurtha's person. Bocchus hesitated. It is said that he doubted whether he should give up Jugurtha to Sulla, or Sulla to Jugurtha. But the address of the Roman envoy prevailed, and he did not depart from the king's presence till he had received promises of all that he asked.

Next morning, however, the doubts of Bocchus returned. For several days he held secret interviews alternately with Sulla and with the envoy of Jugurtha, giving both of them to understand that he was on their side. But it was necessary at last for the wavering monarch to choose his part, and fear of Rome prevailed. He bade Jugurtha appear at a specified time and place ; and the prince came, expecting to triumph. But his retinue was surrounded and cut down, his own person secured and given over to the Roman envoy. Sulla, relieved from the painful anxiety of many days, returned triumphantly to Marius.

Sulla was not of a temper to waive any claims of his own in favour of his general. He openly asserted that he was the real conqueror of Jugurtha, and had a signet-ring cut bearing a representation of the surrender of Jugurtha. The friends of Metellus encouraged this claim ; but the soldiery and the people regarded Marius as the conqueror, and none could deny that he was the greatest general of the day.

It was on the Calends of January 104 B.C. that Marius entered Rome in triumphal procession, and passed before the gazing crowd to deposit in the Capitol the large booty which he had taken. On the same day he entered upon his second Consulate. His re-election was against the law as it then stood, which positively prohibited a second tenure of the Consulship by the same person ; and it was against the usual practice by which candidates were expected to be present at the time of the Comitia. The circumstances which justified the people in dispensing with the legal and customary forms will be given in the next chapter.

Jugurtha was treated in a manner that excites compassion for one who little deserves such feelings. When he walked before the triumphal car of Marius he seemed sunk in stupor. At the conclusion of the triumph, he was roused by the brutal officials tearing off his clothes and plucking the gold rings by force out of his ears. He was then thrust naked into the state-dungeon at the foot of the Capitoline. "Hercules," he cried, "what a cold bath this is !" Here he was left to

starve for six days, when death came to his relief. Part of his kingdom was given to Bocchus ; the remnant was handed over to his half-brother Gauda, the last legitimate scion of the line of Masinissa.

AUTHORITIES.—For the Jugurthine War, Sallust's *Jugurtha*. (Momm-  
sen, though regarding Sallust's work as a political pamphlet (iv. 489)  
accepts in the main his history of the war (iii. 388 *sqq.*) : Ihne (Bk. vii.  
ch. 8) subjects it to a detailed and unfavourable criticism). On this and  
the other subjects mentioned in this chapter, see also Livy (Epit.), lxii.-  
lxvii. ; Appian, viii. ; Plutarch, *Marius* and *Sulla*. (The sources  
used by Plutarch in these two lives, which, in the absence of better  
evidence, have to be freely used throughout this period, are dis-  
cussed by H. Peter, *die Quellen Plutarchs in den Biographieen der  
Römer* Halle, 1865.)



Gaius Marius (Bernoulli, *Römische Ikonographie*, i. 79).

## CHAPTER L

### THE CIMBRIANS AND TEUTONS (113-101 B.C.): SECOND SLAVE-WAR IN SICILY (103-100 B.C.).

JUGURTHA was taken prisoner early in 106 B.C., but Marius remained in Africa till the close of the next year.<sup>1</sup> In the course of this year and a half happened the events which justified the irregular election of Marius to his second Consulship.

It was a few years before the period at which we have now arrived, that vast hordes from the north of Europe, impelled probably by want, appeared on the north-eastern frontier of Gaul. The chief names by which these barbarians were known were those of Cimbrians and Teutons. The Romans were not certain whether to class them as Celts or Germans; but the bulk of the evidence is clearly in favour of the latter view. Sallust and Florus speak of them as Gauls; but Caesar, Strabo, Pliny, and Tacitus call them Germans; and what we know of their habits must tell on the same side. It is, however, possible that, while the Cimbrians themselves were Germans, some of the tribes associated with them may have been Celtic.<sup>2</sup> The Cimbrians led the way; many smaller tribes followed or joined them, as the Ambrones, the Tugeni, the Tigurini (probably all from Switzerland); while about 103 B.C. they were joined by the important tribe of the Teutoni.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Pelham in *Jour. Phil.*, vii. 91.

<sup>2</sup> For the evidence in detail, see Holmes' *Caesar's Conquest of Gaul*,

553.  
<sup>3</sup> See Mommsen, iii. 444; Long, ii. 58; Holmes, *l.c.* 552.

It was in the year 113 B.C. that the Romans first came in contact with a host of Cimbrians on the northern frontier of Istria, and suffered a great defeat, although the Consul, Cn. Papirius Carbo, made use of treachery to surprise his foes. But the main body pressed westward and crossed the Rhine, while the Jugurthan war was still in progress. At that time they contented themselves with ravaging Gaul. A little later they appeared on the frontier of the Transalpine Province, and demanded a gift of land. The Consul Silanus, colleague of Metellus, replied by giving them battle; but he also was defeated (109 B.C.). Later still the Tigurini pressed down the Rhone from their Swiss valleys, and were met by the Consul L. Cassius Longinus, colleague of Marius. The Helvetian tribe shunned the conflict; but Cassius pursued them, and as he was incautiously advancing, fell into an ambuscade. Great part of his army was slain, himself among the number; the rest were made to pass under the yoke (107 B.C.).

While Marius was still detained in Africa after the capture of Jugurtha, still worse tidings reached Rome. The successive defeats just noticed had thoroughly alarmed the Senate, and large levies had been made in the year 106 B.C. Q. Servilius Caepio, the Consul of that year, had held command on the Rhone and gained an evil reputation by the sack of Tolosa (*Toulouse*), the chief city of the Tectosagi, which had risen against the Roman garrison. The plunder he took was immense; but the greater part was seized by robbers on the way to Marseilles, and "Toulouse gold" became a proverbial expression for ill-gotten but unprofitable gains.<sup>1</sup> He was, however, high in the favour of the Senate, and was continued as Proconsul; but the chief command (in 105 B.C.) fell to the new Consul, Cn. Mallius, a man only distinguished for his want of capacity. When the Consul arrived in the Province, Caepio scornfully refused to cross the Rhone and join him, till Mallius was in immediate danger from the barbarians. Then Caepio crossed the river, but still endeavoured to maintain his independent command. The consequence was that the armies of Mallius and Caepio were engaged separately with the enemy, and were both utterly destroyed: they lost no fewer than 80,000 soldiers and 40,000 camp-followers.<sup>2</sup> The bloody defeat, the most serious that Rome had sustained since the day of Cannae,

<sup>1</sup> Caepio, however, was suspected of being in league with the robbers.

<sup>2</sup> M. Aurelius Scaurus, legate of Mallius and commander of a separate corps, had already been defeated and put to death.



took place on the 6th of October, which was marked as a black day in the calendar.<sup>1</sup>

After this great victory, the barbarians, instead of pouring at once into Italy, turned southwards, and—a great portion of them at least—passed over the Pyrenees into Spain. Thus Italy was relieved from immediate fear; and Marius, now Consul for the second time, put forth all his energy in organising the army. The greater part of his troops must have been furnished by the lowest class of citizens, and the disorderly recruits murmured at the requirements of the Consul. His sternness repelled them, his arbitrary habits offended, and those who submitted patiently were called “the mules of Marius.”<sup>2</sup> Sulla, who, notwithstanding the jealousy of the general, had taken service under him as legate, was of use in smoothing difficulties. The murmurs soon abated, and the nick-name became a name of honour. The confidence felt by the old soldiers in the general extended itself to the new levies. It was found that, if he was inflexibly severe, he was no less inflexibly just,—the highest and the lowest received the same measure. His own nephew offered a brutal insult to a young soldier named Trebonius, who resented it by slaying his officer on the spot. Marius brought the youth to trial; but when he heard his story proved by evidence, he not only directed an acquittal, but placed a crown upon the youth’s head as a reward for his Roman virtue.

*Marius restores discipline.*

*Third and fourth Consulship of Marius.*

For the next year Marius was elected Consul for the third time, and in the following year for the fourth time. His colleague was now Q. Lutatius Catulus, one of the most distinguished members of the aristocracy, who had hitherto been an unsuccessful candidate for the Consulship. In three foregoing years he had been defeated by persons unworthy to be put in comparison with one whose character stood so high that it was usual to quote his mere word as sufficient authority for a fact: “It must be so, for Q. Lutatius has said it.”<sup>3</sup> In personal integrity Marius was

<sup>1</sup> This is known as the battle of Arausio (*Orange*), but the name rests only on a conjectural emendation in the text of the Epitome of Livy (lxvii.).

<sup>2</sup> Frontinus (iv. i. 7) and Festus (s. v. “Aerumnulae” and “Muli Mariani”) use the phrase “Mariani muli” of a contrivance for enabling soldiers to carry their baggage more easily. It is very possible that the same term may have been given as a nickname to those soldiers who submitted to the kind of work which rendered such appliances necessary.

<sup>3</sup> “Hoc verum est; dixit enim Q. Lutatius.” Cic., *de Orat.*, ii. 40, 173.

his equal, but in other respects they formed a marked contrast. Marius, rough and stern, without education, scorning accomplishments, but the best general of the day; Catulus, polished in manner well-informed and witty, the most finished orator of his time,<sup>1</sup> but untried in war.

Soon after the election news arrived that the dreaded hour was really at hand; the Cimbrians had been repulsed by the Celtiberians, and had re-crossed the Pyrenees. The Teutons had by this time entered Gaul from the north-east; and the combined hordes were gathering on the frontier of the Gallic Province. Marius left Rome in haste and crossed the Alps; the remainder of the year he spent in fortifying a strong camp upon the Rhone, probably between Avignon and Arles. To secure ready access to the sea, he employed his men in cutting a canal from his camp to the coast, which long remained open, and was known as the Foss of Marius.<sup>2</sup>

It was soon found that the barbarian hordes had again separated. The Teutons, with the Ambrones, remained in Gaul to attack the Roman Province and enter Italy by the Maritime Alps, while the Cimbrians passed up the Rhone and made a long circuit so as to threaten Italy from the north. Marius remained in Gaul to arrest the Teutons; Catulus, with the second Consular army, was ordered to the plains of Lombardy, there to await the Cimbrians.

Marius was exposed to the first assault. In the year 102 B.C., the plain in front of his camp was covered by Teutons, who challenged him with hideous cries to come forth; and his men indignantly asked whether their only task was to be that of digging and delving like slaves. But Marius turned a deaf ear both to the provocations of the barbarians and the murmurs of his own troops: "We have to fight," he said, "not for trophies but for existence; we will not give battle till victory is secure." This backwardness was in part due to a superstitious regard for divination. As Wallenstein consulted the stars through his astrologer, so the grim Roman carried about with him a Syrian woman named Martha, in whose predictions he placed unbounded confidence.

The Teutons, finding their challenges vain, attempted to storm the Roman camp, but were driven off with loss. On this, they marched forward towards Italy, past the Roman lines. For six days the barbarians were defiling before the eyes of the Italian soldiery, scoffingly asking

<sup>1</sup> "Oratio eius pura sic ut Latine loqui paene solus videatur.—*Ib.*, iii. 8, 29.

<sup>2</sup> See Long, ii. 30.

whether they could not carry some message home for them to their wives. Marius, distrusting his new levies, suffered the vast host to pass unassailed, and followed them leisurely till he came up with the Ambrones near Aquae Sextiae. While the soldiers set to work to entrench the camp, the camp-followers went down with the beasts to seek water and found the barbarians luxuriously bathing in the hot springs which gave name to the place. As soon as these Ambrones saw the Romans, they seized their arms, shouting their own name as a war-cry. There was in the Roman advanced guard a Ligurian tribe bearing a similar name, who returned the cry and rushed to the assault. Marius, unable to restrain them, drew out the remainder of his army, and the conflict became general. The Ambrones were defeated and driven back to their camp, where their women came out and fell upon the fugitives and Romans alike with indiscriminate violence. Darkness stopped the battle, and the Romans drew back to their unfortified camp, where they passed the night under arms, listening to the wild and uncouth wailings with which the Ambrones lamented their dead. No attempt was made to renew the battle the next day, but Marius silently prepared for a decisive action on the morrow.

The Teutons had in the meantime returned to support their comrades ; and when the sun rose, the whole mass of the barbarians stood upon the plain in front of the eminence where the Romans lay encamped. *Second battle.*

During the night Marius had sent his lieutenant Marcellus, with 3000 men, to occupy a wooded hill in the rear of the enemy ; and having drawn out his legions on the sloping ground before his camp, he there awaited the attack. The barbarians charged up the slope with furious cries. The Romans awaited their assault steadily, till they were within spear's throw ; and then, having discharged their heavy javelins with terrible effect, they drew their swords and fell upon the broken ranks of the enemy. The barbarians were driven back across the plain, and at the moment when they were attempting to rally, Marcellus, issuing from the wood, fell upon their rear. A dreadful massacre followed. So numerous were the slain, that in after-years the people of Marseilles used the bones to make fences for their vineyards, and the whole plain was fertilised by putrescent bodies. The Teutonic host was annihilated ; and, on the western side, Italy was saved by the battle of Aix.<sup>1</sup>

Teutobod, the gigantic chieftain of the Teutons, accustomed (as tales ran) to use four or six horses at a time, vaulting from

---

<sup>1</sup> For traditions as to the site, see Long, ii. 64.

one to the other,<sup>1</sup> was reserved to grace the triumph. The broken arms and equipages were piled in a huge heap; and Marius himself, wearing a chaplet and with his gown girdled after the Gabine fashion, was advancing to fire it, when some horsemen were seen galloping along the road from Italy. He paused: leaping from their horses, they saluted him as Consul for the fifth time.

During the whole year the Cimbrians had not made their appearance, but towards the close of the season it was ascertained that they had reached the Tyrol, and might be expected to descend into Italy next spring by the valley of the Athesis (*Adige*).

Catulus, who remained in command for a second year as Proconsul, concentrated his forces on that river. His camp, strongly fortified, was on the right or western bank; a bridge was thrown across the stream, defended by a smaller camp as a *tête-du-pont*.

The barbarians did not wait for the melting of the snows. Early in the next year (101 B.C.)<sup>2</sup> they poured through the Pass of the Brenner, sliding exultingly down the frozen slopes upon their shields. Keeping the left bank of the Adige, they made their way to the point where Catulus was stationed. The Roman soldiers, unaccustomed to the aspect of the barbarians, could not be prevented from deserting the camp in precipitate flight. Happily the division which was stationed on the left bank defended their post gallantly and for a time held the Cimbrians in check.

Marius had returned to Rome at the close of the previous campaign, where he was received as became the conqueror of the Teutons, but declined the honour of a triumph till the Cimbrians also were subdued. As soon as he heard of their descent, he set off for the Proconsul's camp, having previously ordered his victorious army to pass from Gaul to Italy. Catulus had succeeded in rallying his troops, and was posted on the south bank of the Po, probably near Placentia. The army which Marius brought to his aid amounted to about 30,000 men; that of Catulus was reduced to little more than 20,000. The energy of Sulla, who was now

<sup>1</sup> Florus, iii. 3. *Cp.* Livy (xxiii. 29), who speaks of Numidian horsemen, "quibus, *desultorum in modum*, binos trahentibus equos inter acerrimam saepe pugnam *in recentem equum ex fesso* armatis transultare mos erat."

<sup>2</sup> "Per hiemem," says Florus. Plutarch, on the other hand, represents the descent of the Cimbrians as contemporaneous with the Battle of Aquæ Sextiæ.

acting as legate to Catulus, had provided well for supplies of provisions and forage, and Marius was obliged to own himself indebted to an officer who had unceasingly provoked his jealousy.

The Romans did not hesitate longer. The Cimbrians had pushed westward in the hope of meeting their friends the Teutons, of whose destruction they had not heard ; *Meeting of the* and Marius and Catulus, crossing the Po above *armies.* the Ticinus, offered battle. The Cimbrians answered by sending envoys to demand that, when their brethren reached Italy, the Romans should give them lands. "Your brethren," replied Marius, "have already as much land as they are like to need ;" and he produced some Teuton prisoners, who sufficiently explained the meaning of his words. Boiorix, the Cimbrian chief, nothing daunted, rode up to the Roman lines, and challenged the generals to fix the day and place for a pitched battle. "The Romans," retorted Marius, "are not wont to consult the enemy on such points. However, we will humour you. Let the day be the third day hence ; the place the plain of Vercellae."

Here the battle was fought.<sup>1</sup> Catulus commanded the centre ; the troops of the Consul Marius, in two divisions, flanked him on the right and left. The Cimbrian host advanced *Battle of* in one dense column, their front ranks being linked *Vercellae.* together by chains passed through their belts. This great phalanx was supported by 15,000 horsemen, with helmets made of the heads of wild beasts, surmounted by tall plumes. The combat took place on the 30th day of July ; and the intense heat, together with the dust, impaired the vigour of these northern men. The compact ranks of the enemy, broken by the fire of the terrible *pila*, and charged by the whole Roman line, were driven back to their camp in disorder, and there received by their own wives as if they had been enemies. A scene of frightful carnage followed. The women alone, from the high waggons which formed the defence of the camp, continued to resist ; till, not choosing to become slaves, they strangled their children, and sought a voluntary death either by the hands of friends or by nooses twisted of their own hair. The annihilation of the Cimbrian host at Vercellae was as complete as that of the Teutons at Aquae Sextiae.

Both Marius and Catulus had done their duty in this bloody conflict. Plutarch, indeed, attributes the victory wholly to

---

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen, iii. 448.

Catulus. But the accounts of Plutarch are borrowed from the annals of Sulla and of Catulus himself, suspicious authorities for estimating the merits of Marius. At Rome, all the credit of the Cimbrian, as well as of the Teutonic, victory was given to Marius. He was saluted, with Romulus and Camillus, as the third founder of Rome. The people loudly expressed their wish that he should triumph alone. But Marius, respecting the feelings of the soldiers, and not devoid of a rough generosity, declared that his noble colleague must share the honour. The opinion of the day was ratified by posterity. Cicero speaks of the triumph as due to Marius;<sup>1</sup> and Juvenal in a well-known line sums up the traditional faith of a later generation.<sup>2</sup> There can be no doubt that Marius well deserved all his honours. By these great victories he rolled back the tide of northern immigration for at least three centuries. The battles of Aquae Sextiae and Vercellae may be ranked in the number of those which changed the course of the world's history.

While the arms of the republic were thus triumphant in averting external peril, the fertile Province of Sicily was again a prey to the desolating horrors of a slave war.

After the former war had been happily concluded by Piso and Rupilius, several indications of similar troubles appeared in Italy itself. At Capua, a spendthrift Knight armed some 4000 slaves and assumed the diadem. But by prompt measures the insurrection was put down.

The rising in Sicily might have been checked with no less ease. It originated thus. Marius had been commissioned by the Senate to raise troops in foreign countries to meet the difficulties of the Cimbrian war. He applied to the king of Bithynia, among other persons; but the king answered that he had no soldiers, the Roman tax-gatherers had made slaves of them all. The Senate, glad to have an opportunity of censuring the Equites, passed a decree that all persons unduly detained in slavery should be set free. In Sicily the number of such persons was so large that the Praetor suspended the execution of the decree. Great disappointment followed. A body of slaves rose in insurrection near Agri-gentum and defeated a party of Roman soldiers. Their

<sup>1</sup> "Utrum tandem beatior C. Marius tum, cum Cimbricae victoriae gloriam cum collega Catulo communicavit, paene altero Laelio, an . . . etc."—*Tusc. Disp.*, v. 19, 50. The comparison of Catulus with Laelius implies that of Marius with Scipio.

<sup>2</sup> "Nobilis ornatur lauro collega secunda."—*Sat.*, viii. 253.



numbers swelled to 20,000, and they chose one Salvius, a soothsayer, to be their king. This man showed himself fit to command. He divided his followers into three bodies, regularly officered. He enforced strict discipline. To restrain his men from wine and debauchery he kept them in the field. He contrived to provide 2000 of them with horses. When his men seemed sufficiently trained, he laid siege to the city of Murgantia. But the slave masters of Murgantia offered freedom to all slaves who would remain faithful, and Salvius saw himself compelled to retire. The promise, however, was not kept, and numbers of the deceived men flocked to the insurgent camp.

This success in the east of Sicily gave birth to a similar rising in the west, which was headed by a Cilician slave named Athenio, who pretended to read the future in the stars. He soon found himself at the head of 10,000 soldiers, well found with arms and provisions. He gave out that the stars declared his sovereignty: he therefore forbade all robbery; for, said he, "the property of our masters is now ours." He now rashly laid siege to the impregnable fortress of Lilybaeum; but finding its capture impossible, he drew off, alleging that an impending danger had been revealed to him.

Meanwhile Salvius, who had assumed the name of Tryphon, fixed the seat of his sovereignty at the fortress of Triocala, which had fallen into his hands, and sent orders to Athenio to repair in person to that place. Athenio obeyed the orders of King Tryphon, and appeared at Triocala with 3000 men. The king now occupied himself with adding to the strength of his new capital. He chose a Senate out of his followers. On public occasions he wore the *toga praetexta* of a Roman magistrate, and was attended by the due number of lictors.

The Romans seemed unable to make head against the insurgents, till, in 101 B.C., M'. Aquillius, the colleague of Marius in his fifth Consulship, took the command. Meanwhile, Tryphon had died, and Athenio had become chief of the insurgents. Aquillius brought them to an engagement, in which he encountered the brave Athenio hand to hand. The Consul was severely wounded, but the slave leader was killed. Aquillius remained as Proconsul in Sicily for another year, in the course of which time he crushed the last embers of the war. After the fall of Athenio the insurgents dwindled away to a band of 1000 desperate men, commanded by one Satyrus, who at length surrendered to Aquillius and were by him sent to Rome to serve as gladiators. The story of their

*Salvius in the east of Sicily.*

*Athenio in the west.*

*King Tryphon.*

*M'. Aquillius crushes the revolt.*

end is very touching. Being brought out into the arena to fight with wild beasts, rather than make sport for the conquerors they slew one another at the foot of the altars which stood there ; and Satyrus, being left alone, fell upon his own sword.

It is manifest, from the humanity and discipline observed by these unhappy men in their power, that their chiefs must have been originally men of station and education, reduced to slavery by the horrid practice of ancient warfare. The story of their death presents a picture not flattering to Roman civilisation.

Strict measures were adopted in Sicily to prevent a recurrence of these perils. It was made a standing order, confirmed by every successive Praetor, that no slave should have a weapon in his possession. Nor was the ordinance suffered to remain a dead letter. Soon after, the Praetor, L. Domitius, received a fine wild boar as a present. He enquired who had killed it. Finding that it was a slave employed as a shepherd, he summoned the man to his presence. The poor fellow came with alacrity, expecting a reward. The Praetor asked him with what he had killed the animal, and finding that it was with a hunting-spear, he ordered the unfortunate wretch to be crucified.<sup>1</sup> Such were the laws by which the masters of the world were obliged to maintain their power.

*Severe measures in Sicily.* AUTHORITIES.—Livy (Epit.), lxiii., lxx., lxvii.-lxix. ; Plutarch, *Marius* and *Sulla* ; Velleius, ii. 12 ; Florus, iii. 3, 19 ; Orosius, v. 15, 16 ; Diodorus, xxxvi.

---

<sup>1</sup> Cic., *Verr.* (ii.), v. 3, 7.

## CHAPTER LI

FROM THE SIXTH CONSULSHIP OF MARIUS TO THE DEATH OF  
M. LIVIUS DRUSUS. (100-91 B.C.)

THE power of the Nobility, shaken to its centre by the Gracchi, was for a time restored by force. But the election of Marius to the Consulate was a signal triumph of the popular party. Scaurus perceived that the reckless corruption of the oligarchy must end in ruin, and he put himself at the head of the moderate party. The Senate was now in the hands of this party.

An indirect check was placed upon public immorality by the increasing love for popular oratory, which followed the transference of judicial authority from the Senate to the Equestrian Order. The latter were venal enough, but yet were more open to persuasion than the old Senatorial juries, and afforded a greater scope to the powers of youthful orators. The example of Cato and the Gracchi showed how men might rise to eminence by peaceful arts; and men even of noble family found a ready way to office by impeaching public officers.

The case of Q. Servilius Caepio shows that the Senate could not always screen powerful offenders. This man, as we have seen, was infamous for the plunder of Toulouse, and by his quarrel with the Consul Mallius had at least contributed to the great defeat of 105 B.C.<sup>1</sup> On the news of the defeat being received, the Tribes passed a vote to deprive Caepio of his Proconsular command, and to confiscate all his goods, a proceeding unexampled in the annals of the republic. In the next year, one of the Tribunes introduced a law by which it was enacted that any one who had so been deprived of his command should lose his seat in the Senate. A subsequent judicial enquiry, directed against those responsible for the defeat of Arausio, con-

*Moderate  
party in the  
Senate.*

*Love of  
forensic  
oratory.*

*Condemnation  
of Caepio.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 518.

demned him to death ; he only with difficulty escaped the penalty, and was obliged to live in exile.<sup>1</sup>

The attainder of Caepio was the greatest advantage which had been gained by the popular party since the time of the Gracchi.<sup>2</sup>

*Judicial laws.* But it was not solely on the merits of the case that he was so promptly judged. He had, when he was Consul, carried a law—the Servilian law of Caepio—by which the judicial authority was at least partially restored to the Senate, and he had thus provoked the wrath of the Equestrian Order.<sup>3</sup> This law, however, did not remain in force many months. It was repealed by the law of C. Servilius Glaucia ; and thus one Servilian law for restoring judgment to the Senate was cancelled by another Servilian law for giving it back wholly to the Knights.

Of the moderate party, after Scaurus, none are more noticeable than Metellus and Catulus. But the most eminent for purity of life were the two Scaevolae, both bearing the fore-name of Quintus, and distinguished as the Augur and the Pontiff. Q. Scaevola the Augur, was an elderly man, and belonged to a former generation. He is chiefly known for his great legal knowledge, in which he was the worthy successor of his cousins, P. Scaevola and P. Crassus, the friends of Ti. Gracchus.<sup>4</sup> He married Laelia, the daughter of Scipio's friend. In a corrupt age he escaped all taint of corruption.

The fame of Q. Scaevola the Augur was sustained by his younger cousin, Q. Scaevola the Pontiff. He was the son of the P. Scaevola just mentioned, and was the third of his family who bore the high office of Pontifex Maximus in these times ; but, though he is here designated by the title of his office, he did not obtain it for some years later. Like the Augur, he preferred the quiet profession of a jurist to the exciting conflicts of political life. But whenever he appears in public, he adds honour to the name of his family. He ruled the Province of Asia with singular integrity ; and we shall have to notice in a future page the unjust condemnation of his legate, P. Rutilius Rufus, who had endeavoured to prevent the extortions of the tax-collectors. His memory was long preserved by the grateful Asiatics in festal games known by the name of

<sup>1</sup> See Mommsen, iii. 440.

<sup>2</sup> Another popular triumph at this time was the Lex Domitia of 104 B.C., by which it was enacted that the election of the Pontifex Maximus should in future be made, not by the priests, but by seventeen out of the thirty-five tribes.

<sup>3</sup> Ihne, v. 117.

<sup>4</sup> P. Scaevola (Consul, 175 B.C.) and Q. Scaevola (Consul, 174) were brothers.

Mucia. The disinterested character of the Pontiff is shown by an anecdote preserved by Cicero. He had bought an estate under its due value ; and though that value had been fixed by the vendor, the conscientious purchaser insisted on paying a larger price—an act which the jurists of the day considered to be incompatible with wisdom.<sup>1</sup>

Here also may be noticed the two great advocates of the day, M. Antonius and L. Licinius Crassus, each known by the name of “the Orator.” At Rome, in those days, a great advocate could hardly avoid taking part in politics, *Antonius and Crassus.* for all celebrated causes were of a political nature, and advocacy was not so much a profession as a duty of private or political friendship. Both Crassus and Antonius generally appear as the defenders of Senators before the Equestrian Tribunal, and therefore seldom met as rivals at the bar. In youth they both courted popular favour, but they soon became steady adherents of the Senatorial Order. Crassus married Mucia, daughter of Q. Scaevola the Augur, and was the close friend of Q. Scaevola the Pontiff. One of his most famous speeches was delivered in favour of the Servilian law of Caepio for restoring judicial power to the Senators ; in the time of Cicero it was regarded as a classical composition : “It could not,” remarks the critic, “be improved except by Crassus himself.” The oratory of Crassus was often pointed with sarcasm, which made him enemies even in the Senate ; that of Antonius was more natural and pathetic. Cicero is unable to adjudge superiority to either. He introduces the two as the chief interlocutors in his celebrated Dialogues on the Orator. He exhausts the Latin language in expressing his admiration of both. Crassus he held to be the greatest orator Rome had ever seen except Antonius, and Antonius the greatest except Crassus. The oratory of Antonius, from its pathetic character, was more fitted for a jury ; that of Crassus for a deliberative assembly. In their high finish and elaborate preparation the orations of Cicero himself may be taken as representations of the style of Crassus rather than of Antonius.

But these men, though they were upright, grave, and dignified, had not energy enough to reform the abuses revealed by the Gracchi ; and thus the stage was left open to profligate demagogues. The removal of external danger by the defeat of the barbarians, and the return of Marius to Rome gave the signal for a renewal of internal troubles.

Marius was now the great man of the day. All parties were

---

<sup>1</sup> Cic., *de off.*, iii. 15, 62.

disposed to welcome him. He had conciliated the Senate by his bearing towards Catulus ; his military glory dazzled the multitude ; the saving of Italy won him the regards of all. The blunt manners of the man gave no offence, nay, rather increased his popularity with the multitude. He had become rich, but to gain wealth he had used no means that were reprobated by the usages of Roman society ; his character for integrity stood high. Yet his own nature and long habits of command rendered him incapable of using the arts of the Forum. He is not the only great general that has quailed before the clamours of a popular assembly, and it was not long before his popularity began to decline.

But he could not bear to descend into private life. All men were surprised, and moderate men were disgusted, when in the year of his fifth Consulship he appeared as candidate for a sixth (101 B.C.). There was no excuse for any further violation of the law, and it appeared that his chance of election was doubtful. But agents were ready to assist him ; his money was at their disposal ; troops of his old soldiers thronged the streets of Rome. Metellus came forward as a candidate, not so much hoping to defeat Marius, as to neutralise his power by becoming his colleague. But even in this he was disappointed ; L. Valerius Flaccus, a feeble nobleman, was preferred to the leader of the aristocracy.

The person who was mainly instrumental in procuring this result was L. Appuleius Saturninus, a man of good family, but with the habits of a reckless debauchee. Finding himself slighted by the Senate, he resolved upon revenge.<sup>1</sup> He possessed that kind of eloquence which stirs the populace. What he wanted in weight and character he supplied by attaching himself to Marius. He found a friend and associate in C. Servilius Glaucia, the same who foiled the Senate by repealing the judicial law of Caepio. This man's character was as bad as that of Saturninus. But his ready wit and reckless humour made him a popular favourite, and he was elected Praetor of the City at the same Comitia which made Marius Consul for the sixth time. Having secured the election of these two men, Saturninus now stood forward as candidate for the Tribunate.

But a man of spirit, named Nonius, rose in the Assembly, and after boldly denouncing the infamous lives of both Glaucia and Saturninus, offered himself as a candidate, and was elected Tribune to the exclusion of the demagogue.

<sup>1</sup> As Quaestor at Ostia, he had to regulate the corn-supply of Rome : in this office he was superseded by M. Aemilius Scaurus, whether justly or unjustly we cannot say.



A man so reckless as Saturninus was not thus to be defeated. With a party of his adherents he set upon Nonius and murdered him. Glaucia then called a partisan meeting early next morning, which he declared to be a regular Assembly of the Plebs, and by their votes Saturninus was elected Tribune.

The career of Saturninus is a sort of caricature of the public acts of the Gracchi.<sup>1</sup> He introduced an iniquitous agrarian law, by which it was proposed to divide among the soldiers of Marius the lands in Gaul recently *Agrarian law.* occupied by the Cimbrians ; iniquitous, for these lands were the property of the Provincials who had been dispossessed by the barbarians. He also proposed to found Colonies in various Provinces, and to employ the "Toulouse gold" of Caepio as Tib. Gracchus had employed the gold of Attalus.

For carrying his agrarian law Saturninus relied chiefly on the disbanded soldiery of Marius. To annoy the Senate it was provided that, in case the law received the assent of *Oath required of Senators.* the Tribes, every Senator should, within five days, be required to take an oath of obedience to its enactments, and that any recusant should lose his seat in the Senate and pay a fine of twenty talents to the treasury.

On the day appointed for the vote, the opposite party endeavoured to break up the Assembly by declaring that it was thundering. "If you do not take heed," said *Banishment of Metellus.* Saturninus, "it will hail also." Stung by his scornful demeanour, the opponents of the law girded up their gowns, and drove the adherents of Saturninus from the Forum. But the veteran soldiers regained possession of the place, and the law passed. On the same day Marius in the Senate-house declared that to exact a compulsory oath was an insult to the Order, and Metellus expressed his resolution to stand by the Consul in refusing the oath. But late on the afternoon of the fifth day, when the time for taking the oath was just expiring, Marius hastily convened the Senate, and stated that there was reason to apprehend violence if the oath were not taken : to appease the mob he proposed that all should swear to obey the law, so far as it was law ; hereafter the law might be declared null, as having been passed irregularly and under compulsion. All saw through this hypocritical artifice, but there was no time for debate ; and Marius himself, rising from his place, went forth to the front of the Temple of Saturn, and there publicly took

<sup>1</sup> He had already been Tribune in 103 B.C. (Mommson, iii. 442, 468), when he seems to have proposed a distribution of lands in Africa, and to have carried a treason-law about the details of which we really know nothing (Ihne, v. 150).

the oath. The rest of the Senators present followed his example, all except Metellus, who absolutely refused to swear. Next day, when the Senate met, Metellus appeared in his place; and Saturninus ordered him to be removed. The other Tribunes interposed; upon which Saturninus rushed forth and harangued his partisans, telling them that while Metellus was at Rome they would never get their promised lands. He then brought forward a bill to banish Metellus from the soil of Italy. Before the day appointed for the vote, the Roman citizens armed themselves with daggers, and would have used force against the partisans of Saturninus; but Metellus, with noble patriotism, said that not for him should blood be shed, and forthwith quitted the city.

Saturninus also brought in a bill designed to win the favour of the Roman Populace. It was a measure for reducing the price of grain from  $6\frac{1}{3}$  *asses* the *modius* (the price fixed by C. Gracchus) to  $\frac{5}{8}$ ths of an *as*.<sup>1</sup> The Senate were now roused to action. The Quaestor of the City, Q. Caepio, made a report that the treasury could not bear the drain which must follow; and the Senate ordered Saturninus to proceed no further. He persisted; his colleagues interposed their veto; but Saturninus scornfully ordered the ballot-boxes to be brought forward, on which Caepio, supported by a strong body of men, broke down the gangways and overthrew the ballot-boxes. The violence of Saturninus could not be arrested but by violence.

The Tribunician elections for the next year came on before the Consular. Saturninus procured his own re-election; and, as Marius did not seek a seventh Consulship, the Tribune used all his power to procure the election of his friend Glaucia to this office. But Antonius the Orator was sure of his election, and C. Memmius was likely to be his colleague; and, to prevent this result, Saturninus sent a band of ruffians who positively beat Memmius to death in the Campus Martius. This brutal act broke up the Assembly. The people of the city were wrought up to frenzy, and met next day, vowing that they would have the life of Saturninus. The Tribune, supported by Glaucia and by Saufeius, one of the Quaestors, assumed an attitude of resistance. The Senate met, and issued a decree which charged the Consuls with Dictatorial power.

---

<sup>1</sup> The particular change of price was caused probably by a jingle of words. By the Appuleian law corn was to be sold *semisse et triente* ( $\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{8} = \frac{5}{8}$ ), instead of *senis et triente* ( $6\frac{1}{3}$ ), as ruled by the Sempronian law. ([Cic.], *ad Her.*, i. 12, 21.)

Meanwhile the insurgents had seized the Capitol. All the chiefs of the Senate appeared in arms to support Marius, who became the unwilling leader of his political adversaries. It might have been not easy to reduce the insurgents under such a commander ; but some persons cut the pipes which supplied the quarter with water, and as it thus became impossible for the insurgents to hold out, they surrendered in reliance upon the good offices of Marius. The citizens would have slain them on the spot ; but Marius insisted on a regular trial, and shut them up in the Senate-house. The people, however, would not be baulked of vengeance. Numbers of them climbed to the top of the building, tore off the tiles, and killed all the prisoners. Thus were slain a Praetor, a Quaestor, and a Tribune, all wearing the ensigns of office.

The proceedings against Saturninus were the same as those adopted against the Gracchi. But this demagogue had himself set the example of using force, and his death was due to a burst of popular feeling. Marius had lost all influence by associating himself with such men. The Senate and People of Rome, who were now allied through fear of the Italians, hated him because he had attempted to save Saturninus.<sup>1</sup> He proved as feeble a politician as he was a bold and skilful commander.

All orders now desired the recall of Metellus, who had retired to Rhodes. On the death of Saturninus, it was proposed at once to rescind the law by which he was banished ; but one of the Tribunes, by name Furius, put a veto on the measure. In vain men of all orders and degrees sought to bend this man from his purpose ; in vain young Q. Metellus interceded for his father so earnestly that he was known ever after by the name of Pius. But at the beginning of the next year, the law for removing the ban from Metellus passed by acclamation.<sup>2</sup> His return was a real triumph. The whole city, Nobles and People, met him outside the walls. So many were the greetings which he had to receive and give that it was evening before he entered the gates. He had been absent about a year.

That was a bitter day for the proud spirit of Marius. He left

---

<sup>1</sup> That one object of the Colonies of Saturninus was to extend the franchise seems to be proved by Cicero, *pro Balbo*, 21, 48 : "Saturninus C. Mario tulerat ut in singulas colonias ternos (? trecenos) civis Romanos facere posset."

<sup>2</sup> Ihne (v. 170) thinks that Furius may have offered opposition without interposing a formal intercession, and that the return of Metellus may have been effected during his year of office.

Rome abruptly, and took ship for Asia. The members of an embassy from Mithridates, king of Pontus, had been insulted by Saturninus; but the king dissembled his anger, and received the great general with every mark of honour. Marius answered the oriental compliments of Mithridates with rude threats. "King," said he, "you will have to conquer Rome or to submit." Plutarch avers that his purpose was to drive Mithridates to war, in the hope that he might recover in arms that consequence which he had lost in peace.

For some time after his Cimbrian campaigns Sulla seems to have lived in retirement. But in the year 95 B.C. he appeared as candidate for the Praetorship. He had not, however, served as Aedile; and as the popular taste

for shows was daily increasing with the increasing wealth of the great families who supplied Aediles to the state, the people expected a magnificent show of beasts from the friend of Bocchus. Sulla therefore lost his election. But in the following year he spent large sums in bribery, and promised to exhibit as Praetor all that had been expected from him as Aedile. Accordingly in the next year the wondering people saw one hundred lions, the gift of the Moorish king, let loose in the Circus.

After his Praetorship Sulla was sent as governor of Cilicia with a commission to restore Ariobarzanes to the throne of Cappadocia, from which he had lately been expelled by Mithridates. Sulla accomplished his purpose without difficulty; Mithridates did not venture to resist.<sup>1</sup>

Of all the measures of Gracchus none had left a deeper sore than that which transferred the judicial power from the Senators to the Equestrian Order. Q. Caepio's attempt to reverse this measure had succeeded only for a moment; disappointment aggravated the soreness of the Senate. But though popular feeling was in favour of the Equestrian rather than the Senatorial juries, yet the Knights, as has before been noted, had their own motives for corrupt judgment. As farmers of the revenue, they were subject to the power of provincial magistrates; and, accordingly as a provincial magistrate favoured or hindered their exactions, it was probable that he would be treated with leniency or severity at their tribunal.

Two celebrated causes occurred about this time which proved this point to demonstration.

M'. Aquillius had quelled the second slave war in Sicily.

---

<sup>1</sup> On this occasion the Romans came for the first time into contact with the Parthians, and Sulla gained a diplomatic triumph by assuming the post of honour at a conference on the Euphrates.

His father had been noted for rapacity in Asia ; the son followed too faithfully the example of his sire. His advocate, Antonius, pleaded his good services as a set-off against the corrupt practices by which he had amassed a large fortune. The orator concluded a pathetic appeal to the feelings of the jury by tearing open the tunic of the old soldier and displaying the scars which seamed his breast. The effect was such that the whole audience sobbed aloud, and iron tears were seen to roll down the cheeks of Marius. Aquillius was acquitted.

P. Rutilius Rufus had displayed no small military talent as legate to Metellus in the Jugurthan war. Some years after his Consulship he had accompanied his friend Q. Scaevola the Pontiff as legate to Asia.<sup>1</sup> The severe spirit of justice which regulated his whole conduct could not tolerate the rapacity displayed by the Equestrian farmers of the revenue, and he exerted himself to protect the helpless provincials from their exactions. On his return a person of indifferent character was induced to indict him before the Equestrian court for extortion. Rutilius had, like Scipio, been a disciple of the great Stoic teacher Panaetius, and he practised the rigid philosophy which he professed. He would not accept the services either of Crassus or Antonius, and prevented even Scaevola, who attended him into court, from using the arts of advocacy in his behalf. But probably no advocacy would have availed. The complainants and the jury belonged to the same body ; and the Knights proved that they were not more fit than the Senators to be judges in their own case.<sup>2</sup>

The iniquity of this sentence was so glaring that it gave an opportunity for wresting the privilege of judgment from the Knights. Scaurus cast his eye about for a fitting agent, and it fell on a young man named M. Livius Drusus, one of the Tribunes for the year 91 B.C., son of that Drusus who had served as the tool of the Senate in outbidding C. Gracchus. His family was good, his wealth great, his life spotless, his mind cultivated, his eloquence remarkable, his temper fearless, and his will inflexible. The frank simplicity of his nature is well shown by a well-known anecdote. He was building a new house on the Palatine (the same which afterwards

<sup>1</sup> Probably in 98 B.C., when Scaevola was *propraetor*. The arguments of Ihne (v. 173-4) in favour of 94 B.C., when he was *proconsul*, are not conclusive.

<sup>2</sup> Cicero, a great patron of the Equestrian Order, declares that, "P. Rutilio damnato, nemo tam innocens videbatur, ut non timeret iudicia." — *Pro Scauro*, I ; *cp. in Pison.*, 39, 95.

*Acquittal of Aquillius.*

*Condemnation of Rutilius Rufus.*

*Livius Drusus the younger.*

belonged to Cicero), and the architect promised so to construct it that no one should be able to overlook him. "Rather," said Drusus, "so arrange it that all my life may be open to all eyes." Scaurus soon found that he had chosen one who would not stoop to be the tool of a party. The Italian towns entreated Drusus to undertake their cause, and he eagerly agreed. Scaurus and the Senatorial leaders, to secure him for their own service, were obliged to support his foreign policy.

Drusus began his Tribunate like C. Gracchus and Saturninus. He gratified the poorer citizens by the old expedients of an *Popular agrarian law*, by which Colonies were to be largely *measures.* planted on the public lands of Italy and Sicily, and of an extension of the law by which corn was to be sold cheap.

He next bade for the support of the Senate by endeavouring to fulfil the contract he had made with Scaurus. He did not, *Proposal for however,* purpose simply to restore judicial power to *the law-courts.* the Senate; but devised a compromise, by which this power might be shared between its old and its new possessors. The number of the Senate was to be doubled by the addition of 300 members, to be chosen from among the Knights; and from these 600 Senators the judges were to be chosen. This plan failed to satisfy either party.

In order to carry all these measures, he tacked them together in one bill, so that the poor citizens, to secure their gifts of land and doles of corn, would be obliged to vote also for the Senatorial jurymen.<sup>1</sup> The Consul Philippus, a *His measures put to the vote together.* cross-grained man of ready speech, determined to oppose the agrarian law to the uttermost. But Drusus ordered the Consul to be removed, and the order was executed with so little regard that blood burst from his nostrils. The Senators, glad to get rid of the Equestrian courts at any price, gave Philippus no support; and he declared in open Forum, that "with such a Senate as they now had it was impossible to carry on the government." On this, the Tribune rose in the House to complain of the attack made by the Consul on the Senatorial Order. He was seconded by Crassus in a speech so eloquent that he was thought to have surpassed himself. Philippus replied in a furious invective, and declared that he would exact pledges for good conduct from the Orator. This called up Crassus again, and he attacked the Consul in a strain of indignation unusual to him. "Do you expect," he exclaimed, "to frighten me by exacting pledges? You must first cut out this

---

<sup>1</sup> This procedure was contrary to the Lex Caecilia Didia of 98 B.C.: Cicero, *de domo*, 16, 41.



tongue ; and even then love of liberty will find means to testify against depraved licence." The great Orator sat down amid general applause ; but his exertions brought on an attack of pleurisy, and in a week that eloquent tongue was mute for ever.

Now Drusus brought forward a proposal to confer the franchise on the Italians. This measure was unpopular with all parties. Drusus was accused of inciting the allies to revolt, and before long he knew that his life was in danger. For some time he had avoided public places, and received those who came to transact business with him in a covered walk behind his house. One evening, as he was dismissing his visitors, he cried out that he was stabbed, and fell to the ground. A leather-cutter's knife was found planted in his loins. He expired soon after, mournfully saying that it would be long before the Republic would have a servant so disinterested as himself.<sup>1</sup>

The excitement produced by this last disappointment of their hopes was great throughout the towns of Italy. It was greater still when a Tribune named Varius, a native of Sucro in Spain, who had become a Roman citizen, introduced a law by which it was declared that all who favoured Italian claims had been guilty of high treason against the People of Rome. Under this law Scaurus and the leading Senators were at once impeached. Some sought safety in exile. Antonius stood his trial, defended himself in a speech of passionate vehemence, and was acquitted. There was no evidence against Scaurus but the word of the accuser ; and the wary statesman contented himself with saying in defence : " Q. Varius, the Spaniard, says that M. Scaurus, the Chief of the Senate, has endeavoured to excite the allies to rebellion. Scaurus denies the fact. Choose ye, Quirites, which ye will believe." He was acquitted, and so disappears from the stage a man who for more than twenty years had been the virtual chief of Rome.

AUTHORITIES.—Appian, *B. C.*, i. 28-37 ; Plutarch, *Marius* and *Sulla* ; Livy (Epit.), lxix.-lxxi. ; [Aurelius Victor] *de viris ill.*, 66, 72, 73 ; Orosius, v. 17 ; Diodorus, xxxvi., xxxvii. ; Velleius, ii. 12-14 ; Dio, *fr.* 95-7. Most of our information about the characters of the statesmen of this period comes from the rhetorical and philosophical works of Cicero.

---

<sup>1</sup> For the various stories as to his death, see Ihne, v. 187.



Coin of the Italian nations, joining in an oath of federation (*Beschreibung d. ant. Münzen i.d. kön. Museen zu Berlin*, III. i. 57 sqq.).

## CHAPTER LII

### THE SOCIAL WAR. (B.C. 90, 89.)

THE occurrences described at the close of the last chapter embittered the Italians to the uttermost. The outbreak of war was precipitated by an unpremeditated act of violence.

Italy was at that time subject to the government of Proconsuls. One of these officers, named Servilius, stationed in the Picenian territory, received information that the citizens of *Outbreak at Asculum.* Asculum were organising insurrection. He immediately entered that city with a small retinue, and, finding the citizens assembled for some festal purpose, he assailed them with vehement threats. The people set upon him and slew him; and now that blood had been spilt, free vent was given to passion. All Romans dwelling in their city were massacred and their goods confiscated.

The news spread like wildfire. A general league was formed, which, besides the Picenians, embraced the brave Marsians, with their allied cantons—the Pelignians, *Italian league.* Marrucinians, and Vestinians—the Samnites, the Apulians, and the Lucanians. A formal statement of their claims was drawn up and despatched to Rome. “They had,” they said, “long done faithful service to the republic; they had furnished two-thirds of her armies; they had conquered the world for her, yet they were still treated like mere aliens.” The Senate stiffly replied, “that no embassies could be received till reparation was made for the late acts of violence.”

The steps taken by the eight allied nations showed the *Organisation of the league.* nature of the impending struggle. The question now was, not whether the Italians were to become citizens of Rome, but whether Rome was to continue to be mistress of the Italian confederation.

They declared Corfinium, a strong city in the Pelignian

Apennines, the capital of the new Italian league: henceforth it was to be called *Italia*.<sup>1</sup> Two Consuls were to be the chief officers of the league, each having six Praetors under his command. A Senate was formed for managing public business; everything showed the determination of the insurgent communities to supersede the authority of Rome.

No time was lost in debating. Q. Pompeidius Silo, a Marsian, and C. Papius Mutilus, a Samnite, were elected Consuls. In every quarter able officers started up who had learned the art of war in the Roman armies, some of them under Marius. The most eminent names are C. Judacilius, a Picenian of Asculum; Herius Asinius, a Marrucinian; Vettius Scato, probably a Marsian; T. Lafrenius, perhaps a Pelignian or Vestinian; Marius Egnatius, a Samnite; and M. Lamponius, of Lucania. The meagre accounts which remain to us of the Social War<sup>2</sup> make it difficult to distinguish between the merits of these commanders. Their proceedings seem to have been weakened by want of concentration, and forcibly recall to mind the struggling and indecisive conflicts which characterised the earlier part of our own Civil War, before the genius of Cromwell gave unity of purpose to the armies of the Parliament.

The outbreak of the war (90 B.C.) evidently took the Senate by surprise. Campania, the favoured and favourite land of the Roman nobles, fell into the hands of the enemy.

Nola was given up to the allies; Stabiae, Liternum, Salernum followed the example of Nola; Acerrae was closely invested by the Samnites. The Consuls

*Defeat and  
death of  
Rutilius  
Lupus.*

of the year were L. Julius Caesar and P. Rutilius Lupus. Caesar marched to relieve Acerrae, but without success; while his colleague advanced, with Marius for his legate, to the Liris. He was met by Scato with the Marsians. The Roman army was in two divisions, Rutilius himself commanding on the left, while Marius led the right to a point further down the stream. No sooner had Rutilius crossed the river with negligent haste than he was assaulted by the Marsians. The Roman army was utterly defeated, and Rutilius himself slain; Marius was apprised of the Consul's defeat only by the number of dead bodies that came slowly floating down the Liris.<sup>3</sup> The old general im-

<sup>1</sup> Many coins of the Confederacy bear the legend *ITALIA* or *Viteliu*.

<sup>2</sup> Cicero and other writers call the war, indifferently, by the names, *socialis*, *Italicum*, and *Marsicum*. Ihne (v. 219) summarises the gaps in our knowledge of its history.

<sup>3</sup> Appian, *B.C.*, i. 43. But Ovid, *Fasti*, vi. 563-6, places the defeat of Rutilius on the Tolenus, a small stream that joins the Velinus near Reatè.

mediately crossed the river and drove back the victorious enemy. The body of the Consul was sent to be interred publicly at Rome. But the consternation which prevailed there was raised to its height by this fatal spectacle, and the Senate issued a decree ordering that the bodies of the slain, however illustrious, should be buried in the place where they had fallen.

Marius himself maintained his reputation only by foiling the enemy in all attempts to force on a battle. Pompaedius Silo, it is said, challenged him to the field: "If he were the great general he was reported, to come out and fight." "Nay," retorted Marius, "if *you* are the great general you would fain be thought, make me come out and fight." Plutarch attributes his inactivity to his age (he was now above sixty-five), his corpulence, and the luxurious habits he had of late adopted. But subsequent events showed that he could be active enough when he pleased; and it is more than probable that Marius purposely abstained from acting with energy against the Italians, who had fought his battles in the field and supported his political agitation in the city.

The Consuls chosen for the next year were Cn. Pompeius Strabo, father of Pompey the Great, and L. Porcius Cato. Pompeius was a greedy and selfish, but able man; and he served the republic well in the ensuing campaign. Cato had just rendered a great service to the state by checking a threatened rising in Etruria.

But the Senate trusted not wholly to military ability. During the autumn serious deliberations were held as to the expediency of a compromise. Statesmen of the school of Scaurus advocated the affirmative side: the actual Consul L. Caesar, and the Consul-elect Cn. Pompeius, were both of this class. Besides the losses in Campania, all Samnium was in the hands of the enemy; in Apulia Canusium and even the Colony of Venusia had joined Judacilius; in Lucania Lamponius had driven Crassus into Grumentum. Unfavourable reports also came in from the north; it seemed likely that the Sabellian insurrection might spread over the whole of Italy. The Consul Caesar was by the Senate empowered to draw up a law, called after him the Julian Law, for granting the franchise to those of the allies who had taken no open part in the Social War. To show that the law was to be a reality, L. Caesar himself, with his adherent Crassus, were elected Censors for the year 89 B.C. to enrol the new citizens, though it was but eighteen months since the last Censors had laid down their office.

The effect of this timely concession immediately appeared: a

division of opinion was created in many of the insurgent communities. But in others it excited a still more vigorous determination. At first, the coins issued from the mint of the Confederates bore Latin legends ; but as the contest became embittered, the Oscan character was adopted, as if to show that the language of Rome was to be henceforth disused by the friends of Italy.<sup>1</sup> *Effect on the insurgents.*

But while the Senate prudently disarmed the wavering or the lukewarm, they made strenuous exertions to crush those who should continue the war. A portion of the allies, the Samnites above all, showed no inclination to accept favours from Rome : the deadly hostility of ancient times revealed itself in the fact that they scrupled not to send an embassy to solicit the aid of Mithridates. Desperate resolution could not be more strongly shown than by calling in an Asiatic monarch to share in the spoils of Italy. The same desperation appears in a proclamation offering freedom to all slaves who should enlist in the Italian army. *Hostility of the Samnites.*

Early in the spring of the next year (89 B.C.) the second campaign began. The Consul Pompeius Strabo moved northwards into the Picenian territory, while his colleague Cato marched against the Marsians. But Cato fell at the very outset of the campaign in an attack on the enemy's camp, and the chief command on the south of the Apennines fell to his lieutenant, Sulla. *Death of the Consul Cato.*

Sulla now exerted himself to the utmost to eclipse the military renown of his old commander, Marius. He took the field with a Roman division, supported by an auxiliary force of Numidians and Moors, raised probably through his personal influence in Africa ; and with these troops he advanced into Campania. The enemy contemptuously encamped at a distance of three *stadia* from him ; and a gigantic Gaul came out and challenged any of Sulla's men to single combat. The challenge was accepted by a Moor, whose adroitness enabled him to lay low his huge antagonist. On this, the Gauls in the enemy's host fled in consternation to Nola ; and Sulla followed so closely, that the people of that city dared not open both the gates to admit the fugitives, and a large number was cut off. The active Roman followed up his success vigorously ; and leaving part of his army to invest Nola, he entered the Hirpinian country. Its towns submitted, and Sulla prepared to pass into

---

<sup>1</sup> Friedländer, however, gives reasons for doubting (*Oskische Münzen*, 69) whether it is possible to discover the order in which the coins of the Confederacy appeared.

the Pentrian valleys, the last and strongest holds of Samnite freedom.

Meanwhile, the Consul Pompeius had been pursuing a course no less successful in the north. At first he had been defeated by Judacilius, who left Lafrenius to hold the Romans in check, while he repaired in person to Apulia. Pompeius now completely asserted the superiority of Rome. Lafrenius was defeated and slain, and Asculum, the first seat of the insurrection, was invested. As soon as this ill news reached Judacilius, he flew to the relief of his native city, but only succeeded so far as to cut his way through the Roman lines and enter the gates with a few brave men. The allies were now compelled to shift the seat of government from Corfinium to Bovianum, the chief stronghold of the Pentrian Samnites.

Here then the war was to be decided. While Pompeius was master of the north, Sulla was advancing from the south.

At this moment an attempt was made to negotiate. Pompeius and Scato had an interview, at which Cicero—then a youth of seventeen, serving his first campaign in the Consul's army—was present.<sup>1</sup> Sextus, the Consul's brother, came expressly from Rome to lend his good offices for promoting peace. "I am," said he to the Italian chief, "by choice your friend, your enemy by necessity." But the attempt proved unavailing.

Meanwhile, Sulla defeated the Samnite general Papius, and pushed on straight to Bovianum under the guidance of some of the townspeople attached to the Roman interest. The place was betrayed to him.

About the same time an answer arrived from Mithridates. He bade the allies hold out firmly; he was, he said, at present engaged in expelling the Romans from Asia; when that work was done he would cross the sea and assist them in crushing the she-wolf of Rome. But promises at such a juncture were equivalent to refusal.

On all hands, therefore, the fortune of Rome was in the ascendant. Judacilius, finding that he could hold Asculum no longer, put all his opponents to death; and then raised a funeral pile within consecrated ground, on which he gave a sumptuous entertainment to his friends. At the close of the feast he drank off a poisoned cup of wine, and bade his guests set fire to the pile. The place surrendered, and the Consul Pompeius treated the citizens with ruthless severity;

<sup>1</sup> Cic., *Phil.*, xii. 11, 27.



the officers and richer sort were beheaded, the rest driven forth to beg their bread. Among those reserved to grace his triumph was a boy named P. Ventidius Bassus, who afterwards became one of the best officers in the Roman army, and himself enjoyed a triumph for avenging the defeat of Crassus upon the Parthians. The Marsians, Vestinians, Pelignians, and Mar-  
 rucini-  
 ans now laid down their arms and submitted to Rome.<sup>1</sup> The brave Marsian chief, Pompaedius, fled into Apulia, pursued by Metellus Pius; and venturing to give battle, was defeated and slain. Venusia, and probably Canusium, were taken soon after. But Nola in Campania was still held by a Samnite garrison; and the Samnites themselves in their mountains, with the Lucanians, still defied the Roman arms.

*Surrender of  
all except  
Samnites and  
Lucanians.*

The successful issue of the war was not purchased without heavy losses on the side of Rome. It is stated that in the whole of this deadly struggle not fewer than 300,000 of the youth of Italy fell. The greater part of this enormous loss fell doubtless on the enemy. But when we speak of the enemy, it must be remembered that in every one who fell—whether Roman, Latin, or Italian—the republic lost a soldier.

*Great losses.*

When it was too late, the Senate showed themselves forward in concession. In the course of the second campaign, the Tribunes, M. Plautius Silvanus and C. Papirius Carbo, brought in a law supplementary to the Julian Law, by which its privileges were granted, not only to the Italian allies who had taken no open part in the war, but to the burgesses of all federate cities who were at that time domiciled in Italy, provided that they registered their names within sixty days.<sup>2</sup> The Consul Pompeius emulated his predecessor by proposing a law for advancing all the citizens of the Gallic communities beyond the Po to the condition of Latin burgesses.

*Lex Plautia  
Papiria.*

*Latin rights  
granted to  
Transpadane  
Gauls.*

The practical question that remained was the mode of admitting the new citizens. It is evident that there were two

<sup>1</sup> It may have been after the submission of these four nations that the allies struck money with four figures instead of eight (*B. M. C.*, vii. C. 14). The four shortly after fell to two. See the coins at the head and foot of this chapter. But Friedländer (*l.c.* 71) argues that the number of figures on the coins cannot be used as evidence in this connection. Neither Livy nor Appian enumerates exactly eight nations as joining in the war.

<sup>2</sup> The argument of Cicero in his well-known speech for the poet Archias turns upon the provisions of the *Lex Plautia Papiria*.

distinct ways in which this might be accomplished. First, the *Admission of* number of Tribes might have been retained as *new citizens.* it was ; and the Italians might either have been distributed through the whole thirty-five, or have been confined (like the freedmen) to a certain number. Of these plans, the former mode would have made the Italians masters of the Comitia on all occasions ; the latter looked like an insult and a degradation. Or, secondly, the number of Tribes might be increased, and the new Tribes reserved for the Italians. This was the plan proposed. The Censors, L. Caesar and P. Crassus, entered on their offices during the present year ; and in the course of the year (89 B.C.) they proposed to form ten new Tribes for the Italians alone, whose names were to be registered as Roman citizens of these Tribes.<sup>1</sup>

The difficulties attached to the question of enfranchising the Italians showed that it was not a merely factious opposition *Dangers of the* which had hitherto been offered. The Senate *situation.* indeed had shown an anxious disposition to settle the matter peaceably ; and the passing of the law to extend the franchise, before arms were laid down, proves that they had relaxed the stern maxim of the old republic : "Spare the submissive, and war down the proud." It was in fact impossible to adapt a constitution originally fitted for a small civic community to a great country. It was manifest that the Italians would not rest satisfied with the scanty share of direct power granted to them ; and yet it was hardly safe to grant them more, unless indeed some statesman in advance of his time had suggested a plan resembling the modern system of representative parliaments. But no such plan was thought of. It may be said that the partial admission of the Italians to the franchise annulled the old Roman constitution, and made an absolute monarchy almost a political necessity.

During the Social War the High Courts of Justice had been closed. Of the great advocates, Crassus was dead, Antonius *The law-* was absent from Rome, Cotta, who had aspired to *courts.* succeed to their fame, was in exile. Hortensius, who was fast establishing his claim to be considered the first orator of his day, was employed in the first year of the war as a mere legionary, in the second as a tribune. Sulpicius, another eloquent speaker, had served as a legate of the Consul Pompeius. Cicero, not yet eighteen, had just imbibed that distaste

---

<sup>1</sup> Appian, *B. C.*, i. 49. According to Velleius (ii. 20), they were confined to eight Tribes (selected, apparently, from those already existing). *Cp.* Beloch, *Italischer Bund*, 40.

for a military life which attached him ever after to the Forum.

AUTHORITIES.—Appian, *B. C.*, i. 38-53; Livy (Epit.), lxxii.-lxxvi.; Velleius, ii. 15-20; Diodorus, xxxvii.; Dio, *fr.* 98; Orosius, v. 18; Plutarch, *Marius*, *Sulla*, *Sertorius*. Keferstein, *De Bello Marsico*; Kiene, *Bundesgenossenkrieg*; Beloch, *Italischer Bund*.



Coin of the Confederates.

## CHAPTER LIII

### FIRST CIVIL WAR. (88-86 B.C.)

**MARIUS** was the cause of the first civil war ; but the person who gave occasion to its outbreak was Mithridates, king of Pontus. We have said that in the second year of the Social War this remarkable man encouraged the insurgents to hope for his support as soon as he had expelled the Romans from Asia. The details of this enterprise will be given in the next chapter. Here we must be content with stating that, before the end of the year 89 B.C., the Senate had determined upon war, and a commander was to be chosen. In the mind of Marius, this commander could be none other than himself ; he had long fixed his eye upon the East, and had done what in him lay to hasten a rupture. To keep himself before the eyes and minds of the People, he had left his sumptuous villa at Misenum for a house adjoining the Forum. He now constantly frequented that busy place ; and, notwithstanding his increasing age and corpulence, again joined in the military exercises of the Campus, trusting that he should be always in the sight of the People. But the glory won by Sulla in the Social War marked him as the person to whom the command was due ; and, as he was Consul-elect, his appointment was regarded as a matter of course. In the heart of Marius jealousy and hatred were made intense by disappointment ; and he determined, cost what it might, to secure the command for himself.

The business of farming the revenue increased every day the wealth of the Equestrian Order. To them all who needed money resorted. They demanded high rates of interest ; but lavish expenditure was the fashion among the young Nobles. Some of those who were heavily burthened with debt raked up an old law by which it was forbidden to take interest for money, and refused to pay more than

*Sulla appointed commander against Mithridates.*

*Murder of Asellio.*

was by this law allowed.<sup>1</sup> A case was brought before the Praetor Asellio, who allowed the noble debtors to prosecute their creditors for usury. The fury of the Knights rose to the utmost : Asellio was assaulted and murdered. Here is a fore-taste of the times of Catiline.

Among the Tribunes of the year 88 B.C. was P. Sulpicius, a master of lofty and pathetic eloquence,<sup>2</sup> who had been a friend of the unfortunate Drusus, and was animated by bitter enmity against Q. Pompeius Rufus, Sulla's colleague in the Consulship.<sup>3</sup> This was the person whom old Marius now selected as his political agent, as he had formerly chosen Saturninus. Marius held up before his ardent imagination the treasures of Mithridates, making large promises of what might be expected if the command were transferred to himself. Sulpicius caught eagerly at the offer.<sup>4</sup>

There was no inclination among the People of Rome to supersede Sulla. But if the Italians could exercise a weight in the Comitia proportional to their numbers, it was plain that Marius, always a favourite with the Italian countrymen, would be secure of the appointment. Sulpicius, therefore, boldly gave notice of a sweeping measure of reform, by which the new Italian citizens and the freedmen were to be distributed evenly through all the Tribes, and so placed on a level with the old citizens. Thus in every Tribe the new citizens, with the freedmen, would form a majority, and thus (it was calculated) the votes of the Tribes would be at the disposal of Marius.<sup>5</sup>

It was not to be expected that the old citizens would tamely submit to be overridden. As the day for voting drew nigh, battles with stones and staves were of daily occurrence. The Consuls endeavoured to postpone the day of conflict by proclaiming a *iustitium* or general holiday, the effect of which was to suspend all public business. But the Tribune determined to proceed to a vote, just as if the

<sup>1</sup> Page 161.

<sup>2</sup> "Maxime omnium . . . grandis et, ut ita dicam, tragicus orator." —Cic., *Brut.*, 55, 203.

<sup>3</sup> Cic., *Lael.*, I.

<sup>4</sup> This is the view of Sulpicius' action which is given in Appian and Plutarch; but both those writers reproduce the Sullan tradition. Mommsen thinks (iii. 531) that his original motive was a desire to remedy the social and political difficulties of his time, while his alliance with Marius was an afterthought for the sake of procuring help.

<sup>5</sup> He is also said to have proposed that every Senator who owed more than 2000 *denarii* should lose his seat in the Senate, and that exiles accused of complicity in the Italian revolt should be recalled.

Consuls had issued no proclamation, and ordered a body of 3000 young men to attend him, with concealed daggers, in the Forum : they were to strike when he commanded, not sparing even the Consuls, if need were. On the appointed day the Tribune rose, and, declaring the public holiday illegal, he called on the Consuls to recall their proclamation and suffer business to go on. A loud outcry arose from the old citizens, upon which, at a sign from the Tribune, his adherents drew their daggers. Their opponents fled. Pompeius only escaped by hiding himself ; his son, who was married to Sulla's daughter, was ruthlessly murdered. Sulla fled into the house of Marius, which faced the Forum, whence he was obliged to return and declare the *iustitium* at an end. The law then passed without opposition ; and, as a matter of course, the command in the Mithridatic war was transferred to Marius.

Sulla went straight from the Forum to his camp before Nola (for the Samnites had not yet surrendered that town), with the purpose of hurrying to the East. But he had already been superseded ; and two officers arrived in camp bearing a commission from Marius to assume the command. Sulla was now compelled to take a decisive part. Either he must submissively resign or must vindicate his right by force. The name of civil war was not yet familiar to Roman ears ; and before he committed himself to actual hostilities, he resolved to sound the inclinations of his troops. He summoned them to the *praetorium*. He enlarged on the insults that had been offered to himself ; told them that, if the command were given to Marius, other soldiers would be enlisted, so that their hopes of booty from the Mithridatic war must end ; and concluded by a hope that they would obey his orders. The men gave a ready interpretation to his last words by calling upon him to lead them to Rome, and proved their zeal by stoning to death the officers sent by Marius. Sulla, fully assured, ordered six legions to get under arms. The superior officers, however, shrunk from lending countenance to civil war ; and all, save one Quaestor, fled to Rome.

In the city the consternation was great. The Senate, more from fear of Marius than of their own good will, sent to demand of Sulla why he was in arms against his country. *Sulla marches on Rome.* "To set her at liberty," was the only answer he vouchsafed. The Praetors then went out, invested with all the ensigns of their office : but the soldiers broke their *fascies* and stripped them of their robes. Sulla meantime continued to advance, and was joined by his colleague and kinsman, Q. Pom-



peius Rufus, so that henceforth all his acts ran in the joint name of the two Consuls of the year—a fact which must have had great authority over men's minds.

The prompt audacity of Sulla took Marius and Sulpicius by surprise. They had not calculated on his daring to march a Roman army against Rome. To gain time they sent a last embassy, in the name of the Senate, requesting the Consuls to halt the army, which was now about five miles from Rome, till the Fathers had come to some resolution. Sulla promised to comply, but no sooner had the envoys turned their backs, than he despatched two officers with a detachment to seize the Esquiline Gate and the adjoining portions of the wall. By a rapid march they were enabled to seize the gate and penetrate into the city, but their progress was stopped by the people, who threw tiles and stones upon them from the house-tops. Meantime the Consuls had come up with their whole force. Pompeius pushed forward with one legion and took possession of the Colline Gate; another legion seized the Caelimontane Gate; a third turned the Aventine and occupied the Sublician Bridge; a fourth was left in reserve before the walls; while Sulla with the remaining two entered the city.

His opponents, meantime, had assembled a considerable force, and in the market-place near the Esquiline Gate Roman soldiers for the first time encountered their countrymen within the walls of Rome. Sulla's men were *Battle in Rome.* beaten back, till, seizing an eagle, he threw himself into the thick of the fray. Meanwhile his reserve legion entered the city and attacked Marius in the rear from the Subura. The old general, finding his position turned, retreated to the Capitol, whence he issued a proclamation offering liberty to all slaves who would join his banner. But this desperate act only revealed his weakness, and even those who had hitherto supported him dispersed. Marius and Sulpicius, with all their chief friends, sought safety in flight.

Meantime Sulla had marched his legions in good order down the Sacred Way into the Forum, and restored public confidence by inflicting summary punishment upon all plunderers. Next morning he addressed the People *Marius outlawed.* in a set speech, deploring the extremity to which he had been forced by profligate demagogues. From the Forum the Consuls proceeded to the Senate-house. A decree was issued, by which twelve persons were proclaimed traitors. Among these the most eminent were Marius, his son, his step-son Granius, and the Tribune Sulpicius. Against this arbitrary decree no one had courage to raise a voice except Q. Scaevola, the Augur.

"Never," said the old lawyer, "will I consent to declare Gaius Marius an outlaw."

All the proclaimed persons had escaped. But Sulpicius, who had secreted himself in a villa near Laurentum, was betrayed by a slave and slain. His head was exposed upon the *rostra*, from which his eloquence had so often moved the people to tears—the first example of a barbarous practice which became common in after years. The treacherous slave was rewarded by Sulla for doing his duty to the state, and then thrown down the Tarpeian Rock for betraying his master—a perfidious judgment, characteristic of a country where slaves are numerous and held in fear. The masters dare not recognise them as free men, even where the public interest is most concerned.

Marius himself ran through a series of adventures strange as ever were coined by the brain of a romancer. He reached Ostia in company with Granius his step-son and a few slaves; hence they proposed to take ship for Africa, where Marius had much influence, derived from the times of the Jugurthan War. When young Marius, who had been sent to get provisions, arrived at Ostia, he found that his father had put to sea. By a lucky chance, however, he found a vessel sailing for Africa, and reached that Province in safety. Meantime, old Marius was by stress of weather driven to land near Circeii. From this place the party wandered southward along the desolate shore in great distress, till some herdsmen, who recognised the old general, warned him that a party of cavalry was close at hand. Not daring to keep the road, the fugitives plunged into the forest near the coast. Here they passed the night in great misery, and next morning continued their forlorn walk. Marius alone kept up his spirits and encouraged his attendants by assurances that a seventh Consulship was yet in store for him. With difficulty they managed to drag their weary limbs over a space of about forty miles direct distance, when they saw a body of horse coming towards them. It happened that two merchant vessels were passing southwards close in shore. The fugitives plunged into the sea, and made for the ships. Granius reached one of them, and was put ashore on the island of Pithecusa (*Ischia*). So unwieldy was Marius that he was hardly kept above water by two slaves, till they got him on board the other vessel. Meantime, the horsemen rode down to the water's edge, and, calling out to the seamen, demanded the person of Marius. With tears the old general besought protection; and after much wavering the men continued their course. When they reached the mouth of the Liris,

they persuaded Marius to go ashore, as it was necessary to lie to till the land-wind rose. But no sooner had they landed Marius than the faithless seamen got under way, and Marius was left absolutely alone upon the swampy beach. He walked wearily to an old man's hut, who concealed him in a hole near the river and covered him with reeds. Presently some of his pursuers came up and demanded where Marius was. Afraid of being discovered, the fugitive rose from his hiding-place and dashed into the marsh. He was perceived and dragged out, and his captors conveyed him, nearly naked and covered with mud, to Minturnæ. Here he was given over to the magistrates of the town, who had received a circular letter from Rome, ordering them to put Marius to death if he should fall into their hands. But the magistrates, not liking to incur such responsibility, referred the matter to the Town Council.

The Council voted that Sulla's orders should be obeyed, and a Gaulish slave<sup>1</sup> was sent with orders to put the old general to death. The room in which Marius was lying was dark, and as the slave entered he saw the old man's eyes glaring through the gloom, while a deep voice exclaimed: "Fellow, darest thou slay Gaius Marius?" He threw down his sword and fled, crying: "I cannot slay Gaius Marius." By the connivance of the magistrates, the fugitive escaped to Ischia, where he joined Granius, and a friendly ship was found to convey him to Africa. Hearing that his son had already arrived, he was emboldened to land near the site of ancient Carthage. But the Praetor Sextilius sent him orders to quit the Province without delay. Marius with silent indignation gazed fixedly on the messenger, till the man demanded what answer he should take back to the Praetor. "Tell him," said the old general, "that you have seen Gaius Marius in exile, sitting among the ruins of Carthage."

Soon after, he was joined by his son, who had endeavoured to gain support from Hiempsal, king of Numidia. The young man had been received with outward kindness, but was in fact detained as prisoner, till he was taught to escape by the compassion of one of the king's mistresses. Father and son found refuge in the island of Cercina off the coast of Tunis.

Meanwhile Sulla at Rome was not without his difficulties. There is little doubt that both Senate and People were shocked by the intrusion of armed legions within the sacred precincts of the city: at all events, he thought it prudent to send back the troops to their old quarters in Cam-

---

<sup>1</sup> Another form of the tradition calls the slave a *Cimbrian*, which adds point to the story.

pania, while he remained himself to settle matters in his own favour, before he took his departure for the East. He had already caused the laws of Sulpicius to be declared null and void; and thus the Italian voters were again deprived of the advantages granted them by one provision of those laws, while Sulla's appointment to the Oriental command resumed its force.<sup>1</sup> But there was no disposition to favour him, and he was unable to control the Consular elections. The choice fell upon Cn.

*Oath of Cinna.* Octavius, a feeble nobleman, given to superstitious reverence for astrologers,<sup>2</sup> and upon L. Cornelius Cinna. It is plain that the latter was an object of suspicion to Sulla's observant eye; for before he assumed office he was compelled by the general to repair to the Temple of Capitoline Jupiter, and there solemnly to swear that he would not disturb the existing order of things.

Again, Cn. Pompeius Strabo, still commanding as Proconsul in Italy, had been superseded by Q. Pompeius Rufus, Sulla's kinsman and late colleague. But no sooner had Strabo affected to give up his command than Rufus was murdered by the soldiers. The wily Proconsul immediately returned to the camp, and, after rebuking the mutineers with apparent sternness, quietly resumed the command; nor was Sulla strong enough to take notice of this piece of preconcerted treachery. Indeed his own position was very insecure. Plots were formed against his life, and the murder of his colleague was a token of what might next be his own fate. Cinna urged one of the Tribunes to impeach him for bringing an army within the walls of Rome; upon which the general hastened to Campania, and shipped his troops for Greece, leaving the aristocracy to fight their own battle.

His departure was the signal for a fresh outbreak of civil war. Cinna, an ambitious, unprincipled, and reckless man, perceived that he could raise himself to importance by putting himself at the head of the new citizens, or Italian party, who had been left without leaders by the death of Sulpicius and the flight of Marius. He at once gave notice of a bill for again distributing the Italians and freedmen through all the tribes, with another for recalling old Marius and his friends from exile. These measures were

<sup>1</sup> Appian (*B. C.*, i. 59) tells us that Sulla passed laws at this time, limiting the powers of the Tribunes, making the Senate's consent necessary to the consideration of any measure by the People, and reforming the *comitia centuriata*. See Mommsen, iii. 541.

<sup>2</sup> "Chaldaeans," as they were called. See Furneaux on Tac., *Ann.*, ii. 27. 2; Pauly, *R. E.*,<sup>2</sup> "CHALDAIOI."

warmly opposed by the Senate and by the old citizens. On the day of voting, Cinna's party occupied the Forum, armed secretly with daggers; and when it appeared that some of the Tribunes were about to interpose their veto, they drew their weapons upon those officers. The old citizens, headed by Octavius, opposed force by force; and a furious battle ensued, which ended in the Italians being driven from the Forum.<sup>1</sup> Cinna was obliged to quit Rome, whereupon the Senate deprived him of the Consular office, and it was conferred on L. Cornelius Merula, Flamen of Jupiter, an inoffensive man, who allowed the perilous honour to be thrust upon him.

Cinna was now completely compromised, and he took the bold step of trusting himself to the troops left by Sulla before Nola, who were discontented at being excluded from participating in the gains of the Mithridatic war. With passionate words he told the soldiery

*The army at  
Nola declares  
for Cinna.*

that the Senate had stripped him of the high office which had been conferred by the votes of the People; and then he rent his robe and threw himself on the ground. The unwonted sight of a Consul in this attitude moved the susceptible feelings of the men. All took the oath of obedience to him as Consul. But Cinna not only addressed himself to the Roman soldiers who were beleaguering Nola; he also invited the Samnite garrison of Nola to make common cause with him against the old Roman citizens. In a similar strain he declaimed in the towns of Italy which had lately been engaged in the Social War. Everywhere he was received with enthusiasm. The Social War was revived under a different aspect. A Consul appeared as a leader of the Italians, and Marius, the greatest general of Rome, was known to favour their claims. Cinna was soon at the head of a formidable army. Among the officers who accepted commissions from him may be named Cn. Papirius Carbo and Q. Sertorius, men who played great parts in the following years.

News of these proceedings soon reached old Marius in Africa, where he assembled about a thousand Numidians, and, landing in Etruria, he soon found himself in command of a large force, which was brought into order by his habits of command. He also made himself master of a small fleet. He was now in a condition to treat with Cinna, and offered to accept a commission under him as Consul. Cinna's

*Return of  
Marius.*

<sup>1</sup> With the loss of nearly 10,000 men, according to Plutarch, *Sertor.*, 4. This period of the civil war is called *bellum Octavianum* by Cicero (*de Div.*, i. 2, 4; *de Nat. Deor.*, ii. 5, 14; *Phil.*, xiv. 8, 23).



officers advised him to close with this offer, all except Sertorius. This sagacious man, who had gained distinction in the war against the allies, feared the savage temper of his old general, and advised Cinna not to compromise his cause by uniting it to that of Marius. But when Cinna confessed that he had opened a correspondence with Marius in Africa, Sertorius withdrew his objections. Cinna offered to Marius the rank of Proconsul. But the old man grimly refused all marks of honour.

Meanwhile the Senate had been exerting themselves to collect troops for the defence of the city from the friendly states of Italy and from Cisalpine Gaul. They sent orders to Pompeius Strabo to bring up his army. They directed Metellus Pius, who was employed in reducing the Samnites, to make what terms he could with the enemy, and hasten to Rome. Metellus lingered; Pompeius advanced to the Colline Gate, where he maintained an obstinate reserve, and seemed uncertain whether he should join the Senate or go over to Marius. At length he declared for the Senate, but still refrained from active measures, hoping probably to be able to dictate terms to both parties.

The armies of the assailants now drew close round Rome, so as to invest it on every side. Cinna and Carbo took post on the right bank of the Tiber, opposite the city, so as to bar all passage from Etruria and the north-west. Sertorius lay on their left, close on the Tiber, so as to command the north roads. Marius himself took up his position on the left bank, so as to communicate with Sertorius by his right and with his fleet at Ostia by his left. The Tiber also was barred, so as to stop supplies coming down the stream. Thus placed, with large forces at their command, the allied generals calculated on reducing the city by famine.

Pompeius, after aiding Octavius in an attempt upon Janiculum, was struck dead by lightning,<sup>1</sup> and a plague broke out which decimated the Senatorial army. By this time Metellus had quitted Samnium, and encamped upon the Alban Hills. Here he was visited by some of the soldiers of Pompeius, who in vain entreated him to take the chief command. Great part of his troops, tired of inaction, deserted; and the Senate, left almost defenceless, determined on attempting negotiations. A deputation of Senators now arrived in the camp of Cinna, which had been shifted to the Appian Way, about twelve miles

---

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen (iv. 64) takes the words *adflatus sidere* to mean that he died of the pestilence.



from Rome. Cinna prefaced all proceedings by asking whether they were prepared to treat with him "as Consul." They had no instructions on this point, and returned to Rome, while Cinna advanced his camp within a dart's throw of the gates. A second deputation arrived, and humbly saluted him as Consul. He received them sitting in his chair of state. The deputies asked nothing more than that before entering the city he would take an oath not to suffer a general massacre. Cinna answered gently, and promised not to authorise any slaughter; but all hopes inspired by the moderation of his language were damped by the aspect of old Marius. He stood beside the Consul's chair, in mean apparel, with his hair and beard rough and long (for they had been left untrimmed ever since the day on which he had fled from Rome), and with a sullen frown upon his brow. But the Senate had little room for choice. Hastily they passed a decree, inviting Cinna, Marius, and their partisans to enter the city. Marius ironically replied, that he had been formally proclaimed a traitor, and must be formally restored to his rights. But before a vote could be procured, he had entered the city with the army.

Rome was treated as a conquered city. The soldiers, consisting of slaves and vagabonds of all kinds, combined with Italians smarting from the late war, were let loose to plunder. The unfortunate Octavius, assured by his astrologers, was slain while seated in his Consular chair upon the Janiculum. His slaughter was but the prelude to a series of horrible butcheries. Marius had returned to Italy full of the memory of his ignominious flight. He was attended everywhere by a band of ruffians, who had orders to strike down any person of rank whom their master passed without the courtesy of a salute. His enemies in the Senate were among his first victims. P. Lentulus, C. Numitorius, M. Baebius, and others were cut down, and their bodies dragged through the public places. P. Crassus, seeing his son slain before his eyes, fell upon his own sword and was then cut down by the pursuers. L. Caesar, author of the law for enfranchising the Italians, and his brother Gaius, were murdered in their own houses. Q. Ancharius came in suppliant guise to Marius, when he was sacrificing in the Capitol; but the relentless old man ordered the suppliant to be cut down in the very precincts of the Temple and his body cast into the street. The example of Marius was followed by all who had private wrongs to avenge, or debts to cancel. Many Knights were massacred, doubtless by their debtors. Slaves, drunk with passion and licence, wreaked a less discriminating vengeance upon all who fell in their way. But

*The Marian  
massacre.*

here it must be recorded that many were saved by the devotion of their household slaves. Cornutus was pursued to his house by some of the gang of Marius; his slaves hung up one of the corpses, which were but too plentiful, with a gold ring upon the hand; and when the murderers burst into the house, these faithful slaves pretended that the deed of blood had been already done, and by this pious fraud saved their master.<sup>1</sup> The orator Antonius, who had espoused Sulla's cause, escaped from Rome, and was concealed by a countryman in his cottage. But this man's simple slave, in buying wine, told the vintner that he must have good liquor, since it was (he whispered) for the special use of the great orator Antonius. The treacherous dealer hastened with the news to Marius, who ordered the orator's head to be brought to him, and placed it on the table as the chief ornament of the banquet.

Cinna soon became weary of bloodshed. Sertorius looked on with very deep disgust, especially when he saw a large body of the enfranchised slaves giving a loose to every licentious passion with a Bacchanalian glee which excites pity, not only for the sufferers, but also for those who by ill-treatment had been degraded into savages. By the permission of the Consul, Sertorius fell upon them while asleep, with a body of his own troops, and slew them to a man. By this rude justice order was in some degree restored.

But some persons who had escaped the massacre had been too conspicuous to remain unpunished, and against them the mockery of legal forms was put in motion. The most eminent of these were L. Cornelius Merula, Flamen of Jupiter, and Q. Lutatius Catulus, colleague of Marius in his Cimbric triumph. Merula was a quiet and respectable man, whose only offence was that he had unwillingly superseded Cinna in the Consulship. For this he was indicted; and knowing that indictment was equivalent to condemnation, he repaired to the great Temple on the Capitol, and opening his veins bled to death. Catulus had offended Marius by advocating his exile. Some influential friends endeavoured to awaken in the breast of the stern old man some generous memory of the days when he had refused to triumph over the barbarians without Catulus to share his triumph. But in vain. "He must die," was the only answer vouchsafed. Catulus shut himself up in a newly-plastered room, lighted a charcoal fire, and died by suffocation. Sulla himself was beyond reach; but his house was razed to the ground, his property confiscated,

<sup>1</sup> For another story of faithful slaves, see Seneca, *de ben.*, iii. 23.

and himself proclaimed a traitor. His wife Caecilia<sup>1</sup> and his children fled to join him in Greece.

Of all Senators put to death in these days of terror, the heads were exposed upon the *rostra*, a ghastly tribute to the *manes* of the Tribune Sulpicius, who was the first Roman citizen thus dishonoured. The bodies of all were left unburied, to be devoured by dogs and birds. But it must be observed that the massacre of Marius differed widely from the proscriptions of later times. It was a burst of savage passion, which lasted for five days only, and was not marked by any systematic rules of murder and confiscation.

The short remainder of the year passed in gloomy tranquillity. News of Sulla's victories in the East from time to time disturbed the satisfaction of the conquerors. But for the present they were absolute. Cinna remained sole Consul till the Calends of January of 86 B.C., when Marius for the seventh time, and Cinna for the second, assumed the *fascēs*. On the first day of his authority, Marius ordered one Sext. Licinius, a Senator, to be thrown down the Tarpeian Rock, without even the form of trial—a sad presage of what might follow. But Marius, since his return, had given himself to wine and riotous living; and his iron constitution, worn out by former labours and especially by his late strange sufferings, sank under an inflammatory fever. The hero of six Consulships died in thirteen days after he had seen his cherished expectations fulfilled by the seventh tenure of that high office—hated by his enemies, feared even by his friends.

*Character of the massacre.*

*Seventh Consulship of Marius. His death.*

AUTHORITIES.—Appian, *B. C.* i. 54-75; Plutarch, *Marius*, *Sulla*, *Sertorius*, *Pompeius*; Livy (Epit.), lxxvii., lxxix., lxxx.; Florus, iii. 21; Diodorus, xxxvii.; Granius Licinianus, p. 23 *sqq.*; Dio, *fr.* 102; Velleius, ii. 18-22; Orosius, v. 19; [Cic.] *ad Her.*, ii. 28, 45.

---

<sup>1</sup> She was a daughter of Metellus Dalmaticus and widow of Scaurus.



Coin bearing the head of Nicomedes II. of Bithynia.  
(Head, *H.N.*, 445-6.)

## CHAPTER LIV

### FIRST MITHRIDATIC WAR. (88-84 B.C.)

IT will be necessary to go back in order to gain a clear perception of the causes which led to the Mithridatic War.

After the battle of Magnesia, Asia Minor was broken up into a number of petty principalities, jealous of one another. Eumenes *State of Asia Minor.* of Pergamus was rewarded by the addition of Lydia and some other districts to his rule ; but in time the kingdom of Pergamus became a Roman Province under the proud title of Asia,<sup>1</sup> just as the name of Africa had been bestowed on the Province formed out of the territory of Carthage. Bithynia to the north, since Prusias declared his inability to protect Hannibal, had fallen completely under Roman influence, and was for many years governed by Nicomedes II., grandson of Prusias. Cappadocia also had been left subject to a prince named Ariarathes. Lastly, Galatia, not yet united into one principality, was ruled by native chiefs.

But a country beyond these distant realms demands our chief attention. During the weakness of the later Persian monarchy, *Kingdom of Pontus.* the Satrap of Pontus, that is, of the mountainous country along the south shore of the Euxine from the Halys eastward, had asserted his independence. In the wars between the successors of Alexander, the ruler of Pontus, Mithridates by name, raised his principality to a kingdom. His descendants extended their power over part of Cappadocia and

<sup>1</sup> Hence it is that persons, being already in Phrygia or Galatia, speak of going into *Asia*, as in the Acts of the Apostles, xvi. 6 ; *cp.* xix. 22, 26, 27, etc.

Paphlagonia, till Mithridates V., called Euergetes, assisted Rome in her war against Aristonicus, and was rewarded with the greater portion of Phrygia.<sup>1</sup> This Mithridates was assassinated at Sinopé, his capital, about the year 120 B.C., and was succeeded by his son Mithridates VI., commonly called Dionysos or Eupator, who was then a boy of about twelve years old.<sup>2</sup> This was the man who became famous as the competitor of Rome for the sovereignty of the East.

In later times it was remembered that at his birth, and also in the year of his accession, a comet blazed in the heavens, so large in size as to reach over a fourth part of the sky—a sign of his destined greatness. But during *Youth of Mithridates.* his boyhood the fates seemed adverse. The Senate revoked the gift conferred upon his father. His guardians attempted his life both by poison and the dagger; but he escaped all perils marvellously. It was commonly believed that his constitution was enabled to defy the attacks of poison by the habitual use of antidotes. What education he received was given by Greek masters of Sinopé. So excellent was his memory that he is said to have been master of five-and-twenty languages, so as to be able to converse in their own tongue with all the tribes who composed his motley empire. His cultivated taste is disclosed by the artistic skill displayed in the execution of his coins. The great silver piece bearing the head of Mithridates is one of the most admirable medals that came from the ancient mints.<sup>3</sup> He was fond of hunting in the mountains of Pontus, and thus obtained vigour of constitution, quickness of eye, and promptness of decision. In all respects he stood far above the common run of Oriental despots.

When he undertook the government, he secured himself at home by the murder of his nearest relatives. Finding his neighbours, Nicomedes of Bithynia and Ariarathes of Cappadocia, secured by Roman protection, he *His conquests on the Euxine.* sought scope for his military ambition in the countries to the north of Caucasus. The Hellenic settlements in the Crimea and along the coasts of the Euxine were hard pressed by the barbarous tribes of the Steppes above them, and gladly accepted the protection of Mithridates. He now took possession of the Crimea, where coins bearing his name have been found in modern

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* Mommsen, iii. 281.

<sup>2</sup> On his coins the name is spelt Mithradates (from the Persian god Mithras). The Romans changed it, as was their wont. So, for instance, *Μασσαλία* became in Latin Massilia, *Μασσανάσσης*, Masinissa, etc.

<sup>3</sup> Hill, *G. and R. Coins*, Pl., x. 7.

times. The whole eastern coastland of the Euxine, known to the Greeks under the name of Colchis, as well as the country between the Hypanis (*Kuban*) and the Borysthenes, owned his sway. On the east he strengthened himself by alliance with *Tigranes*. Tigranes, king of Armenia, who married his daughter; and having thus, in the course of about thirty years from his accession (120-90 B.C.), raised himself to the possession of a formidable empire, he considered himself not unequal to a conflict with Rome herself.

It was probably shortly before the year 100 B.C. that the state of Cappadocia invited the interference of Rome.<sup>1</sup> Ariarathes, king of the country, had married a sister of Mithridates, but had been put to death by his agency; and, after some contest between Mithridates and Nicomedes of Bithynia, the choice of a new king was referred to the judgment of Rome. The Senate authorised the Cappadocians to elect Ariobarzanes, a native chief. He was presently driven out by the king of Pontus, but was restored (as has been stated) by Sulla, Mithridates not venturing to resist (92 B.C.).

Two years later the Social War broke out. Mithridates availed himself of the opportunity afforded by the disturbances in the west to extend his own power in the east. Nicomedes of Bithynia was just dead, and the king of Pontus assumed the right of appointing his successor. He also interfered again in Cappadocia, and Ariobarzanes was again forced to relinquish his throne. The Senate were too much occupied at home to attend to these proceedings till late in the year 89 B.C., when M<sup>r</sup>. Aquillius, the conqueror of the slaves in Sicily, was sent to restore the son of Nicomedes to the throne of Bithynia, and Ariobarzanes to that of Cappadocia. Mithridates again yielded, and the fugitive kings again took possession of their thrones; but young Nicomedes, compelled to make a largess to those who had restored him, was advised by Aquillius to raise the necessary money by an inroad into the dominions of the king of Pontus. Mithridates at once despatched an envoy to headquarters to make complaints of Nicomedes.

The Roman officers gravely heard the Pontic envoys, and dismissed them without a satisfactory answer. Mithridates probably expected this result, and resolved to take the law into his own hands. His generals, the brothers Neoptolemus and Archelaus, fell upon Nicomedes and utterly

<sup>1</sup> We hear of ambassadors from Mithridates in Rome in 103 B.C. See Mommsen, iv. 19.



defeated him. Aquillius and other Roman officers, who had proposed to support the Bithynian king, were unable to execute their design ; and the road to the Roman Province lay open to Mithridates.

Without hesitation he pushed forward at the head of his victorious troops. Almost everywhere his advent was welcomed as that of a deliverer. Aquillius sought shelter in Mitylené, but the Lesbians delivered him up to Mithridates, who carried him round the cities of the Province seated upon an ass, forcing him to proclaim that "he was Manius," and that to his covetous dealing the war was due. He was then put to death by having molten gold poured down his throat.<sup>1</sup>

To justify the character of deliverer, Mithridates set free all prisoners of Asiatic race, excused men from taxation for five years, and remitted the arrears due to the Roman government. All that Asiatic enthusiasm could bestow of honour was heaped upon him. He was welcomed at the gates of every city by festal processions. He was saluted as the preserver of Asia, as Dionysos her present and protecting Deity. During the winter he took up his residence at Pergamus, and celebrated his nuptials with a young Greek of Stratoniceia. But while he seemed to be given up to enjoyment, an edict went forth to every city in the Province of Asia, ordering the people to massacre all the Italians found within their borders. This savage order was obeyed with alacrity. On one day not less than 80,000 persons were slaughtered.

A wider field now opened itself to the ambition of Mithridates. His fleet, under the command of Archelaus, his best general, appeared at Delos, the chief mart of Roman trade in the Archipelago. Here and in most of the islands, all partisans of Rome were massacred as in Asia. Aristion, an Epicurean philosopher of Athens, persuaded the people of that famous city to rise against Rome, assumed sovereign power, and invited Mithridates to support the revolt. Archelaus was despatched to Peiræus at the head of a large force. Most of the Greek communities followed the example of Athens.

Such was the state of things when Sulla landed in Epirus with about 30,000 men (87 B.C.). He spent some time in Aetolia and Thessaly to collect supplies, and then, advancing to Athens, attempted to take Peiræus by escalade ;

*Death of  
Aquillius.*

*Massacre of  
Italians.*

*Athens and  
Greece join  
Mithridates.*

*Siege of  
Peiræus.*

<sup>1</sup> Appian, xii. 21. But Granius Licinianus, p. 35, represents Aquillius as still alive at the end of the war.

but the walls were the walls of Themistocles, nearly 70 feet high, and regularly built of massive stone. The rash attempt was repulsed, and the Roman general found it necessary to besiege the place in form. The stones of the Long Walls were used to form a great embankment sloping upwards against the walls of the place. When all was ready, two huge battering-towers were brought up this inclined plane, and began to play upon the walls ; but Archelaus baffled all the skill and industry of the Roman engineers, and repelled every assault.

Winter was now far spent, and Sulla, despairing of the capture of Peiræus, unless he became master of the sea, sent L. Licinius *Fall of Athens.* Lucullus, afterwards famous, who was then serving as Quaestor, to collect ships from Egypt, Rhodes and Syria. Meanwhile Sulla determined to employ his whole force in taking the city of Athens. During the siege of Peiræus, the blockade of the city, distant about five miles, had been steadily continued. Aristion and his courtiers lived in luxury ; but the people were reduced to the extremity of famine ; and, but for the strength of the walls, they could have offered little resistance. After some time a weak place was found, and the whole besieging army poured in. Sulla, enraged by the part taken by the Athenians, left the soldiery to wreak their passion on the miserable citizens. Aristion with a few troops had withdrawn into the Acropolis. But want of water soon obliged him to surrender at discretion.

Athens was taken on the 1st March, 86 B.C. ; and Sulla's whole force being now available, he determined to attempt a *Fall of Peiræus.* fresh assault upon Peiræus, though Lucullus had not yet returned. Archelaus had been expecting succours sent through Macedonia under command of the king's son. But the young prince had died, leaving Taxiles in command. This general halted in Thessaly and sent for Archelaus, who immediately sailed to Thermopylae, where Taxiles joined him. Peiræus now surrendered, and Sulla avenged himself for his long disappointment by burning the dockyards and arsenals and all the buildings of old historic fame in that celebrated place.

Meanwhile, Archelaus and Taxiles were advancing from Thermopylae with their combined forces, in the hope of surprising *Battle of Chaeroneia.* Sulla within the confines of Attica. But the active Roman marched northward into Boeotia, and met them in that country. The army of the Mithridatic generals is stated at 100,000 men, with 10,000 horse and 90 scythed cars ; that of Sulla (says Plutarch) was reduced to 15,000 men, with

a small body of cavalry.<sup>1</sup> The armies met at Chaeroneia, nearly on the same ground on which, two hundred and fifty years before, Philip of Macedon had overthrown the Athenian army and made himself master of the liberties of Greece. A desperate conflict ensued, in which the steady discipline of the Roman legionaries prevailed, and the battle ended in the complete overthrow of the Pontic army. Archelaus was not able to collect above 10,000 men out of that vast host, and with these he made good his retreat across the Euripus to Chalcis. The Roman loss was small.<sup>2</sup>

After the battle of Chaeroneia, Sulla heard that L. Valerius Flaccus, who had succeeded Marius as Consul, had come to supersede him in the command, and had landed in Epirus. *Battle of Orchomenos.* With his accustomed promptitude he at once marched northwards to meet him. But at Meliteia in Phthiotis he heard that Mithridates had sent Dorylaus with 80,000 men to reinforce Archelaus. Leaving Flaccus to work his will, Sulla returned rapidly into Boeotia. The Pontic army lay near Orchomenos, on the edge of a plain very favourable for the action of their great force of cavalry. Archelaus at first used every effort to dissuade his new colleague from venturing another battle; but the advantages of the ground induced him to change his first opinion; and in the battle which ensued the Pontic cavalry pressed the legions so hard that Sulla was obliged to dismount and rally their broken lines. His efforts were effectual. The Romans gained another great victory, and Archelaus had much difficulty in making his escape to Chalcis. Boeotia was now given up to plunder, and the Roman army passed into Thessaly for winter quarters.

Meantime Valerius Flaccus had found his men more inclined to join Sulla than to fight him. Part of them, indeed, deserted; the rest had been kept under their banners by the *Flaccus and Fimbria.* active exertions of his lieutenant, C. Flavius Fimbria, a daring and unscrupulous man, who had taken a foremost part in the massacres of Marius.<sup>3</sup> To avoid a conflict with Sulla, Flaccus and Fimbria directed their march towards the Hellespont, with the intention of assailing Mithridates in Asia, where

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps as Ihne thinks (v. 284), the troops of the allies are ignored in this estimate.

<sup>2</sup> Sulla himself stated it at 12! For an account of this battle, see Long, ii. 294.

<sup>3</sup> "Hominem longe audacissimum . . . et insanissimum." Cicero *pro Sex. Roscio Amerino*, 12, 33. He caused Q. Scaevola the Pontiff to be stabbed at the funeral of Marius, and presently brought an accusation against him, "because he had not died of the wound."

he had but a small force remaining. But Fimbria, taking advantage of the temporary absence of Flaccus and his own popularity with the army, usurped the command. The Consul instantly returned in high dudgeon; but found that Fimbria was all powerful with the army, and fled across the Hellespont into Asia. Fimbria overtook him at Nicomedeia, and, disregarding the Consular dignity, put him to death and treated his corpse with unseemly contumely.

In the spring of 85 B.C. Fimbria threw himself suddenly into Asia, and advanced rapidly upon Pergamus. Surprised by this unexpected attack, Mithridates took refuge at Pitane, whence he was allowed to escape to Mitylené by Lucullus, who was fearful of playing into the hands of Fimbria; and here he was safe from the pursuit of Fimbria, who had no ships.

*Fimbria nearly captures Mithridates.*

The presence of Fimbria in Asia was embarrassing to Sulla. His wife Caecilia had escaped from Rome with her children, and urged the necessity for a speedy return to Italy. After the battle of Orchomenos he had an interview with Archelaus, in which that able officer proposed that the Romans should leave Asia to the king, on condition that Mithridates should assist him in conquering his enemies at home. Sulla replied that Archelaus might make himself king of Pontus, on condition of becoming the ally of Rome. Archelaus indignantly refused to break faith with his master, upon which Sulla quietly asked: "If treason seems so base to you, how dare you suggest treason to a Roman general?" The two commanders, however, continued to be good friends, and they agreed on terms of peace. It was whispered that Archelaus had been won over by the gold or the persuasions of the adroit Roman.

*Negotiations between Sulla and Archelaus.*

The year 85 B.C. was passed by Sulla in Macedonia, where he was detained by the necessity of subduing the barbarous tribes on the northern frontier of the Roman Province, who were probably led to engage in war by the gold of Mithridates. But the successes of Fimbria in Asia inclined Sulla to peace. Mithridates also was well inclined to treat; for his fleet, hitherto master of the sea, had been utterly defeated by Lucullus off Tenedos, and the passage of the Hellespont was open to Sulla. Archelaus contrived a personal conference between the Roman general and the king. They met at Dardanus in the Troad, when Sulla shortly stated that the only terms he would accept were those on which he had agreed with Archelaus; and Mithridates, an acute judge of character, gave way to the peremptory Roman. It was agreed

*Peace concluded.*

that the king should abandon all his conquests in Asia and resume the position in which he had been before the war. He was to pay 2000 talents to indemnify Rome for her expenses,<sup>1</sup> and surrender a fine fleet of 70 ships.

This settlement was made in the winter, and Mithridates withdrew to Pontus. Early in the next year (84 B.C.) Sulla advanced against Fimbria, who had encamped near Thyateira, and began to draw lines of blockade round his adversary. Fimbria's men deserted in great numbers; and the reckless adventurer, perceiving that his case was desperate, fled to Pergamus, where he took refuge in the Temple of Aesculapius and attempted to put an end to himself. But the wound was not mortal; and he was obliged to resort for this last service to a faithful slave, who slew himself upon his master's body.

It was now open to Sulla to return to Italy. He had in the course of three years completely humbled the powerful king of Pontus and compelled him to accept a peace dictated by himself. The fourth year since his departure from Italy was now far spent. To supply money for his Italian enterprise, as well as to punish the Asiatics, he forced the communities which had joined Mithridates to pay him very large sums of money. Of these sums part



Silver coin of Mithridates and Aristion, struck in Athens, B.C. 88.  
(Head, *H. N.*, 324.)

was paid down at once, Lucullus was left to exact the rest. This officer discharged his task with as much consideration and gentleness as possible. But to raise the money at all, the unfortunate Provincials were obliged to resort to Roman money-lenders, who advanced what they required at usurious interest. Murena, one of Sulla's legates, was left in Asia with the troops of Fimbria, but received strict injunctions not to renew hostilities with Mithridates. Sulla set sail from Ephesus, and returned to

<sup>1</sup> Plut., *Sull.*, 22. Memnon says 3000 talents.

Greece, where he spent the remainder of the year 84 B.C., engaged in active preparations for the invasion of Italy next spring. But before we follow him in his great adventure, it will be necessary to trace the fortunes of Cinna and his partisans at Rome.

AUTHORITIES.—Appian, xii. ; Plutarch, *Sulla*, *Lucullus*; Livy (Epit.), lxxvi., lxxviii., lxxxi.-lxxxiii.; Memnon, xv. (Müller, *F. H. G.*, iii. 540); Granius Licinianus, p. 33 *sqq.*; Justin, xxxvii., xxxviii.; Velleius, ii. 18; Frontinus, ii. 3. 17. Mommsen, iv. 3-56; Reinach, *Mithridate Eupator*.





Coin showing head of Jupiter and temple of Jupiter  
Capitolinus.

## CHAPTER LV

### RETURN OF SULLA : CIVIL WAR RENEWED. (83, 82 B.C.)

AFTER the death of Marius, Cinna remained absolute master of Rome. He associated with himself in the Consulship L. Valerius Flaccus—chiefly (as it seems) because that noble- *Rome after Marius' death.* man's father had been colleague of Marius in his sixth Consulship.<sup>1</sup> Flaccus, as we have seen, was murdered by Fimbria. In the next year (85 B.C.) Cinna declared himself Consul for the third time, with Cn. Papirius Carbo.

The year passed away quietly, and in 84 B.C. Cinna assumed the Consulship for the fourth time, again taking Carbo for his colleague. Tidings from the East made it plain *Message from Sulla.* that Sulla's return to Italy could not be long delayed, and the Consuls determined to attack him in Greece. While they were engaged in preparations for the defence of Italy, envoys arrived with a message from Sulla to the Senate. In return for his services to the state, "his enemies," he said, "had placed him under ban ; his house had been rased to the ground, his friends massacred, his wife and children forced to flee." "Presently," he concluded, "I shall return to execute vengeance on the guilty. But be it understood that I impute no kind of fault to the other citizens, new or old." The Senate were thrown into great perplexity. They feared to offend Cinna, and yet wished to return a favourable answer to Sulla. At length it was agreed, on the motion of the elder Valerius Flaccus, Chief of the Senate, that they should appoint commissioners "to mediate between Sulla and his enemies, and to guarantee his personal safety if he would return to Rome." At the same time they mustered courage enough to order the

---

<sup>1</sup> See Mommsen, iv. 72, for reasons showing that this Flaccus was the son of the Consul of 100 B.C.,

Consuls to suspend their military preparations till Sulla's answer was received.

This order met with little respect. The Consuls pushed on their preparations with greater vigour. An army was assembled at Ancona, and transports were there collected to carry it across to Dalmatia. The first division was landed without difficulty. The second embarked, but was driven back to Italy by a storm; whereupon the men dispersed, declaring that they would not make war upon fellow-citizens. Disaffection spread in the ranks of the troops that remained at Ancona; and when Cinna called the leaders before his tribunal, their gloomy looks portended mischief. At this moment one of his lictors struck a soldier. The blow was returned, and a tumult arose, in which stones were thrown at Cinna. He fell, and was despatched by the swords of the soldiery.

Such was the end of Cinna, a man who for three years had been absolute lord of Rome. Elected to the Consulship at the critical moment when the Italian party had lost its leaders, he stepped into the vacant place. The course of events proved that he was not able to make a dexterous use of this fortunate chance. He died, disliked, rather than detested, by most men, regretted probably by none.

His colleague Carbo, a man of small military talent, continued sole Consul for the remainder of the year. He gave up all thoughts of crossing the sea. The troops who had already landed in Dalmatia were recalled, and preparations were made to carry on a defensive war within the limits of Italy.

Meanwhile Sulla's reply arrived. "He could never," he said, "make terms with such men as the Marian leaders, but if the Senate chose to spare their lives, he should not object. With regard to the personal safety of himself and his friends, his army was enough to provide this. As a preliminary he required that he should be immediately restored to all the property and honours of which he had been deprived." This language showed the Senate that in Sulla they could only expect a master, and they declined all further negotiation. War on the soil of Italy became inevitable.

Carbo now thought it necessary to convene the Centuriate Assembly for the election of Consuls to succeed himself. The

choice of the voters fell on L. Scipio and C. Norbanus, both adherents of the Marian party, but men of little mark. The most able man of the party, Q. Sertorius, had recently been elected Praetor, with the promise of the government of the Province of Spain.

To strengthen themselves yet more the Marian leaders took the course which had been followed regularly since the time of the Gracchi, and brought forward two highly democratic measures; one an agrarian law, the other a large extension of the franchise.

The agrarian law was moved by M. Junius Brutus, one of the Tribunes of the year, and probably father of Caesar's murderer. By its provisions, the rich public lands of Campania, which had been reserved *Agrarian law.* for purposes of revenue even by the Gracchi, were to be distributed to a number of needy citizens. Young Cicero was himself at Capua when the *duumviri* appointed to execute the law were at their work; and he characterises the measure as a transference of Rome to Capua. But their proceedings were cut short by the appearance of Sulla, and the law slumbered till it was revived twenty years later in the Consulship of Cicero himself.<sup>1</sup>

By the other law it was proposed once more to distribute through the Tribes the mass of freedmen, which now included all the liberated slaves and adventurers who had swelled the armies of Marius and Cinna. Sulla in *Freedmen.* his first message had expressed himself as not unfriendly to the new citizens; and therefore Carbo had nothing to offer to the Italians which they might not expect from his opponent. But by this bold measure he threw all power into the hands of a mob devoted to himself. For the time it answered. No serious attempt was made to thwart Carbo and his party till Sulla entered Rome.

During the winter of 84 B.C. Sulla had assembled in Greece the army destined for the invasion of Italy. It amounted to about 40,000 men—a small force to oppose the *Landing of* 200,000 men who had been armed by Carbo. *Sulla.* Sulla had some fears that his Italian soldiers might disperse as soon as they touched their native soil. But they gave the strongest proof of their fidelity by offering to contribute money to fill his military chest. He thanked the men for their offer, but accepted only an oath that they would stand by him in his enterprise, and would refrain upon Italian soil from that license which in the East they had been suffered to indulge. Early in the following spring (83 B.C.) he embarked his whole force at Patrae and landed at Brundisium without opposition.

Several eminent persons had already joined him in Greece,

---

<sup>1</sup> Cic., *de lege agr.*, ii. 33, 89 *sqq.*

and so soon as it was known that he had landed, others repaired to his camp. Metellus Pius came to add the weight of his unblemished name to the cause of the invader, and Sulla gave him a command commensurate with the dignity of Proconsul. Young Crassus, the future Triumvir, who had escaped when his father and elder brother were sacrificed in the Marian massacre, also came. Sulla desired him to repair to the Marsian valleys, where his family was influential, and to raise troops there for his service. Crassus cautiously asked for a guard. "I give you," said Sulla, "your father, your brother, and your friends, whose murder I am come to avenge." Before this, a young man, destined to be the chief of Rome, had of his own accord begun to levy troops for Sulla in the neighbouring district of Picenum.

*Cn. Pompeius.* This was Cn. Pompeius, son of the Proconsul Pompeius Strabo, who died during the siege of Rome.<sup>1</sup> When Sulla landed, young Pompey was not yet three-and-twenty; but from the school-room he had gone into the camp; his father's long command in Picenum, with his own popular manners and soldier-like bearing, secured him the favour of the country people of that place, and he soon found himself at the head of a considerable force.

The Consuls made no attempt to arrest the progress of the enemy in lower Italy. Sulla passed quietly along the Appian Way into Apulia, and directed his march across the Apennines, probably by the gap to the west of Venusia, into Campania. As he advanced, he took care everywhere to conciliate the people. His soldiers, mindful of their oath, observed strict order: no injury was done to lands or buildings, men or women. The Consul Norbanus had taken post before Capua, while his colleague Scipio, nearer Rome, watched the Latin Way. Norbanus hearing of Sulla's approach attacked him at a disadvantage; but in the battle which followed, the veterans of the East gained an easy victory. The Consul, with his shattered army, sought refuge in Capua.

Leaving him there unmolested, Sulla marched rapidly towards Rome to intercept Scipio. At Teanum the two armies met, and Sulla proposed an armistice in the hope (he said) of coming to an amicable settlement. Sertorius, who was serving as a legate in Scipio's army, strongly dissuaded his chief from listening to such a proposal, knowing that "in Sulla," as Carbo afterwards said, "they had to contend with one who was as much fox as lion." But it was

*Scipio deserted  
by his  
troops.*

*Defeat of  
Norbanus.*

not till too late that the Consul perceived his mistake, and suddenly broke off negotiations. His army, however, was disaffected: persuasion and bribery had done their work. When Sulla appeared before the camp, he was joined by Scipio's whole force. The Consul and his son were surprised in their tents. But at this time it was Sulla's policy to appear humane, and the prisoners were dismissed unhurt. Sertorius *Sertorius leaves Italy.* escaped; but despairing of a cause in which the leaders were so incapable, he left Italy and repaired to the government of Spain which had lately been conferred upon him by Carbo. There we shall hear of him hereafter.

Sulla now returned into Campania, and endeavoured to beguile the Consul Norbanus into submission. But the district was full of needy Romans expecting their portions *Siege of* of the public land of Campania, and the Marian *Capua.* party must have been completely in the ascendant. As Sulla had no means of assaulting Capua, he was compelled to content himself with maintaining a blockade and ravaging the lands of his adversaries.

Meanwhile, young Pompey had been assailed in Picenum at three points by three Marian officers who had been detached by Carbo to crush him. He now gave the first sample *Pompey in* of that military genius which soon afterwards raised *Picenum.* him to be the first general of Rome, and succeeded in baffling all attacks, till Sulla himself hastened to his relief. But Pompey needed no aid; he had already beaten the enemy, and rode into Sulla's camp to offer, not his single sword, but an army raised by his unassisted efforts. He was about to salute Sulla as Imperator; but the general anticipated him, and dismounting from his horse greeted the young officer by the same honourable title.

The remainder of the year was spent by Sulla in establishing the influence of his party among the Italians of central Italy. Money was freely lavished. The rights of citizen- *Efforts of* ship so often promised them were confirmed. To *Sulla.* mark his confidence in the issue of the conflict, Sulla ostentatiously adjourned certain law proceedings, till the time when he could deliver judgment in the Roman Forum.

Nor was Carbo idle. The failure of the Consuls Norbanus and Scipio had left him supreme at Rome. He was elected Consul for the third time, and with him was associated young Marius, a youth not much over twenty *Carbo and the* years of age, who had not yet served any of the *younger Marius, Consuls.* subordinate offices required by law. This young man seems to have possessed all the ferocity of his father, without his skill in

war. It was hoped no doubt that his name might work like a spell upon the memory of the Italians. But in spite of all efforts Rome was every day more deserted, and Sulla's camp more thronged, by men of rank and station. A terrible fire had broken out in the Capitol during the summer, and *Burning of the Capitol.* burnt its august temples to the ground. Some attributed the fire to Carbo, some to Sulla. It was no doubt accidental, but its effect must have been sinister to the party in possession of the government.

So soon as the weather permitted (82 B.C.), hostilities were resumed. Sulla advanced from Campania along the Latin Way; and young Marius prepared to bar his passage, *Position of armies.* having fixed his headquarters at the strong city of Praenesté, whether he had carried all the gold deposited in the Capitol. Metellus Pius, supported by Pompey, took the chief command of the Sullan forces in Picenum and the north; and Carbo stationed himself in Etruria to hold those two commanders in check.

Sulla, as he advanced towards Rome, fell in with young Marius near Setia, at the head of 40,000 men. When the latter came in sight of Sulla's army, he fell back to a place *Battle of Sacriportus.* called Sacriportus, between Signia and Praenesté. Here a desperate conflict ensued, which remained doubtful till five cohorts of the army of Marius threw down their standards and passed over to the enemy. Then the whole line *Marius in Praenesté.* broke and fled to Praenesté. So hotly were they pursued that the Praenestines, fearing lest Sulla's men might press into the city together with the fugitives, closed the gates. Marius himself was drawn up the walls by a rope; but of his soldiers, not less than 20,000 were cut down by the enemy, and 8000 taken prisoners. Among them were found some of Samnite race, who were instantly butchered in cold blood.

By the battle of Sacriportus Marius was reduced to act on the defensive for the rest of the campaign. He perceived that Rome now lay open to the conquerors, but with the *Massacre in Rome.* true instinct of his race he determined to anticipate their triumphal entrance by a deed of blood. Scarcely had he entered Praenesté when he despatched a confidential messenger, ordering L. Damasippus, the Praetor left in command of Rome, to put to death all who remained there of the friends of Sulla. Damasippus was a fit instrument for such cruelty. He summoned the relics of the Senate to meet as if for business, and at a given signal a band of assassins rushed in to massacre. Then perished P. Antistius, L. Domitius, and C. Carbo, the Consul's



cousin. The aged Pontifex, Q. Scaevola, who had once been saved from the dagger of Fimbria, escaped to the Temple of Vesta ; but here he was overtaken and ruthlessly cut down. The bodies of all who thus fell were dragged through the streets, and thrown into the Tiber ; for "it had become an established custom," says Appian, "not to bury the victims of party strife."

This butchery was hardly finished, when Sulla's army appeared before Rome. Damasippus fled precipitately by the road leading to Etruria, while Sulla, leaving his troops in the Campus Martius, entered the city. *Sulla enters Rome.* But he did not loiter there. Having detached a strong force under the command of Lucretius Ofella, an old Marian officer who had joined him, to blockade Praenesté, he resolved to march into Etruria and crush Carbo. The Consul met him before Clusium ; and after a desperate battle, which lasted the whole day, neither army could claim the victory.

At this moment news reached Sulla of an alarming character. The Samnites and Lucanians had hitherto held aloof from the strife, well pleased to see their Roman masters worn out by mutual conflict. They had no wish for the triumph of either party ; but if one must prevail, that one must not be Sulla. A body of Samnites had joined young Marius before the battle of Sacriportus. And now it was reported that a large army of the brave mountaineers, under C. Pontius of Telesia—a name which recalled the memory of one of the gloomiest days in the Roman annals—a force of Lucanians under M. Lamponius, and a division of Campanians under Gutta, were in full march to relieve Marius in Praenesté. *Advance of Samnites.*

In this emergency, Sulla, leaving part of his army to keep Carbo in check, determined with the larger portion to seize the passes which led across the mountains into Latium, before the Samnites gained them. For this purpose he proceeded by forced marches southward, while the enemy were advancing towards Praenesté. It was a race for empire between the Roman and the Samnite. It was won by Sulla. When Pontius reached the Apennine passes which led down into Latium, he had the mortification to find them already occupied by the Roman general, who was soon after joined by Crassus at the head of his Marsian recruits. *March of Sulla.*

In this position things remained for some time, Sulla and Pontius each watching his opportunity. But in the north, the vigour of Sulla's lieutenants brought the war in that quarter to an unexpected conclusion.

Metellus had taken ship and had landed at Ravenna, whence

he advanced up the valley of the Po, so as to intercept Carbo's communications with Cisalpine Gaul. The Consul, roused to action by this bold movement, crossed the Apennines and attacked the camp of the enemy near Faventia. He was repulsed with great loss ; and so large a number of his remaining force deserted that he returned to Etruria with only 1000 men. A series of disasters followed. M. Lucullus, brother of the more famous Lucius, an officer of Metellus, cut to pieces a detachment of Marian troops. C. Verres, the Consul's Quaestor, began his infamous life by deserting to the enemy with the money in his possession. Albinovanus, one of the oldest of the Marian party, seeing the cause to be desperate, offered to desert ; and Sulla promised to receive him if he would do something worthy of favour. To execute this suggestion he invited his brother officers to a banquet, and at a given signal a body of ruffians rushed in and massacred the guests. Carbo's army at Clusium still numbered 30,000 men ; but, thrown into despair by these disasters, he departed by night and took ship for Africa, where for a time he succeeded in rallying the remains of the Marian party. Pompey attacked the troops that still remained at Clusium. The men, though deserted by their commander, made a desperate defence, and it was not till two-thirds of their number had fallen that they gave way. The remnant was led southward by Damasippus in the hope of joining the Samnites.

Pontius and Lamponius, informed of his advance, contrived to elude the vigilance of Sulla, and effected a junction with the shattered relics of Carbo's army. Thus united, the enemy poured down the Tiburtine or Latin road to Rome, and encamped at nightfall before the Colline Gate. It was the last day of October by the Roman calendar (which was, how-

*Battle of the  
Colline  
Gate.*

ever, unreliable at this time) of the year 82 B.C. All who were in the city passed the night in an agony of fear ; the most devoted adherents of Marius must have trembled at the thought that next day Rome would in all likelihood fall into the hands of her most inveterate foes. Next morning Pontius addressed his men. "Rome's last day," he said, "was come. The wolves that had so long preyed on Italy would never cease from troubling till their lair was utterly destroyed." But, as the assault began, on the Praenestine road appeared a body of horse. Pontius well knew that they were the advanced guard of Sulla's army, and he prepared for battle. It was past noon before Sulla himself arrived ; his troops were exhausted by their march. But he ordered an immediate attack. The left wing, commanded by himself, rested upon the

*agger* of Servius ; Crassus commanded on the right. Sulla rode a white horse, and was in the thick of the fight, the mark of every javelin. He exerted himself to the utmost, but in vain. When night closed he had been forced back towards the walls ; the struggle still continued ; and it seemed as if nothing remained for his brave veterans but to sell their lives dearly.

But at this moment of despair, he was surprised by a message from Crassus to announce that on the right wing he had been completely successful, and had pursued the routed enemy to Antemnae, a place just below the junction of the Anio and Tiber. His joy may be imagined. With prompt dexterity he contrived to form a junction with Crassus by his right, and the battle was renewed. It was not till near daybreak that victory declared for Sulla. No fewer than 50,000 men on both sides had fallen. Among the slain was found the brave Pontius, still breathing, with a look of triumph in his eye. The chief Roman officers were put to death. Their heads, with that of Pontius, were sent to Ofella, who paraded them on spear-heads round the walls of Praenesté. Of the common sort about 8000 were taken prisoners, of whom the greater part were Samnites. On the third day after the battle Sulla summoned the Senate to meet in the temple of Bellona outside the walls, having ordered the prisoners to be taken to the Circus Flaminius, which lay hard by. As the Senate were proceeding to business, cries of death were heard, and those who were not in Sulla's confidence rose in alarm. "Be seated," said he ; "what you hear need not trouble you. It is but some wretches undergoing punishment by my order." The prisoners were all massacred.

The battle of the Colline Gate ended the war. Marius, finding his case desperate, endeavoured to escape from Praenesté by a subterranean passage, in company with a younger brother of the brave Pontius. Finding the passage obstructed, they agreed to kill one another. Pontius received the point of his friend's sword, and fell dead : Marius, being only wounded, caused a slave who was in attendance to despatch him. Praenesté was then surrendered to the conqueror. Rome, Italy, and the World lay at his feet, and men awaited with trembling expectation the announcement of his will.

AUTHORITIES.—Livy (Epit.), lxxxii.-lxxxix. ; Appian, *B. C.*, i. 75-96 ; Plutarch, *Sulla*, *Pompeius*, *Sertorius*, *Crassus* ; Velleius, ii. 23-28 ; Dio, *fr.* 106-109 ; Orosius, v. 20, 21. The incidental allusions in the writings of Cicero (born 106 B.C.) to the events of this time are often more important than the narrative of these later authors.



Coin of Sulla. (Hill, *G. and R. coins*, Pl. xii. 2).

## CHAPTER LVI

### SULLA'S DICTATORSHIP AND DEATH. (82-78 B.C.)

SULLA entered the city completely successful, after a deadly struggle with the bitterest foes of Rome. Soon after, he addressed *Sulla and his* the People in a set speech, holding out promises to *enemies.* the obedient, and to the disobedient, threats. But for his declared enemies no hopes were left; all were doomed to death who had taken any part publicly against him since the day on which the Consul Scipio broke off the armistice at Teanum. The memory of Marius excited in Sulla's breast passions absolutely ferocious. The trophies upon the Capitol, recording the African and Cimbrian triumphs, were destroyed; the ashes of the old general were torn from their sepulchre near the Anio, and scattered in the stream. L. Sergius Catilina, afterwards notorious, seized the person of M. Marius Gratidianus, a kinsman of the old hero by adoption, and carried him to the tomb of Catulus, where his eyes were plucked out, his ears cut off, his limbs severally broken, and death delayed with horrid ingenuity. A Senator who fainted at the cruel sight was slain upon the spot for showing sympathy to a Marius; nor did Catiline's brutality call forth any animadversion. Soon afterwards Ofella sent the head of the old general's son to Rome. Sulla, with grim delight, gazed on the youthful face, and said: "Those who take the helm should first serve at the oar." Now he said his fortune was accomplished, and henceforth he took the name of Felix.<sup>1</sup>

Every hour was marked by slaughters. Some who had taken

---

<sup>1</sup> In his Greek letters he translated this by Ἐπαφρόδιτος, *the favourite of Venus*. Venus Victrix, the goddess of pleasure and of fortune, was the common device upon his coins.

no part in the war were put to death, and no one knew whether he was safe. At length a formal list of the doomed was made out and published; and this was what *Proscription.* was properly called the Proscription. But even then the uncertainty remained. The first list of eighty names was followed by a second of two hundred and twenty; and each succeeding day produced a horrid supplement. To make the sentence sure, a price of two talents was set on the head of every proscribed person; and this sum was paid alike to the slave who slew his master or the son who murdered his own father. All who harboured the proscribed, or favoured their escape, became liable to their fate; and wives were found heartless enough to refuse shelter to their husbands. But what most gave security for vengeance was the knowledge that the property of these unhappy men was to be confiscated to reward the zealous agents of the conqueror. Those who coveted the possessions of others contrived to have their names placed on the Proscription-lists. Here again Catiline bore away the palm of iniquity. He sought to legalise the murder he had committed by having the name of his victim placed upon the proscribed list; and that victim was his own brother. The heads of the slain were affixed to the *rostra*.

These scenes of terror were not confined to Rome. At Praenesté Sulla himself presided over the work of vengeance. All who could prove that they had done him service—a *Scenes in Italian cities.* small minority—were ordered to stand aside. The remainder were divided into two classes. Citizens of Rome constituted the first; the second was made of Praenestines themselves and their Samnite allies. The Romans he addressed with great severity, but ended by sparing the lives which had (he said) been justly forfeited. The Praenestines and Samnites were ruthlessly slain. The women and children alone were spared. The town was given up to be plundered by the soldiery. Norba, another Latin town, which still held out, was betrayed; and its inhabitants, warned by the fate of the Praenestines, set fire to their city and sought a voluntary death. Nola was still held by the same gallant Samnites whom Sulla had left unconquered before the Mithridatic war; nor did it now fall without an obstinate defence. To all cities which had taken part with the Marians the Proscription was extended, and the same direful scenes were repeated in each place. There also, as at Rome, the lust for other men's property swelled the numbers of the slain. It was chiefly the rich who were sought after; the poorer sort, however guilty, were neglected.

All this was done without any semblance of legal authority. There was in fact no executive government in existence. Sulla

himself, by entering the city, had lost his Pro-consular dignity.

*Death of* One Consul, young Marius, had died at Praenesté.  
*Carbo.* The fate of his colleague Carbo may be shortly told. It has been said that he escaped to Africa. Hence he crossed over to the island of Cossyra (now *Pantellaria*) with the purpose of passing into Egypt. But he was brought in chains to Pompey, who had been despatched to Sicily with a large force ; and his head was sent to Rome.

Yet by conquest Sulla held supreme authority. The Senate obeyed him in all matters, and set up an equestrian statue to him, with the inscription, "CORNELIO SULLAE, IMPERATORI, FELICI." He desired, however, to have some definite power, and represented to the Senate that it would be proper to appoint an Interrex. They at once named that L. Valerius Flaccus who had already signalled his attachment to the cause of Sulla ; and this man, having assembled the Centuries, read to them a letter from Sulla, in which he stated that he deemed it expedient to revert to the ancient office of Dictator (which had been in abeyance since the Second Punic War, for a period of 120 years) ; whoever was named ought to be named, not (according to the old rule) for six months, but till he should have succeeded in restoring order to the Empire. No one could doubt who was the person thus designated. But Sulla disdained innuendoes, and added that "for the services demanded of the Dictator he thought himself fittest to be chosen." The terms of this imperial mandate were echoed in the bill introduced by the Interrex. By that Valerian law all Sulla's acts in the East and in Italy were confirmed ; he was declared Dictator for so long as he judged fit ; and was in express terms authorised to make laws, to put citizens to death, to confiscate property and distribute public lands, to destroy old Colonies and to found new, to transfer the sceptres of dependent monarchs from one claimant to another. More absolute powers were never entrusted to one man by a formal act of law.

Sulla at once assumed his office. He appointed Flaccus his Master of Horse. He appeared in public with four-and-twenty lictors, and was besides surrounded by a body-guard. But at the same time he gave proof that he had no intention of superseding the old forms of the Constitution : for he summoned the Comitia for the election of Consuls, intimating, however, that no one was to appear as candidate except by his permission. And what he said he meant. Lucretius Ofella, presuming on his services at Praenesté, entered the Forum as a candidate, though he had not filled the



Praetorship. The Dictator was seated on his chair of state before the Temple of the Dioscuri; and at once ordered a centurion of his guard to cut down Ofella. And to prevent any show of independence in the Centuries, he made use of a terrible apologue:—"A husbandman," he said, "was troubled with vermin. Twice he shook his tunic; but they continued to annoy him, and the third time he burnt it. Let those," he added, "who have twice been conquered by arms, beware of fire the third time." After this, it may be presumed that candidates were not eager to thrust forward their claims upon public notice. The persons elected were mere ciphers, who served to give a name to the year.

Early in the following year he celebrated a splendid triumph for his successes in the Mithridatic war. The obedient Senate doubtless suspended the old rule by which a *Triumph of* general who had once entered the city forfeited *Sulla*, all claim to a triumph; and two days in the last week of January (81 B.C.) were devoted to the spectacle. The first day was occupied by a long procession exhibiting the spoils of the cities taken in Asia and Greece. On the second, the Dictator and his veterans ascended to the Capitol, attended by a crowd of Senators and Nobles, wearing chaplets in token that they acknowledged Sulla as their saviour. Large sums of money were paid into the Treasury. Splendid spectacles followed. Greece was obliged to suspend her Olympian games, that her athletes and trained combatants might exhibit their skill and strength before the Roman People.

Sulla now threw himself into the true work of his Dictatorship, and proceeded to issue a series of laws by which the Constitution of Rome was entirely remodelled.

His first measure confirmed the Proscription. He had cleared the stage of all antagonists; and he now ordained that all the families of the Proscribed were to be deprived for *Treatment of* ever of their civic rights. No man indeed can *the Proscribed*, make unalterable laws; but Sulla went far towards gaining his end by providing that all the property of the Proscribed should be sold by auction, and the sums received placed to the public account.

Even if this sale had been fairly conducted, the Treasury would have received far less than the value of the property sold. But the sale was not fairly conducted. The auction was held before the Dictator's chair. His favourites were the chief bidders; and if persons unconnected with his party ventured to enter the lists against them, he broke out into angry menace. So little did he regard appearances, that he used to talk of

selling his "booty."<sup>1</sup> Often he remitted payment altogether: at other times he bestowed what ought to have been sold upon his wife Caecilia, upon his mistresses or freedmen, upon favourite actors, dancers, and musicians. In one case, made familiar to us by a speech of Cicero, Chrysogonus, a favoured freedman, was allowed to place the name of Sext. Roscius, a wealthy citizen of Ameria, on the Proscription-list, and to take possession of his property, though the time specified in the law for the sale of confiscated property had gone by.<sup>2</sup> The spirit in which the sales were conducted appears from a story preserved by Cicero. A sorry poet handed an epigram to the Dictator as he was presiding over the auction. Sulla laughed, and ordered that the man should have a sum of money from the proceeds of the sale then in progress—on condition that he should write no more poetry.<sup>3</sup> The measures thus enforced at Rome were executed with the same undeviating rigour in every town of the Italian Peninsula.

But of the confiscated lands of the disaffected towns great part was not sold at all. These reserved lands were destined *Military colonies.* to reward Sulla's soldiery, and by their means to create a new constituency for the Comitia. More than 100,000 men who had served under himself or his lieutenants in the East and in Italy received allotments. Legions, or parts of legions, were settled in old Italian towns, and became citizens of those places, interested by the nature of their title in upholding the Dictator's measures. The disbanded veterans of Cromwell's army were, it is well known, the most industrious, orderly, and useful citizens of the towns to which they retired. It was far otherwise with the soldiery of Sulla. They wasted their newly-acquired property in riotous living; the Cornelian soldiers became the terror and disgrace of their neighbourhood, and in after times supplied the ready instruments of sedition to Catiline and Clodius.

From this time forth the depopulation of Italy proceeded rapidly. From this time forth may be dated the decay of distinct nationalities in the several districts of the Italian Peninsula. Parts of Samnium and lower Etruria became almost desolate. Apulia was more and more given up to shepherds. From this time forth also, a common language began to prevail through the country towns of Italy. The disbanded soldiery had all learned to speak a species of Latin, and in all the towns in

<sup>1</sup> C.c., *de off.*, ii. 8, 27.

<sup>2</sup> *Pro Sext. Rosc. Amer.*, 43, 124 sqq.

<sup>3</sup> *Pro Archia Poeta*, 10, 25.

which they settled they mingled with the relics of the old population, and introduced a general use of this language.

Having disposed in this summary fashion of the property confiscated by the Proscription, the Dictator proceeded to mould anew the Political Constitution of Rome.

The Italians who had received the suffrage were left in possession of their right, unless they had taken part with the Marians in the late war—an exception which was perhaps as comprehensive as the rule. To secure a body of devoted adherents in Rome itself Sulla selected, from among the slaves of the Proscribed, 10,000 of the youngest and most active men, and by a stroke made them citizens of Rome. All the men thus enfranchised considered themselves as Freedmen of the Dictator, and assumed his name. These Corneli proved a strong support of the Sullan Constitution in the years that followed.

But while he thus filled the ranks of the Tribes with his creatures, he took away from the Tribes all real and substantive authority. He ordained that no one who had been Tribune should be capable of holding any curule office; that no Tribune should have power to propose a law to the Tribes; and lastly, that the right of Intercession should be limited to its original purpose, that is, that it should not be available to stop decrees of the Senate or laws brought before the Senate, but only to protect the personal liberty of citizens from the arbitrary power of the high magistrates. The Tribunes were thus effectually shackled, and their power returned to the low condition in which it had been during the earlier period of its existence.

It was ordained, moreover, that the old rule should be strictly enforced, by which no measure could be submitted to either of the Popular Assemblies till first it had received the sanction of the Senate. Thus the Assembly of the Centuries, as well as the Assembly of the Tribes, was placed under the direct control of that Council.<sup>1</sup>

The crowning work of his political reforms was the reconstitution of the Senate. Its numbers had been greatly thinned by war, massacre, and proscription. To the comparatively few members who remained he added three hundred from the ranks of his own adherents. A great majority of these were taken from the Knights, and he thus detached from that Order its wealthiest and most influential members. Some

---

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen (iv. 117) thinks that the *Consuls* could bring measures before the People without the consent of the Senate.

members who obtained seats are said to have begun service with Sulla as common soldiers. The number of Quaestors was at the same time raised to twenty, so that, for the future, members would never be wanting to supply vacancies. Sulla did not employ Censors to make out the list in due form; indeed, he tacitly abolished the Censorial Office. The last Censors had held office in the year 86 B.C.; the next belong to the year 70 B.C., in which the most important of Sulla's political regulations were set aside.

With respect to the Magistracies, as Sulla increased the number of Quaestors,<sup>1</sup> so he ordained that there should be eight Praetors instead of six. He also required the strict *Magistracies.* observance of the *Lex Annalis*. Every one who aspired to the Consulship was compelled to go through the inferior grades,<sup>2</sup> with fixed intervals between each. As in every succeeding year the costly spectacles expected by the people became more costly, these offices were more effectually than ever confined to a limited number of old families; and for a New Man to obtain the highest offices became more difficult than ever.

It was not to be expected that Sulla would leave the judicial power, as C. Gracchus had placed it, in the hands of the *Judicial* Knights. There had been a constant struggle to *change.* deprive them of it wholly or in part, and Sulla now restored this power to the Senate. Thus once more the Senators became the judges of their own Order. Of all the laws of Sulla there was none of which the repeal was more loudly demanded than this.

Such were the chief Constitutional changes made by the Dictator. Their general purpose was to restore the Constitution to its state before the time of the Gracchi. It was *General effect* still a republic in outward form, but in reality a *of Sulla's* close oligarchy.<sup>3</sup> The Popular Assemblies still *measures.* existed, but were made completely dependent upon the Senate. That body, composed chiefly of those who could win the votes of the People by bribing freely, and by exhibiting costly shows, monopolised all the powers of the state.

A number of other Cornelian laws preserved the Dictator's name. One defined more clearly the law of treason against the *Law of* Majesty of the Republic, originally passed by the *treason.* Tribune Saturninus. In the Tribune's mouth, the Majesty of the Republic meant the Majesty of the People; in

<sup>1</sup> The exact number of Quaestors found in existence by Sulla is doubtful. See Mommsen, iv. 112.

<sup>2</sup> The Aedileship alone was more or less voluntary.

<sup>3</sup> Ἀδυναστεία, as Dio Cassius calls it (lii. 1).

Sulla's mouth, it meant the Majesty of the Senate; under Tiberius and his successors, it was taken to mean the Majesty of the Emperor's person. But, if Sulla's law of treason was framed in an exclusive spirit, his criminal legislation was on the whole well calculated to repress the disorders consequent upon the civil wars. We have already mentioned<sup>1</sup> the law of Calpurnius Piso, under which a standing court (*quaestio perpetua*) was established in 149 B.C., to try all charges of extortion brought against Provincial Governors. *Criminal reform.* Similar courts may have been established for bribery and treason between that date and the time of Sulla; but Sulla certainly extended the system very much, so as to bring under it all the chief criminal offences. Assassination was sternly checked; and the Dictator's criminal code long survived his political measures. Sulla also deserves credit for discontinuing the distributions of corn, which had *Corn distributions stopped.* done so much harm to the state since the time of C. Gracchus.

In the next year (80 B.C.) the Dictator condescended to fill the Consulship in company with Metellus Pius; but in the following year (79 B.C.), in obedience to his own law which prohibited re-election within ten years, *Sulla's indifference to power.* he declined to accept the proffered honour. Here it may be noted that he had ordered some eminent persons connected by marriage with the Marian party to divorce their wives. Pompey also had been induced to divorce his first wife, and to court the favour of the Dictator by marrying Aemilia, daughter of Sulla's wife by her first marriage with Scaurus. But there was another young man who was less compliant. This was C. Julius Caesar, then a youth *Pompey and Caesar.* in his twenty-first year. He had married Cornelia, daughter of Cinna; and he boldly refused to put away his wife. Caesar was not only son-in-law of Cinna, but also nephew of Marius; and this refusal would have cost him his life, had not powerful friends and kinsmen interceded for him with the Dictator. "You know not what you ask," replied the Dictator; "that profligate boy will be more dangerous than many Mariuses." Caesar was allowed to escape, but was for some time obliged to skulk in fear of his life among the Sabine mountains.

Generally speaking, it may be said that his government became more lenient, or rather more remiss; in particular, he had become indifferent to justice in awarding public honours. L. Licinius Murena, his lieutenant in Asia, invaded the dominions of Mithri- *Triumphs of Murena and Pompey.*

dates in spite of strict injunctions to the contrary, till orders from home put an end to what was called the Second Mithridatic War. On his return to Rome, Murena claimed a triumph, and his claim was allowed by the careless indulgence of the Dictator. Pompey, victorious over the relics of the Marian party in Africa, where they had been supported by king Hiarbas, claimed a triumph for the conquest of this foreign prince ; but Sulla refused the claim. The young general not yet twenty-five years of age had filled no office of state ; and the Dictator, who was anxious to restore the old regulations of the republic, attempted to satisfy Pompey's ambitious aspirations by saluting him by the name of Magnus. Pompey, however, was obstinate : his army was encamped outside the walls ; and Sulla, not choosing the risk of a possible struggle with the rising general, gave a contemptuous permission : "Well then, let him triumph."

Another circumstance more strongly shows the greater leniency of the Dictator. Young Cicero, who was of the same age as Pompey, and had during the fierce conflicts of the civil war lived in studious retirement, in the year 81 B.C. commenced that brilliant career which made him one of the great men of Rome. His

*Cicero's defence of Roscius Amerinus.*

first extant oration, for P. Quinctius, contains little of public interest. But his second was in favour of Sext. Roscius of Ameria, a young man who was accused<sup>1</sup> of having murdered his own father, in order that he might be prevented from reclaiming his patrimony from Chrysogonus, Sulla's favourite freedman. Young Cicero undertook the defence ; and the boldness with which he conducted it is quite as remarkable as the skill. Cicero lashed the favourite with all the vigour and energy of youthful eloquence, while he dexterously excuses Sulla from all share in the blame, by a compliment which is almost blasphemous. "As Jupiter," he said, "is obliged to allow the existence of pain and suffering in the universe, so Sulla cannot be so ubiquitous as to see his will executed everywhere and always." The jury, composed of Senators though it was, took part against the Dictator's freedman, and Roscius was acquitted. It must be observed, however, that soon after this, Cicero quitted Rome for about two years, part of which time he spent at Rhodes, devoting himself to literary and philosophic studies.

Sulla's increasing moderation may have surprised many. But all were much more surprised when, early in the year 79 B.C., he ascended the *rostra* and abruptly laid down his Dictator's office, which he had held for

*Sulla's retirement.*

<sup>1</sup> See page 580.



little more than two years, desiring any one who had reason to complain to come forward and speak. No one answered the challenge. The blood of his opponents could not speak from the ground. The disfranchised and the exiled had no place in the Assembly. Above all, it was hazardous to accept the challenge thrown down by a man who, though no longer Dictator, still had the state waiting on his nod. He walked the Forum as a private man, no less securely than when the lictors were at his beck.

Rome and Italy were now in complete tranquillity. In Spain alone of the Provinces the Marian party under Sertorius maintained a threatening attitude. But Metellus Pius had been despatched as Proconsul to quell the insurrection, and it was expected that he would execute his commission with ease. *Trouble in Spain.*

All, therefore, seemed tranquil when Sulla left Rome for ever, to seek at his Puteolan villa on the Bay of Naples that which he loved better than power or glory,—a life of voluptuous ease. He spent much time in pursuing game on the hills near his villa or fishing in the Bay, and amused himself with writing Memoirs of his own life. No statesmen, nor soldiers, nor serious men of any kind were allowed to trouble his retirement. He was fond of genial humour and unrestrained licence, and therefore admitted jesters, actors, and humourists to unreserved intimacy. He was fond of sensual pleasure, and therefore, though he always treated his wife Caecilia with respect, his doors were open to dancing girls and singing girls. He was fond of literature, and therefore gave free invitation to men of letters. In company of this various kind he passed hours at table or over his wine, sometimes conversing on art and literature, sometimes engaging in licentious jesting or coarse buffoonery. At such times he would not suffer business to be named. Self-indulgence and amusement were the sole objects of his life. *Sulla at Puteoli.*

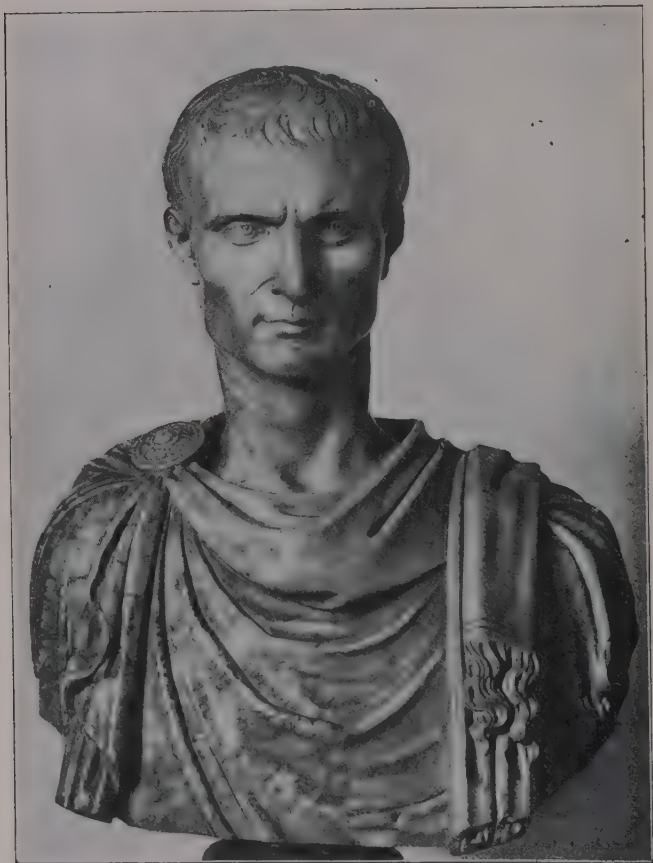
But he did not long enjoy this life of pleasurable ease. About a year after he had resigned the Dictatorship, he was attacked by a complication of disorders, which ended in a loathsome disease. His body, distempered by debauchery and labour, is said to have engendered vermin; and thus miserably died the great Dictator in the sixtieth year of his age. *His death.*

Sulla was eminently a man of genius. In war he was much favoured by fortune; in politics, in literature, and encounters of wit he was a match for the masters of each art at their own weapons. That which gave him ad- *Character of Sulla.*

vantage was his perfect knowledge of men, and his just confidence in self, unalloyed by any tincture of personal vanity. In the art of war he was inferior to Marius, but in the diplomatic arts by which men are guided or deluded he was unequalled. Yet with all qualities to fit him for active life, his inclinations lay not that way. He never continued his exertions for a longer time than was required for his immediate object. Properly speaking, he was not ambitious. He desired wealth and power, but only as a means, his real end being the facility of absolute self-indulgence. His passions were by nature fierce, and they were made fiercer by unjust opposition. Before Marius endeavoured to rob him of the Mithridatic command we hear not of any barbarities that can be attributed to him, and after the Proscription he relapsed into the easiness of temper which best suited his Epicurean principles.

AUTHORITIES.—Our knowledge of Sulla's measures is unfortunately very imperfect, and has to be gathered from allusions in a great many different writers. One of his laws is extant in an inscription (the *Lex Cornelia de xx. Quaestoribus*: see *C.I.L.*, i. 108). The references in Cicero come next in order of importance: e.g. *pro S. Roscio Amerino*, *pro Tullio*, *pro Cornelio*, *de lege agraria*; the following passages may also be mentioned—*pro domo*, 30, 79; *de legg.*, iii. 9, 22; *ad Att.*, i. 19. 5; *ad Fam.*, i. 9. 25; iii. 6. 3. The chief later authorities are Livy (*Epit.*), lxxxix.; Appian, *B. C.*, i. 95-104; Velleius, ii. 28-30; Plutarch, *Sulla*, *Pompeius*, *Crassus*; Florus, iii. 21; *cp.* also Tacitus, *Ann.*, xi. 22, and Dio, xxxvii. 37. Of modern writers see (besides Mommsen) Lange, *Röm. Alt.*, iii. 146, and Freeman, *Sulla* (*Historical Essays*, Second Series).





Caesar (from the bust in Berlin). See Holmes, *Caesar's Conquest of Gaul*, p. xx.

## BOOK VII

# SECOND PERIOD OF CIVIL WARS

### CHAPTER LVII

REVOLUTIONARY ATTEMPT OF LEPIDUS: SERTORIUS: SPARTACUS: FIRST CONSULSHIP OF POMPEY AND CRASSUS.  
(78-70 B.C.)

WE now enter upon the last stage in the decline and fall of the Republic. By a violent effort Sulla had restored the government to the Senatorial Nobility. But symptoms intimating the insecurity of the fabric which he had hastily reared on blood-bathed foundations showed themselves even before his death. After his secession, Q. Catulus became the chief of the Senatorial party. He was son of the Catulus who shared the Cimbric triumph with Marius, and in the year 79 B.C. he appeared among the candidates for the Consulship with the certainty of election. The person who aspired to be his colleague was M. Aemilius Lepidus, a man of illustrious family, but of vain and petulant character. He was supported by many friends, among others by young Pompey. Sulla knew the man, and warned Pompey against him. But Pompey, who had already begun to talk of "the setting and the rising sun," disregarded the warning, and gave his aid to Lepidus, who was duly elected.

Scarcely was Sulla dead when his words were fulfilled. Lepidus declared himself the chief of the popular party, and promised to rescind the acts of Sulla. To prevent a renewal of civil war, the Senate bound him and Catulus alike by oath not to have recourse to arms. Lepidus, however, having left the city as if for his Province of Transalpine Gaul, went no further than Etruria; and here, at the end of his Consular year, pretending that his oath no longer

*Catulus and  
Lepidus, Con-  
suls.*

*Revolutionary  
attempt of  
Lepidus.*

bound him, he engaged in active preparations for war. The Senate summoned him to Rome, for the purpose of holding the Comitia. He obeyed, but it was at the head of an army. To oppose him, Catulus took post before the Mulvian Bridge, with Pompey for his lieutenant. Here they were attacked by Lepidus, who was easily defeated. After this failure he fled to Sardinia, where he died shortly after. His lieutenant, M. Perperna, carried the best of the soldiers into Spain, where a war was raging which might well encourage the hopes of discontented persons.<sup>1</sup>

It has been mentioned that Q. Sertorius had assumed the government of Spain. But after a vain struggle against superior forces, he had relinquished the contest. The news from Italy was dispiriting. It seemed as if the Marian cause was lost for ever. It is said that Sertorius lent ear to the tales of seamen who had lately made a voyage to the Fortunate Islands (so the ancients called the islands to the west of Africa), and seemed to recognise the happy regions which Greek legends assigned as the abode of the Blessed.<sup>2</sup> But the active soldier soon abandoned these day-dreams of indolent tranquillity. During a visit to Africa he received an invitation from the Lusitanians to head them in rising against Rome; and since their enemies were his enemies, he obeyed without a moment's hesitation. Viriathus himself did not use with better effect the energies of the brave mountaineers. Spain soon became too hot to hold the Sullan leaders: the proscribed Marians came out of their hiding-places and joined the new chief. His progress in the course of two years' time became so serious, that when Metellus Pius laid down his Consulship, he was sent into Spain to crush Sertorius.

But to crush Sertorius was no easy task. He was no mere soldier, but possessed political qualities of a high order. Like Hamilcar and Hasdrubal of old, he used all his arts to enlist the affections of the Spaniards on his side. The government which he formed indicated a disposition to found a new Rome in Spain. He formed a Senate of three hundred, consisting of proscribed Romans. His Spanish

<sup>1</sup> M. Junius Brutus, who was holding the valley of the Po for Lepidus, was put to death by Pompey after a safe-conduct had been promised to him.

<sup>2</sup> . . . ἐνθα Μακάρων  
Νᾶσον ὠκεανίδες  
αὔραι περιπνέουσιν, ἀνθεμα δὲ χρυσοῦ φλέγει,  
τὰ μὲν χερσὸθεν ἀπ' ἀγλαῶν δενδρέων,  
ῥ' ὕδωρ δ' ἄλλα φέρβει, κ. τ. λ.—Pind., *Olymp.*, ii. 128 sqq.



troops he organised after the Roman fashion. At Osca (now *Huesca* in Aragon) he established a school for the noble youth of Spain. The boys wore the Roman garb, and were taught the tongues of Rome and Athens. Sertorius is almost the only statesman of antiquity who tried to use education as an engine of government. It cannot indeed be pretended that his views were merely philanthropic; no doubt he held the boys as hostages for the fidelity of their sires.

His great talents, above all his acknowledgment of equality between Provincials and Romans, won him golden opinions. The enthusiastic reverence of the Spaniards for his person was increased by the presence of a white doe, which continually followed him and was regarded by the simple people as a familiar spirit by means of which he held communication with Heaven.

Metellus in two campaigns found himself unequal to cope with the new ruler of Spain. In the third year (77 B.C.) Perperna, constrained by the wishes of his troops, *Pompey re-* joined the popular leader; and the Senate, fearing *forces Metellus.* that Sertorius would march into Italy, ordered Pompey to reinforce Metellus.

Pompey's aid, however, did not change the state of affairs. On one occasion the young general was saved by the approach of Metellus, on which Sertorius said: "If the old woman had not come up, I should have given the boy a sound drubbing and sent him back to Rome." At the end of 75 B.C. Pompey wrote an urgent letter to the Senate, representing the insufficiency of his forces, and two more legions were sent to reinforce him. Meantime Sertorius himself had reason for apprehension. Many of his soldiers began to desert; and this so *Sertorius and* enraged him, that he was betrayed into acts of *Mithridates.* great severity; and he still further exasperated the Romans of his party by forming his body-guard exclusively of Spaniards. But he still maintained his superiority in the field. Nor was it encouraging to his enemies to learn that he had been solicited by envoys from Mithridates, who was about to renew war with Rome. A treaty was actually concluded by which Sertorius agreed to give up part of Asia Minor to the king and to furnish Roman officers to train the soldiery of Asia; Mithridates on his part was to supply Sertorius with ships and money.

But the despotic power exercised by Sertorius had corrupted his nature. He lost his activity, indulged in immoderate use of wine, gave himself up to luxurious habits, became *Murder of* passionate, suspicious, and cruel. Even the *Sertorius.* Spaniards began to fall away; and Sertorius in a moment of

irritation ordered all the boys at Osca to be put to death or sold as slaves. This cruel and impolitic act would probably have cost him his power and his life, even if it had not been terminated by treachery. Perperna, who had at first joined him against his own inclination, thought that a favourable opportunity had arrived for grasping power. Others joined in the conspiracy; Perperna invited Sertorius to a banquet at Osca; and the general, having drunk freely, according to his custom, fell an easy prey to the daggers of the assassins (72 B.C.).

But when Perperna had wrought this shameful deed, he found that the name of Sertorius was still powerful among the *Spaniards*. Many of them, the Lusitanians above *End of the war in Spain.* all, now that their great leader was no more, forgot his faults, and deserted the standard of Perperna; when that officer attempted to lead the remnant of the army against Pompey, his men dispersed, and he was taken prisoner. When brought before Pompey, he endeavoured to gain favour by handing to him letters which had been interchanged by Sertorius with some of the chief men at Rome. But Pompey, with prudent magnanimity, threw the letters into the fire and ordered Perperna to be put to death. In the course of a year the last relics of the Marian party in Spain were extinguished.

Before this was effected, Rome was engaged in a new conflict with Mithridates. The history of this war shall be reserved for a separate chapter. But here must be noticed a formidable outbreak that took place in Italy and threatened the very existence of the state. This was the war of the gladiators.

For the purpose of the barbarous shows which were so much enjoyed at Rome, it was the purpose to keep schools for training *gladiatorial* gladiators, who were let out by their owners to the *war.* Aediles.<sup>1</sup> At Capua there was a large school of this kind; and among the gladiators in training there was Spartacus, a Thracian, who had once served as a Roman soldier, had then turned brigand, and now, having been taken prisoner, was destined to make sport for his captors. He persuaded about seventy of his fellow-bondsmen to join him in breaking loose; better it was, he argued, to die in battle on the open field, than on the sand of the amphitheatre. This handful of brave men took up a strong position upon Mount Vesuvius, where Spartacus was presently joined by slaves and outlaws of all descriptions. The gladiators, old soldiers like himself, supplied him with officers. Oenomaus and Crixus, both of Gallic origin, acted as his lieutenants. He enforced strict discipline; and, so long as he

<sup>1</sup> See Long, iii. 31.

was able, obliged his followers to abstain from acts of rapine. Two Roman commanders attacked him, but they were beaten with loss, and the numbers of his army swelled every day. All this happened in 73 B.C., after the Mithridatic War had broken out and before the Sertorian War was ended.

In the next year (72 B.C.), the same which witnessed the murder of Sertorius, Spartacus had become strong enough to take the offensive. He had to face a formidable power, for both Consuls were ordered to take the field. But at the head of more than 100,000 men *Spartacus master of Italy.* he forced the passes of the Apennines and entered Picenum. His subordinates, however, proved unmanageable; and Spartacus, aware that the power of Rome must prevail, bent all his energies towards forcing his way across the Alps, in the hope of reaching some remote region inaccessible to Rome. As he pressed northwards, he was assaulted by both the Consuls, but defeated them both. His successes seem to have raised him, or at least his followers, above the mere hope of escaping from Italy; he again turned southward, and is said to have meditated a descent upon Rome itself. But he relinquished this desperate plan, and spent the remainder of the year in collecting treasure and arms. Little discipline was now observed. The extent of the ravages committed by the bands under his command may be guessed from the well-known line of Horace, in which he promised his friend a jar of wine made in the Social War, "if he could find one that had escaped the clutches of roaming Spartacus."<sup>1</sup>

The management of the war was now committed to Crassus, who had really won the battle of the Colline Gate. Ever since the triumph of Sulla he had lived quietly at Rome, pro- *Crassus.* fitting by the Proscription to buy up property cheap; and after that period he had been busied in making the most profitable use of the large fortune which he had amassed.<sup>2</sup> He was now elected Praetor and invested with the command.

Crassus took the field with six new legions, to be added to the remains of the Consular armies. The disorganised battalions of these armies he punished by the unjust and *Crassus in command.* terrible penalty of decimation; but his rigour was successful in restoring discipline. He encountered Spartacus in the field and defeated him. But the gladiator made good his retreat to the south, with the view of crossing over *Return of Pompey.* into Sicily and rekindling the servile war in that

<sup>1</sup> *Od.*, iii. 14. 19.

<sup>2</sup> *Cp.* Cic., *de off.*, i. 8, 25; iii. 18, 73; 19, 75.

island ; he had even agreed with a squadron of Cilician pirates to convey 2000 of his men across the straits ; but the faithless marauders took the money and sailed without the men. Crassus now came up, and having driven him into a neck of land near Rhegium, there shut him up by drawing intrenchments round his army. Twice in one day did Spartacus endeavour to break through the lines ; twice he was thrown back with great slaughter. But he continued to defend himself with dauntless pertinacity ; and the Senate, hearing that Pompey was on his way back from Spain, joined him in the command with Crassus, and gave him opportunity for gaining fresh distinction.

Crassus, afraid of losing his laurels, determined to try an assault ; but Spartacus eluded his attack by forcing a passage through the lines and marching upon Brundisium, where no doubt he hoped to seize shipping and make his escape from Italy. But M. Lucullus had just returned with a force of veteran soldiers from Macedonia to Brundisium. Spartacus, foiled in his intention, turned like a wolf at bay to meet Crassus. A fearful conflict ensued, which remained doubtful till Spartacus was wounded by a dart through the thigh. Supported on his knee, he still fought heroically till he fell overpowered by numbers. Most of his followers were cut to pieces, but a division of 5000 made their way northwards, where Pompey fell in with them on his way home from Spain and slew them to a man. About 6000 more were taken prisoners by Crassus, who hung them along the road from Rome to Capua.

To Crassus undoubtedly belongs the credit of bringing this dreadful war to a close. In six months he had finished his work. But Pompey had been so favoured by circumstances, that he claimed the honour of concluding not only the Sertorian war, but also the war with Spartacus. In fact, he had not much cause for boasting in either case. The daggers of Perperna and his associates really brought the Spanish contest to an end, and as to the gladiatorial conflict, the lucky chance by which Pompey intercepted 5000 fugitives was his only claim to credit. But the young general was a favourite with the soldiery and with the people, while Crassus, from his greed for money, enjoyed little popularity. Public opinion therefore seconded claims which were put forward without modesty or justice.

Pompey and Crassus now returned to Rome. They did not, however, enter the city ; for both desired a triumph, and their armies lay at the gates to share the honours. On the last day of the year Pompey enjoyed a splendid triumph ; Crassus was obliged to be content with an ovation.

In the meantime they both asked permission to offer themselves as candidates for the Consulship. Both were excluded by the laws of Sulla. Crassus was still Praetor, and at least two years ought to elapse before his Consulship. Pompey was only in his thirty-sixth year, and had not even been Quaestor. The Senate, however, dared not refuse Pompey, for he would not disband his army, and his tone brooked no refusal. And what was granted to Pompey could not be denied to Crassus, who also kept his soldiers under arms. Thus at the demand of two chiefs, each backed by an army, the Senate were, within eight years after Sulla's death, obliged to break his laws. Pompey was elected by acclamation. Crassus might have been less successful had he not been supported by Pompey. Presently after his election Pompey gave intimation of his intention to pursue a popular course of policy. In a set speech he declared his purpose of releasing the tribunes from the trammels imposed upon them by Sulla, and of attempting a reform of the judicial system. Both of these announcements were received with shouts of applause.

On the Calends of January, 70 B.C., Pompey and Crassus entered on their memorable Consulship. Pompey at once brought forward the two measures which he had promised. To the former the Senate offered but a feeble opposition. The Tribunes were restored to the exercise of their power, and with their restoration it may be said that the key-stone of the arch erected by Sulla fell.<sup>1</sup> With the resuscitation of this popular power revived also the independence of the Plebeian Assembly, and hence followed by necessity a struggle between that body and the Senate.

But the other measure broached by Pompey was one which the Senate determined to oppose to the uttermost. They could not tamely abandon their absolute power over the law courts. Yet in the last ten years scandal had been great. Among other persons, Caesar had reason to complain. After his escape from Sulla's vengeance, he withdrew from Rome and lived in proconsular Asia till Sulla's death. On his return, though only in his twenty-fifth year, he indicted Cn. Dolabella for misgovernment in Macedonia. Dolabella was defended by Q. Hortensius, the first advocate of the day, a determined adherent of the Senatorial party, and as a matter of course he was acquitted. It had, however, been remarked that

<sup>1</sup> A Lex Aurelia of 75 B.C. had already abolished the rule preventing an ex-Tribune from holding higher office. On the restoration of the distributions of corn, see Mommsen, iv. 289.

the Knights were little less corrupt than the Senators ; and the law proposed under Pompey's authority by the Praetor, L. Aurelius Cotta, was so devised as to establish a court composed of three elements, each of which might serve as a check upon the other two. In each jury one-third of the jurymen was to be furnished by the Senate, one-third by the Knights, and the remaining third by the Tribunes of the Treasury.<sup>1</sup> Catulus endeavoured to promote a compromise ; but Pompey was resolute, and the Nobles prepared to maintain their privilege by arms.

An event, however, occurred which smoothed the way for Cotta's law. Cicero, as we have mentioned, after the great

*Cicero.*

credit he had won by his bold defence of Sext. Roscius, had quitted Rome for two years. He returned in 77 B.C., and immediately began to dispute with Hortensius the sway which he exercised in the law courts. Except during the year 75 B.C., when he was serving as Quaestor in Sicily, he was employed as an advocate at Rome. His polished eloquence excited universal admiration ; his defence of many wealthy clients connected him with many powerful families. He was of the same age as Pompey ; and, being now a candidate for the Aedileship, he began to be eager for political distinction. To obtain this by military commands was not suited to his tastes or talents. But it was possible to achieve it by the public impeachment of some powerful offender. C.

*Accusation of Verres.*

Verres, a man whose infamous character has been already noticed,<sup>2</sup> had for three years been Praetor for Sicily, from which Province he had returned after practising extortions and iniquities unexampled even in those days. The Sicilians, remembering the industry and equity with which Cicero had lately executed the functions of Quaestor in their island, begged him to come forward as the accuser of this man ; and the orator, who saw how he might at once strengthen the hands of Pompey and share the popular triumph of the Consul, readily undertook the cause.

The first attempt which Hortensius, the dexterous advocate of Verres, made to elude Cicero's attack was to put forward

*The trial.*

Q. Caecilius Niger, who had been Quaestor under Verres, and who contended that to him belonged the task of accusation. But Cicero exposed the intended fraud so unanswerably that even the Senatorial jurymen named Cicero

<sup>1</sup> The *tribuni aerarii*. Originally they were the Presidents of the Tribes and collectors of the *tributum*, but their name hardly ever occurs in Roman authors. See *Dict. Ant.*, "TRIBUNUS."

<sup>2</sup> Page 574.



as prosecutor.<sup>1</sup> He demanded a hundred and ten days for the purpose of collecting evidence in Sicily. But he only used fifty of them, and on the 5th of August he opened this famous impeachment. He had in the meantime been elected Aedile. But Hortensius had also become Consul-elect; and one of the Metelli, a warm friend of the accused, was to succeed Glabrio, who now presided in the Praetorian Court for trying charges of malversation. It was therefore a great object for Verres to get the trial postponed to next year, when his great Senatorial friends would fill these important offices. To baffle this design, Cicero contented himself with a brief statement of his case, and at once proceeded to call witnesses. So overpowering was the evidence, that Hortensius threw up his brief, and Verres sought impunity in a voluntary exile. To show what he could have done, Cicero wrote and published the five great pleadings in which he intended to have set forth the crimes of Verres;<sup>2</sup> and they remain to us as a notable picture of the misery which it was in the power of a Roman governor to inflict.

Soon after this memorable trial came to its abrupt issue, the law was passed, seemingly with little opposition; *Aurelian law* and thus a second great breach was made in the *passed.* Sullan Constitution.

The corrupt state of the Senate itself was made manifest by a step now taken by Catulus and his friends. They restored the Censorial Office, which had been suspended for sixteen years. The Censors of the year 70 B.C. dis- *Censorship* charged their duties with severe integrity, and sixty-four Senators *revived.* were degraded.<sup>3</sup> For Catulus they revived the high rank of Princesps, and he was the last independent Senator who held that rank.

The review of the Knights was made remarkable by the fact that the Consul Pompey appeared in the procession, leading his horse through the Forum, and submitting himself to the Censorial scrutiny.

Crassus was already jealous of Pompey, and this jealousy increased with Pompey's popularity. Both the Consuls continued to maintain an armed force near the city; and though the liberal measures of Pompey had won the Forum, yet the gold of Crassus commanded many followers. The Senate dreaded that the

*Jealousy between Pompey and Crassus.*

<sup>1</sup> See the *Divinatio in Q. Caecilium*.

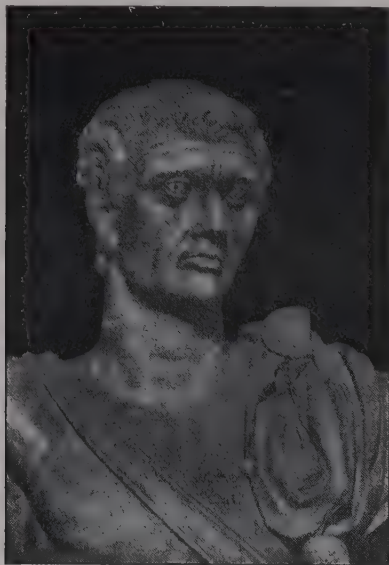
<sup>2</sup> They are known as the *Actio secunda in C. Verrem*.

<sup>3</sup> Mommsen (iv. 380) takes an entirely different view of this Censorship.

days of Marius or Sulla might return. But at the close of the year Crassus publicly offered his hand to Pompey, which the latter deigned to accept after the manner of a prince. It did not suit Crassus to disturb credit and imperil his vast fortune by a civil war; Pompey was satisfied so long as no other disputed his claim to be the first citizen of the republic.

Thus ended by far the most remarkable year that had passed since the time of Sulla. Two generals, backed by an armed force, had trampled on the great Dictator's laws; and one of them had rudely shaken the political edifice reared in so much blood. Behind them appeared the form of one who sought to gain by political arts what had lately been arrogated by the sword. But Caesar was as yet only feeling his way in the troubled field of politics.

AUTHORITIES.—Livy (Epit.), xc.-xcvii.; Appian, *B. C.*, i. 108-121; Cicero, *In Verrem*; Plutarch, *Pompeius*, *Crassus*, *Cicero*, *Caesar*; Orosius, v. 22-24. For Lepidus, see also Granus Licinianus, p. 43; Sallust, *Hist. fr.*, i. 2; Florus, iii. 23. For Sertorius: Plutarch, *Sertorius*; Sallust, *Hist. fr.*, 4; Appian, xii. 68; Frontinus, ii. 5. 31. For Spartacus: Florus, iii. 20; Frontinus, i. 5. 20-22.



Pompey, from the statue in the Palazzo Spada at Rome  
(Bernoulli, *Röm. Ikon.*, i. 112).



Coin of Tigranes (Head, *H. N.*, 649).

## CHAPTER LVIII

### THIRD OR GREAT MITHRIDATIC WAR : POMPEY IN THE EAST. (74-61 B.C.)

IT has been mentioned that so soon as Sulla's back was turned, Murena assailed Mithridates anew. Archelaus, who had deserted his master, was his secret instigator. Mithridates submitted, till he found the Roman general preparing to repeat his invasion. Then he collected a large force, fell suddenly upon Murena near the Halys, and defeated him. An envoy now arrived from Rome with peremptory orders to desist from his rash enterprise ; and thus ended what is called the Second Mithridatic War.

This reckless attack was enough to provoke a less adventurous spirit than that of Mithridates. The death of the great Dictator, the outbreak of party quarrels, and the successes of Sertorius, led the king to think that the favourable moment had arrived. It was about the year 75 B.C. that he concluded his treaty with Sertorius. But the Roman leader's career was cut short, and the treaty failed of its effect.

Soon after this, Nicomedes of Bithynia, dying without children, left his kingdom by will to the Roman People, and it was formed into a Province. But Mithridates at once produced a pretended son of the late king ; and to support his claims marched into Bithynia with an army consisting of 120,000 foot, armed and trained in the Roman fashion, and 16,000 horse. A powerful fleet co-operated with this formidable force, and the whole country submitted without a blow. This was in 74 B.C.

The Consuls of the year were M. Aurelius Cotta and L.

Licinius Lucullus. Lucullus, grandson of the Lucullus who had behaved so treacherously to the Spaniards,<sup>1</sup> had done good service under Sulla in the First Mithridatic War. But Cotta had obtained the Province of Bithynia by lot, and Lucullus was destined by this capricious dispenser of patronage to the quiet rule of Cisalpine Gaul. It happened, however, that the Province of Cilicia became vacant, and it was conferred upon Lucullus, with the conduct of the war against Mithridates. On the arrival of Lucullus in Asia, he heard that Cotta had been obliged to throw himself into Chalcedon, where he was blockaded by the king's troops. Lucullus carried with him no more than one legion. He found four in Asia, two of which were the licentious soldiery of Fimbria. But there was no time to pick and choose. He advanced into Mysia with about 30,000 foot and 2500 horse.

At the approach of Lucullus, Mithridates withdrew from Chalcedon, and laid siege to Cyzicus, a town which stands on what is now a peninsula, though at that time it was separated from the main land by a narrow channel. With his large army he cut it off from all communication with the land, while his powerful fleet served at once to blockade the place, and to keep his army well supplied. Lucullus followed the king towards Cyzicus, and contrived to post his army so strongly, that on the one hand he was quite secure from attack, while on the other he completely commanded the enemy's lines. Winter was at hand. The Pontic fleet was unable to keep the sea; and as Lucullus had intercepted communication with the interior, supplies began to fail. By famine and disease the enemy was at length so weakened that Lucullus closed in upon them, and the besiegers became in their turn besieged. After persisting bravely for some time, Mithridates decamped by night on board ship, leaving orders for his army to march to Lampsacus. They were closely pursued by the Roman commander, who attacked them at every advantageous point. On the Aesepus, which was in flood at the time, and on the Granicus, great numbers fell; only a shattered remnant of the host arrived at Lampsacus. Mithridates himself retired towards Pontus, where he heard that the greater part of his fleet had perished in a storm, and the king himself was indebted to a pirate for a passage to Heracleia, whence he passed to Sinopé. Thus the

---

<sup>1</sup> Page 425. The father of the Consul of 74 B.C. had commanded, without showing much capacity, in the second Sicilian slave war,

vast array of forces which Mithridates had collected and trained with so much anxious care was annihilated in little more than a year. But with unflinching resolution he proceeded to raise new levies.

During the whole of the years 73 and 72 B.C. Lucullus continued steadily to advance upon the kingdom of Pontus : even in the former year he had sent letters wreathed *Mithridates* in laurel recording his successes to the Senate. *and Tigranes.* Alarmed by the successes of the Romans, Mithridates betook himself to the mountain-fortress of Cabeira, within reach of the kingdom of his son-in-law Tigranes. To this monarch, who styled himself King of Kings, he had already sent for aid, as well as to his own son Machares, whom he had made sovereign of the Crimean Bosphorus and its dependencies. In the spring of 71 B.C., Lucullus advanced against Cabeira. After several partial engagements, in which the Romans had the advantage, Mithridates fled precipitately, and was so hotly pursued that his capture would have been certain, had not the Roman horsemen stopped to collect a quantity of gold which had fallen from a mule in the king's suite. He took refuge in Armenia with Tigranes, and Lucullus returned from pursuing him to complete the conquest of the realm of Pontus.

Before his return to Pontus, Lucullus had sent Ap. Clodius, his wife's brother, to demand the person of Mithridates from Tigranes. The envoy did not return from this mission for a considerable time ; and Lucullus, *Lucullus and the Province of Asia.* having subdued all Pontus, employed the interval that remained in making a tour of the Province of Asia, with the purpose of restoring order in the Province and its contiguous principalities. His mild and generous temper won the favour of the people. It had been formerly his task to collect the tribute imposed by Sulla upon Asia, and he had performed this duty with all the gentleness which its nature permitted. But since his departure the imposts had been multiplied six-fold by the extortionate interest demanded for taxes in arrear. Lucullus at once fixed the rate of interest at twelve per cent., struck off the accumulated sums from the capital of the debt, and made other stringent rules for checking the malpractices of the Roman capitalists. These proceedings made him many enemies ; moreover, by a previous order forbidding pillage, he had lost the affections of legions accustomed to licence.

Meanwhile Ap. Clodius had returned with the answer of Tigranes. This haughty monarch had not as yet admitted his unfortunate father-in-law to his presence. But the *War with Armenia.* tone of the Roman envoy displeased him ; he was

especially wroth because he was not honoured with the title of King of Kings, and he refused to give up the person of Mithridates. Lucullus therefore prepared to use force. Early in 69 B.C. he crossed the upper Euphrates with a small force of picked troops, and pushed on through wild mountain districts to Tigranocerta, the western capital of Armenia. Mithridates advised Tigranes not to hazard an action with the invaders. But the king scornfully rejected his advice; and when he saw the army of Lucullus, "Those Romans," he said, "for ambassadors are too many, for enemies too few." But a terrible defeat was the consequence of his temerity; and the slaughter of his broken host was only stopped by the approach of night. Tigranes tore off his diadem, and fled eastward, having learnt by bitter experience that his father-in-law had formed too true an estimate of the Roman soldiery. Tigranocerta, though defended by walls *Capture of* 50 cubits high, was betrayed by the Greek inhabi-  
*Tigranocerta.* tants of the place. Machares, son of Mithridates, viceroy of the Crimea, had already paid homage to Rome. The king of the Parthians, a powerful tribe which had poured from the mountainous districts south of the Indian Caucasus and had become lords of Central Asia from the Indus to the Euphrates, sent offers of alliance. Roman strategists loudly commended Lucullus, who had subdued the disciplined army of Mithridates by systematic operations, and had crushed the barbarous hordes of Tigranes by adventurous boldness.

Next year (68 B.C.) the Roman leader continued his victorious career. Tigranes attempted to make a stand upon the Arsanias, *Advance upon* a tributary of the Euphrates, but was again defeated;  
*Artaxata.* and Lucullus resolved to make himself master of Artaxata, the second capital of Armenia, northward of Mount Ararat. But already the soldiery had shown mutinous inclinations, and at length openly declared that they would advance no further into those inclement and mountainous regions. Lucullus unwillingly gave way, and turning his course southward, crossed the range of Taurus into the warmer region between the upper valleys of the Tigris and the Euphrates, then called *Capture of* Mygdonia, where he took by storm the large and  
*Nisibis.* wealthy town of Nisibis. In the ensuing winter events happened that destroyed his well-grounded hopes of eventual success.

The mutinous spirit, partially disclosed in the foregoing year, *Mutiny in* broke out at Nisibis during the winter. The flame  
*the Roman* was fanned by P. Clodius Pulcher, younger brother  
*army.* of the Ap. Clodius who had been sent as envoy to Tigranes. The subsequent career of this person proved his



reckless and selfish temper. On the present occasion, though he was but about five-and-twenty, he conceived he had been neglected by Lucullus. In the army he found ready materials for sedition. The men had indeed some reason for discontent. The soldiers of Fimbria had been absent from Italy for nearly twenty years ; and since Lucullus took the command they had suffered great hardships. Lucullus, though a good general and a just ruler, had none of that genial frankness which wins the affection of soldiers, and his luxurious habits excited jealousy.<sup>1</sup>

At this very time Mithridates suddenly reappeared in his own kingdom, and drove the officer left in command there into Cabeira. But L. Triarius, another lieutenant of Lucullus, came to the rescue with a strong force, and *Defeat of Triarius.* forced Mithridates to act on the defensive. Early next spring (67 B.C.) Lucullus hastened to the support of his lieutenant. But Triarius, presumptuous and eager for triumph on his own account, attacked Mithridates at Zela, without waiting for the arrival of the general, and was defeated with heavy loss. On the approach of Lucullus, however, the king cautiously shunned another encounter, for he was expecting the arrival of Tigranes with an Armenian army. Thereupon Lucullus resolved to march eastward and intercept the Armenian monarch ; but the army broke into open mutiny, and positively refused to go a step beyond the limits of Pontus.

Events were even now occurring which ended in transferring the command to other hands. While the Roman arms were threatening the shores of the Caspian and the con- *The Cilician pirates.* fines of the Parthian monarchy, while Lucullus was suffering the mortification of being checked in his career of conquest, a formidable enemy was assailing the very shores of Italy. From ancient times the creeks of Asia Minor and the islets of the Archipelago had been the resort of piratical bands, who sallied out for plunder, and disappeared as if by magic before attack. During the distractions that followed the Social and Civil Wars, these pirates had gained a power and an audacity unknown before.<sup>2</sup> Their chief nests were in the Cilician ports, and they possessed strongholds in Isauria, a wild and mountainous country which lay above the western part of Cilicia. Hence these pirates are sometimes called by the general name of Cilicians, and sometimes by the special name of Isaurians. Of late they

<sup>1</sup> The *publicani* also joined in the opposition to him, because he repressed their extortions.

<sup>2</sup> *Cp.* Mommsen, iii. 290, 381.

had been encouraged by the patronage and money of Mithridates. Their audacity was extreme. At one time young Caesar was in their hands, and P. Clodius, who had left the army of Lucullus after his success in fomenting mutiny there, was now their prisoner. Not long before this they had carried off two Praetors from Italy. The daughter of the great orator M. Antonius had been seized by them at Misenum; the very port of Ostia had been plundered by their galleys. In the year 78 B.C., P. Servilius Vatia was sent as Proconsul to Cilicia, and he carried on the war with so much success that he assumed the title of Isauricus. In 74 B.C. M. Antonius, son of the orator, was invested with an extraordinary command over the Mediterranean, in order to clear the seas of the pirates. But he used his great power for plunder and extortion, his operations covered the Roman arms with dishonour, and, dying in Crete, which he had attacked as being in league with the pirates, he was called Creticus in derision. The depredations of the pirates continued. Q. Metellus, Consul in 69 B.C., was ordered to continue the war against Crete, and gave good promise of a successful issue. But Pompey was becoming impatient for employment. He was popular, his military character stood higher than that of any other man at Rome, and it was with general approbation that early in the year 67 B.C. the Tribune A. Gabinus, a creature of his own, brought forward *Gabinian law*, a law enabling the Assembly to elect a person of Consular rank, who should exercise over the whole Mediterranean a power still more absolute than had been conferred upon Antonius. Every one knew that Pompey was to be the person. The Senate were, almost to a man, suspicious of his intentions. It was thought that he purposed to make himself the military chief of Rome, and the proposition was opposed, as dangerous to freedom, by the Senatorial leaders, Catulus, Hortensius, and others. Caesar supported it in the Senate, but he stood almost alone. Pompey was threatened with the ominous words: "You aspire to be Romulus; beware of the fate of Romulus." When the Tribes met to pass the bill, a Tribune named Trebellius was induced to interpose his veto, nor could threats or persuasions move him, till Gabinus put it to the vote that he should be deprived of his Tribunate, as Octavius had been deprived by Gracchus. Not till seventeen tribes had voted for his deprivation, did Trebellius yield, and then the bill was passed by acclamation. No sooner was this result known than the price of provisions fell.

No part of Pompey's life is so brilliant as its next years.

Early in the spring he had got a large fleet ready for sea. Twenty-four lieutenants, among whom appear the names of Cato and Varro, some commanding squadrons of the fleet, some protecting the coast with troops, obeyed his orders. He directed all these forces to encircle the west of the Mediterranean, and by simultaneous movements to drive the flying squadrons of the enemy before them towards the east. In the brief space of forty days he returned to Rome, and reported that the whole western sea had been cleared of the pirates. Meantime, a powerful fleet had assembled at Brundisium, and hastening across Italy to that port, he took the command in person. He continued his plan of action by sweeping out every inlet of the Archipelago, so as to force the enemy to the Cilician coast. Their assembled ships ventured to give him battle off their rock-fortress of Coracesium, and suffered a complete defeat. A general submission followed, due as much to the leniency of Pompey as to his victory, and in the course of three months from the day on which he commenced operations the war was ended. He remained in the east sometime longer to settle matters. A large number of the pirates were settled in the Cilician town of Soli, which was henceforth named Pompeiopolis.

*Brilliant  
success of  
Pompey.*

About the same time, Metellus completed the conquest of Crete. Pompey had wished to include that island in his command, but Metellus, thanks to his powerful connections, successfully resisted the encroachment. After some delay he was honoured with a triumph, and assumed the name of Creticus as a title of real honour.

At the moment, then, when Lucullus was constrained by his mutinous soldiery, Pompey in the full blaze of victory was settling the affairs of Cilicia. During the winter his friends at Rome put forward his name as the only person fit to be entrusted with the task of concluding the Mithridatic War. The command had already been transferred from Lucullus to M. Acilius Glabrio, Consul for 67 B.C. But it was very certain that, where Lucullus had failed, Glabrio could not succeed; and at the beginning of the year 66 B.C., the Tribune Manilius moved that Pompey should be invested with the chief command over all Roman dominions in the east, till he had brought the war with Mithridates to an end. The Senatorial chiefs opposed the law of Manilius, but less vehemently than they had opposed the law of Gabinus, and a new supporter of the popular hero appeared in the person of Cicero, who was now Praetor. The eloquent advocate had never yet addressed the Tribes on any political question, and he could not have found

*Manilian law.*

an occasion better suited for his first essay than the praises of Pompey. The task was easy, and the audience eager ; but never was a more splendid offering paid to military genius than was now paid to Pompey by the rising orator.<sup>1</sup> Success was a matter of course. Pompey received by acclamation the most extensive authority ever yet conferred by law upon a Roman citizen, with the exception of the Dictatorial power given to Sulla. He was in fact appointed Dictator of the East, and with the army placed at his command it would have been easy to establish himself as master of the West also. It must be confessed that the Senatorial chiefs had some reason to object to this unlimited authority. Necessity was an excuse in Sulla's case, for without him there would have been anarchy. But no necessity now existed, for it cannot be doubted that Lucullus, with proper reinforcements, would have brought the war to a speedy conclusion. But the cause of Pompey was identified with the cause of the People, Lucullus was held to be a champion of the Senate, and the popular will prevailed.

During the year of inaction that had preceded Pompey's appointment, Mithridates still held his ground on the frontier of

*Mithridates  
passes be-  
yond the Cau-  
casus.*

Pontus. Pompey received his new commission early in 66 B.C. He had no doubt made his preparations beforehand, for he at once pushed forward in quest of Mithridates. The king, anxious to avoid a battle, retired towards the sources of the Halys, but here he was overtaken by the Roman general, and obliged to give battle on a spot afterwards marked by the city of Nicopolis, founded by Pompey in memory of the battle. Mithridates was entirely defeated, and only a few stragglers succeeded in crossing the Euphrates. But Tigranes refused to harbour him in Armenia, and he forced his way through the wild country south of Caucasus to Dioscurias (*Iskuria*) on the coast of the Black Sea. Here he passed the winter, and as he now despaired of maintaining the war in the east, his adventurous genius formed the conception of uniting the Sarmatian tribes northward of the Black Sea and making a descent upon Italy. Partly by force, partly by negotiation, he made his way through the Caucasus to the shores of the Palus Macotis. Panic-stricken at his father's approach, Machares, viceroy of the Crimea, sought death by his own hand, and the Crimea again became subject to Mithridates.

Pompey now advanced into Armenia ; and so great was the

---

<sup>1</sup> See his speech *De imperio Cn. Pompeii* (commonly called *pro lege Manilia*), especially 16, 46.

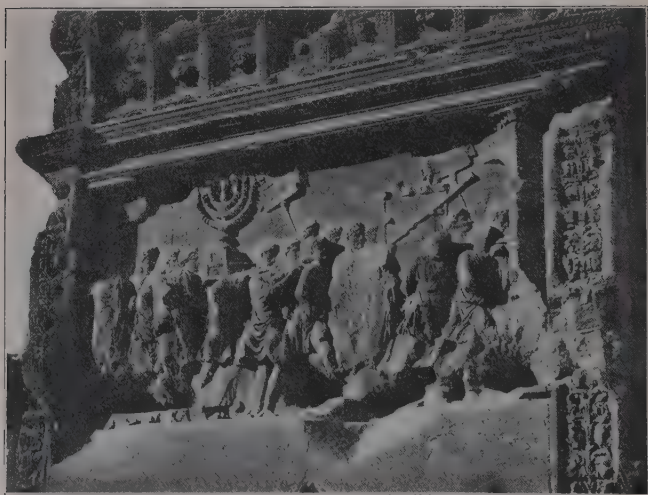
terror caused by his victories, that Tigranes would have prostrated himself at his feet, had not the Roman *Treaty with Parthia.* prevented the humiliation. He had already concluded a treaty with Phraates of Parthia, who had assumed the proud title of King of Kings, lately arrogated by Tigranes. Being thus secure from attack in rear, the victorious Roman turned his steps northwards in pursuit of Mithridates. At mid-winter he celebrated the Saturnalia on the river Cyrus (*Kur*), and in the spring advanced along the coast to the mouth of the Phasis. But learning that Mithridates was beyond his reach, he retraced his steps, and spent the rest of summer in reducing or making alliances with the tribes which occupied the southern slopes of Caucasus. Towards the close of the year he returned to Pontus for winter-quarters. *Reduction of Pontus.* Here he received ambassadors from the neighbouring potentates and busied himself in reducing Pontus to the form of a Roman Province. For the next two years he occupied himself by campaigns in the famous countries to the south-east of Asia Minor.

Syria had been of late years subject to Tigranes, but that king had withdrawn his forces after his defeat by Lucullus. In the summer of 64 B.C., Pompey, descending through *Syria and Cappadocia to Antioch, took possession of the Judaea.* kingdom of the Seleucidae and reduced it to the form of a Roman Province. The Ituracans, the northern Idumaeans, and all the country below Taurus crouched submissive at his feet. In the following year, his authority was called in to settle a quarrel between two brothers of that royal family which had inherited the Jewish sceptre and high priesthood from the brave Maccabees. Aristobulus was the reigning king of Judaea, having dispossessed his elder brother Hyrcanus. The brothers asked the Roman general to mediate between them, and Pompey accepted the appeal. But the Jews refused to admit the arbitration of a foreigner, and Pompey was obliged to undertake the siege of Jerusalem. For three months the Jews defended themselves with their wonted obstinacy; but at the end of that time they submitted, and Pompey entered the Holy City as a conqueror. Pillage he forbade, but, excited by the curiosity which even then the spiritual worship of Jehovah created in the minds of Roman idolaters, he entered the sacred precincts of the Temple, and venturing even to intrude into the Holy of Holies, he stood behind that solemn veil which by the Law was lifted but once a year, and that by the High Priest alone. We know little of the impression produced upon Pompey's mind by finding the shrine untenanted by any object of worship, but



it is interesting to compare the irreverent curiosity of the Roman with the conduct attributed to the great Alexander upon a similar occasion.<sup>1</sup> Hyrcanus was established in the government, on condition of paying a tribute to Rome ; Aristobulus followed the conqueror as his prisoner.

While Pompey was in Palestine he received news which recalled him to Asia Minor. Mithridates was no more. He had been endeavouring to execute his great design of uniting all the barbarous tribes of eastern Europe against Rome, and had so excited the alarm of his remaining subjects that his son Pharnaces found it an easy task to raise them to insurrection. The old monarch, rendered desperate by



Slab from the Arch of Titus, representing the spoils of Jerusalem borne in triumph.

seeing his last hopes baulked, had put an end to his own life at Panticapaeum (*Kertch*) in the Crimea. His body was sent to Pontus by his son, and Pompey ordered it to be taken to Sinopé, where his remains were honoured with a royal funeral and placed in the sepulchre of his fathers.

The winter of the years 63-62 B.C. was spent by the general

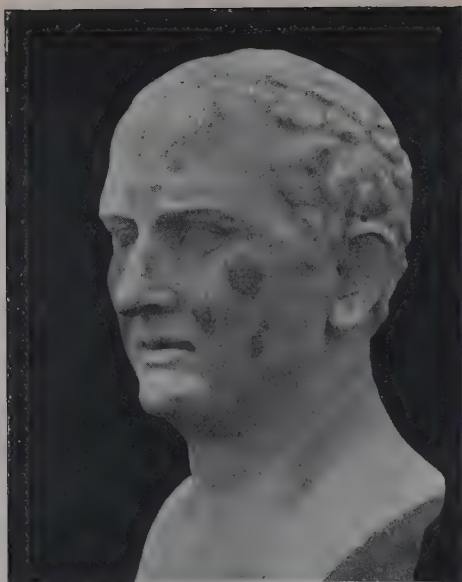
<sup>1</sup> See Ryle and James on the second of the *Psalms of Solomon*.



in regulating the new Provinces of Pontus and Syria, and in settling the kingdoms which he allowed to exist *Pompey's arrangements.* under Roman protection on the frontiers of these Provinces. Pharnaces, son of Mithridates, was left in the possession of the Crimea and its dependencies ; Deiotarus, chief of Galatia, received an increase of territory ; Ariobarzanes had been again restored to the principality of Cappadocia. All this was done by Pompey's sole authority, without advice from the Senate.

Early in 62 B.C. he left Asia, and proceeded slowly through Greece to Brundisium—so slowly that on the 1st of January 61 B.C. he had not yet appeared before the walls of Rome to claim his triumph. He had been absent *His return.* from Italy for nearly six years. His intentions were known to none. But the power given him by the devotion of his soldiers was absolute, and the Senatorial chiefs might well feel anxiety till he disclosed his will. But before we speak of his arrival in Rome, we must relate the important events that had occurred during his absence.

AUTHORITIES.—Livy (Epit.), xciii.-cii. ; Appian, xii. 64 *sqq.* ; Dio, xxxvi., xxxvii. ; Plutarch, *Lucullus, Pompeius* ; Cicero, *de imperio Cn. Pompeii* ; Orosius, vi. 1-6 ; Zonaras, x. 3, 5 ; Sallust, *Hist. fr.*, 6 ; Memnon, xv., xvi. Reinach, *Mithridate Eupator*.



Cicero (from a bust in the possession of the Duke of Wellington).

## CHAPTER LIX

FROM FIRST CONSULSHIP OF POMPEY AND CRASSUS TO  
RETURN OF POMPEY FROM THE EAST : CAESAR : CICERO :  
CATILINE. (69-61 B.C.)

THOUGH the restoration of the Tribune and the loss of their exclusive right to the judicial power had given a rude shock to the Senatorial oligarchy, they still remained masters of Rome. But a chief was growing up who was destined to restore life to the Marian party, to become master of the Roman world, and to be acknowledged as the greatest man whom Rome ever produced.

C. Julius Caesar was born of an old Patrician family in the year 102 B.C.<sup>1</sup> He was four years younger than Pompey and Cicero. His father, C. Caesar, did not live to reach the Consulship. His uncle Sextus held that high

---

<sup>1</sup> According to the ancient authorities, he was two years younger, being born in 100 B.C. : but Mommsen's arguments (iv. 278) in favour of the earlier date are very strong.

dignity in 91 B.C., just before the outbreak of the Social War. But the connection on which the young Patrician most prided himself was the marriage of his aunt Julia with C. Marius, and at the early age of nineteen he declared his adhesion to the popular party by espousing Cornelia, the daughter of Cinna, who was at that time absolute master of Rome.<sup>1</sup> We have already noticed his bold refusal to repudiate his wife, and his narrow escape from Sulla's soldiery. His first military service was performed at the siege of Mitylené, under M. Minucius Thermus, who succeeded Murena in Asia. In the siege of that place he won a civic crown for saving a citizen. On the death of Sulla he returned to Rome, and after the custom of ambitious young Romans, he indicted Cn. Dolabella for extortion in Macedonia. The Senatorial jury, as has been noticed,<sup>2</sup> acquitted Dolabella, but the credit gained by the young orator was great. Soon after, he went to Rhodes to study rhetoric under Molo, in whose school Cicero had lately been taking lessons. It was on his way to Rhodes that he fell into the hands of Cilician pirates. Redeemed by a heavy ransom, he collected some ships, attacked his captors, took them prisoners, and crucified them at Pergamus, according to a threat which he had often made while he was their prisoner. About the year 74 B.C. he heard that he had been chosen as one of the Pontifices, and he instantly returned to Rome, where he remained for some years, leading a life of pleasure, taking only a secondary part in politics, but yet, by his winning manners and open-handed generosity, laying in a large store of popularity, and exercising no small influence over the events of the time.

It was in 67 B.C., as we have seen,<sup>3</sup> that Pompey left the city to take the command against the pirates. In the preceding year, Caesar served as Quaestor in Spain. But before leaving Rome he signalised himself by two funeral orations, one over his aunt Julia, the widow of Marius, the other over his wife Cornelia, the daughter of Cinna. The opportunities which both these speeches offered for political allusions were not neglected; and at the funeral of his aunt he ventured to have the bust of Marius carried among his family images, for the first time since the Dictatorship of Sulla. In 65 B.C. he discharged the functions of Curule Aedile, when he increased his popularity by exhibiting 320 pairs of gladiators and conducting the games on a scale of unusual magnificence. The

*Caesar as the  
successor of  
Marius.*

<sup>1</sup> He was already married (or at least betrothed) to Cossutia, a rich heiress, whom he put away in order to marry Cornelia.

<sup>2</sup> Page 595.

<sup>3</sup> Page 604.

expense of these exhibitions was shared by his colleague, M. Bibulus, who complained that Caesar had all the credit of the shows, "just as the Temple of the Dioscuri, though belonging both to Castor and Pollux, bore the name of Castor only." But he did not confine himself to winning applause by theatrical spectacles. As Curator of the Appian Way he had expended a large sum from his own resources. The Cimbrian trophies of Marius had been thrown down by Sulla, and no public remembrance existed of the services rendered to Rome by her greatest soldier. Caesar ordered these trophies, with suitable inscriptions, to be secretly restored; and in one night he contrived to have them set up upon the Capitol, so that at daybreak men were astonished by the unaccustomed sight. The Marian party took heart at this boldness, and recognised their chief; many shed tears of joy to behold the trophies of their old leader renewed. So important was the matter deemed that it was brought before the Senate, and Catulus accused Caesar of openly assaulting the Constitution. But nothing could be done to check his movements, for in all things he kept cautiously within the law.

The preceding year had been marked by the appearance of a man destined to an infamous notoriety, L. Sergius Catilina, familiar to all under the name of Catiline.

For some time after the death of Sulla the weariness and desire of repose which always follows revolutionary movements *Widespread* had disposed all men to acquiesce in the rule estab-  
*discontent.* lished by the Dictator. But more than one class of persons found themselves ill at ease. The families proscribed by Sulla cherished the thoughts that they might recover what they had lost, and the enthusiasm displayed when Caesar restored the trophies of Marius revealed to the Senate the numbers and the reviving hopes of their political enemies. Besides, there were a vast number of persons, formerly attached to Sulla, who shared their discontent. The Dictator left all real power in the hands of a few great families. His own creatures were allowed to amass money but remained without political power, and soon after his death they found themselves reduced to obscurity. With the recklessness of men who had become suddenly rich, they had squandered their fortunes as lightly as they had won them. These men were for the most part soldiers and ready for any violence. They only wanted chiefs. These chiefs they found among the profligate members of noble families, who, like themselves, were excluded from the counsels of the respectable though narrow-minded men who composed the Senate and administered the government. These were the young nobles,

effeminate and debauched, reckless of blood, of whom Cicero speaks with horror.<sup>1</sup>

Of these adventurers Catiline was the most remarkable. He belonged to an old Patrician *gens*. We have noticed how he is said to have murdered his own brother, and to have secured impunity by getting the name of his victim *Catiline*, placed on the proscribed lists, as well as the ready zeal with which he subjected Marius Gratidianus to torture.<sup>2</sup> A beautiful and profligate lady, by name Aurelia Orestilla, refused his proffered hand because he had a grown-up son by a former marriage: this son speedily ceased to live. Notwithstanding his crimes, the personal qualities of Catiline gave him great ascendancy over all who came in contact with him. His strength and activity were such that he was superior to the soldiers at their own exercises and could encounter skilled gladiators with their own weapons. His manners were frank, and he was never known to desert his friends. By qualities so nearly resembling virtues, it is not strange that he deceived many and obtained mastery over more. He had already served as Praetor in the city, had then become governor of the Province of Africa, and had spent his term of office in the practice of every crime that is imputed to Roman Provincial rulers. In the year before Caesar's Aedileship (66 B.C.), an indictment was laid against Catiline by the profligate P. Clodius Pulcher. He had intended in that year to offer himself candidate for the Consulship. But in consequence of the pending accusation the Senate forbade him to come forward, and this prohibition so irritated him that he planned a new revolution. About this time circumstances were occurring which gave him promise of success.

The Senatorial chiefs, in their wish to restore outward decency, had recently countenanced the introduction of a severe law to prevent bribery. Under this law P. Cornelius Sulla and P. Autronius Paetus, who had been elected *First conspiracy of Catiline*, Consuls for 65 B.C., were indicted and found guilty. Their election was declared void, and L. Cotta, the author of the Aurelian law, and L. Manlius Torquatus were chosen in their stead. Autronius, like Catiline, was ready for any violence; and these two entered into a conspiracy with another profligate young nobleman, by name Cn. Piso, to murder the new Consuls on the Calends of January—the day on which they entered upon

<sup>1</sup> "Libidinosa et delicata iuventus," *ad Att.*, i. 19. 8; "sanguinaria iuventus," *ib.*, ii. 7. 3.

<sup>2</sup> Pages 576, 577.

office—and to seize the supreme authority for themselves. The scheme, however, was adjourned to the 5th of February, when it is said to have failed only because Catiline gave the signal of attack before the armed assassins had assembled in sufficient numbers.

Catiline was acquitted on his trial, no doubt through the intentional misconduct<sup>1</sup> of the case by Clodius. We are astonished *Cicero and Catiline.* to read a private letter of Cicero, in which the orator expresses his willingness to act as Catiline's advocate. Cicero's excuse is that in the next year (64 B.C.)<sup>2</sup> Catiline and he were both to be candidates for the Consulship; and that, if Catiline were acquitted, he might be of service in the canvass.<sup>3</sup> This alone speaks loudly for the influence of Catiline, for in another letter Cicero declares that his guilt was clear as the noonday.<sup>4</sup>

There was indeed reason to fear Catiline's success. Five of the six candidates who opposed him were men of little note.

*Cicero and Antonius, Consuls.* The sixth was Cicero, whose obscure birth was a strong objection to him in the eyes of the Nobility. But there was no choice. C. Antonius, brother of M. Antonius Creticus and younger son of the orator, was considered sure of his election; and he had formed a coalition with Catiline. Cicero was supported by the Equites, by the friends of Pompey, whom he had served by his speech for the Manilian law, and by a number of persons whom he had obliged by his services as advocate. What part he had hitherto taken in politics had been decidedly in opposition to the Senate. But necessity follows no rule. I was known to the Senate that Catiline was engaged in a new conspiracy; and his chances of success would be much increased, if he were supported by both Consuls. Therefore, to keep out Catiline whom they feared, the Senatorial chiefs resolved to support Cicero whom they disliked. The personal popularity of the orator and the support of the aristocracy placed him at the head of the poll. Antonius was returned as his colleague, though he headed Catiline by the votes of very few Centuries.

We now come to the memorable year of Cicero's Consulship,

<sup>1</sup> *Praevaricatio*, as the Romans called it.

<sup>2</sup> In 65 B.C. Catiline did not offer himself.

<sup>3</sup> "Hoc tempore Catilinam competitorem nostrum defendere cogitamus. . . . Spero, si absolutus erit, coniunctiorem illum fore in ratione petitionis; sin aliter acciderit, humaniter feremus." *Ad Att.*, i. 2. 1.

<sup>4</sup> "Catilina, si iudicatum erit meridie non lucere, certus erit competitor." *Ad Att.*, i. 1. 1.



63 B.C. Immediately after his election, Cicero had attached himself to the Senate and justified their choice. *Cicero and the Senate.* To detach Antonius from Catiline he had voluntarily ceded to him the lucrative Province of Macedonia, which he had obtained by lot. To obtain knowledge of the designs of the conspirators, he took into his pay Fulvia, mistress of Curius, a confidential friend of Catiline.

Meantime Cicero had other difficulties to meet. Among the Tribunes of the year were two persons attached to Caesar's party, P. Servilius Rullus and T. Labienus. The Tribunes entered upon their office nearly a month before the Consuls; and in these few days Rullus had come forward with an agrarian law, proposing, as had been proposed in Carbo's time,<sup>1</sup> to divide the public lands of Campania among the poor citizens. But as the land available from this source would not be nearly enough to satisfy the needs of all the citizens, and as the promoters of the bill disclaimed any desire to interfere with the rights of private property, they further proposed that all the property that had been acquired by the state since 88 B.C. should be sold, in order to purchase land in Italy for distribution. For this purpose ten commissioners were to be appointed, to hold office for five years, each commissioner having the *imperium* and twenty subordinates.

Cicero's devotion to his new friends was shown by the alacrity with which he opposed this measure. On the Calends of January, the very day upon which he entered office, he delivered an harangue against it in the Senate, which he followed up by speeches in the Forum.<sup>2</sup> He pleased himself by thinking that it was in consequence of these efforts that Rullus withdrew his bill. Certainly Cicero succeeded in showing that the bill was, at least in part, a plot against Pompey, since the ten commissioners would acquire enormous power, and Pompey could not be one of them.<sup>3</sup> Pompey was very popular, and the measure was rejected on this ground. But, even so, Caesar gained something from the proposal. By advocating it he secured favour for himself; by forcing Cicero to take part against it he hoped to deprive the orator of a large portion of his popularity.

Soon after this Caesar employed the services of Labienus to

<sup>1</sup> Page 569.

<sup>2</sup> Fragments of three speeches *de lege agraria* remain, one addressed to the Senate, two to the People.

<sup>3</sup> Only citizens who gave in their names in person could be candidates for a post on the commission, and Pompey was in Asia.

make an assault upon the arbitrary power assumed by the Senate in dangerous emergencies. It will be remembered that, in the sixth Consulship of Marius, the revolutionary enterprise of Saturninus had been put down by resorting to this arbitrary power. Labienus, whose uncle had perished by the side of Saturninus, now indicted C. Rabirius, an aged Senator, for having slain the Tribune. It was well known that the actual perpetrator of the deed was a slave, who had been publicly rewarded for his services. But Rabirius had certainly been one of the assailants, and he was indicted for High Treason (*perduellio*). If he were found guilty, it would follow that all who hereafter obeyed the Senate in taking up arms against seditious persons would be liable to a similar charge. The cause was tried before the *duumviri*, one of whom was L. Caesar, Consul of the preceding year; the other was C. Caesar himself. It seemed almost impossible that Caesar should condemn Rabirius, seeing that Marius himself had led the attack against Saturninus. But Caesar was not troubled by scruples. The *duumviri* found Rabirius guilty.

From this judgment the old Senator appealed to the Popular Assembly. Cicero came forward, in his Consular robes, to defend him. He was allowed only half an hour for his speech; but if he had been altogether untrammelled, the result would probably have been the same. The People were eager to humiliate the Senate, and were ready to vote according to their present passion. Rabirius would certainly have been condemned, had not Q. Metellus Celer, one of the Praetors, taken down the standard which from ancient times floated from the Janiculum during the sitting of the Comitia.<sup>1</sup> But Caesar's purpose was effectually answered. The governing body had been humbled, and their right to place seditious persons under a sentence of outlawry had been called in question.

Cicero again came forward to oppose an attempt to restore the sons of those who had been on the proscribed lists of Sulla.

He managed the matter with much adroitness, and served the purpose of the Senate by excluding from the Comitia their mortal foes; but he incurred (he says) many personal enmities, and he advocated a sentence which could be justified only by necessity.

*The children  
of the pro-  
scribed.*

---

<sup>1</sup> A custom probably derived from the times when the Etruscans were foes of Rome. To prevent a surprise while the whole *exercitus* was assembled in the Comitia Centuriata, a guard was placed on Janiculum with a standard. The removal of the standard was a sign of danger, and the Assembly broke up. (Dio, xxxvii. 28.)

About this time the age and infirmities of Metellus Pius made probable a vacancy in the high office of Pontifex Maximus ; and Labienus introduced a law by which the right of election to this office was restored to the Tribes, *Caesar elected Pontifex Maximus.* who had been deprived of it in Sulla's revolution.<sup>1</sup>

When Metellus died, Caesar offered himself as a candidate for this high office. Catulus, Chief of the Senate, also came forward, as well as P. Servilius Isauricus. Caesar had been one of the Pontiffs from early youth ; but he was known to be unscrupulous in his pleasures as in his politics, overwhelmed with debt, careless of religion. His election, however, was a trial of political strength merely. It was considered so certain that Catulus attempted to persuade him to withdraw by offering to pay his debts ; but Caesar peremptorily refused, saying that if he needed more money, he would borrow more. He had indeed spent large sums on his canvass, and determined to stake everything on the event. On the morning of the election he parted from his mother, Aurelia, with the words : " I shall return as Pontifex Maximus, or Rome shall see me no more." His success was triumphant. Even in the Tribes to which his opponents belonged he counted more votes than they counted altogether. No fact can more strongly prove the strength which the popular party had regained under his adroit management. It is worth noting that in this year was born his sister's grandson, C. Octavius, who reaped the fruit of all his ambitious endeavours.

The year was fast waning, and nothing was known to the public generally of any attempts on the part of Catiline. That dark and enterprising man had offered himself a *Second conspiracy of Catiline.* third time as candidate for the Consulship, and he was anxious not to move till the result was known. But Cicero, as has been stated, was kept fully informed of the latest designs of the conspirators. At length he considered them so far advanced that on the 21st of October<sup>2</sup> he assembled the Senate and laid all his information before them. On the next day a decree was framed to invest the Consuls with Dictatorial power, but it was not at present put in force.

Soon after, the Consular Comitia were held, and the election of the Centuries fell on D. Junius Silanus and L. Licinius Murena, adherents of the Senatorial party. Catiline, disappointed of his last hopes, convened his friends *Meeting in the house of Laeca.* at the house of M. Porcius Laeca, on the night

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* page 528.

<sup>2</sup> Our 25th of December, 63 B.C.

following the 6th of November,<sup>1</sup> and at this meeting it was determined to proceed to action. C. Manlius, an old centurion, had already been sent into Etruria to levy troops. Catiline expressed his wish to follow; his associates were to organise movements within the city. Two Knights undertook to kill Cicero in his own chamber next morning, but the Consul, informed by Fulvia, eluded the danger by refusing them admission.

Cicero now resolved to dally no longer with the peril. He summoned the Senate to meet on the 8th of November in the

*Cicero's first  
speech against  
Catiline.*

Temple of Jupiter Stator. Catiline, with marvellous effrontery, appeared in his place as a Senator, but every one quitted the bench and left him alone.

Cicero now rose, and delivered that famous speech which is entitled his First Oration against Catiline. The conspirator rose to reply, but a general shout of execration prevented him. Unable to obtain a hearing, he left the Senate house, and, believing that his life was in danger at Rome, he handed over the execution of his designs at home to P. Lentulus Sura, one of the Praetors, and to C. Cethegus, and left Rome before morning to join Manlius at Faesulae.

*Second speech.* On the following morning Cicero assembled the People in the Forum and in his Second Speech told them of the flight of Catiline.

The Senate now made a second decree, in which Catiline was proclaimed a public enemy, and the Consul Antonius was

*The Allobro-  
ges.*

directed to take the command of an army destined to act against him, while to Cicero was committed

the care of the city. Cicero was at a loss; for he was not able to bring forward Fulvia as a witness, and after the proceedings against Rabirius he feared resorting to the use of Dictatorial power. But at this moment he obtained direct evidence against the conspirators. There were then present at Rome ambassadors from the Allobrogiens, whose business it was to solicit relief from the debts which that people had incurred to Roman creditors. The Senate heard them coldly, and Lentulus took advantage of their discontent to stir them to insurrection. At first they lent ear to his offers, but thought it prudent to disclose the matter to Q. Fabius Sanga, whose family had been long used to protect their interests at Rome.<sup>2</sup> Fabius communicated

<sup>1</sup> Our 10th of January 62 B.C. In this and all following dates correction must be made to obtain the real time. The Roman 1st of January of 63 B.C. would be by our reckoning the 14th of March.

<sup>2</sup> They had been conquered by Q. Fabius Maximus, nephew of Scipio Aemilianus. See page 507.

with Cicero. By the Consul's directions, the Allobrogian envoys continued their intrigue with Lentulus, and demanded written orders, signed by the chief conspirators, to serve as credentials to their nation. Bearing these documents, they set out from Rome on the evening of the 2nd of December (4th of February 62 B.C.), accompanied by one T. Volturcius, who carried letters from Lentulus to Catiline. Cicero ordered the Praetors, L. Flaccus and C. Pomptinus, to take post upon the Mulvian Bridge. Here the envoys were arrested, and all their papers seized.

Early next morning, Cicero sent for the chief conspirators, especially those who had signed the Allobrogian credentials, Lentulus, Cethegus, and some others. Ignorant of what had passed, they came; and the Consul, holding the Praetor Lentulus by the hand, and followed by the rest, went straight to the Temple of Concord, where he had summoned the Senate to meet. Volturcius and the Allobrogian envoys were now brought in, and the Praetor Flaccus produced the papers which he had seized. The evidence was brought so clearly to a point that the conspirators confessed their handwriting, and the Senate decreed that Lentulus should be deprived of his Praetorship, and that all the prisoners should be put into the hands of eminent Senators, who were to be answerable for their persons. Then Cicero went forth into the Forum, and in his Third Speech detailed to the assembled People all the circumstances which had been discovered. The conspirators had resolved to set the city on fire in twelve places at once, as soon as it was known that Catiline and Manlius were ready to advance at the head of an armed force. Lentulus, who belonged to the Cornelian *gens*, had been buoyed up by a Sibylline prophecy, which promised the dominion over Rome to three of that great house; he was to be the third Cornelius after Cornelius Cinna and Cornelius Sulla. Yet it was to his remissness that the failure of the plot was due. It is probable that if the conduct of the business had been left to the desperate energies of Cethegus,<sup>1</sup> some attempt at a rising would have been made.

The certainty of danger and the feeling of escape filled all hearts with indignation against the Catilinarian gang, and for a moment Cicero and the Senate rose to the height of popularity.

Two days after (Dec. 5=Feb. 7, 62 B.C.), the Senate was

---

<sup>1</sup> "Manus vesana Cethegi," Lucan, ii. 543; *cp.* Cic., in *Catil.*, iv. 6, 11.

*Third speech  
against Catiline.*

summoned to the Temple of Concord to decide the fate of the  
*Debate on the* ca tive conspirators. Silanus, as Consul-elect, was  
*conspirators.* first asked his opinion, and he gave it in favour of  
 death. Caesar, who was then Praetor-elect, spoke against  
 capital punishment, and proposed that the prisoners should be  
 condemned to perpetual chains in various cities of Italy—taking  
 care to remind the Senate that their power to inflict the penalty  
 of death was questionable. His speech produced such an effect  
 that even Silanus endeavoured to explain away his words. But  
 Cato delivered a vehement argument in favour of extreme  
 punishment, and, although Tib. Nero moved that the question  
 should be adjourned for the present, the majority supported  
 Cato.<sup>1</sup> Immediately after the vote, the Consul, with a strong  
 guard, conveyed the prisoners to the loathsome dungeon called  
 the Tullianum, and here they were strangled by the public  
 executioners.

It is difficult to see how the state could have been imperilled  
 by suffering the culprits to live, at least till they had been  
 allowed the chances of a regular trial. If Rabirius  
*Cicero hailed* was held guilty for assisting in the assault upon  
*as "Father of* Saturninus, a man who was actually in arms against  
*his country."* the government, what had Cicero to expect from those who  
 had been ready to deliver this verdict? It was not long before  
 he had cause to rue his over-zealous haste. But for the moment,  
 the popular voice ratified the judgment of Cato, when he pro-  
 claimed Cicero to have deserved the title of "Father of his  
 Country."

Before the seizure of the conspirators, the Consul-elect Murena  
 was indicted by Servius Sulpicius, one of his competitors, for  
*Trial of* bribery, and the accusation was supported by Cato.  
*Murena.* Hortensius and Cicero undertook the defence.  
 Cicero's speech is extant, and the buoyant spirit in which he  
 assails the legal pedantry of Sulpicius and the impracticable  
 stoicism of Cato, show how confident he felt of success in crushing  
 the conspiracy. There can be no doubt that Murena was guilty.  
 The only argument of force used in his defence by Cicero, was  
 that it was dangerous to leave the state with one Consul when  
 Catiline was in the field. And this argument probably it was  
 that procured the acquittal of the Consul-elect.

---

<sup>1</sup> Cicero, in his *Fourth Catilinarian Oration*, which was delivered  
 (if it is genuine) on this occasion, reviews the opinions which are before  
 the Senate without definitely stating his own preference for either of  
 them. But the general tone of the speech would seem to incline rather  
 to the side of Silanus than to that of Caesar.



The sequel may be briefly related. Before the execution of his accomplices, Catiline was at the head of two complete legions consisting chiefly of Sulla's veterans. When news of the failure of the plot reached the insurgents, *Battle of Pistoria.* many deserted; Catiline endeavoured to retreat into Cisalpine Gaul. But the passes were beset by Metellus Celer; Antonius, now Proconsul (for the new year had begun), was close behind; and it became necessary either to fight or surrender. Catiline chose the braver course. His small army was drawn up with skill. Antonius, mindful of former intimacy with Catiline, alleged illness as a plea for giving up the command of his troops to M. Petreius, a skilful soldier. A short but desperate conflict followed. Manlius fell fighting bravely. Catiline, seeing that the day was lost, rushed into the thick of battle, and also fell with many wounds. He was found, still breathing, with a menacing frown stamped upon his brow. None were taken prisoners; all who died had their wounds in front.

It is impossible to part from this history without adding a word with respect to the part taken by Caesar and Crassus. Both these eminent persons were supposed to have been more or less privy to Catiline's designs; if the first conspiracy attributed to Catiline had succeeded, *Relation of Crassus and Caesar to the conspiracy.* we are told that the assassins of the Consuls had intended to declare Crassus Dictator, and that Caesar was to be Master of the Horse. And many believed that Caesar at least, if not Crassus also, was guilty.

Nothing seems more improbable than that Crassus should have countenanced a plan which involved the destruction of the city, and which must have been followed by the ruin of credit. He had constantly employed the large fortune which he had amassed in the Sullan Proscription for the purpose of speculation and jobbing. To a money-lender and speculator, a violent revolution, attended by destruction of property and promising abolition of debts, would be of all things the least desirable. Crassus was not without ambition, but he never gratified his lust for power at the expense of his purse.

The case against Caesar bears at first sight more likelihood. Sallust represents Cato as hinting that Caesar's wish to spare the conspirators arose from his complicity with them. In the next year, after Caesar had entered upon his Praetorship, one L. Vettius, an agent of the conspirators who had been employed by Cicero as a spy, offered to produce a letter from Caesar to Catiline, which would prove his guilt. Caesar appealed to the late Consul to state whether he had not himself furnished some evidence against the conspirators. Cicero rose and declared

that, so far from Caesar being implicated in the plot, he had done all that could be expected from a good citizen to assist in crushing it. On the motion of Cicero, it was resolved to quash the matter without further enquiry. Vettius became an object of popular indignation, and was probably saved from being torn to pieces only by being thrown into prison.

In truth, of evidence to prove Caesar's complicity with Catiline there was none; and the further the case is examined, the less appears to be the probability of any real complicity. The course he had pursued for the purpose of undermining the power of the Senate had been so successful, that he was little likely to abandon it for a scheme of reckless violence, from which others would reap the chief advantage. Even if Catiline had succeeded, he must have been crushed by Pompey, who was about returning to Italy at the head of his victorious legions. The desire of Caesar to save the lives of Lentulus and the rest is at once explained, when we remember that he had just before prompted the prosecution of Rabirius. As the leader of the popular party, it was his cue always and everywhere to protest against the absolute power assumed by the Senate, as unconstitutional and illegal. It is possible that he may have suspected, or even known, the designs of Catiline, and he may have been sounded by that reckless person as a well-known opponent of the Senate. But without claiming for Caesar any credit for principle, we may safely conclude that it was not expedient for him to have any dealings with Catiline; and we may be sure that he was the last man to be misled into a rash enterprise which was not expedient for himself.

AUTHORITIES.—For the period covered by Cicero's political activity, his works are our chief source of information. The speeches, *de imperio Cn. Pompeii, de lege agraria* (i.-iii.), *pro Rabirio perduell.*, *pro Murena, in Catilinam* (i.-iv.), belong (amongst others) to these years. His letters become more important later, but they are useful even for the time covered by this chapter. Among the large modern literature on Cicero the following may be mentioned: Tyrrell and Purser, *Correspondence of Cicero*; Jeans, *Life and Letters of Cicero* (translation, with comments, of Watson's selection from the letters); Strachan-Davidson, *Cicero*; Drumann, *Geschichte Roms*, v., vi. (uniformly unfavourable to Cicero); Boissier, *Cicéron et ses amis*. See also Warde Fowler, *Julius Caesar*; Beesly, *Catiline and Clodius* (stimulating, though unconvincing essays); Long, *Decline of the Roman Republic*; Merivale, *Romans under the Empire* (beginning at the death of Sulla). The chief ancient authorities for this period, other than Cicero, are Sallust, *Catiline*; Plutarch, *Caesar, Cato minor, Cicero, Crassus, Pompeius*; Suetonius, *Julius*; Dio, xxxvii. *sqq.*; Livy (Epit.), xcix. *sqq.*; Velleius, ii. 31 *sqq.*; Appian, *B.C.*, ii.



Cistophorus of B.C. 58-7. (*B.M.C.*, VII. A. 4.)

## CHAPTER LX

### POMPEY'S RETURN : FIRST TRIUMVIRATE : CAESAR'S CONSULSHIP : CLODIUS. (62-58 B.C.)

IN the first heat of his triumph, Cicero disclosed the weakness of his character. He was full of vanity, a quality which above all others deprives a man of the influence which *Cicero and Pompey.* may otherwise be due to integrity, industry, and ability. The Senators were irritated by hearing him repeat : "I am the Saviour of Rome ; I am the Father of my Country." Pompey also, now on the eve of returning to Italy, had been watching Cicero's rise, not without jealousy. His adherent Metellus Nepos had already been sent to Rome *Metellus Nepos.* with instructions from his chief, and had been elected Tribune. Cicero, in the fulness of his heart, wrote Pompey a long account of his Consulate, in which he had the ill address to compare his triumph over Catiline with Pompey's eastern conquests. In his reply, the general took no notice of Cicero's actions ; and the orator wrote him a submissive letter, in which he professes his hope of playing Laelius to his great correspondent's Africanus. Meanwhile Metellus Nepos made no secret of his disapproval of Cicero's conduct in putting citizens to death without trial. On the last day of the year 63 B.C., when the Consul was quitting office and intended to have delivered an elaborate account of the acts of his Consulship, the Tribune interdicted him from speaking. He could do nothing more than step forward and swear aloud that "he, and he alone, had preserved the republic." The people, not yet delivered from the fear of Catiline and his crew, shouted in answer that he had sworn the truth.

Metellus Nepos followed up this assault by a bill which proposed to invest Pompey with the command in Italy, on pretence

that it was necessary to quell the troubles consequent upon the insurrection of Catiline. Caesar supported this proposition; but when Nepos began to read it previously to submitting it to the votes of the Assembly, Cato, also one of the Tribunes for the year, snatched the paper from the hand of his colleague, and tore it in pieces. Nepos then began to recite his bill from memory; but another Tribune placed his hand over his mouth. A tumult followed; and for the time the Senate triumphed over Pompey.

On laying down his *Praetorship*, Caesar obtained Further Spain for his Province. His creditors threatened to detain him. In this emergency he applied to Crassus; and *Caesar as Pro-praetor.* Crassus, to secure his aid against Pompey, assisted him in raising the required sums, so that the Pro-praetor was able to set out for Spain in the spring of 61 B.C.

Pompey had arrived in Italy. Great apprehensions had been felt at Rome; for he was as silent on political matters as Monk *Return of Pompey.* on the eve of the Restoration, and his intentions were suspected. But at Brundisium he addressed his soldiers, thanked them for their services, and dismissed them to their homes till it was time for them to attend his triumph. He then set out for Rome, accompanied by a few friends. He had sent to ask permission from the Senate to enter the city, as Sulla had done, without forfeiting his claim to a triumph. Cato opposed the application, and it was refused. Pompey therefore remained outside the walls; and his triumph, the third which he had enjoyed, did not take place till the end of September. It lasted two days, and the sum of money paid into the treasury exceeded all former experience. Before his triumph he had addressed speeches both to the Senate and to the People in the Campus Martius—speeches so cautiously framed that no one could form any conclusion with respect to his intentions; in particular, he avoided expressing any opinion with respect to the part taken against the Catilinarian conspirators. Crassus, always jealous of Pompey, took *Pompey, Crassus, and Cicero.* advantage of his rival's reserve to pronounce a panegyric upon Cicero; and this gave the orator an opportunity to deliver the speech which he had intended to make on quitting office, and give a full narrative of the acts of his Consulship. Cicero sat down amid cheers from all sides of the Senate. It was probably the happiest moment of his life.<sup>1</sup>

The Consuls elected for 60 B.C. were L. Afranius, an old

<sup>1</sup> For a lively description of the whole scene, see Cic., *ad Att.*, i. 14.

officer of Pompey, and Q. Metellus Celer, elder brother of Nepos.<sup>1</sup> The chief officers of state, therefore, were expected to be in the interest of the great eastern conqueror. But Afranius had no political talents, and Metellus Celer, exasperated because Pompey had divorced his kinswoman Mucia, sided with the Senate. Caesar was still in Further Spain; Crassus had shown a friendly disposition, and the game, if prudently played, might have been won by the Senatorial leaders. But just at this time they lost Catulus; and the blind obstinacy of Metellus Celer, Cato,<sup>2</sup> and others, converted Pompey from his cold neutrality into a warm antagonist.

During his stay in the east after the fall of Mithridates, he had formed Provinces and re-distributed kingdoms without the assistance of a Senatorial commission. He now applied to have his arrangements confirmed by the Senate. But Lucullus and Metellus Creticus, irritated at seeing that in the blaze of his triumphant success their own unquestionable merits had been forgotten, spoke warmly in the Senate of the appropriation of their labours by Pompey, and persuaded the majority to withhold the desired confirmation. At the same time an agrarian law, proposed by L. Flavius, a Tribune, chiefly for the purpose of assigning lands to Pompey's veteran soldiers, was opposed by the Consul Metellus Celer with rancorous determination. Pompey, who disliked popular tumults, suffered the measure to be withdrawn, and brooded over the insult in haughty silence.

Caesar had taken his departure for Further Spain soon after Pompey's return. In that Province he availed himself of some frivolous pretences to make war upon the gallant Lusitanians who dwelt between the Tagus and the Douro. He overran their country, and then turned his arms against the Gallaecians, who seem to have been unmolested since the days of Dec. Brutus. By this inroad he became master of spoils sufficient not only to pay off a great portion of his debts but also to enrich his soldiery. There can be no doubt that he must have acted with great severity to wring these large sums from the native Spaniards: indeed he never took thought for the sufferings of people not subject to Roman sway. But he was careful not to be guilty of oppression towards the Provincials, and his rule in the Spanish Province

<sup>1</sup> It was from this year that Pollio began his history of the later civil war:—

"Motum ex Metello consule civicum,  
Bellique causas," etc.—Hor., *Od.*, ii. 1. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Cic., *de Off.*, iii. 22, 88.



was long remembered for its equitable adjustment of debts due to Roman tax-collectors.

He left Spain in time to reach Rome before the Consular elections of the year 60 B.C. ; for he intended to present himself *The First* as a candidate. But he claimed a triumph, and *Triumvirate.* therefore applied to the Senate for leave to sue for the Consulship without appearing personally in the city. The Senate was disposed to grant this request, but Cato adjourned the question by speaking against time ; and Caesar, who scorned the appearance in comparison with the reality of power, relinquished his triumph and entered the city. As he had reason to expect, he found Pompey in high dudgeon with the Senate, and entered into secret negotiations with him ; and, to strengthen their hands still further, Caesar proposed to include Crassus in their political union. The advances made by Crassus to Cicero and to the Senate had been ill received, and he lent a ready ear to the overtures of the dexterous negotiator who now addressed him.<sup>1</sup> Pompey, at the instance of Caesar, relinquished the old enmity which he bore to Crassus ; and thus was formed that famous cabal which is commonly, though improperly, called the First Triumvirate.<sup>2</sup>

Thus supported secretly by the power of Pompey and the wealth of Crassus, and borne onward by his own popularity, *Caesar elected* Caesar was elected to the Consulship by acclamation. But the Senatorial chiefs exhausted every *Consul.* art of intrigue and bribery to secure the return of M. Calpurnius Bibulus, known to be a man of unflinching resolution, as his colleague. He was son-in-law to Cato, who to obtain a political advantage did not hesitate to sanction the corrupt practices which on other occasions he loudly denounced. Bibulus was elected ; and from the antagonism of the two Consuls, the approaching year seemed big with danger.

Caesar began the acts of his Consulship by a measure intended to gratify at once his own adherents and Pompey. It *Caesar's agrarian law.* was an agrarian law, framed on the model of that which had been proposed last year by Pompey's agent. Before bringing it forward in the Assembly he read it over clause by clause in the Senate, and no one was able to find fault. Cato endeavoured to prevent its passing by speak-

<sup>1</sup> Crassus, on behalf of the *publicani*, desired a revision of the contract for the Asiatic taxes. There was also a fear lest the Senators might succeed in making the Equestrian *iudices* liable to trial for judicial corruption.

<sup>2</sup> Improperly, because it was a *secret* combination, not an open assumption of power, such as Romans understood by the word Triumvirate.



ing against time, whereupon Caesar ordered the lictors to arrest him. The Consul, however, relented so far as to release his opponent, but dismissed the Senate with the remark that he would trouble them no further, and immediately brought the agrarian law before the People, having enlarged his measure to the dimensions of the laws formerly proposed in the time of Carbo and by Rullus. Bibulus, however, declared that the bill should not become law while he was Consul; whereupon Caesar called upon Pompey and Crassus before the whole Assembly to express their opinions with respect to the bill. Pompey warmly approved it, and declared that if others drew swords to oppose it he would cover it with his shield. Crassus spoke in a similar strain. Bibulus now attempted to bar proceedings by an appeal to the auguries. But Caesar cared little for such formalities and named a day for going on with the bill. On the day appointed the most violent of the oligarchy met at the house of Bibulus, whence they sallied into the Forum and attempted to dissolve the Assembly by force. But they were roughly handled, and the bill was passed. After this, Bibulus brought the matter before the Senate; and, when they declined to interfere, he shut himself up in his house for the remainder of his term of office, and contented himself with protesting from time to time against the acts of his colleague. By a special clause in the law, every Senator was obliged to swear obedience to its provisions. Even Cato complied, and Cicero, who had been absent during the conflict, looked on in blank perplexity.

The next step taken by the dexterous Consul was to establish his credit with another class in the community, the Equites, who also (it may be observed) were especially favoured both by Pompey and Cicero. The orator, during his Consulship, had endeavoured to effect a union between the Senatorial and Equestrian Orders. Cicero afterwards undertook the cause of the tax-collectors, who, having made a high offer for the taxes of Asia at the last auction, prayed to be let off their contract. But Cato opposed it with his utmost force, and the Equites were held strictly to their bargain. At Caesar's suggestion a law was now passed, remitting a third part of what they had agreed to give. Thus the favour which the Senate might have achieved by a gracious act was transferred to their most dangerous enemy.

Caesar followed up these movements by procuring from the People a full acknowledgment of Pompey's acts in the east. Here again the grace which the Senate had captiously refused was skilfully employed to cement the union of the triumvirs.

*Revision of the  
Asiatic con-  
tract.*

*Pompey's acts  
confirmed.*

While he still held office, Caesar determined to provide for his future power. The Senate had assigned to him and his colleague the insignificant province of managing *Vatinian law.* the forest and public pastures of Italy. But the Tribune Vatinus, his creature, proposed a law by which Caesar was specially invested, as Proconsul, with the government of Cisalpine Gaul and Illyricum; and this government was conferred upon him for the extraordinary term of five years. No doubt his purpose in obtaining this Province was to remain as near Rome as possible, and by means of the troops under his orders to assume a commanding position with regard to Roman politics. Circumstances unexpectedly enlarged his sphere of action, and enabled him to add to his political successes the character of a triumphant general. For some time past there had been threatening movements in Transalpine Gaul. The Allobrogians, who had been treated with little consideration after the Catilinarian conspiracy, had endeavoured to redress their grievances by arms, and had been subdued by Pomptinus, one of the Praetors employed by Cicero at the Mulvian Bridge. German tribes from the banks of the Rhine were threatening inroads which revived the memory of the Cimbric and Teutonic times; and the Helvetians were moving uneasily within their narrow borders. An able and active commander was required to meet these various dangers; and the Senate probably thought that by removing Caesar to a distant, perilous, and uncertain war, they might expose him to the risk of failure, or that absence might diminish the prestige of his name. They therefore added the Province of Transalpine Gaul, with a fourth legion besides the three properly under his command, to the Province already conferred upon him by popular vote. No doubt the liberality of the Senate was due to their conviction that, if they did not grant what Caesar asked, the People would.

*Transalpine  
Gaul added to  
Caesar's Pro-  
vince.*

Pompey, we have said, had divorced his wife Mucia, and Caesar had taken advantage of this circumstance to cement his union with Pompey by offering him the hand of Julia, his young and beautiful daughter. Pompey accepted the offer, and had no reason to repent as a husband, whatever may be thought of its effect on his public career.

*Marriage of  
Pompey and  
Julia.*

On the feelings of Cicero at this time we have a lively picture in his letters to Atticus. After the return of Pompey from the east, the orator represents their union as so close that the young men nicknamed the great general

*Attitude of  
Cicero.*

*Gnaeus Cicero*; <sup>1</sup> he professes his unshaken confidence in his illustrious friend; he even hopes that they may be able to reform Caesar. His confidence is shaken by Pompey's approbation of Caesar's agrarian law, still more by the ominous marriage with Julia; and he begins to fear that the great Eastern conqueror—Sampsiceramus, Arabarches, the Jerusalemite <sup>2</sup> (such are the names which he uses to indicate the haughty bearing of Pompey)—is aiming at a tyranny. Still he professes to believe in the great man's unaltered regard for himself, and fondly relies on his protection against the danger which had long been threatening him and now became imminent.

Caesar, during his Praetorship, had lent his house for the celebration of the mysteries of the Bona Dea—rites at which it was not lawful for any but women to be present.

Young P. Clodius, the same who had promoted mutiny in the army of Lucullus, either had or

*Violation of  
the rites of the  
Bona Dea.*

aspired to have an intrigue with Pompeia, <sup>3</sup> Caesar's wife, and contrived to enter the forbidden precincts disguised as a singing girl. He was discovered by his voice; and the matter was important enough to be referred to the Senate. But this was not

till the next year (61 B.C.), when he was Quaestor. He was then brought to trial, and pleaded an alibi.

*Trial of  
Clodius.*

Caesar and Cicero were summoned as witnesses against him. Caesar had divorced his wife in consequence of the affair, but professed ignorance of all that had passed. "Why then," it was asked, "have you put away your wife?" a question to which he gave the famous reply:—"Caesar's wife must be above suspicion." Cicero, on the other hand, who justly detested the profligate character of the accused, said that he had seen and spoken with Clodius on that very day at Rome. He thus overthrew the plea of alibi, and followed up his evidence by pointed speeches in the Senate. There was no doubt of the guilt of Clodius. But the matter was treated as a trial of political strength; he was acquitted; and before Caesar's Consulship he had conceived the desire of becoming Tribune of the Plebs, so as to satisfy his vengeance upon Cicero. But his Patrician pedigree—sole relic of the old distinction between the Orders—forbade his election to this office; and to remove this obstacle he applied for a *lex curiata* to make him a Plebeian.

<sup>1</sup> *Ad Att.*, i. 16. 11.

<sup>2</sup> *Ad Att.*, ii. 9. 1; 14. 1; 16. 2, etc. *Sampsiceramus* was a ruler at Emesa in Syria (Strabo, xvi. 753); *Arabarches*, a governor of a part of Egypt. See Tyrrell on *Cic.*, *ad Att.*, ii. 17. 3.

<sup>3</sup> She was no way related to Pompey, being the daughter of Pompeius Rufus, Sulla's son-in-law.

Cicero probably might have saved himself by joining the triumvirs. Caesar, in the first instance, attempted to gain the support of Cicero, as he had gained the support of Pompey, by promises. The orator received these advances with pleasure, more however in the hope of converting the popular statesman than with any thought of being converted. From such dreams he was soon to be rudely awakened. Caesar was not to be satisfied but by submission ; and he was in no long time provoked so as to make Cicero feel his power. C. Antonius, Cicero's colleague in the Consulship, had just returned from his Macedonian government, where he had been guilty of more than the usual measure of extortion and oppression. He was straightway impeached ; Cicero appeared as his advocate, and took occasion to reflect severely on the present state of affairs, contrasting (no doubt) the course now pursued with his own forgotten services in the Catilinarian conspiracy. An immediate report of this speech was conveyed to Caesar. It was delivered at noon, and the same afternoon Caesar, as Pontifex Maximus, *Clodius a* concurred in the law for making *Plebeian.* *Clodius a* beian. All difficulties being now removed, the reckless noble was elected Tribune for the ensuing year, that is for 58 B.C. Cicero became seriously alarmed.

The Consular elections were equally disheartening. Caesar had lately espoused Calpurnia, daughter of L. Piso. This man *Consular* was chosen Consul, together with A. Gabinius, who *elections.* had moved the law for conferring the command over the Mediterranean upon Pompey. It was evident that these Consuls, one the father-in-law of Caesar, the other a creature of Pompey, would be mere tools of the triumviral cabal.

In December Clodius entered upon office as Tribune. Caesar set out for his Province in the spring of the next year (58 B.C.) ; *Clodius as* and while he was preparing for departure he used *Tribune.* Clodius as an instrument for removing the persons most likely to thwart his policy during his absence. He remained outside the gates with his legions, ready, if need were, to support Clodius in the Forum.

The first person assailed was Cicero. Caesar had been willing to spare the orator the assaults of Clodius. He therefore offered him one of the commissionerships for *Cicero threat-* executing the agrarian law, or a lieutenancy under *ened.* himself in Gaul, and even pressed upon him the acceptance of the latter office. But Cicero declined both offers ; and Caesar, fully determined to remove him from Rome, left him to the mercies of the Tribune. Clodius gave notice of a bill, enacting that any magistrate guilty of putting Roman citizens to death with-

out regular trial should be banished from Italy, thus embodying in a law the principle which Caesar had maintained by the indictment of Rabirius. At first Cicero trusted to Pompey and his own imaginary popularity. But the haste with which the orator had acted had already called forth remark ; and many who had applauded him at the time now took part with Clodius. The danger became so imminent that the frightened orator put on mourning in the hope of exciting the compassion of the citizens. Great part of the Senators and Knights followed his example ; but Clodius persevered, and the Consuls ordered the mourners to resume their usual apparel. As a last chance Cicero appealed to Pompey himself, who merely said he could do nothing against the will of Caesar. In this desperate case he held counsel with his friends. The Senators felt that Cicero's cause was their own, and repented of the coldness they had shown him of late. Lucullus shook off his luxurious indolence for a moment, and advised an appeal to arms. But after full deliberation, even Cato recommended the orator to quit Italy and wait for better times. He complied with a heavy heart—for Rome, the Forum, and the Senate-house, were all the world to him—and left the capital about the same time that Caesar departed for his Province. No sooner was his back turned than Clodius brought in a second bill, by which Cicero was expressly attacked by name. He was forbidden to approach within 400 miles of Rome ; all who harboured him within those limits were subjected to heavy penalties ; all his property was confiscated ; his favourite house on the Palatine, his villas at Tusculum and at Formiæ, were all destroyed. The great orator travelled slowly to Brundisium, whence he took ship for Dyrrhachium, and finally sought refuge at Thessalonica. The letters he wrote at this period show how great were his disappointment and despair. He pours forth unmanly lamentations ; accuses all—Cato, Hortensius, even his friend Atticus ; refuses to see his brother Quintus ; and seriously debates the question of suicide. Atticus began to be alarmed for his friend's sanity ; and indeed the letters disclose a lamentable picture of wounded self-esteem.

The next person to be disposed of was Cato. This remarkable man has already come before us on one or two occasions which serve to indicate his character. He was great-grandson of the old Censor, and resembled him in many points, though he wanted the politic shrewdness of his ancestor. He was seven years younger than Caesar, and at present therefore not more than thirty-seven years of



age. From the time when his speech determined the fate of the Catilinarians, his strong will had made him one of the leaders of the Senatorial oligarchy ; and after the death of Catulus, he took the most determined part in opposing the popular party. But his stoic philosophy almost unfitted him for the political life of that dissolute age. He applied the rules of Zeno's inflexible logic to politics as to mathematics, without regard to times or persons or places, and treated questions of mere expedience as if they were matters of moral right and wrong. At times, however, party spirit overcame even Cato's scruples, and to gain a political victory he forgot the rules of his philosophy.

No accusation could be brought against Cato as against Cicero, and therefore, to remove him from Rome, he was charged with a business of apparent honour. *Cato sent to Cyprus.* Ptolemy, brother of the king of Egypt, was prince of Cyprus ; and when Clodius was in the hands of the pirates, this prince contributed only the paltry sum of two talents towards his ransom. The Tribune, who never forgot or forgave, now brought in a law by which Cyprus was annexed to the Roman Empire ; and Cato, though he had held no Curule office, was invested with Praetorian rank for the execution of this iniquitous business. Cato pretended not that he was ignorant of the real purpose of this mission. But he declared himself ready to obey the law, and left Rome soon after Cicero's departure, to execute his commission. Thus then, when Caesar set out for Gaul, the Senate was left in a state of paralysis for want of leaders.

Clodius had prepared the way for his attack on Cicero by several democratic measures. He abolished the law of the Comitial auspices by which Bibulus had attempted to thwart Caesar. He limited the ancient power of the Censors to degrade unworthy citizens. He restored the trade unions and companies, which had been abolished by the Senate about six years before. He gave such an extension to the unwise corn law of C. Gracchus, that grain, instead of being sold at a low rate, was distributed gratuitously to all citizens of Rome. For the time Clodius was master of Rome. Neither Pompey nor Crassus stirred hand or foot to interfere.

**AUTHORITIES.**—See note to preceding chapter.





Coin of Arsaces X. of Parthia (*D.M.C.*, VII. A. 22).

## CHAPTER LXI

### CAESAR IN GAUL : BREACH BETWEEN POMPEY AND CAESAR. (58-50 B.C.)

ABOUT the time that Cicero left Rome, Caesar received news from Gaul which compelled his precipitate departure. The Helvetians were in the act of emigrating from their mountains to seek new settlements in Gaul; and *Caesar defeats the Helvetii.* to avoid passing over the Jura, they were advancing upon Geneva, with the purpose of crossing the Rhone near that town and forcing their way through the Roman Province of Transalpine Gaul. Arrived there, Caesar lined the river with fortifications such as compelled the Helvetians to pass into Gaul by a more difficult route over the Jura; he followed them across the Arar (*Saone*), and after a murderous battle near Bibracté (*Autun* in Burgundy), compelled the remnant to return to their own country.

Immediately after defending the Province from these invaders, he accepted the invitation of the Aeduians and other Gauls dwelling near the Saone to expel from their borders a formidable German tribe, which had *Defeat of Ariovistus.* passed the Rhine two or three years before and was threatening to overrun all Gaul. These Suevians,<sup>1</sup> who have left their name in modern Suabia, were led by a great chief named Ariovistus.<sup>2</sup> Ariovistus at first proposed to divide Gaul with the Romans; but Caesar promptly rejected all such overtures. So alarmed were the Roman legionaries at the prospect of a contest with the Germans, huge in frame and multitudinous in number, that

<sup>1</sup> "Suebi" appears to be a generic term meaning 'wanderers'; *cp.* Mommsen, v. 31.

<sup>2</sup> Ariovistus had been recognised in 59 B.C. among the kings friendly to Rome, probably in consideration of a sum of money paid to the triumvirs.

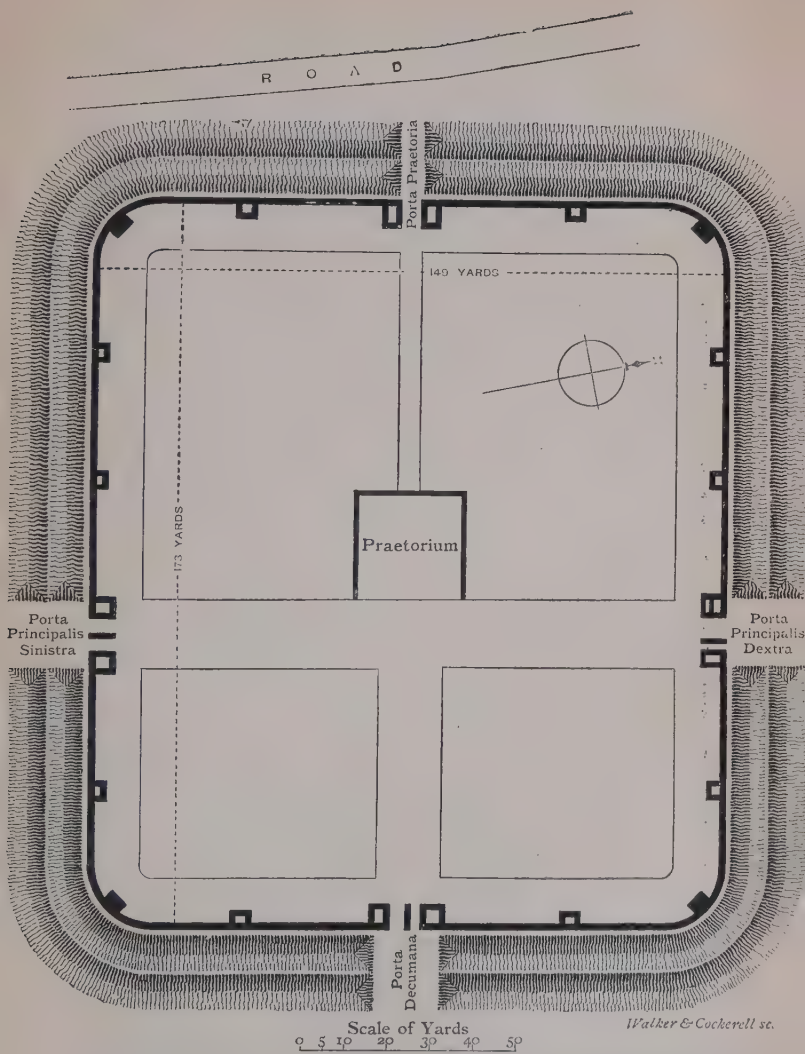
it required all Caesar's adroitness to restore their confidence. "If," he said, "all deserted him, he would himself brave every hazard and face the foe with the tenth legion alone." These words rallied the legionaries. A desperate battle was fought about five miles from the Rhine, somewhere north of Bâle, in which the Germans were utterly defeated;<sup>1</sup> and Ariovistus himself only escaped in a boat across the great river which was long to remain as the western boundary of the Teutonic race.

Caesar's troops wintered in the heart of the country which he had set free from the Suevian invaders. This position roused the jealousy of the Belgic tribes to the north of the *Conquest of the Belgæ.* Seine, and a powerful confederacy was formed to bar any designs entertained by Caesar for extending the dominion of Rome in Gaul.<sup>2</sup> Caesar did not wait to be attacked. He raised two new legions without waiting for the authority of the Senate, and early next year (57 B.C.) entered the Belgic territory, which was bounded southward by the Seine and Marne. Here he occupied a strong position on the Aisne, and offered battle to the confederates, but at such a disadvantage that they dared not to attack him. Wearied out, they dispersed, each to their own homes; and Caesar then advanced into the country of the Nervians, the most formidable people of the Belgic league, who occupied the district between the Sambre and the Scheld. As he was forming his camp upon the former river, he was surprised by the enemy, and his whole army was nearly cut off. He retrieved the disaster only at imminent peril to himself, and had to do the duty both of a common soldier and a general. But when the first confusion was over, Roman discipline prevailed; and the brave barbarians were repulsed with prodigious slaughter. Soon after this desperate battle, he received the submission of the whole country along the left bank of the Rhine. The brilliancy and rapidity of his successes silenced all hostility at Rome. A thanksgiving of fifteen days—an unprecedented length of time—was decreed by the Senate.

In the following year (56 B.C.) he built a fleet, and quickly reduced the amphibious people of Brittany, who had defied his power and insulted his officers. He next received the *Subjugation of the coast.* submission of the Aquitanians in the extreme south through his young lieutenant P. Crassus, son of the

<sup>1</sup> On the site of the battle, see Mommsen, v. 47.

<sup>2</sup> The Remi (near Rheims) adopted the Roman side, as did the Aedui in the south.



Plan of a Roman Camp from the excavations at Hofheim : see Farwey and Hettner, *Obergermanisch-Raetische Times*, Bd. III. Abt. B. Nr. 29.



triumvir, and himself chastised the wild tribes occupying the coast-land which now forms Picardy, Artois, and French Flanders, the Menapii and the Morini—"remotest of mankind."<sup>1</sup> He attempted also to occupy a post at Martigny in the Valais, for the purpose of commanding the pass of the Pennine Alp (Great St Bernard). In this last enterprise he failed. But still, in three campaigns, he seemed to have conquered the whole of Gaul, from the Rhine and Mount Jura to the Western Ocean.

The winter months of these years were passed by the Proconsul on the Italian side of the Alps, in travelling through the Cisalpine Province to hold assizes, inspect public works, raise money for his wars, and recruit his troops. In the spring of 56 B.C., he fixed his headquarters at Luca (*Lucca*)—a town on the very frontier of Roman Italy, within two hundred miles of Rome itself. Here he could hold easy communication with his partisans at home. Luca during his residence was more like a regal court than the quarters of a Roman Proconsul; 200 Senators were counted among his visitors; 120 lictors indicated the presence of the numerous magistrates who attended his levées. Both Pompey and Crassus came to hold conference with him. To explain the object of this visit, we must know what had passed at Rome since his departure two years before.

It has been mentioned that Clodius remained absolute at Rome during the year 58 B.C. But the insolence and audacity of the Tribune at length gave offence to Pompey. Clodius, induced by a bribe, had set free a son of Tigranes, whom the great conqueror had brought with him from the east. The ship in which the young prince was endeavouring to escape was driven ashore at Antium, and an affray followed between some of Pompey's adherents and an armed force in the service of Clodius, to gain possession of the prince's person. In the struggle many persons were slain, and among them one of Pompey's friends. The great man determined to punish the Tribune by promoting the recall of Cicero. Ever since the departure of the orator, his friends had been using all exertions to compass this end. His brother Quintus, who had lately returned from a three year's government in Asia and was in the confidence both of Pompey and Caesar, his friend Atticus, who on this occasion forsook his usual Epicurean ease, his old but generous rival Hortensius, all joined with his wife Terentia, a woman of masculine spirit,

*Conference at  
Luca.*

*Pompey  
quarrels with  
Clodius.*

<sup>1</sup> "Extremique hominum Morini."—Virg., *Aen.*, viii. 727.

to promote his interests ; and Cicero ventured to Dyrrhachium, though it was within the prescribed limit of 400 miles. Pompey's quarrel with Clodius was announced by the election to the Consulate of P. Lentulus Spinther, a known friend of Cicero. The other Consul was Q. Metellus Nepos, whose hostility to the orator was sure to be overruled by the will of Pompey.

Lentulus, on entering office (57 B.C.), immediately moved for the orator's recall. It was not, however, easy to carry a law  
*Recall of Cicero.* for this purpose. Clodius, though no longer Tribune, had adherents in the new college, who interposed their veto. The motion, dropped for the moment, was presently renewed ; and Clodius entered the Forum at the head of a retinue fully prepared for any violence. A regular battle followed, which left Clodius master of the field. For some days Rome was at his mercy. With his own hand he fired the Temple of the Nymphs and destroyed the Censorial registers. He attacked his enemies' houses, and many persons were slain in these riotous assaults. No public attempt was made to stop him. But one of the new Tribunes, named T. Annius Milo, bold and reckless as Clodius himself, raised a body of gladiators at his own charge, and succeeded in checking the lawless violence of the demagogue by the use of violence no less lawless. The bill for Cicero's recall was now again brought forward, but was not passed till the month of August.

Meantime the impatient orator had continued to accuse his friends of coldness and insincerity. But when the law was passed all the clouds vanished. Early in September, more than sixteen months after his departure, he approached the city, and crowds attended him along the whole length of the Appian Way. From the Porta Capena to the Capitol the steps of the Temples and every place of vantage were thronged by multitudes, who testified their satisfaction by loud applause. For the moment, the popularity which had followed his Consulship returned, and in honest pride he ascended to the Capitoline Temple to return thanks to the gods for turning the hearts of the people.

At this time there was a great scarcity of corn at Rome. The people, accustomed to be fed by the state, murmured  
*Pompey made loudly.* Prices fell on the very day that the return  
*controller of of Cicero was decreed, and his friends attributed*  
*the market.* this cheapness to his recall ; but before he entered Rome they rose again, and Clodius attributed this dearness to the same cause. On the day after his triumphant entry, therefore, the orator appeared in the Senate, and after returning



thanks moved that an extraordinary commission should be issued, investing Pompey with complete control over the corn-markets of the empire. The Consuls closed with the proposal; and it was added that the commission should run for five years, with the command of money, troops, fleets, and all things necessary for absolute authority. The Senate dared not oppose the bill, but Pompey was obliged to relinquish the clauses which invested him with Dictatorial power. He appears to have had no great success in bringing corn to market, and to have gained little popularity from his appointment.

Presently after this appointment, fresh passions were excited by the petition of Ptolemy Auletes, king of Egypt, who had lately been expelled by his subjects and was now at Rome seeking aid from the Senate to procure restoration to his throne. During Cato's sojourn in the east, the king had consulted him; and Cato had advised him to procure restoration by any means rather than by application to Rome. But Ptolemy neglected the advice; and every Senator of influence claimed the lucrative task of restoring the king of Egypt. Pompey among others was anxious for the appointment. The Senate, however, was too jealous of the triumvirate to listen to him; and it was conferred upon the Consul Lentulus Spinther, who had obtained the Province of Cilicia. But at the same time an oracle was produced from the Sibylline books, which forbade the use of an army. Lentulus, therefore, obtained a commission without the power of executing it, and the question was in reality left open for future aspirants. The work was finally accomplished, in contravention of a Senatorial decree, by A. Gabinius, the able and unscrupulous adherent of Pompey, who ruled Syria with great vigour from 57 to 55 B.C.

After Cicero's return, a sum of money had been voted to enable him to rebuild his ruined houses, and to compensate him for the destruction of his property. Encouraged by his present popularity, he proceeded to pull down the slabs on which were recorded the acts of the Tribune of Clodius, when the reckless demagogue received support from an unexpected quarter. Cato had just returned from executing the hateful commission given him by Clodius. The helpless prince of Cyprus, despairing of resistance, had put an end to his own life; and the Roman, with rigorous punctuality, proceeded to sell the royal property, and reduced the island to the condition of a Roman Province. On his return he paid large sums into the treasury, and took pride in having executed his commission with strict severity. But

*Restoration  
of Ptolemy  
Auletes.*

*Cicero and  
Cato.*

his acts would be illegal, were the Tribune of Clodius declared illegal. Cato therefore, strange to say, came forward as a defender of Clodius and his Tribune.

The Consular election for the year 55 B.C. caused much anxiety to Caesar. The Consuls of the current year (56 B.C.) were decidedly in the interest of the Senate, and *Domitius candidate for the Consulship.* supported, with all their influence, L. Domitius Ahenobarbus, brother-in-law of Cato, a determined antagonist of the triumviral cabal. This man threatened that his first act should be to recall Caesar from his Province. It was to concert measures for thwarting the renewed energy of the Senate that the ominous meeting of the triumvirs at Lucca was held. What passed between the three is only known from the results.

Pompey and Crassus returned to Rome pledged (as the result showed) to prevent the election of Domitius. To this *Pompey and Crassus become Consuls.* end they came forward themselves as joint candidates for a second Consulship. The Senate, however, were resolved not to suffer this; so, when the Calends of January came, no Comitia had been held, and there were no Consuls to assume the government. But young Crassus just then arrived in the neighbourhood of Rome with a body of veterans from Caesar's army. Under fear of violence, the Senatorial chiefs allowed Pompey and Crassus to assume the Consulship, not quite (as Marius and Cinna had assumed it) without any form of election, but after an election held under the constraint of an armed force. The new Consuls held Comitia for the election of the other Curule Magistracies. Cato offered himself for the Praetorship, but was defeated by Vatinius, who had been the instrument of Caesar in procuring his appointment to the government of the Gauls.

Further fruits of the conference of Lucca soon appeared. The Tribune, C. Trebonius, moved in the Assembly of Tribes *Trebonian law.* that the Consuls should receive special Provinces for the space of five years—Syria being allotted to Crassus, Spain to Pompey; and Pompey added a clause to this Trebonian law, by which Caesar's government of the Gauls was extended for an additional five years, to date from the expiration of the first term.<sup>1</sup> Cato obstructed the law by his old ruse of speaking against time, but Trebonius ordered him to be committed to prison; and two Tribunes who threatened to

<sup>1</sup> The Vatinian law gave Caesar command till 1st March 54 B.C.; the Trebonian till 1st March 49 B.C.

interpose their veto were kept away from the Assembly by the use of positive force.

Pompey endeavoured to outdo even Caesar in bidding for the favour of the People by magnificent spectacles. He erected the first theatre of stone which Rome had yet seen, and exhibited combats with wild beasts on a scale *Splendid shows given by Pompey.* never before witnessed. Five hundred lions and eighteen elephants were pitted against Gaetulian huntsmen ; and for the first time a rhinoceros was exhibited in the arena of the amphitheatre.

Cicero after his return from exile had eagerly engaged in professional pursuits. To pass over the speeches touching his own affairs (which belong to the year 57 B.C.), we find him defending P. Sestius, M. Caelius, and L. Balbus ; and the speeches which he delivered as their advocate are full of interesting allusions to the state of political affairs. In the Senate also he took an active part in the debates. Before the conference of Lucca the triumviral cabal seemed shaken, and *Cicero and the triumvirs.* the orator ventured to move in the Senate the repeal of Caesar's agrarian law. But after the conference, a message was conveyed to him which convinced him of the danger which might again overtake him. He was, moreover, becoming disgusted with the Senatorial chiefs. Lucullus, after spending his latter days in profuse luxury, had sunk into a state of senile apathy ; he died in the course of the year. Hortensius, always more of an advocate than a statesman, was devoted to his fish-ponds and his plantations. With Cato the gentler nature of Cicero never acted harmoniously. The persons who were now rising to be chiefs of the Senate, such as Domitius Ahenobarbus, were troubled by few scruples ; Milo, indeed, was as lawless as Clodius. It had been best for Cicero if he had followed the example of his friend Atticus and retired altogether from public life. He would not join the violent members of the Senatorial party ; he dared not oppose the triumvirs ; yet he could not bear to abandon the Senate-house and Forum, and at length he reluctantly resolved to support the triumviral cabal. Soon after the conference of Lucca a change took place in his politics. He spoke against the recall of Caesar from Gaul, and pronounced a laboured panegyric on Pompey. His brother Quintus, who was serving as Caesar's legate in Gaul, and the gallant son of Crassus, who had returned flushed with triumph from the Gallic wars, both assisted in reconciling Cicero to Caesar. No doubt also the orator was disgusted by the ferocity of Milo ; and perhaps he really believed that at present the best hope of regular government was from

the triumvirs. At all events his letters written at this time show that he laboured to convince his friends that such was his belief.

But the cabal was hastening to dissolution. In the year 54 B.C. Julia, the daughter of Caesar and wife of Pompey, died in childbed. Though Pompey was old enough to be her father, she had been to him a loving and faithful wife. He on his part was so devoted to his young and beautiful consort, that ancient authors attribute much of his apathy in public matters to the happiness which he found in domestic life. This faithful attachment of Pompey to Julia is the most amiable point in a character otherwise cold and unattractive. So much was Julia beloved that the People voted her the extraordinary honour of a public funeral in the Campus Martius. Her death set Pompey free from ties which might have long bound him to Caesar, and impelled him to drown the sense of his loss in the busy whirl of public life.

Meanwhile Crassus had taken his departure for the east, and thus destroyed another link in the chain that had hitherto maintained union among the triumvirs. Even before his Consulship was ended, he had left Rome to supersede Gabinius in the government of Syria. His chief object in seeking this Province was by the conquest of the Parthians to balance the military glory of Pompey and of Caesar. But towards the close of the year 53 B.C., about twelve months after the death of Julia, Rome was horror-struck by hearing that the wealthy Proconsul and his gallant son had been cut off, and that the greater part of his army had been destroyed.

The Parthians, a people originally found in the mountainous district to the south-east of the Caspian Sea, had, on the death of Alexander, fallen under the nominal sway of Seleucus and his successors on the Graeco-Syrian throne. As that dynasty fell into decay, the Parthians continually waxed bolder, till at the time of the great Mithridatic war we find their king Phraates claiming to be called King of Kings and exercising despotic power over the countries adjacent to the Euphrates westward. They possessed a numerous cavalry, clad in light armour, accustomed to scour the broad plains near the Euphrates, trained to disperse like a cloud before regular troops, but as they fled to discharge their arrows upon the pursuing enemy. Orodes, their present king, already threatened with an attack by Gabinius, was not unprepared for war.

In the first year of his Proconsulship, Crassus confined him-

self to operations in Mesopotamia ; but early in the next spring (53 B.C.) he advanced in strength from the Euphrates at the head of a well-appointed army, with the purpose of penetrating into Parthia. Artavasdes, the present king of Armenia, who through fear of the Parthian monarch took part with Rome, wished the Proconsul to take his country as the basis of his operations, and by descending the valley of the Tigris to avoid the open plains, where the Parthian horsemen, seconded by the heat of summer, would act against him at terrible advantage.<sup>1</sup> C. Cassius Longinus, the most experienced officer of the Proconsul—a man who afterwards became famous as the chief author of Caesar's death—preferred the route of the Euphrates. But Crassus neglected warning and advice. The Parthians, avoiding a general battle, drew on the Romans into the northern plains of Mesopotamia, till the legionaries, faint with heat and hunger, found themselves confronted by a vast host of Parthian and Arabian horsemen, commanded by Surenas, the chief captain of Orodes. About thirty miles south of Carrhae, the Haran where Abraham once dwelt, the first battle was fought. The Romans were utterly defeated, and young Crassus, the friend of Cicero, to escape capture, caused himself to be slain. During the night the Proconsul made good his retreat to Carrhae, whence he marched towards the mountains that skirt the western side of the great plain of Mesopotamia, and here he was induced to accept a conference offered by the treacherous Surenas. At this conference he was seized, as the chiefs of the Ten Thousand had been seized more than three centuries before. His head was sent to Orodes, who ordered molten gold to be poured into the mouth. The Roman army was annihilated, save that Cassius succeeded in escaping with 500 horse to the Roman frontiers, where he collected some of the fugitives, and for two years he continued to defend the Province against the Parthian assaults, till in 51 B.C. a decisive victory checked their advances and enabled him to hand over the Province in a peaceful condition to Bibulus.

Meanwhile Caesar in Gaul was also involved in unexpected difficulties. In his three first campaigns (58-56 B.C.), as has been said, he seemed to have reduced all the country to silent submission. In the two next years he was engaged in expeditions calculated rather to astonish and dazzle men's minds at Rome than necessary to secure his conquests. Fresh swarms of Germans had begun to cross the Rhine

<sup>1</sup> Gwatkin (*Studies of Arianism*, 210) remarks that the only successful Roman operations against Parthia started from Armenia.



near Coblenz. He defeated them near that place with slaughter so terrible that upwards of 100,000 men are said to have been slain by the sword or to have perished in the Rhine. To terrify them still further, he threw a bridge over the broad river at a spot probably between Coblenz and Andernach, which was completed in ten days—a miracle of engineering art. He then advanced into Germany, burning and destroying, but broke up his bridge as he returned. Caesar's account of the victory of Coblenz was not received like the triumphs of previous years. It appeared that the German chiefs had come into the Roman camp, that Caesar had detained them on the ground that they had broken an armistice, and while they were captives had attacked their army. Cato rose in the Senate, and proposed that Caesar should be delivered up to the Germans, as an offering in expiation for his treachery. But such a proposition came with an ill grace even from Cato's mouth. Romans professed not to keep faith with barbarians; and if Caesar had not been the enemy of the Senatorial party, probably no fault would have been found with his conduct. But however this may be, it is clear that the decree would have been an empty threat. Who could have been found to "bell the cat"? Who would or could have arrested Caesar at the head of his legions!

It was in the autumn of the same year (55 B.C.) that he passed over into our own island, taking ship probably at Witsand near Calais, and landing on the open beach near Deal.<sup>1</sup>

*Invasion of Britain.* In the next year he repeated the invasion of Britain with a much larger force, marched through the whole length of Kent, crossed the Thames above London, probably near Walton,<sup>2</sup> defeated Cassivellaunus, a gallant chief who ruled in the country now forming the counties of Middlesex and Herts, and received the submission of the Trinobantes—the present county of Essex. Little result followed from these expeditions except to spread the terror of the Roman name, and to afford matter of wonderment at Rome. Cicero's curiosity about these unknown lands was satisfied by letters from his brother Quintus, still one of Caesar's legates, and from Trebatius, a learned lawyer, who attended Caesar at the recommendation of Cicero himself.<sup>3</sup>

But it was soon discovered how hollow was the pacification of

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* Mommsen, v. 63.

<sup>2</sup> Mommsen (v. 65) thinks that it was between Kingston and Brentford.

<sup>3</sup> *Cic.*, *ad Att.*, iv. 16. 13; 17. 3; *ad Q. fr.*, ii. 16. 4; *ad Fam.*, vii. 6-22. He also received letters from Caesar himself; *ad Att.*, iv. 17. 3; *ad Q. fr.*, iii. 1. 5, 17.



Gaul. During the winter of 54-53 B.C., Caesar had spread his troops in winter-quarters over a wide area. *Final conquest of Gaul.* Ambiorix, a crafty chief of the Eburonians, a half-German tribe on the Meuse, assaulted the camp of Cotta and Sabinus, and by adroit cunning contrived to cut off their whole force. He then attacked Q. Cicero. But this officer, though stationed in the hostile country of the Nervians with one legion only, gallantly defended his camp till he was relieved by Caesar himself, who fortunately had not left Transalpine Gaul. Alarmed by the prospect of a general insurrection, the Proconsul asked Pompey to lend him a legion, and his request was granted. The next year's campaign crushed Ambiorix, and Caesar returned to Italy during the winter of 53-52 B.C., where his presence was needed, as we shall presently hear. But in the year 52 B.C. all central Gaul rose against the Romans, under the able conduct of Vercingetorix, chief of the Arvernians. The combined Gauls for the most part declined open conflicts and threw themselves into towns fortified with great skill and defended with great obstinacy. Caesar sustained a serious reverse at Gergovia (a town of the Arverni, near *Clermont-Ferrand*), but his rapid movements and steady resolution ultimately triumphed. The last hope of the Gauls lay in the strong fortress of Alesia (*Alise*); and when this yielded, the conquest was achieved. But for the two next years the Pro-consul was obliged to winter beyond the Alps; and it was not till the beginning of the year 50 B.C., the ninth of his command, that he completed the pacification of the country. This conquest was achieved at a fearful loss of life. More than a million of Gauls and Germans are computed to have been sacrificed in those eight years of war. Caesar was humane in the treatment of his fellow-citizens, but, like a true Roman, he counted the lives of barbarians as naught.

While therefore Crassus was engaged, never to return, in the east, and Caesar was occupied with serious dangers in Gaul, Pompey was complete master of Rome. Contrary *Pompey master of Rome.* to precedent, he sent lieutenants to govern Spain in his stead, pleading his employment as curator of the corn market as a reason for remaining at home; though, to save appearances, he probably abstained from appearing publicly within the walls of Rome. He seems to have expected that in the present condition of things all orders would unite in proclaiming him Dictator. For the year 54 B.C., Domitius Ahenobarbus was elected Consul, and Cato Praetor, in the interest of the Senate. When the time for the elections of 53 B.C. came on, several Tribunes of the popular party bound themselves together and prevented the Comitia from being

held; so that for several months the city was left without magistrates. At length two Consuls were chosen; but when they proposed to hold the *Comitia* for 52 B.C. the elections were again hindered; and when the *Calends* of January came round, the republic was again without Consuls. In a few days an event happened which completely altered all political relations.

In Caesar's absence Clodius had become the leader of the popular party. At the time now spoken of he was a candidate for the *Praetorship*, while his enemy Milo sought to be Consul. In the January of 52 B.C. Milo was travelling with his wife and family, attended by an armed retinue, along the Appian Road to Lanuvium, where he held a municipal office. Near Bovillae he met Clodius riding, with a small number of attendants also armed. A quarrel arose among the servants; Clodius mingled in the fray, and being wounded took refuge in a tavern. Milo, deterred not to suffer for an imperfect act of violence, surrounded the house, drew forth his wounded enemy, and left him dead upon the road. The body was carried to Rome and exposed in the Forum. A dreadful riot arose. The houses of Milo and other Senatorial chiefs were assaulted, but they were strongly built, and the populace was beaten off. But the furniture of the Senate-house was seized to make a funeral pile for the deceased demagogue, and the Curia itself was burnt to the ground. Every day witnessed

*Pompey sole  
Consul.*

a fresh riot, till the Senate commissioned Pompey to restore order. This was done; and it is probable that he would have been appointed Dictator at once, had not Caesar been in Cisalpine Gaul, watching for a false move of the party opposed to him. To avoid a direct collision, Cato and Bibulus recommended that Pompey should be named as sole Consul. Milo was soon after brought to trial for the death of Clodius, and Cicero exerted himself to the utmost to prepare a speech in justification of Milo. But Pompey was anxious to get rid of a citizen as troublesome on the one side as Clodius had been on the other; and he placed soldiers at every avenue of the Court for the purpose, as he said, of preserving order. This unwonted sight, and the fear of popular violence, robbed

*Milo exiled.*

Cicero of his eloquence. Milo was condemned, and fled to Marseilles. Cicero sent him a copy of the speech as (it may be presumed) he intended to have spoken it. Milo sarcastically replied, that "he was glad it had not been delivered, else he should not then have been eating the fine mullets of Marseilles."

Pompey had now reached the height of his ambition. He

was virtually Dictator, without being bound to any party ; and from this time he seems to have made up his mind *Measures of Pompey.* to break with Caesar. He married Cornelia, the widow of Crassus, and daughter of Metellus Scipio, a leading member of the aristocracy, and on the 1st of August associated his new father-in-law in the Consulship with himself. He repealed some of the democratic measures of Clodius and passed laws to prevent violence and corruption. He struck indirectly at Caesar by several special enactments, one of which provided that all candidates for office should give in their names in person. At the same time, he put himself above the law by procuring a vote according to which his own government of Spain was prolonged for five years, whereas Caesar's command in Gaul would terminate in less than three years. By this law Pompey calculated that he should be able to keep his own army on foot after the Gallic conqueror had disbanded his. In anticipation of Caesar's seeking a second Consulship, he revived a decree that no one should hold a Province till five years had elapsed from the end of his tenure of office.<sup>1</sup>

But in fact Pompey's policy failed. He had hoped to remain supreme arbiter of the fate of Rome without allying himself heart and hand to the Senate. That great council *Pompey and the Senate.* was no longer led by moderate men. Lucullus was dead ; Hortensius took little part in public life ; Cicero quitted Rome in May 51 B.C., to assume the government of Cilicia, and did not return to Italy till November in the following year. Before Pompey's sole Consulship the great orator had been induced to defend Gabinius on a charge of extortion in his Province of Syria. The decline of Pompey's influence had been evinced by the condemnation of his adherent Gabinius. This man was impeached for restoring Ptolemy Auletes to the throne of Egypt by force of arms, against the express command of a Senatorial decree,<sup>2</sup> and he was acquitted by a narrow majority. But this first impeachment was followed by a second,

---

<sup>1</sup> Tacitus (*Ann.*, iii. 28) justly calls Pompey "suarum legum auctor idem et subversor." (1) He was Consul and Proconsul simultaneously, which was unconstitutional in itself, and at variance with his own regulation that five years should intervene between the two offices. (2) He interferred in the trials of Plancus, Metellus Scipio, and Milo, in spite of his own laws against violence and corruption. (3) After enacting that all candidates for office should give in their names in person, he exempted Caesar by a special clause inserted at the last moment.

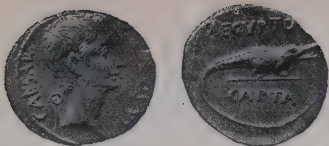
<sup>2</sup> Page 639.

in which he was charged with having received 10,000 talents from Ptolemy; and neither the power of his patron nor the eloquence of Cicero availed to protect Gabinius. The Senate doubtless saw the result with satisfaction; for it now followed the counsels of Domitius Ahenobarbus and others, who hated Pompey almost as much as Caesar. The People looked on with little interest. They had no sympathy with the Senate and no love for Pompey; and Caesar, whom they trusted, was absent in Gaul. Subsequent events forced Pompey to league himself with the Senate; but at present he agreed with them in one point only—the necessity to strip Caesar of his military power. It would have been well for him, observes the satirist, if he had fallen a victim to the Campanian fever which attacked him about this time.<sup>1</sup>

AUTHORITIES.—For Caesar's campaigns in Gaul, his own Commentaries (*de Bello Gallico*, i.-vii., with an eighth book added by Hirtius) are our source of information. *Cp.* Holmes, *Caesar's Conquest of Gaul*. For the general history, see note to ch. lix. Cicero's speeches *pro Sestio*, *in Vatinius*, *de Provinciis Consularibus*, *in Pisonem*, *pro Milone*, etc., belong to these years; three speeches attributed to Cicero, but of doubtful authenticity (the *post reditum in Senatu*, *post reditum ad Quirites*, *de domo sua*), are of historical value; as are also the early commentators on Cicero, especially Asconius. The question at issue between Caesar and the Senate is treated fully by Mommsen, *Die Rechtsfrage zwischen Cäsar u. d. Senat* (Abhandlungen d. hist. phil. Gesellschaft in Breslau, i. 1); *cp.* Herzog, i. 552.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Provida Pompeio dederat Campania febres." etc. : Juvenal, x. 283; *cp.* Appian, *B. C.*, ii. 28.



Coin of Augustus, commemorating the capture of Egypt.  
(Stevenson, "ÆGYPTO CAPTA.")

## CHAPTER LXII

### SECOND CIVIL WAR: DEATH OF POMPEY. (51-48 B.C.)

THE Senatorial chiefs had resolved to break with Caesar. At the very beginning of the year 51 B.C. the Consul M. Marcellus wished to deprive him of his command. *Caesar and the Senate.* But his purpose was thwarted, and though the matter was debated more than once during the summer, it was not till the end of September that a direct motion was made. Caesar had at that time succeeded in putting down the last formidable insurrection of the Gallic tribes, and somewhat more than a year of his command was yet to run before he became a private citizen. He had, however, already intimated his intention of offering himself again for the Consulship, in order that he might be secured from the prosecution with which he was threatened on laying down his Proconsular command; and a law had been already passed giving him permission to become a candidate without returning to Rome. But a decree was now made, by which the Consuls of the next year were ordered to bring before the Senate the question of redistributing the Provincial governments; and a clause was added providing that the Senate should take care of Caesar's veterans. The purpose of this decree was manifest. It was intended to supersede Caesar, and to sap the fidelity of his soldiers by the promise of lands in Italy. It is true that the decree did not contemplate immediate action, but it served to familiarise men's minds with the notion of stripping Caesar of his command.

Caesar felt that the crisis was at hand. Of the Consuls for the next year (50 B.C.), C. Marcellus was certainly opposed to him, but L. Aemilius Paullus had been secretly won by a share of the conqueror's gold.<sup>1</sup> Among the *Curio.*

<sup>1</sup> This C. Marcellus married the sister of Augustus, and became the father of Virgil's Marcellus (*Aen.*, vi. 883). Paullus was son of the Lepidus mentioned on page 589, and brother of Lepidus the triumvir (page 684).

Tribunes of the year was a young man named C. Scribonius Curio, son of one of Sulla's most determined partisans. His talents were ready, his eloquence great, his audacity incomparable. He had entered upon political life at an early age, and was a leader among those young nobles whom Cicero ten years before had designated as "the blood-thirsty youth." Since that time he had attached himself to Cicero, and the orator believed that he had reclaimed the profligate young man. But Caesar, or his Gallic gold, made a convert of Curio. The Nobles, not foreseeing this event, promoted his election to the Tribunate, and thus unwarily committed power to a bold and uncompromising foe.<sup>1</sup>

M. Caelius Rufus, another profligate youth of great ability, whom Cicero had defended, also became a convert to Caesar's side. During the year 52 B.C. he had been Tribune, *Caelius.* and had warmly espoused the cause of Milo. During the whole of Cicero's absence in Cilicia, this unprincipled young man kept up a brisk correspondence with him, as if he was a firm adherent of the Senatorial party. But on the first outbreak of the quarrel he joined the enemy.<sup>2</sup>

A third person, hereafter destined to play a conspicuous part, now appeared at Rome as the avowed partisan of Caesar. This was young M. Antonius, better known as Mark *Mark Antony.* Antony, son of M. Antonius Creticus, and therefore grandson of the great orator. His uncle, C. Antonius, had been Consul with Cicero. His mother was Julia, a distant relation of the great Caesar. Antony had served under Gabinius in the east, and for the last two years had been with Caesar in Gaul. He now came to Rome to sue for the Augurate, vacant by the death of the orator Hortensius, and, assisted by Caesar's influence and his own connections, he was elected; he was thirty-three years of age, ready and unscrupulous as Curio, and he offered himself to be elected as successor to that young adventurer in the college of Tribunes. Thus in the year 50 B.C. Caesar's interests were watched by Curio, and for 49 B.C. Antony succeeded to the task.

The decree above mentioned was to take effect in the present year (50 B.C.). Curio proposed that both Pompey and Caesar *Proposal of* should disband their armies; "this was but fair" he *Curio.* said "for both, nor could the will of the Senate and People be considered free while Pompey was at hand with a military force to control their deliberations." But the Senate

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* Lucan, iv. 819. "Momentumque fuit mutatus Curio rerum."

<sup>2</sup> On the character of Caelius, see Boissier's *Cicéron et ses amis*.



turned a deaf ear to the proposal, and thus (as Curio intended) gave Caesar an excuse for disregarding the orders of the Senate. At Pompey's suggestion, however, it was represented that a Parthian war was imminent, and both the rivals were desired to furnish one legion for service in the east. Caesar at once complied; Pompey evaded the demand by asking Caesar to return the legion which had been lent by himself after the destruction of the corps by Ambiorix. This request also Caesar obeyed, so that in fact both legions were withdrawn from his army. Their employment in the east proved to be a mere pretext. They were both stationed at Capua, within call of Pompey.

The Consuls for the ensuing year (49 B.C.) were L. Lentulus Crus, and another C. Marcellus, cousin-german of his predecessor—both in the interest of Pompey. Scarcely had they entered upon office when the crisis arrived.

On the Calends of January, letters from Caesar were laid before the Senate by Curio, in which the Proconsul expressed his readiness "to disband his army and resign his Province, if Pompey would do the same; if this were not agreed to, he must take measures to protect himself and his country." Warm debates followed, in which Metellus Scipio,<sup>1</sup> Pompey's father-in-law, urged that Caesar should be declared a public enemy unless he laid down his command by a certain day. But Mark Antony, supported by another Tribune, Q. Cassius Longinus, brother or cousin of the more famous C. Cassius, interposed his veto. To override this obstacle a decree was framed on the 7th January, investing the Consuls with Dictatorial power, in the same form that had been used against C. Gracchus, against Saturninus, against Catiline. On the following night Mark Antony and Q. Cassius fled from the city.

The die was cast. Caesar had no longer any choice. He must either offer an armed resistance or save himself by flight. Neither party was quite prepared for immediate war. Caesar had but one legion on the Italian side of the Alps; for the hesitation of his enemies made him doubt whether they would ever defy him to mortal conflict. Pompey knew the weakness of his rival's forces. Probably he also knew that Labienus, the best of Caesar's officers, was ready to desert his leader, and he may be pardoned for believing that such an example would be followed by many others. He calculated

---

<sup>1</sup> He was a Scipio by birth, being great-grandson of Scipio Nasica (nicknamed Serapio), the slayer of Tib. Gracchus, and was adopted by Metellus Pius.

that Caesar would not dare to move, or would fall a victim to his own rashness. For himself he had Caesar's two legions at Capua, and a host of veterans scattered through Italy, ready to take arms at a moment's notice. "I have but to stamp my foot," said the great commander, "and armed men will start from the soil."

But Caesar's prompt audacity remedied his own want of preparations, and disconcerted the calculations of his opponents.

*Advance of Caesar.* He was stationed, with his single legion, at Ravenna, when he was surprised by letters announcing the decree of the 7th of January. His resolution was at once taken. He harangued his legion, and ascertained their readiness to follow whithersoever he led. At nightfall he left Ravenna secretly, crossed the Rubicon, which divided his Province from Italy, and at day-break entered Ariminum with his single legion.<sup>1</sup> Here he met the Tribunes, Mark Antony, and Q. Cassius, on their way from Rome, and orders were sent off to the nearest troops in Transalpine Gaul, to follow his steps with all speed. But he waited not for them. Detachments from his legion were sufficient to secure the submission of Pisaurum, Fanum, Ancona, Iguvium, and Auximum. Soon after, Asculum also surrendered. By the beginning of February Caesar was master of all Umbria and Picenum. By the middle of that month he had been re-inforced by an additional legion

*Capture of Corfinium.* from Gaul, and another was close at hand; so that he was strong enough to invest Corfinium, a fortress in the Pelignian Apennines, which was defended by Domitius Ahenobarbus and a number of Senators. In a few days, however, news came that no help was to be expected from Pompey, and Domitius was given up by his own soldiers to the conqueror.<sup>2</sup> Caesar allowed him and his Senatorial friends to go their way, without even exacting a promise that they would take no further part in the war. On entering each town he ordered that his men should abstain, not only from personal violence, but even from petty pillage. Reports had been spread that the Proconsul's troops were not Romans but Gauls, ferocious barbarians, whose hands would be against every Italian as their natural enemy.

<sup>1</sup> The dramatic scene in which Caesar is represented as pausing on the banks of the Rubicon and anxiously weighing the probable consequences of one irremediable step, is due to rhetorical writers of later times.

<sup>2</sup> Pompey had written to Domitius several times, urging him to retire, as he could not be supported; the refusal of Domitius to do so and the consequent loss of his army illustrate the difficulties with which Pompey, though nominally commander-in-chief, had to contend throughout this war.

The politic humanity of Caesar caused general surprise, and reconciled to his cause many who had hitherto stood aloof. The soldiers of Domitius took service under the conqueror.

On hearing of Caesar's first successes Pompey left Rome with the purpose of evacuating Italy, for he could not oppose Caesar's veterans with recruits hastily levied. Accordingly, he hastened to Brundisium, where he *Pompey leaves Italy.* was joined by the Consuls. Caesar followed, but when he arrived at Brundisium on the 9th of March, he found that the Consuls had sailed for Dyrrhachium, though Pompey was still in the port. The place was too strong to be taken by assault; and eight days after Caesar appeared before its walls, Pompey embarked and carried his last soldier out of Italy. Disappointed of his prey, Caesar returned upon his steps, and reached Rome about the 1st of April. The Consuls, in their haste to quit Rome, had neglected to carry off the treasure. Caesar resolved to seize it, and ordered the doors of the treasury to be broken open. In vain the Tribune L. Metellus, a nephew of Metellus Creticus, endeavoured to bar his passage into the sacred chamber. "Stand aside, young man, if you value your life," said Caesar, "it is easier for me to do it than to say it."

He was now master of Italy as well as Gaul. To pursue Pompey to the east was impossible, because the Senatorial party were masters of the sea, and Caesar had few ships at his disposal. Moreover, in Spain, which had been subject to Pompey for the last five years, there was a veteran army of seven legions, ready to enter Italy. The remainder of the season, therefore, he resolved to occupy in the reduction of that army.

On his way to Spain, he found that Marseilles, the retreat of Milo, had declared for Pompey. Leaving Dec. Brutus with twelve ships, and C. Trebonius with a body of *Siege of Marseilles.* troops, to besiege the town both by sea and land, he continued his march, and crossed the Pyrenees early in the summer. Hither Spain was held by L. Afranius, an old officer of Pompey,<sup>1</sup> and M. Petreius, who had destroyed the army of Catiline. Further Spain was entrusted to the care of M. Terentius Varro.

Near Ilerda (*Lerida*) on the Sicoris, a northern affluent of the Ebro, Caesar was encountered by the Pompeian leaders. He gives us a full account of the movements which *Caesar in Spain.* followed, from which it seems that he was at first

out-generalled by Petreius, being hemmed in upon a tongue of land running into the river, where he was reduced to great extremities. But after some perilous delay he extricated himself and forced the enemy to retreat. He refrained, however, from attacking them, and with sagacious policy encouraged free communications between his own men and the soldiers of the enemy. The Pompeian leaders now attempted to retire to Ilerda; but they were intercepted by Caesar, and were at length obliged to surrender at discretion, and a large portion of their force took service with the politic conqueror.

Varro in Further Spain, hearing of the disaster, found all his Province so inclined to submit, that, despairing of resistance, he also surrendered to the conqueror at Corduba (*Cordova*). Before autumn closed, all Spain was at the feet of Caesar, and was committed to the government of Q. Cassius, the Tribune who had supported his cause at Rome. Thus secured from danger in the west, he hastened into Italy.

As he passed through southern Gaul he found that Marseilles still held out against Dec. Brutus and Trebonius. The defence had been most gallant. The blockade by sea was imperfect; and the great works raised by the besiegers on land were inadequate to overcome the strong defences of the town. But on the arrival of Caesar the Massilians at once capitulated, and were treated with the utmost clemency.

During Caesar's absence in Spain, M. Aemilius Lepidus, who had been left to govern Rome, had named him Dictator. Returning from Marseilles, he assumed the great dignity thus conferred upon him, but held it only eleven days. In that period he presided at the Comitia, and was elected Consul, together with P. Servilius Isauricus, son of one of his old competitors for the Chief Pontificate. He also caused several laws to be passed. One of these restored all exiles to the city except Milo, thus undoing one of the last remnants of Sulla's Dictatorship.<sup>1</sup> Another provided for the payment of debts, so as to lighten the burthens of the debtors without satisfying the democratic cry for an abolition of all contracts.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This is the account of Appian and Plutarch (*cp.* Dio, xli. 18); the words of Caesar himself (*B. C.*, iii. 1) would naturally refer to a measure of more limited scope.

<sup>2</sup> Caesar arranged that creditors should accept payment in land, its value before the outbreak of the war being taken as a basis. He is also said to have ordered that interest already paid was to be deducted from the principal; on this proceeding, which is severely censured by Mommsen (v. 399), see Strachan-Davidson, *Cicero*, 320.

Of all doings of his lieutenants in other quarters during this memorable year, Caesar received accounts by no means commensurate with his own marvellous success. On the coast of Illyria, P. Cornelius Dolabella, son-in-law of Cicero, who had joined the conqueror, had been defeated, and C. Antonius, brother of Mark Antony, had been compelled to surrender ; so that all the eastern coast of the Adriatic was now in the hands of the Pompeians. *Successes of Pompeians.*

Curio had been sent to occupy Sicily, where Cato commanded in the name of the Senate. The philosopher, having no adequate force, declined the contest, and joined Pompey in the east. Curio then passed over to Africa, where the Pompeian general Varus held command, and was at first successful. But presently Juba, king of Numidia, appeared in the field as an ally of the Senatorial party ; and Curio, not strong enough to meet the combined forces of the enemy, took refuge in the famous camp of Scipio. From this position he was drawn out by a report that Juba had retired ; and being surprised by an overpowering force, he was defeated and slain. Africa therefore, as well as all the eastern world, remained in the hands of the Pompeians, while Italy, Gaul, and Spain owned the authority of Caesar. *Defeat of Curio.*

Cicero had returned from Cilicia, while the debates, which issued in the decree of the 7th of January, were still unfinished. He claimed a triumph for some military successes over the mountaineers who infested that Province, and therefore would not enter the walls of the city to be present at these momentous debates. The question of his triumph was soon forgotten in the rapid course of events which followed and he retired to his Formian Villa, still attended by his lictors with their *fascēs* wreathed in laurel. From this place he went to confer with the Pompeian leaders on their retreat through Campania. At the same time many of his personal friends, as Curio, Caelius, Balbus, Trebatius, had joined Caesar, and urged him to make common cause with their generous leader. Caesar himself had written to him, and on his return from Brundisium visited him. But the orator could not be prevailed upon to forsake the cause of the Senate ; and after long hesitation, he took ship and joined Pompey in the east. *Hesitation of Cicero.*

Pompey was bitterly censured by his party for quitting Italy without a blow. But when he was surprised by Caesar's rapid advance, the only troops actually at his command were the two legions lately sent from Gaul by Caesar ; and these (it may well be supposed) he dared not trust to do battle against their old commander. *Plan of Pompey.*



It is probable, therefore, that he was really compelled to quit Italy. But he had now collected a formidable army, and his fleet would have enabled him to regain Italian soil without difficulty. Again it would have been easy for him to have taken command of the veteran troops assembled in Spain. But, since he made no attempt of this kind, we may assume that he purposely chose Epirus as the ground for battle. He had all the east behind him, long used to reverence his name; and out of Italy he was less likely to be thwarted by the Senatorial chiefs, who hated him while they used him. Such especially was Domitius Ahenobarbus, who loudly complained that he had been deserted at Corfinium.

Pompey's headquarters were fixed at Thessalonica, the chief city of Macedonia. Here the Senators who had fled from Italy assembled, and assumed the military titles of Proconsuls and the like. Pompey had employed the time well. The Provinces and kings of the east filled his military chest with treasure; he had collected nine Roman legions, with a number of auxiliaries from every surrounding monarchy, and a numerous force of cavalry; large magazines of provisions and military stores were formed; above all, a powerful fleet was supplied by the maritime states of Greece, Asia Minor, Phoenicia, and Egypt. Bibulus, the old adversary of Caesar, took the command as admiral-in-chief, supported by able lieutenants. With this naval force actively employed, it was hoped that it would be impossible for Caesar to land in Epirus.

Caesar returned to Brundisium at the end of October 49 B.C.,<sup>1</sup> about seven months after his former visit. Twelve legions had been assembled there. So much had their numbers been thinned by war, fatigue, and the fevers of Apulia, that each legion averaged less than 3000 men. His transports were so few that he was not able to ship more than seven of these imperfect legions, with 600 horse. All the harbours were (it was thought) occupied by the enemy. But the ancients were seldom able to maintain a blockade by cruising; and Caesar, leaving Brundisium on the 5th of November, succeeded in landing his first corps on the open coast of Epirus, a little south of the Acroceraunian headland. He sent his empty ships back directly, and marched northward to Oricum and Apollonia, where he claimed admission in

---

<sup>1</sup> By the Roman calendar, it was the end of December. But, for the military operations which follow, it is so important to note the true seasons, that we shall, from this point, give the dates as if the Roman calendar had already been corrected.



virtue of his Consular office. The claim was admitted, and these towns fell into his hands. Pompey had already left Thessalonica, and reached Dyrrhachium in time to save that important place. He then pushed his lines forward to the Apsus, so as to prevent Caesar from crossing the river ; and the two hostile armies lay inactive during the remainder of the winter, with this stream between their camp—Caesar occupying the left or southern bank, Pompey the right or northern side.

As the winter passed away Caesar was rendered extremely anxious by the non-appearance of his second corps. Bibulus, stung to the quick by the successful landing of the first corps, had put to sea from Corcyra with all his fleet, had destroyed thirty of the returning transports, and had ever since kept so strict watch on the coast of Italy that Caesar's officers did not dare to leave Brundisium. So stubborn was the will of Bibulus that he fell a victim to his own exertions and died at sea. But L. Scribonius Libo continued the tactics of Bibulus, and Caesar's impatience rose to the height. He had lost three or four months, and complained that Antony had neglected several opportunities of crossing the Adriatic. At length he engaged a small boat to take him across to Italy in person. The sea ran high, and the master of the boat refused to proceed, till the general revealed himself in the famous words : " You carry Caesar and his fortunes." All night the men toiled, but when day broke they had made no way, and the general reluctantly consented to put back. But soon after, he succeeded in sending over a positive message to Antony to cross over at all risks ; and if Antony disobeyed, the messenger carried a commission to Fufius Calenus, the next in command, ordering him to discharge the duty which Antony neglected to perform. Stung by this practical rebuke, Antony at once set sail. Libo had left his station in order to water his ships, so that the coast was clear, and a wind, favourable for the passage, blew from the south. But as Antony neared the coast of Epirus, he was obliged to run northward past Dyrrhachium, in full view of the enemy. Their fleet gave chase, when the wind happily shifted to the south-west and drove them back, so that Antony succeeded in landing near the headland of Nymphæum, more than fifty miles north of the Apsus. His position was critical, for Pompey's army lay between him and Caesar. But Caesar had already made a rapid march to a ford above the enemy's position, and succeeded in joining Antony before Pompey moved northwards against him.

The spring of 48 B.C. was now beginning. It was probably in March that Caesar effected his junction with Antony. Even then he was inferior in numbers to Pompey; and *Caesar block-*  
*ades Pompey.* it is not without wonder that we read his own account of the audacious attempt with which he began the campaign. Pompey had occupied a new position on the Genusus, between Dyrrhachium and the Apsus, and here he formed a strongly-intrenched camp resting upon the sea. These intrenchments ran in an irregular half-circle of nearly fifteen miles in length, the chord of which was the coast-line of Epirus. Caesar now threw himself between the enemy and Dyrrhachium, and proceeded to draw lines round Pompey's vast intrenchments, so as to cut him off from the surrounding country. As Pompey's intrenchments measured nearly fifteen miles, Caesar's lines of investment measured considerably more. And as Caesar's army was inferior in numbers, it might have been expected that Pompey would not submit to be shut in. But he could not interrupt Caesar's works without hazarding a battle, and his troops were not yet a match for the veterans of Gaul. The command of the sea insured him supplies, and he therefore allowed Caesar to carry on his lines with less interruption than might have been expected.

During these operations Caesar's men had suffered terribly for want of grain. But as spring advanced and the crops began to ripen, brighter days seemed at hand. *Defeat of*  
*Caesar.* Pompey's men meanwhile, though supplied with food by sea, began to suffer for want of fresh water, and their animals for want of green fodder. He therefore determined to assume the offensive. Behind each extremity of Caesar's lines, where they abutted upon the sea, a second line of intrenchment had been formed reaching some way inland, so that for some distance from the sea the lines might be protected from an attack in rear as well as in front. The space between these lines of intrenchment was 600 feet. But the defence was so far incomplete that no works had been carried along the sea so as to cover the ends of the two lines. Pompey was informed of this defect by some Gallic deserters; and while he attacked the inner line in front, he succeeded in landing some troops in the unfortified space on the coast between the inner and outer lines, so as to make a lodgment in the space between the two. A series of combats followed, in which the Pompeians were victorious. Caesar perceived that his labour was thrown away. His lines were forced; and, circumvallation being now impossible, he determined to shift the scene of action.

During the spring he had detached Cn. Domitius Calvinus

with two legions into Macedonia, to occupy that Province and to intercept the march of Metellus Scipio, who had succeeded Bibulus in the government of Syria and was expected every day to bring reinforcements to Pompey. When Scipio arrived in Macedonia he found his passage barred by the enemy. But, about the time of Caesar's defeat at Dyrrhachium, Calvinus had been obliged, by want of provisions, to fall back towards Epirus, while Caesar himself, unaware of this movement, marched by Apollonia up the valley of the Aoüs to effect a junction with Calvinus. At the same time, Pompey moved towards Macedonia to join Scipio, and narrowly missed encountering Calvinus. But that officer, informed at once of Caesar's march and Pompey's also, moved with great rapidity to the southward, and effected a union with his general in the north-western corner of Thessaly. The Caesarian army, thus united, advanced to Gomphi, which was taken and given up to plunder. Meanwhile, Scipio had occupied Larissa; but all the other Thessalian cities opened their gates to Caesar; and the harvest being now ripe, his army revelled in the abundant supplies of the rich plain of Thessaly.

*Caesar retreats to Thessaly.*

Soon after, Pompey entered Thessaly from the north and joined Scipio at Larissa. Great was now the exultation of the Pompeian leaders. Ever since the victory of Dyrrhachium, they had been quarrelling among themselves for the prizes, which they regarded as already won. Lentulus Spinther, Domitius Ahenobarbus, and Metellus Scipio, all claimed Caesar's Pontificate. Domitius proposed that all who had remained in Italy or had not taken an active part in the contest should be brought to trial as traitors to the cause—Cicero being the person chiefly aimed at. Pompey himself was not spared; Domitius had nicknamed him Agamemnon and King of Kings. The advice of the great general to avoid a decisive battle was contemptuously set at naught by all but Cato, who had indeed been left at Dyrrhachium, but who had from first to last advocated any measure which gave a hope of avoiding bloodshed. Even Favonius, a blunt and simple-minded man who usually echoed Cato's sentiments, had before this loudly complained that Pompey's reluctance to fight would prevent his friends from eating their figs even that summer at Tusculum.

*Exultation of the Pompeians.*

From Larissa Pompey moved southward, and occupied a strong position on an eminence near the city of Pharsalus, overlooking the plain which skirts the left bank of the river Enipeus. On this plain Caesar was encamped within four miles of the enemy's position. Here the hostile

*Position of the armies.*

armies lay watching each other for some time, till Caesar made a movement which threatened to intercept Pompey's communications with Larissa. The latter at length yielded to the impatience of the Senatorial chiefs. He resolved to descend from his position and give battle upon the plain of Pharsalus or Pharsalia.

The morning of the 6th of June<sup>1</sup> saw both armies drawn out in order of battle. The forces of Pompey consisted of about 45,000 men besides auxiliaries, and were (if Caesar's *Battle of Pharsalia*, account is accurate) twice as numerous as the army opposed to them. But Caesar's were all well-trained troops, whereas several of Pompey's legions were recent levies, far inferior to the soldiers of Gaul. Pompey's army faced the west. His right wing, resting on the river, was commanded by Lentulus, the centre by Scipio, the left by Pompey and Domitius. His cavalry under Labienus, far superior to Caesar's, covered the left flank. Caesar drew up his forces in three lines, of which the rearmost was to act in reserve. His left was upon the river; and his small force of cavalry was placed upon his right, opposite to Pompey's left. To compensate for his inferiority in this arm, he drafted six cohorts from the third line, who were to act specially in support of the horse. Domitius Calvinus commanded in the centre, Antony on the left, Caesar himself upon the right, with the tenth legion under his eye.

The attack was begun by Caesar's front line, which advanced running. Pompey ordered his men to await the charge without moving, in hopes that the enemy would lose breath before they closed.<sup>2</sup> But Caesar's old soldiers, observing that the Pompeians kept their ground, halted to recover breath, before they closed with the enemy. A desperate conflict followed.

While the legions were engaged along the whole line, Pompey's cavalry attacked and routed the weak squadrons of the enemy's horse, and were about to attack Caesar in flank, when the six cohorts advanced and drove their formidable *pila* straight at the unarmed faces of the enemy.<sup>3</sup> This unexpected check so

<sup>1</sup> By the Roman calendar it was the 9th of August.

<sup>2</sup> This order is criticised by Caesar (*B. C.*, iii. 92) on the ground that it prevented Pompey's soldiers from feeling the excitement which a good leader ought to stimulate.

<sup>3</sup> Plutarch's story is that the order was given because Pompey's cavalry consisted chiefly of young Romans, who were afraid of having their beauty spoiled. But Pompey's cavalry was excellent, nor does Caesar tell us that he gave any order at all about striking at the face. The foot soldiers would naturally strike at the most defenceless part, and the story of the "spoiled beauty" would be readily added by some scornful Caesarian.

confounded Pompey's cavalry that it fled broken and in disorder.

Upon this Caesar brought up his reserve ; and the infantry of Pompey, assailed by fresh troops in front, and attacked in flank by the six cohorts, gave way everywhere. A general order was now issued by Caesar to spare the Romans and to throw all their strength upon the foreigners. Pompey had trusted for success to his cavalry ; and when he saw this force irreparably routed, he rode off the field to his tent, without waiting to see the result of Caesar's last attack.

His broken army endeavoured to find safety in their camp. But the victorious Caesarians pressed them too closely. Pompey himself had only time to change his dress, mount his horse, and gallop off through the Decuman or rearward gate of his camp, as the soldiers of Caesar were forcing their way over the intrenchments in front. The booty taken was immense. The hardy veterans of Gaul gazed with surprise on the tent of Lentulus, adorned with festoons of Bacchic ivy, and on the splendid services of plate which were set out everywhere for a banquet to celebrate the expected victory.

The bulk of the Romans in Pompey's army at once submitted to the conqueror. When Caesar saw the dead bodies of many Roman citizens lying on the field, he exclaimed : " They would have it so : to have laid down my arms would have sealed my doom." Yet most of those who perished were foreigners. The only distinguished Roman who fell was Domitius Ahenobarbus, and this was in the pursuit. Among those who submitted was M. Junius Brutus, a young man of whom we shall hear more.

Before Caesar allowed his tired soldiers to enjoy the fruits of the victory of Pharsalia, he required them to complete the conquest. The pursuit was continued during the remainder of the day ; and on the next morning the clemency of the conqueror induced the main body of the fugitives to submit. The powerful army, so lately confident of victory, was absolutely destroyed.

Pompey fled through the gorge of Tempé to the mouth of the Peneüs, where he embarked on board a merchant-vessel in company with Lentulus Spinther, Lentulus Crus, *Flight of Pompey.* and others. He dismissed all his slaves. Honest Favonius proved his fidelity to the general by undertaking for him such menial offices as usually were left to slaves. The master of the ship knew the adventurer, and offered to take him whithersoever he would. Pompey first directed his course to Amphipolis, whence he crossed to Lesbos, to which place his wife Cornelia and his younger son Sextus had been sent for safety. Having taken them on board, he sailed round to Cilicia,



and then crossed over to Cyprus, where he stayed a short time, deliberating on the best means of safety. He still had a powerful fleet at sea. Africa also was still his own, and king Juba anxious to do him service. But after considering several plans, he determined to seek an asylum in Egypt.

Ptolemy Auletes, who had been restored by Gabinus, Pompey's friend, had left his kingdom to the divided sway of his son

*His murder.* Ptolemy and his daughter Cleopatra, under the guardianship of the Senate; and the young king's interests were supported by a Roman force left by Gabinus. Pompey therefore had good reason to expect a favourable reception in Egypt. But Cleopatra, who was older than her brother, had been driven from Alexandria; and Pothinus a eunuch, assisted by Theodotus a rhetorician and Achilles an officer of the army, governed the kingdom in the name of young Ptolemy. When Pompey appeared off Pelusium with a few ships and a force of about 2000 men, these ministers were engaged in repelling Cleopatra. A message from Pompey, to signify his intention of landing, threw them into great alarm. The Roman troops in Egypt had formerly served under Pompey in the east, and it was feared that they would deliver up the kingdom to their old general. The Egyptian government determined to put him to death, and left the matter to the conduct of Achilles, a bold man troubled by no scruples. A small boat was sent to receive the fugitive, under the false pretence that the water was too shallow to allow a larger vessel to reach the shore. In the boat were Achilles himself, a Roman officer named Salvius, and another named Septimius, who had served as Tribune under Pompey in the war against the pirates. The great general recognised his old officer, and entered the boat, attended by two centurions, a freedman named Philippus, and a single slave. His wife and friends anxiously watched it as it slowly made its way back to shore, and were somewhat comforted by seeing a number of persons, among whom was the young king himself, collected on the beach as if to receive Pompey with honour. At length the boat stopped, and the general took the hand of his freedman to assist him in rising. As he was stepping on shore, Septimius struck him from behind, and Achilles repeated the blow. Pompey knew his fate, and fell without a struggle. His head was then cut off and taken away, his body left upon the beach. When the crowd dispersed, his faithful freedman, assisted by an old soldier of the great commander, had the piety to form a rude funeral pile of the fragments of an old fishing-boat. By these humble obsequies was the sometime master of the world honoured.



So died Pompey. He had lived nearly sixty years, and had enjoyed more of the world's honours than almost any Roman before him. In youth he was cold, calculating, and hard-hearted, covetous of military fame, and not slow to appropriate what belonged to others. His talents for war were great. In the struggle with Caesar it is plain that, so far as military tactics went, Pompey was superior to his great rival ; and had he not been hampered by impatient colleagues, the result might have been different. In politics he was grasping and selfish, but irresolute and improvident. He imagined that his achievements gave him a title to be acknowledged as the chief of Rome ; and when neither Senate nor People seemed willing to acquiesce in the claim, he formed a coalition with politicians whose principles he disliked, and made himself responsible for the acts of Clodius. Lastly, when he found that in this coalition he was unable to maintain his superiority over Caesar, he joined the oligarchy who hated him, and lost even the glory which as a soldier he had deserved. In private life he was free from those licentious habits which most persons of that day indulged without scruple or reproach ; and his tragical death excited a commiseration for him, which by his life he hardly deserved.

*Character of  
Pompey.*

AUTHORITIES.—Caesar's *Commentaries de Bello Cívili*, Florus, iv. 2, and Lucan's *Pharsalia* have to be added to the general sources mentioned in the note to ch. lix. Besides Mommsen's brilliant chapter (B. v. ch. 10), Stoffel's *Histoire de Jules César* and the excellent summary in Warde Fowler's *Caesar* should be used for all Caesar's campaigns, and, for Cicero's point of view, Strachan-Davidson's *Cicero*.



Coin, with heads of Caesar and Antony.

## CHAPTER LXIII

### ABSOLUTE RULE OF CAESAR. (48-44 B.C.)

IMMEDIATELY after the battle of Pharsalia, Caesar pursued Pompey by forced marches. He reached Amphipolis not long after the fugitive had touched there. While crossing the Hellespont in boats, he fell in with a squadron of Pompey's fleet under the command of C. Cassius, who surrendered to Caesar, and was received by the conqueror with the same favour which he had shown to Brutus and the rest of his opponents. In Asia Minor he heard that Pompey had taken ship from Cyprus, and immediately concluded that Egypt must be his destination. Without a moment's hesitation he sailed for that country, though he was unable to carry with him more than 4000 men, and though he incurred imminent risk of being intercepted by the Pompeian fleet. As soon as his arrival off Alexandria was known, Theodotus came off, bearing Pompey's head and ring. The conqueror accepted the ring, but turned with tears in his eyes from the ghastly spectacle of the head and ordered it to be burned with due honours. Over the place of the funeral-pyre he raised a shrine to Nemesis, the goddess assigned by the religion of the Greeks to be the punisher of excessive prosperity. He then landed and entered Alexandria with his Consular emblems displayed, followed by his small army. Presently after, Cleopatra introduced herself in disguise into the palace where Caesar had fixed his residence. The conqueror, notorious for indulgence in sensual pleasures, yielded readily to the blandishments of the princess. But Pothinus and Achillas had no wish to lose their importance by agreeing to a compromise between the young king, their master, and his sister; and the people of Alexandria were affronted by Caesar's assumption of authority. A great crowd, supported by Achillas and the army, blockaded Caesar in the royal palace so closely that he had great difficulty in maintaining communication with

the island of Pharos and the sea. In vain he endeavoured to ruin the cause of Achilles by seizing the person of young Ptolemy. Arsinoë, another daughter of the blood-royal, was set up by the army. Constant encounters took place by land and water ; and at one time, indeed, the Egyptians had gained possession of Pharos. But to retake it was a matter of life and death ; and after a desperate attack from the sea, Caesar was successful, though during the conflict he was in so much danger that he was obliged to swim for his life from a sinking ship, with his general's cloak between his teeth, holding his note-book above water in his left hand.

The blockade began about August 48 B.C., and continued till the January following.<sup>1</sup> At last came news that Mithridates of Pergamus, a natural son of the great king of Pontus, was marching with a large force to *Victory of Caesar.* relieve Caesar. Mithridates contrived to elude the Egyptian generals so as to cross the Nile at Memphis, where Caesar effected a junction with him and fell upon the Egyptians. His triumph was complete ; numbers of the enemy were left on the field ; many were drowned in attempting to escape across the river. Among the last was young Ptolemy ; and Caesar now placed Cleopatra on the throne, together with a younger brother, reserving Arsinoë to grace his triumph.

During these months, the Pompeian chiefs recovered from their first consternation. After Pharsalia, Cato had retired from Dyrrhachium to Corcyra, where he was *Plans of the Pompeians.* joined by Gnaeus, the eldest son of Pompey, with Cicero, Labienus, Afranius, and others. He offered the chief command to Cicero, as the oldest Consular ; but the orator declined a post for which he had neither aptitude nor inclination, and returned to Italy. A considerable fleet was now assembled at Corcyra. Cato and the rest embarked, with the troops that they had rallied, and sailed for Cyrené, in the hope of learning news of their chief. Here they fell in with Cornelia and young Sextus, full of the tragic scene which they had just witnessed on the beach of Pelusium. Cato remained at Cyrené, while the fleet, with Labienus and the greater part of the troops, pursued its course across the Syrtes to the Province of Africa, where the Pompeian cause was upheld by Varus and king Juba. Cato joined them after an arduous march across the desert, and by the beginning of next year all the Pompeian leaders were assembled in Africa. The command

---

<sup>1</sup> That is, according to the corrected calendar. By the reckoning of the time, it lasted from October to the end of March.

was now definitely offered to Cato. The disinterested philosopher declined it and persuaded all to acquiesce in the appointment of Scipio, who had been second to Pompey at Pharsalia. It was then proposed to destroy the city of Utica as being favourable to Caesar. But Cato offered to assume the government of the town and be responsible for its fidelity, thus finally separating himself from the active warfare which from the first he had deprecated and disavowed.

In other parts of the empire affairs were unfavourable to Caesar's cause. Pharnaces, son of Mithridates, was daily gathering strength in Pontus. In Further Spain, *Difficulties of Caesar.* the oppressive rule of Q. Cassius had excited a mutiny in the army. In Illyricum, Gabinius, who, on being recalled from exile, had joined Caesar's party, had been cut off during an inroad into Dalmatia. In Italy, Caelius and Milo, even before the battle of Pharsalia, had endeavoured to effect a new revolution by promising an abolition of all debts; and though they had failed, the project was now renewed by the profligate Dolabella. The legions quartered in Campania, one of which was the favoured tenth, had risen in mutiny.

We know not when the news of these threatening events reached Caesar's ears at Alexandria. In October 48 B.C. *Caesar's second Dictatorship.* (January 47, of the unreformed calendar), he had been proclaimed Dictator for the second time and had named Mark Antony Master of the Horse. This officer was entrusted with the government of Italy. But the presence of the Dictator himself seemed to be imperiously demanded. Still he lingered in Egypt, detained (as his enemies say) by the blandishments of Cleopatra, or (as his admirers contend) by the necessity of confirming Roman influence in that country. It was not for the space of four months after his victory on the Nile that he left Egypt, having remained there altogether for not less than three-quarters of a year.

But when once he had shaken off this real or apparent lethargy, all his startling rapidity of action returned. He left Egypt in May 47 B.C. (the Roman July), and *Battle of Zela.* passed northward through Syria to crush Pharnaces. On his way he entered into friendly relations with the Jews, who hated the memory of Pompey, and shortly after he appeared in Pontus. Pharnaces gave him battle near Zela, where his father Mithridates had defeated Triarius, and the victory gained by Caesar was announced at Rome in the famous despatch, "Veni, vidi, vici." Caesar now devoted a short time to the task of settling the affairs of Asia. This Province had been attached to the Senatorial cause by the mild rule

of Lucullus and Pompey. Lately, however, the exactions of Metellus Scipio had caused discontent; and Caesar found it easy to win popularity by remitting a portion of the moneys due to the imperial treasury.

Two months after Caesar left Alexandria, all parts of the East were again restored to tranquil submission; and sometime in July (the Roman October) he entered the city for the third time since he had crossed the Rubicon.

Assuming his Dictatorial authority, he applied himself with his usual industry and rapidity to settle the most pressing difficulties. The disturbances raised by the promises of Dolabella had been quelled by Antony; and the Dictator removed discontent for the present by the pernicious example of making a donation to the poorer citizens out of the public purse.

The mutiny of the legions in Campania was more formidable. But Caesar overcame the danger by facing it boldly. The discontented soldiers followed him to Rome, and demanded their discharge, thinking that thus they would extort a large donative, for they believed their services to be indispensable for the approaching African campaign. Caesar met the mutinous bands in the Campus Martius, and ascended the Tribunal. "You demand your discharge," he said, "I discharge you." A dead silence followed these unexpected words. Caesar resumed: "The rewards which I have promised, you shall have, when I return to celebrate my triumph with the other troops." Shame now filled their hearts, mingled with vexation at the thought that they who had borne all the heat and burden of the day would be excluded from the triumph. They were confounded by the boldness and generosity of the Dictator, and stood waiting for the continuance of his speech. But he remained silent. At length, at the earnest entreaty of his friends, he again rose to speak. "Quirites,"—he began, as if they were no longer soldiers but merely private citizens. A burst of repentant sorrow broke from the ranks of the veterans; but Caesar turned away as if he were about to leave the Tribunal. The cries rose still louder; they besought him to punish them in any way, but not to dismiss them from his service. After long delay, he said that "he would not punish any one for demanding his due; but that he could not conceal his vexation that the tenth legion could not bide his time. That legion at least he must dismiss." Loud applause followed from the rest; the men of the tenth hung their heads in shame, begging him to decimate them and restore the survivors to his favour. At length Caesar, deeming them sufficiently

humbled, accepted their services. The whole scene is a striking illustration of the cool and dauntless resolution of the man.

Having completed all pressing business, he again left Rome, to meet the Pompeians in Africa. Early in October (47 B.C.)

*Battle of Thapsus.* he reached Lilybaeum, but without his veteran legions. Notwithstanding this, he at once put to sea, and landed with some difficulty on the coast of Africa. Several attempts against the superior forces of the enemy convinced him that he was too weak to take the field, and he lay encamped waiting for reinforcements till the winter was far spent. Then he advanced against the enemy, and on the 4th of February (46 B.C.) encamped near Thapsus, where was fought the battle which decided the fate of the campaign. After a desperate conflict the Senatorial army was forced to give way ; and Caesar, who always pressed an advantage to the utmost, followed the enemy to their camp. The leaders fled in all directions ; Varus and Labienus escaped into Spain, accompanied or preceded by the two sons of Pompey. Scipio put to sea, but being driven back by stress of weather, sought death by his own hands. Afranius was killed by the soldiery. Juba fled with old Petreius ; and these two rude soldiers, after a last banquet, heated with wine, agreed to end their life by single combat. The Roman veteran was slain by the African prince, and Juba sought death at the hand of a faithful slave.

Meanwhile, Cato at Utica had received news of the ruin of his party by the battle of Thapsus. He calmly resolved on self-slaughter, and after a supper with his friends, *Death of Cato.* at which philosophical and political topics were freely discussed, retired to rest. For a moment he forgot his philosophic calm, when he saw that his too careful friends had removed his sword. Wrathfully reproving them, he ordered it to be brought back and hung at his bed's head. There he lay down, and turned over the pages of Plato's *Phaedo* till he fell asleep. In the night he awoke, and taking his sword from the sheath, thrust it into his body. His watchful friends heard him utter an involuntary groan, and entering the room, found him writhing in agony. They procured surgical aid, and the wound was carefully dressed. Cato lay down again apparently insensible ; but, as soon as he was alone, he quietly removed the dressings and tore open the wound, so that his bowels broke out, and after no long time he breathed his last. The Romans, one and all, even Cicero, admired his conduct. It is true that the Stoics, whose doctrines Cato professed, recommended the endurance of all evils as indifferent to a philosopher. But Cato was still more of a Roman than a Stoic ; life had become



intolerable to him; and while Christian judgment must condemn his impatience, it must be confessed that from his point of view the act was at least excusable.

After this miserable end of the most upright among the Senatorial chiefs, Caesar busied himself in regulating the countries he had conquered. Juba's kingdom of *Settlement of* Numidia he formed into a new Province, and gave *Africa*. it into the care of the historian Sallust, who with others had been expelled from the Senate in the year 50 B.C., professedly because of his profligate manners, really because of his devoted attachment to Caesar's cause. His subsequent life justified both the real and the alleged cause. He proved an oppressive ruler, and his luxurious habits were conspicuous even in that age. His terse and epigrammatic sentences embalmed in two immortal works the merits of Marius and his party, the vices and errors of their Senatorial antagonists.

Caesar returned to Rome for the fourth time since the civil war broke out, about the end of May 46 B.C. At length he had found time to celebrate the triumphs which he *Caesar's* had earned since his first Consulship, and to *triumphs*. devote his attention to those internal reforms, which long years of faction and anarchy had made necessary.

His triumphs were four in number, over Gaul, Egypt, Pontus, and Numidia;—for no mention was made of the civil war. A Roman could not triumph over fellow-citizens; *General* therefore the victories of Ilerda and Pharsalia were *amnesty*. not celebrated by public honours; nor would Thapsus have been mentioned, had not Juba been among the foes. These triumphs were followed by splendid gladiatorial shows and combats of wild beasts. But what gave them more real splendour was the previous announcement of a general amnesty for all the opponents of the Dictator. The memory of the Marian massacre and of the Sullan Proscription was still present to many minds. Domitius Ahenobarbus and the Senatorial leaders had vowed vengeance against all who took part with Caesar or even who remained neutral. Men could not rid themselves of the belief that when all fear of the enemy had ceased, the conqueror would glut his vengeance by a hecatomb. The certainty that no more blood would flow was so much the more grateful.

After Caesar's triumphs all his soldiers were gratified by a magnificent donation, and every poor citizen received a present both of grain and money. The veterans also at *Rewards and* length received their rewards in lands, which for *donations*. the most part were either public property or duly purchased

with public money. No Julian Colonies were planted on lands wrested by force from citizens. There were cases doubtless, probably many cases, in which individuals suffered. But, as a rule, the example of Sulla, who confiscated private property to reward his troops, was carefully avoided.

Even before his return to Rome every kind of honour had been bestowed upon Caesar. He was named Dictator for the third time, and for the space of ten years. He was also invested with Censorial authority for three years ; and in virtue of these combined offices he became absolute master of the empire. For several months he remained at Rome busily occupied with measures intended to remedy the evil effects of the long-continued civil discords and to secure order for the future. But in the middle of his work he was compelled to quit Rome by the call of another war. It will be well to dispose of this before we give a brief summary of his great legislative measures.

Spain was the Province that required his presence. There the two sons of Pompey, with Labienus and Varus, had rallied the scanty relics of the African army. The Province was already in a state of revolt against Caesar. Q. Cassius, whom Caesar had left as governor, had been ordered to assist in the African campaign, but had been detained by the mutinous conduct of his troops. Trebonius, his successor, had been expelled by his own legions, and the malcontents in Spain were able to present a formidable front. Caesar left Rome late in September 46 B.C., and reached Saguntum by rapid marches in seven-and-twenty days. But here he fell sick, and it was not till the end of the year that he was able to take the field. By this time, young Cn. Pompey had concentrated his forces near Corduba (*Cordova*). But he cautiously declined a battle ; and after a series of desultory movements, Caesar found the enemy in a strong position near Munda, (probably to be identified with Montilla, to the south of Cordova,)<sup>1</sup> where they offered battle, and he accepted the offer notwithstanding the difficulties of the ground. Success was for some time doubtful. So desperate was the conflict that Caesar is reported to have said : "On other occasions I have fought for victory, here I fought for life." At length the enemy gave way. More than 30,000 men fell, among them Varus and Labienus. Cn. Pompey fled to the coast, sick and wounded. He lay concealed for some time in a cave, where he was discovered and slain. Sext. Pompey escaped into northern Spain, whence he reappeared at a later

<sup>1</sup> Stoffel, *Histoire de Jules César*, ii. 312.

time to vex the peace of the Roman world. So important did Caesar consider it to quench the last sparks of disaffection in a Province which for several years had been under Pompey's government that he did not return to Rome till the autumn of 45 B.C., having been absent from the capital nearly a year. On this occasion he was less scrupulous than before, for early in October he celebrated a fifth triumph in honour of his successes in Spain, though these were as much won over Roman citizens as his former victories in that same country or his crowning glory of Pharsalia.<sup>1</sup>

From his last triumph to his death was somewhat more than five months (October 45 B.C. to March 44): from his quadruple triumph to the Spanish campaign was less than four months (June to September 46 B.C.). Into these two brief periods were compressed most of the laws which bear his name, and of which a brief account must now be given. The evils which he endeavoured to remedy were of old standing. His long residence at Rome, and busy engagement in all political matters from early youth to the close of his Consulship, made him familiar with every sore place, and with all the proposed remedies. His own clear judgment, his habits of rapid decision, and the unlimited power which he held, made it easier for him to legislate than for others to advise.

The long wars, and the liberality with which he had rewarded his soldiers and the people after his triumphs, had reduced the treasury to a low ebb. He began by revising the register of citizens, principally for the purpose of abridging the list of those who were receiving monthly donations of grain from the treasury. Numbers of foreigners and other persons had been irregularly placed upon the list; and, assisted by the deaths caused by war, he was able to reduce the list of state-paupers resident in or near Rome from 320,000 to less than half that number.<sup>2</sup> The treasury felt an immediate and a permanent relief.

But though for this purpose Caesar made severe distinctions between Roman citizens and the foreign subjects of the republic, no ruler ever showed himself so much alive to the claims of all classes of her subjects. Other popular leaders had advocated the cause of the Italians, and all free people of the Peninsula had for the last forty years been made Romans; but no one had shown a generous interest in

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen (v. 319) maintains the contrary opinion.

<sup>2</sup> *Cp.* page 496.

the claims of the Provincial subjects of Rome, except Sertorius, and his object was rather to found a new Rome in Spain than to incorporate Spain with Italy. Caesar was the first acknowledged ruler of the Roman state who extended his view beyond the politics of the city and took a really imperial survey of the vast dominions subject to her sway. Towards those who were at war with Rome he was as relentless as the sternest Roman of them all ; but no one so well as he knew how "to spare the submissive" ; hardly any one except himself felt pleasure in sparing. All the cities of Transpadane Gaul, already possessed of the Latin franchise, now received the full Roman citizenship, so that this Province was now merged in Italy ; and Transalpine Gaul was raised nearly to the position hitherto occupied by the Cisalpine Province.<sup>1</sup> The Gallic legion which he had raised, called *Alaudae* from the lark which was the crest upon their helmets, was rewarded for its services by the gift of the full franchise. All physicians and scientific men, of whatever origin, were to be allowed to claim the same privilege. Several communities, for instance, those in Sicily, were presented with the rights of Latin citizens.

The imperial character of the great Dictator's government is strongly shown by his unfulfilled projects. Among these were  
*Imperial projects.* the draining of the Pontine marshes, the formation of a tunnel from the Fucine Lake to the Liris, the alteration and improvement of the lower course of the Tiber, a new direct road across the Apennines, a canal through the Isthmus of Corinth, a complete survey and map of the whole empire. Another and more memorable design was that of a code of laws embodying and organising the scattered judgments and precedents which at that time regulated the courts. It was several centuries before this great work was accomplished, by which Roman law became the law of civilised Europe.

The liberal tendency of the Dictator's mind was shown by the manner in which he supplied the great gaps which the  
*Treatment of the Senate.* civil war had made in the benches of the Senate. Of late years the number of that assembly had been increased from its ancient complement of 300. Sulla had greatly added to the normal number. Cicero on one occasion mentions 415 members taking part in the votes, and some of course were absent. But Caesar raised it to 900, thus considerably increasing the largest number that had ever been

---

<sup>1</sup> *Cp.* page 543, and Curio in Cic., *de Off.*, iii. 22, 88.

counted in its ranks.<sup>1</sup> Many of the new Senators were fortunate soldiers who had served him well. In raising such men to Senatorial rank he followed the example of Sulla. Many also were enfranchised citizens of the towns of Gaul. The old citizens were indignant at this invasion of barbarians. "The Gauls," said a popular song, "had exchanged the treds for the toga, and had followed the conqueror's triumphal car into the Senate." Placards was stuck up, desiring that "no one should show the new Senators the way to the House."

The Curule offices, however, were still confined to men of Italian birth. The first foreigner who reached the Consulship was Balbus, a Spaniard of Gades, the friend of Caesar and of Cicero; but this was four years after the Dictator's death.

*Curule offices  
confined to  
Italians.*

The judicial power was once more restored to the Senators and Equites jointly, to the exclusion of the Aerarian Tribunes.

*Iudices.*

To revive a military population in Italy was not so much the object of Caesar as that of former leaders of the People. His veterans received few assignments of land in Italy. The principal settlements by which he enriched them were in the Provinces.<sup>2</sup>

*Military  
Colonies.*

Civil Colonies were established in nearly all parts of the empire. Of these Corinth and Carthage were the most important, and those cities regained much of their ancient splendour and renown.<sup>3</sup>

*Civil Colonies.*

He endeavoured to restore the wasted population of Italy by more peaceful methods. The marriage tie, which had become exceedingly lax in these profligate times, was encouraged by somewhat singular means. A matron with children was allowed to use more ornaments and more costly carriages than the sumptuary laws of Rome permitted to

*Encouragement  
of marriage.*

<sup>1</sup> Since Sulla's time there had been twenty ex-Quaestors to be added to the number of the Senate annually. The total number of Senators would thus be, on an average, about 660; but many would be absent on any given occasion, in the Provinces or on military service.

<sup>2</sup> The colonies founded at Narbonne, Beziers, Fréjus, Arles, Orange, were all called after legions, and there were also military colonies in Africa and elsewhere. Mommsen, however, thinks (v. 358, 422) that most of the veterans were settled in Italy, and that the names of the colonies in Gaul were merely given to commemorate those who had taken an important part in the conquest.

<sup>3</sup> The colony of Urso (*Osuna*) in Spain is also of special interest, owing to the discovery since 1870 of an inscription containing the law of its constitution: see *lex coloniae Genetivae Iuliae* in Bruns, *Fontes Iuris Romani*.

women generally. Special rewards were held out to encourage large families.<sup>1</sup>

The great abuse of slave-labour was difficult to correct. It was attempted to apply remedies familiar to despotic governments. An ordinance was issued that no citizens *Slavery.* between twenty and forty years of age should be absent from Italy for more than three years. An ancient enactment was revived that on all estates at least one-third of the labourers should be free men. No doubt these measures were of little effect.

Caesar also formed great designs for the improvement of the city. He proposed to found a public library at Rome, a *Improvement of Rome.* scheme afterwards executed by his friend C. Asinius Pollio, famous as a poet and orator, and as the historian of the civil war. For the amusement of the people he planned a splendid theatre near the Tarpeian Rock; and for the transaction of public business he erected the magnificent building called the Basilica Julia, which will be noticed in a later page.<sup>2</sup>

But of all his acts, that by which his name is best remembered is the reform of the calendar. It has been before stated that *Calendar reformed.* the Roman year had hitherto consisted of 355 days, with a month to be intercalated every other year, so as to bring the calendar into some sort of agreement with solar time.<sup>3</sup> Considerable discrepancy would have existed even if the intercalations had been regularly made. But the business was so carelessly executed that the difference between the civil year and the solar year sometimes amounted to several months.<sup>4</sup>

Caesar called in the aid of Sosigenes, an Alexandrian astronomer, to rectify the present error and prevent error for the future. It was determined to make the first of January of the Roman year 709 U.C. coincide with the 1st of January of the solar

<sup>1</sup> This law was made more precise by Augustus. A man who had three living children born in lawful wedlock at Rome, or four born in Italy, or five born in the Provinces, enjoyed freedom from certain duties and charges. *Cp. Bury, Student's Roman Empire, 62.*

<sup>2</sup> He also made elaborate arrangements for the improvement of Rome in matters of sanitation and police: see *lex Julia municipalis* in Bruns, *l.c.*

<sup>3</sup> Page 29.

<sup>4</sup> See *Dict. Ant.*, "CALENDARIIUM": Watson, *Letters of Cicero*, App. viii. to Part iv. The equivalents in Julian time given in the text proceed on the hypothesis that no intercalation took place between 63 B.C. and 52 B.C. Le Verrier holds that the intercalation proceeded regularly down to 52 B.C., and constructs tables accordingly (*Stoffel, Histoire de Jules César, ii. 303, 387*).



year which we call 45 B.C. But it was calculated that this 1st of January of the year 709 U.C. would be 67 days in advance of the calendar which it was determined to adopt; or, in other words, would concur, not with the 1st of January 45 B.C., but with the 26th of October 46 B.C. And therefore two intercalary months, making together 67 days, were inserted between the last day of November and the 1st of December of the year 708. An intercalary month of 23 days had already been inserted in the February of that year, according to the old method. Therefore, on the whole, the Roman year 708 consisted in all of the prodigious number of 445 days.<sup>1</sup> It was scoffingly called "The year of Confusion." More justly should it be named, as Macrobius observes, "The last year of Confusion."

Thus the past error was corrected, and the 1st of January 709 U.C. became the same with the 1st of January 45 B.C.

To prevent future errors, the year was extended from 355 to 365 days, each month being lengthened, except February, according to the rule which we still observe. But as the solar year consists of about  $365\frac{1}{4}$  days, it is manifest that it was necessary to add one day in every four years, and this was done at the end of February, as at present in our Leap Year.

Such was the famous Julian Calendar, which, with a slight alteration, continues to date every transaction and every letter of the present day.<sup>2</sup>

The constant occupation required for these measures of reform, all executed in the space of less than a year, necessarily absorbed the chief part of the Dictator's day, and prevented the free access which great men at Rome usually accorded to suitors and visitors. The true reason for his seclusion was not understood, and the fact diminished his popularity. Yet his affability was the same as ever, and a letter

---

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*  $355 + 23 + 67 = 445$ . Le Verrier thinks that 67 days *in all* (not 90) were added to this year, making a total of 422 days.

<sup>2</sup> The addition of one day in every four years would be correct, if the solar year consisted of exactly  $365\frac{1}{4}$  days, or 365 days 6 hours. In fact, it consists of 365 days, 5 hours, 48 minutes, 46 seconds, so that the Julian year is longer than the true solar year by about 11 minutes. Accordingly, in the year 1582 A.D. the beginning of the Julian year was about 10 days behind the true time. Pope Gregory XIII. shortened that year by 10 days; and to prevent error for the future, ordered the additional day of February to be omitted three times in 400 years. Protestant England refused to adopt this reform till the year 1752 A.D., when 11 days were dropped between the 2nd and 14th of September, which gave rise to the vulgar cry—"Give us back our 11 days." Russia still keeps the old style, and her reckoning is now 13 days behind that of the rest of Europe.

from Cicero to Atticus, in which he describes a visit he received from the conqueror in his villa at Puteoli, leaves a pleasing impression of both host and guest.<sup>1</sup> Cicero indeed had fully bowed to circumstances; and into his speeches for the Pompeians, M. Marcellus and Q. Ligarius, he introduced compliments to Caesar too fulsome to be genuine.<sup>2</sup> It was in his enforced retirement from public life which followed Pharsalia that he composed some of those eloquent treatises which we still read.<sup>3</sup> Both to him and to every other Senatorial chief, Caesar not only showed pardon, but favour.

Yet the remnant of the Nobles loved him not. And with the People at large he suffered still more, from a belief that he wished to be made king. On his return from

*Caesar's desire to be king.*

Spain, he had been named Dictator and Imperator for life. His head was now placed on the money of the republic, a regal honour conceded to none before him.<sup>4</sup> Quintilis, the fifth month of the old calendar, received from him the name which it still bears. The Senate took an oath to guard the safety of his person. He was approached with sacrifices and received honours hitherto reserved for the gods. But Caesar was not satisfied. He was often heard to quote the sentiment of Euripides, that, "if any violation of law is excusable, it is excusable for the sake of gaining sovereign power."<sup>5</sup> It was no doubt to ascertain the popular sentiments that various propositions were made towards an assumption of the title of king. His statue in the Forum was found crowned with a diadem; but two of the Tribunes tore it off, and the mob applauded. On the 26th of January, as he was returning from the Great Latin Festival on the Alban Mount, voices in the crowd saluted him as king; but mutterings of discontent reached his ear, and he promptly said: "I am no king, but Caesar." The final attempt was made at the Lupercalia on the 15th of February. Antony, who was now Consul, assuming the character of one of the priests of Pan, approached the Dictator as he sat presiding in his golden chair, and wreathed his head with an embroidered band, like the "diadem" of oriental sovereigns. The applause which followed was partial, and the Dictator put the offered gift aside. Then

<sup>1</sup> Cic., *ad Att.*, xiii. 52.

<sup>2</sup> But see Tyrrell, *Corr. of Cicero*, v., p. xiv.

<sup>3</sup> The *Brutus*, *Orator ad M. Brutum*, *Partitiones Oratoriæ*, *Academica*, *de Finibus bonorum et malorum*.

<sup>4</sup> See Hill, *G. and R. Coins*, 98.

<sup>5</sup> Cic., *de off.*, iii. 21, 82.

a burst of genuine cheering greeted him, which waxed louder still when he rejected it a second time. Old traditional feeling was too strong at Rome even for Caesar's daring temper to brave it. The People would submit to the despotic rule of a Dictator or Imperator, but would not have a king.

Disappointed no doubt he was, and he determined to reign abroad if he could not be king at Rome. A large camp had been formed in Macedonia; in it was present a young man, the heir presumptive of the Dictator. This was C. Octavius, son of his niece Atia, and therefore his great-nephew. He was born, as has been noted, in the memorable year of Catiline's conspiracy, and was now in his nineteenth year. From the time that he had assumed the garb of manhood his health had been delicate, and he had seen little military service. Notwithstanding this, he had ventured to demand the Mastership of the Horse from his uncle. But he was quietly refused, and sent to pursue his studies in the East. The powerful force formed in Macedonia was destined to recover the Eagles of Crassus, which were still retained as trophies by the Parthians. A Sibylline oracle being produced which said "that none but a king could conquer Parthia," it was proposed that a decree should be issued by the Senate, enabling Caesar to assume the style of king, not at Rome, but in the Provinces. But events prevented this decree from being issued.<sup>1</sup>

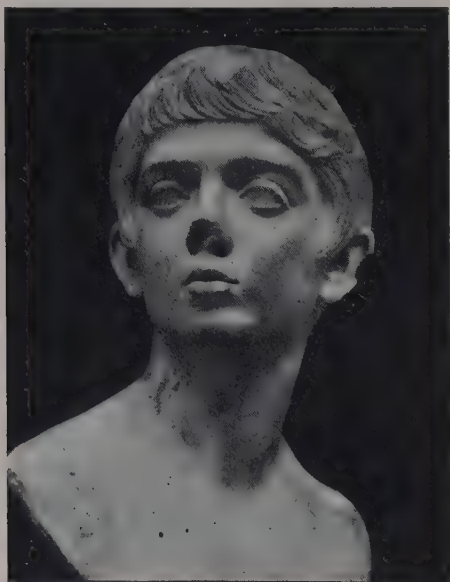
Meanwhile other causes of discontent had been agitating various classes at Rome. Cleopatra appeared at Rome with her boy Caesarion, whom she declared to be her son *Growing dis-* by Caesar; it was her ambition to be acknowledged *content.* as his wife—a thing hateful even to the degenerate Romans of that day. It cannot be doubted also that the more fiery partisans of Caesar disapproved of his clemency; that the more prodigal sort were angry at his regulations for securing the Provincials from oppression; and that the populace of the city felt aggrieved the genuine Romans at seeing favour extended to Provincials, those of foreign origin at being excluded from the corn-bounty. Caesar no doubt was eager to return to his army and escape from the increasing difficulties which beset his civil government. But the design of moving the decree, to invest him with the title of king when he joined the army, was well known; and this consideration urged the discontented to a plot against his life.

The difficulty was to find a leader. At length M. Junius

---

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen (v. 335) criticises this story unfavourably, though he thinks that Caesar actually wished to restore the kingship at Rome.

Brutus accepted the post of danger. This young man, a nephew of Cato, had taken his uncle as an example for his public life. But he was fonder of speculation than of action. His habits were reserved, rather those of a student than a statesman. He had reluctantly joined the cause of Pompey, for he could ill forget that it was by Pompey that his father had been put to death in cold blood.<sup>1</sup> After Pharsalia, he was treated by Caesar almost like a son. In the present year he had been appointed Praetor of the City, with the promise of the Consulship in due time. But the discontented remnants of the Senatorial party assailed him with constant reproaches. The name of Brutus, dear to all Roman patriots, was made a rebuke to him ; his ancestor expelled the Tarquins, could he sit quietly under a king's rule? At the



Brutus, from the bust in the British Museum.

foot of the statue of that ancestor, on his own Praetorian Tribunal, notes were placed, containing phrases such as these : "Thou art not Brutus : would that Brutus were alive !" "Brutus,

<sup>1</sup> Page 590.

thou sleepest." "Awake, Brutus." Gradually he was brought to think that it was his duty as a patriot to put an end to Caesar's rule, even by taking his life. The most *The conspiracy.* notable of those who arrayed themselves under him was Cassius. This man's motive is unknown. He had never taken much part in politics; he had made submission to the conqueror, had been received with marked favour, and was now Praetor with the Province of Syria in prospect. Some personal reason probably actuated his unquiet spirit. More than sixty persons were in the secret, most of them, like Brutus and Cassius, under personal obligations to the Dictator. P. Servilius Casca was by his grace Tribune of the Plebs. L. Tillius Cimber was promised the government of Bithynia. Dec. Brutus, one of his old Gallic officers, was Praetor, and was about to assume the government of the rich Province of Cisalpine Gaul. C. Trebonius, another trusted officer, had received every favour which the Dictator could bestow; he had just laid down the Consulship, and was on the eve of departure for the government of Asia. Q. Ligarius had lately accepted a pardon from the Dictator, and rose from a sick bed to join the conspirators.

A meeting of the Senate was called for the Ides of March, at which Caesar was to be present. This was the day appointed for the murder. The secret had oozed out. *The Ides of March.* Many persons warned Caesar that some danger was impending. A soothsayer told him of the very day. On the morning of the Ides his wife arose so disturbed by dreams that she persuaded him to relinquish his purpose of presiding in the Senate, and he sent Antony to dismiss the House.

This change of purpose was reported after the House was formed. The conspirators were in despair. Dec. Brutus at once went to Caesar, told him that the Fathers were only waiting to confer upon him the sovereign power which he desired, and begged him not to listen to auguries and dreams. Caesar was persuaded to resume his original purpose, and was carried forth in his litter. On his way a slave who had discovered the conspiracy tried to attract his notice, but was unable to reach him for the crowd. A Greek rhetorician, named Artemidorus, succeeded in putting a roll of paper into his hand, containing full information of the conspiracy; but Caesar, in the hurry of the moment, was prevented from reading it. Meanwhile the conspirators had reason to think that their plot had been discovered. A friend came up to Casca and said: "Ah, Casca, Brutus has told me your secret!" The conspirator started, but was relieved by the next sentence: "Where will *you* find money for the expenses of the Aedileship?"

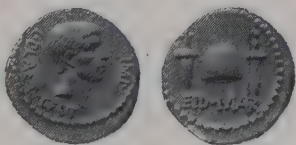
More serious alarm was felt when Popillius Laenas whispered to Brutus and Cassius : "You have my good wishes ; but what you do, do quickly ;"—especially when the same Senator stepped up to Caesar on his arrival at the House and entered into close conversation with him. So terrified was Cassius that he thought of stabbing himself instead of Caesar, till Brutus quietly observed that the gestures of Popillius indicated that he was asking a favour, not revealing a fatal secret. Caesar took his seat without further delay.

As was agreed, Cimber presented a petition, praying for his brother's recall from banishment ; and all the conspirators pressed round the Dictator, urging his favourable answer. Displeased at their importunity, Caesar attempted to rise. At that moment Cimber seized his robe and pulled it off his neck, whereupon Casca struck him from behind, but inflicted only a slight wound. Then all drew their daggers and assailed him. Caesar for a time defended himself with the sharp-pointed *stilus* which he held in his right hand for writing on the wax of his tablets. But when he saw Brutus among the assassins, he covered his face with his gown and offered no further resistance. In their eagerness, some blows intended for their victim fell upon themselves. But enough reached Caesar to do the bloody work. Pierced by three-and-twenty wounds, he fell at the base of Pompey's statue, which had been removed after Pharsalia by the Caesarians at Rome, but had been restored by the magnanimity of Caesar.

Thus died "the foremost man in all the world," a man who failed in nothing that he attempted. He spoke, Cicero thought, the best Latin of any man of his time, and might doubtless have been a great orator : his *Commentaries* remain to prove that he was a great writer. As a general he had few superiors, as a statesman and politician no equal. That which stamps him as a man of true greatness, is the entire absence of vanity and self-conceit from his character. He paid, indeed, great attention to his personal appearance, even when his hard life and unremitting activity, added to attacks of an epileptic nature, had left him with that meagre visage which is made familiar to us from his coins. Even then he was sedulous in arranging his robes, and was pleased with the privilege of wearing a laurel crown to hide the scantiness of his hair. But these were foibles too trifling to be taken as symptoms of real vanity. His morality in domestic life was not better or worse than commonly prevailed in those licentious days. He indulged in profligate amours freely and without scruple. But public opinion reproached him not for this. He



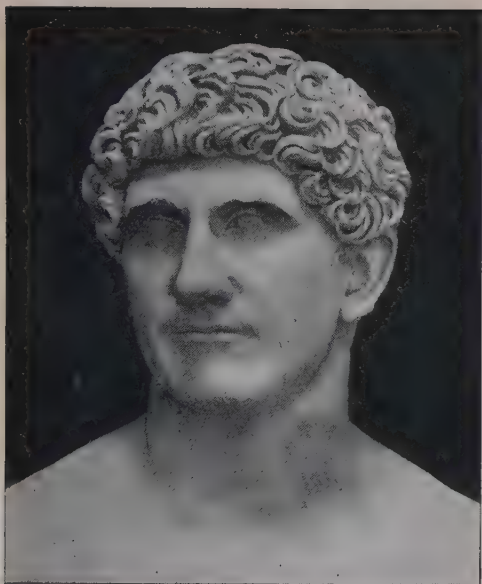
seldom, if ever, allowed pleasure to interfere with business, and here his character forms a notable contrast to that of Sulla. Sulla loved pleasure more than power; Caesar valued power above all other things. As a general, Caesar was probably no less inferior to Pompey than Sulla to Marius. Yet his successes in war, achieved by a man who, in his forty-fifth year, had hardly seen a camp, add to our conviction of his real genius. Those successes were due, not so much to scientific manœuvres as to rapid audacity of movement and mastery over the wills of men. That he caused the death or captivity of more than a million of Gauls, to provide treasure and form an army for his political purposes, is shocking to us; but it was not so to Roman moralists. His political career was troubled by no scruples; to gain his end he was careless of the means. But before we judge him severely, we must remember the manner in which the Marian party had been trampled under foot by Sulla and the Senate. If, however, the mode in which he rose to power was questionable, the mode in which he exercised it was admirable. The indulgence with which Caesar spared the lives of his opponents and received them into favour, was peculiarly his own. There seemed no escape from anarchy except by submission to the strong domination of one capable man. The effect of Caesar's fall was to cause a renewal of bloodshed for another half generation; and then his work was finished by a far less generous ruler. Those who slew Caesar were guilty of a great crime and of a still greater blunder.



Coin struck on the death of Caesar. (Stevenson, "BRUTUS.")

**AUTHORITIES.**—For Caesar's campaigns, the treatises *de Bello Alexandrino*, *de Bello Africano*, *de Bello Hispaniensi*, written probably by various followers of Caesar in imitation of his own Commentaries. We possess fragments of the nearly contemporary history by Nicolaus of Damascus (Müller, *F.H.G.*, iii. 427), but their value is doubtful. Three laws, partially extant in inscriptions, give us information about Caesar's municipal arrangements: *lex Rubria*, *lex Julia municipalis*, *lex Ursonensis* (Bruns, *Fontes Iuris Romani*). Otherwise our knowledge of his measures is derived from a large number of sources, none of them being really satisfactory:

see the summary in Watson, *Select Letters of Cicero*, App. ix. to Part iv. Mommsen's famous chapter on Caesar (B. v. ch. 11) has provoked much criticism in reply : see e.g. Holm, *History of Greece* (Eng. tr.), iv. 582. The letters of Cicero continue to be of the greatest importance for the general history and the state of feeling in Rome and Italy ; of his speeches, the *pro Ligario*, *pro Marcello*, and *pro Rege Deiotaro*, belong to these years.



Mark Antony, from the bust in the Vatican. (Bernoulli, *Röm. Ikon.*, i. 207.)

## CHAPTER LXIV

### FROM THE DEATH OF CAESAR TO THE BATTLE OF PHILIPPI (44—42 B.C.)

WHILE the conspirators were at their bloody work, the mass of the Senators rushed in confused terror to the doors ; and when Brutus turned to address his peers in defence of the deed, the hall was well-nigh empty. Cicero, who *Sequel of the murder.* had been present, answered not though he was called by name ; Antony, who had been detained outside, hurried home after having exchanged his Consular robes for the garb of a slave. Disappointed of obtaining the sanction of the Senate, the conspirators sallied out into the Forum, to win the ear of the People. But here too they were disappointed. Not knowing what massacre might be in store, every man had fled to his own house ; and in vain the conspirators paraded the Forum, holding up their blood-stained weapons and proclaiming them-

selves the liberators of Rome. Disappointment was not their only feeling: they were not without fear. They knew that Lepidus, being on the eve of departure for his Province of Narbonese Gaul, had a legion encamped on the island of the Tiber; and if he were to unite with Antony against them, Caesar would quickly be avenged. In all haste, therefore, they retired to the Capitol. Meanwhile, three of Caesar's slaves placed their master's body upon his litter, and carried it to his house on the south side of the Forum, with one arm dangling over the side. In this condition the widowed Calpurnia received the lifeless clay of him who had lately been sovereign of the world.

Lepidus moved his troops to the Campus Martius. But Antony had no thoughts of using force; for in that case probably Lepidus would have become master of Rome. *Antony seizes Caesar's papers.* He promptly took possession of the treasure which Caesar had collected to defray the expenses of his Parthian campaign, and persuaded Calpurnia to put into his hands all the Dictator's papers. Possessed of these securities, he barricaded his house on the Carinae, and determined to watch the course of events.

In the evening Cicero, with other Senators, visited the self-styled liberators in the Capitol. They had not communicated their plot to the orator, through fear (they said) of his irresolute counsels; but now that the deed was done, he approved it, and at a later time even extolled it as a godlike act. *Proceedings of the conspirators.* Next morning, Dolabella, Cicero's son-in-law, whom Caesar had disappointed of the Consulship by taking it himself, assumed the *fascis* and joined the liberators; while Cinna, son of the old Marian leader, and therefore brother-in-law to Caesar, threw aside his Praetorian robes, declaring he would no longer wear the tyrant's livery. Dec. Brutus, a good soldier, had taken a band of gladiators into pay, to serve as a body-guard of the liberators. Thus surrounded, they ventured again to descend into the Forum. Brutus mounted the Tribune, and addressed the People in a dispassionate speech, which produced little effect. But when Cinna assailed the memory of the Dictator, the crowd broke out into menacing cries, and the liberators again retired to the Capitol.

As soon as possible they entered into negotiations with Antony, and the result appeared on the second morning after the murder. *Caesar's acts confirmed.* The Senate, summoned to meet, obeyed the call in large numbers. Antony and Dolabella attended in their Consular robes, and Cinna re-

sumed his Praetorian garb. It was soon apparent that a reconciliation had been effected : for Antony moved that the acts of the Dictator should be recognised as law ; and Cicero seconded the motion in an animated speech, adding a recommendation that a general amnesty should be granted. Antony's proposal would in fact make him master of Rome ; but the liberators also saw in the motion an advantage to themselves, for they were actually in possession of some of the chief magistracies and had received appointments to some of the richest Provinces of the empire. The motion, therefore, was favourably received ; but it was adjourned to the next day, together with the important question of Caesar's funeral.

On the next day Caesar's acts were formally confirmed, and among them his will was declared valid, though its provisions were yet unknown. After this, it was difficult to reject the proposal that the Dictator should have a public burial. Most of the Senators remembered the riots that attended the funeral of Clodius, and shook their heads. Cassius opposed it. But Brutus, with imprudent magnanimity, decided in favour of allowing it. To seal the reconciliation Lepidus entertained Brutus at dinner, and Cassius was feasted by Mark Antony.

The will was immediately made public. Cleopatra was still in Rome, and no doubt had some hopes that the boy Caesarion might prove to be the Dictator's heir ; for, though he had been married thrice, there was no one of *His will.* his lineage surviving. But Caesar was too much a Roman, and knew the Romans too well, to be guilty of this folly. Young C. Octavius, his great-nephew, was declared his principal heir ; Pedius and Pinarius, sons of other sisters, also had large shares of his property. Legacies were left to many of his supposed friends, among whom was one at least of his assassins. His noble gardens beyond the Tiber were devised to the use of the Public, and every Roman citizen was to receive a donation of 300 sesterces (between £2 and £3 sterling). The effect of this recital was electric. Devotion to the memory of the Dictator and hatred for his murderers at once filled every breast.

A few days after this followed the funeral. The body was to be burnt and the ashes deposited in the Campus Martius, near the tomb of his daughter Julia. But it was first *Caesar's* brought into the Forum upon a bier inlaid with *funeral.* ivory and covered with rich tapestries, which was carried by men high in rank and office. There Antony, as Consul, rose to pronounce the funeral oration. He read in solemn and pathetic tones all the titles and honours bestowed on Caesar by the Senate and People, dwelling on those by which his person was

declared sacred and inviolable, and heightening the effect of his words by gestures which to us would seem extravagant, but which were calculated to stir the passions of the excitable Italians; he then ran through the chief acts of Caesar's life, and ended by painting the death which had rewarded him. To make this more vividly present to his hearers, he displayed a waxen image marked with the Dictator's three-and-twenty wounds, and produced the very robe which he had worn, all rent and blood-stained. Soul-stirring dirges added to the solemn horror of the scene. To us the memorable speech which Shakspeare puts into Antony's mouth will give the liveliest notion of the art used and the impression produced. That impression was instantaneous. The multitude insisted on burning the body, as they had burnt the body of Clodius, in the sacred precincts of the Forum. Two of the veterans who attended the funeral set fire to the bier; benches and firewood heaped round it soon made a sufficient pile.

From the blazing pyre the crowd rushed, eager for vengeance, to the houses of the conspirators. But all had fled betimes. One poor wretch fell a victim to the fury of the mob—Helvius Cinna, a poet, and a friend of the Dictator. He was mistaken for L. Cornelius Cinna, the Praetor, and torn to pieces before the mistake could be explained.<sup>1</sup>

Antony was now the real master of Rome. He was sure of the attachment of the veterans settled in various parts of Italy. *Policy of Antony.* The treasure which he had seized gave him the means of purchasing goodwill and of securing the services of other legions. He did not, however, proceed in the course which, from the tone of his funeral harangue, might have been expected. He renewed friendly intercourse with Brutus and Cassius, who were in Rome once at least, if not oftener, after that day; and Dec. Brutus with his gladiators was suffered to remain in the city. Antony went still further. He gratified the Senate by passing a law to abolish the Dictatorship for ever. He then left Rome, to win the favour of the Italian communities and try the temper of the veterans.

Meanwhile another actor appeared upon the scene. This was young Octavius. He had been but six months in the camp *Octavius as Caesar's heir.* in Macedonia; but in that short time he had formed a close friendship with M. Vipsanius Agrippa, a young man of his own age, who possessed great abilities for

<sup>1</sup> This story is rendered doubtful by the fact that Virgil in his ninth Eclogue, which was probably written in or after the year 40 B.C., seems to speak of the poet as still alive. See, however, Teuffel, *Rom. Lit.* (Eng. tr.), i. 388, and Ellis on Catullus, xcv.



active life, but could not boast of any distinguished ancestry. As soon as the news of his uncle's assassination reached them, his friend Agrippa recommended him to appeal to the troops, to cross over into Italy, and march upon Rome. But the youth, with a wariness above his years, resisted these bold counsels. Landing near Brundisium almost alone, he there first heard that Caesar's will had been published and that he was declared Caesar's heir. He at once accepted the dangerous honour. As he travelled slowly towards the city, he stayed



Augustus (Octavius), from a cameo in the British Museum.

some days at Puteoli with his mother Atia, who was now married to L. Philippus. Both mother and stepfather attempted to dissuade him from the perilous business of claiming his inheritance. At the same place he had an interview with Cicero, who had quitted Rome in despair soon after the funeral, but failed to induce the orator to acknowledge him as Caesar's heir. He arrived at Rome in May, and demanded from Antony, who soon after returned from his Italian tour, an account of the moneys left by his uncle, in order that he might discharge the obligations laid upon him by the will. But Antony had already spent great part of the money in bribing Dolabella and other influential persons; nor was he willing to give up any portion of his spoil. Octavius therefore sold what remained of his uncle's property, together with his own private possessions, and paid all legacies with great exactness. This

act earned him much popularity. Antony began to fear this boy of eighteen, whom he had hitherto despised, and the Senate learned to look on him as a person to be conciliated.

With this feeling they decreed that the month Quintilis should continue to be styled July, as had been determined in the Dictator's lifetime ; and a day was set apart for celebrating his memory with divine honours.

Still Antony remained in possession of all actual power. He had procured votes from the Senate and People, by which the Provinces of Macedonia and Syria, though granted to Brutus and Cassius by the act of Caesar, were given to C. Antonius and Dolabella, and Cisalpine Gaul transferred from Dec. Brutus to himself. Dec. Brutus indeed, with soldier-like promptness, had already taken possession of his Province. But M. Brutus and Cassius, though they dared not visit Rome, still lingered in Italy. Their conduct during this time gives us an unfavourable impression of their fitness for any enterprise of mark. Cicero, not himself remarkable for political firmness, in this crisis, displayed a vigour worthy of his earlier days, and was scandalised by the vacillation of his friends.<sup>1</sup> At length they set sail for Greece. This was in the month of September.

*Antony and the conspirators.* Cicero also had at one moment made up his mind to accompany them. In the course of this summer he had continued to employ himself on some of his most elaborate treatises. His works on the Nature of the Gods and on Divination, his Moral Duties, his Dialogue on Old Age, and several other essays, belong to this period, and mark the restless activity of his mind. At length he set sail from Italy, but was driven back to a point on the coast near Rhegium. Here he received letters from A. Hirtius and other friends of Caesar, which gave him hopes that, in the name of Octavius, they might successfully oppose Antony and restore constitutional government. He determined to return, and sought an interview with Brutus at Velia, to announce his purpose. Brutus commended him, and went his way to the East to raise armies against Antony ; Cicero repaired to Rome to fight the battles of his party in the Senate House.

Meantime Antony had been running riot. In possession of Caesar's papers, with no one to check him, he produced ready warrant for every measure which he wished to carry, and pleaded the vote of the Senate which confirmed all the acts of

---

<sup>1</sup> See an interesting letter in which he describes a conference with the two conspirators at Antium, *ad Att.*, xv. 5 ; *cp.* xv. II.

Caesar. When he could not produce a genuine paper, he interpolated or forged what was needful.

On the day after Cicero's return (1st September) there was a meeting of the Senate. But the orator did not attend, and Antony threatened to send men to attack him in his own house. Next day Cicero was in his place, *First Philippic.* but now Antony was absent. The orator rose and addressed the Senate in what is called his First Philippic. This was a measured attack upon the government and policy of Antony, but personalities were carefully eschewed;—its whole tone, indeed, is that of a speech such as might be delivered by a leader of opposition in Parliament at the present day. But Antony, enraged at his boldness, summoned a meeting for the 19th of September, which Cicero did not think it prudent to attend. He then attacked the absent orator in the strongest language of personal abuse and menace. Cicero sat down and composed his famous Second Philippic, which is written as if it were delivered on the same day, in reply to Antony's invective. At present, however, he contented himself with sending a copy of it to Atticus, enjoining secrecy.

Matters quickly drew to a head between Antony and Octavius. The latter had succeeded in securing the services of a large body of his uncle's veterans who had settled in Campania, and by great exertions in Etruria and the north of Italy had levied a considerable force. Meantime four of the Macedonian legions had landed at Brundisium, and Antony endeavoured to attach them to his cause. But the largess which he offered them was only a hundred *denarii* a man, and the soldiers laughed in his face. Antony, enraged at their conduct, seized the ringleaders, and put them to death. This severity only served to change their open insolence into sullen anger, and emissaries from Octavius were ready to draw them over to the side of their young master. They had so far obeyed Antony as to march northwards to Ariminum, while he repaired to Rome. But as he entered the Senate House, he heard that two of the four legions had deserted to his rival, and in great alarm he hastened to the army just in time to keep the remainder of the troops under his standard, by promising to send to every man five hundred *denarii*. *Insubordination of Antony's soldiers.*

The persons to hold the Consulship for the next year had been designated by Caesar. They were both old officers of the Gallic army, C. Vibius Pansa and A. Hirtius, the reputed author of the Eighth Book of the History of the Gallic War. Cicero was ready to believe *Pansa and Hirtius, Consuls.*

that they had become patriots, because, disgusted with the arrogance of Antony, they had declared for Octavius and the Senate. Antony began to fear that all parties might combine to crush him. He determined, therefore, no longer to remain inactive ; and about the beginning of December, having collected all his troops at Ariminum, he marched along the Aemilian Road to drive Dec. Brutus out of Cisalpine Gaul. Decimus was obliged to throw himself into Mutina (*Modena*), and Antony blockaded the place. Cicero had already delivered his Third and Fourth Philippics ; and he now published the

*The Philippics.* famous oration known as the Second Philippic, in which he lashed the Consul with the most unsparing hand, going through the history of his past life, exaggerating the debaucheries which were common to Antony with great part of the Roman youth, and painting in the strongest colours the profligate use he had made of Caesar's papers. Its effect was great, and Cicero followed up the blow by the following ten Philippics, which were speeches delivered in the Senate House and Forum, at intervals from January to April 43 B.C.

Cicero was anxious to break with Antony at once, and on the first day of the new year proposed that he should be declared a public enemy. Antony, however, was still regarded *Antony and the Senate.* by many Senators as the head of the Caesarian party, and it was resolved to treat with him. But his demands were so extravagant that, after another futile attempt at negotiation, it was plain that the issue must be left to the fortune of arms. The Consuls had already begun to levy troops ; but so exhausted was the treasury that, now for the first time since the triumph of Aemilius Paullus, it was found necessary to levy a property-tax on the citizens of Rome.<sup>1</sup>

Meanwhile Octavius and the Senatorial chiefs had assembled their forces at Alba. Early in the new year (43 B.C.) Hirtius marched for Mutina, Octavius being associated with him in the command. The other Consul, Pansa, remained at Rome to raise new levies ; but by the end of March he also marched to form a junction with Hirtius. Both parties pretended to be acting in Caesar's name.

Antony left his brother Lucius in the trenches before Mutina, and took the field against Hirtius and Octavius. After a series *Battles near Mutina.* of movements, the two armies found themselves near Mutina, and here they remained for some time watching each other. But when Antony learnt that Pansa was coming, probably by the Aemilian Way, he marched

<sup>1</sup> See page 416.

southward with two of his veteran legions and attacked him. A sharp conflict followed near Forum Gallorum, in which Antony had the best of it and Pansa was carried, mortally wounded, off the field. But Hirtius was on the alert and assaulted Antony's wearied troops on their way back to their camp, inflicting considerable loss. This was on the 15th of April, and about twelve days later Hirtius drew Antony from his intrenchments before Mutina. A fierce battle followed, which ended in the troops of Antony being driven back into their lines. Hirtius followed close upon the flying enemy, the camp was carried by storm, and a complete victory would have been won had not Hirtius himself fallen. Upon this disaster Octavius drew off the troops. The news of the first battle had been reported at Rome as a victory, and gave rise to extravagant rejoicings. The second battle was really a victory, but all rejoicing was damped by the news that one Consul was dead and the other dying. No such fatal mischance had happened since the Second Punic War, when one battle ended the lives of Marcellus and Crispinus.

After his defeat Antony felt it impossible to maintain the siege of Mutina. With Dec. Brutus in the town behind him and the victorious legions of Octavius before him, *Antony escapes to Gaul.* his position was critical, and he lost no time in abandoning his present position. His destination was the Province of Narbonese Gaul, where Lepidus had assumed the government and might (he hoped) be persuaded to support him. But the Senate also had hopes in the same quarter. L. Munatius Plancus commanding in northern Gaul, and C. Asinius Pollio in southern Spain, were both of them friends and favourites of Caesar, and had as yet declared neither for Antony nor Octavius. If they would take part with the Senate, Lepidus, a feeble and fickle man, might also be expected to join them, or, if Octavius would join with Dec. Brutus, and pursue him, Antony might not be able to escape from Italy at all. But these political combinations failed. Plancus and Pollio stood aloof waiting for the course of events. Dec. Brutus was not strong enough to pursue Antony by himself, and Octavius was unwilling, perhaps unable, to unite the veterans of Caesar with troops commanded by one of Caesar's murderers. And so it happened, that Antony effected his retreat across the Alps, but not without extreme hardships, which he bore in common with the meanest soldier. It was at such times that his good qualities always showed themselves, and his gallant endurance of misery endeared him to every man under his command. Soon after his arrival in Narbonese Gaul he met Lepidus at Forum Julii (*Fréjus*), and here the two commanders agreed to unite their forces.

The conduct of Octavius gave rise to grave suspicions. It was even said that the Consuls had been killed by his agents. *Octavius elected Consul.* Cicero, who had hitherto maintained his cause, was silent. In the fourteenth (and last) Philippic, delivered after the news of the first victory gained by Hirtius had been received, he had spoken of Octavius in terms of commendation. But now he talked of "removing" the boy of whom he had hoped to make a tool. Octavius, however, had taken his part, and was not to be removed. Secretly he entered into negotiations with Antony; and after some vain efforts on the part of the Senate to thwart him, he appeared in the Campus Martius with his legions. Cicero had now disappeared, and the fickle populace greeted the young heir of Caesar with applause. Though he was not yet twenty he demanded the Consulship, and he was elected to the first office in the state, with his cousin, Q. Pedius.<sup>1</sup>

A Curiate law passed, by which Octavius was adopted into the Patrician *gens* of the Julii, and was put into legal possession of the name which he had already assumed—C. Julius Caesar Octavianus. We shall henceforth call him Octavian.

The change in his policy was soon indicated by a law, in which he formally separated himself from the Senate. Pedius brought it forward. By its provisions all Caesar's *murderers condemned.* murderers were summoned to take their trial. Of course, none of them appeared, and they were condemned by default. By the end of September Octavian was again in Cisalpine Gaul, and in close negotiation with Antony and Lepidus. The fruits of his conduct soon appeared. Plancus *Death of Dec. Brutus.* and Pollio declared against Caesar's murderers. Dec. Brutus, deserted by his soldiery, attempted to escape into Macedonia through Illyricum; but he was taken near Aquileia, and slain by order of Antony.

Italy and Gaul being now clear of the Senatorial party, a meeting was arranged between Octavian, Antony, and Lepidus, *The Second Triumvirate.* upon an island in a small river near Bononia (*Bo-logna*). Here the three potentates agreed that they should assume for five years a joint and co-ordinate authority, under the name of "triumvirs for settling the affairs of the commonwealth," and should divide the western Provinces among themselves. Antony was to have the two Gauls, except the *Division of the Roman world.* Narbonese district, which, with Spain, was assigned to Lepidus; Octavian received Sicily, Sardinia and

---

<sup>1</sup> Pedius was probably son of Caesar's elder sister, and therefore first cousin (once removed) to Octavius.



Africa. Lepidus gave up the greater party of his army, while Octavian and Antony, with nineteen legions, prepared to conquer the eastern part of the empire, which could not yet be divided like the western Provinces, because it was in possession of Brutus and Cassius.

But before they began war, the triumvirs agreed to follow the example set by Sulla, to extirpate their opponents by a proscription, and raise money by confiscation. For *The proscription.* this purpose, they framed a list of all men's names whose death could be regarded as advantageous to any of the three. Antony had made many personal enemies by his proceedings at Rome, and was at no loss for victims. Octavian had few direct enemies; but the boy-despot discerned with precocious sagacity those who were likely to impede his ambitious projects, and chose his victims with little hesitation. Lepidus would not be left behind in the bloody work. When any of the three fixed on the name of one who was a friend of either of the other two, he agreed to give up one of his own friends in exchange. The author of the Philippics was one of Antony's first victims; Octavian gave him up, and as an equivalent for his late friend marked the name of L. Caesar, uncle of Antony. Lepidus surrendered his brother Paullus for some similar favour. So the work went on. The description already given of Sulla's proscription may be repeated here literally, except that every horror was increased, and the number of victims multiplied. By the lowest computation one hundred and thirty Senators (another account gives three hundred) and two thousand Knights were on the list. But this list was not yet published; and, as every one feared he might himself be among the victims, a general panic seized the city. The Consul Pedius, an honest and upright man, died of the fatigue caused by his efforts to reassure the trembling citizens.

As soon as their secret business was ended, the triumvirs determined to enter Rome publicly. Hitherto they had not published more than seventeen names of the proscribed. They made their entrance severally on three successive days, each attended by a legion. A law was immediately brought in to invest them formally with the supreme authority, which they had assumed. This was followed by the promulgation of the complete list.

Among the victims, far the most conspicuous was Cicero. With his brother Quintus, the old orator had retired to his Tusculan villa before the advent of the triumvirs; *Death of Cicero.* and now the two endeavoured to escape in the

hope of joining Brutus in Macedonia, where the orator's only son was serving as a tribune in the liberator's army. Cicero himself reached Astura, a little island or peninsula near Antium, while Quintus ventured to Rome to procure a supply of money for the voyage. Here he was betrayed by his slaves, together with his son. Each desired to die first, and the mournful claim to precedence was settled by the soldiers killing both at the same moment. Meantime Marcus Cicero had put to sea. But even in this extremity he could not make up his mind to leave Italy, and put to land at Circeii. After further hesitation, he again embarked, but again sought the Italian shore near Formiæ (*Mola di Gaëta*), and repaired to his villa near that place. Next morning he refused to move, exclaiming: "Let me die in my own country—that country which I have so often saved." But his faithful slaves forced him into a litter, and carried him again to the coast. Scarcely were they gone, when a band of Antony's blood-hounds reached his villa, and were put upon the track of their victim by a young man who owed everything to the Ciceros. The old orator from his litter saw the pursuers coming up. His own followers were strong enough to have made resistance; but he desired them to set the litter down, and, calmly waiting for the ruffians, offered his neck to the sword. He was soon despatched. The chief of the band, by Antony's express orders, hewed off the head and hands, and carried these sad tokens to Rome. Fulvia, the widow of Clodius and now the wife of Antony, drove her hair-pin through the tongue which had denounced the iniquities of both her husbands. The head which had given birth to the second Philippic, and the hands which had written it, were nailed to the Rostra, the home of their eloquence. The sight and the associations raised feelings of horror and pity in every heart.

Cicero died in his sixty-fourth year. He had fallen on evil times; and, being eminently a man of peace, was constantly *Public life of Cicero.* called upon to mingle in counsels of civil war. From his first appearance in public, during the Dictatorship of Sulla, to the great triumph of his Consulship, he rose with a vigorous and unflagging energy, which gave promise of a man fit to cope with the dangers that were then closing round the constitution. But the performance was not equal to the promise. When once Cicero had joined the ranks of the Senatorial Nobility, his political conduct is marked by an almost peevish vacillation. His advances were coldly rejected by Pompey. He could not make up his mind to break entirely with Caesar. His new Senatorial associates never heartily welcomed the New Man, whose laborious habits contrasted

disadvantageously with their own. As the first orator of the day, he thought he had a claim to be considered as equal to the first statesmen ; and the rejection of this claim even by his own party threw him still more out of harmony with that party.

If we turn from his public to his private character, our commendations need less reserve. None but must admire the vigorous industry with which from early youth he prepared for his chosen profession of an advocate, *His private life.* full of the generous belief that every branch of liberal studies must be serviceable to one who is expected to bring out of his treasure things new and old.<sup>1</sup> To mould his multifarious knowledge he possessed a readiness of speech which was apt to betray him into verbosity. The advocate with an eye only to his verdict is sometimes forgotten in the orator who desires to display his own powers. When the Forum and the Senate-house were closed to him, he poured the overflowing abundance of his acquirements into those dialogues and treatises which we still read with delight. He wrote rapidly and fluently, as he spoke, rather to amuse and employ his mind in times of enforced idleness, than as one who feels a call to instruct or benefit mankind. His disposition was extremely amiable. He felt little jealousy for rivals : Hortensius was among his friends, and is chiefly known to us by Cicero's generous praise. No man had more friends. In his family relations he shines brightly amid the darkness of that age. His wife Terentia indeed was one with whom he had little sympathy ; her masculine energy was oppressive to his less resolute character. It was a relief, doubtless, to find an excuse for divorcing her in her behaviour during the troubles of the civil war. But divorces were matters of course in these times. Nor did public opinion condemn him when, to mend his broken fortunes, he married Publilia, a girl of large property, who was his ward. His affection for his brother Quintus, though it sometimes cooled, was always ready to revive ; to his love for his children there is no drawback. On the whole, his character displays much weakness, but very little evil ; while the perfect integrity and justice of his life, in an age when such qualities were rare, if they do not compensate for his defects in a political point of view, yet entitle him to the regard and admiration of all good men.

Many of the proscribed escaped their fate, and found refuge, some with Brutus in the East, some in Africa, more still with Sext. Pompeius. Sextus had been entrusted by the Senate with a command by sea. But the course of *Sextus Pompeius.*

<sup>1</sup> See the fine passage in the speech *pro Archia poeta*, 6, 12.

events made him turn adventurer on his own account, and he took advantage of the troubles in Italy to afford assistance to the proscribed. Next year, while Antony went straight to Brundisium to organise matters for the war against Brutus and Cassius, Octavian undertook to wrest Sicily from the hands of Sextus. But his fleet was encountered and beaten off Rhegium by the skilful captains of the enemy; and Octavian was compelled to join Antony and depart for the East without accomplishing his purpose.

Brutus and Cassius, when they left Italy in the autumn of 44 B.C., had repaired to the Provinces which they claimed,

*Death of Tre-  
bonius and  
Dolabella.*

though by Antony's influence the Senate had transferred Macedonia to his brother Gaius, and had assigned Syria to Dolabella. C. Antonius was already at Apollonia, but Brutus succeeded in dislodging him, and proceeded without hindrance to his Province. Meanwhile Cassius, already well known in Syria for his successes after the death of Crassus, had established himself in that Province, before the arrival of Dolabella. This worthless man left Italy about the same time as Brutus and Cassius, and, at the head of several legions, marched without opposition through Macedonia into Asia Minor. Here C. Trebonius had already arrived. But being taken prisoner at Smyrna, he was put to death and his body treated with unseemly contumely in Dolabella's presence. When the news of this piece of butchery reached Rome, Cicero, believing that Octavian was a puppet in his hands, was ruling Rome by the eloquence of his Philippics, and he supported a motion for declaring Dolabella a public enemy.<sup>1</sup> But it was needless. When Dolabella entered Syria, he was confronted by a superior force; and rather than fall into the hands of Cassius, he sought a voluntary death.

By the end of 43 B.C., therefore, the whole of the East was in the hands of Brutus and Cassius. But instead of endeavouring

*Brutus and  
Cassius in  
Asia Minor.*

to unite the provincials against the triumvirs, the two commanders spent the early part of the year 42 B.C. in plundering the miserable cities of Asia Minor. Brutus demanded men and money of the Lycians; and, when they refused, he laid siege to Xanthus, their principal city. The Xanthians made the same brave resistance which they had offered 500 years before to the Persian invaders.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dolabella had divorced Tullia, the orator's daughter. Her death, early in 45 B.C., occasioned Servius Sulpicius' famous letter of consolation (*ad. fam.*, iv. 5).

<sup>2</sup> Herodotus, i. 176.

They burnt their city and put themselves to death rather than submit. Brutus deplored their fate, and retired from Lycia on receiving a large sum of money. Cassius also forced the Rhodians to give up to him all their precious metals. After this campaign of plunder, the two chiefs met at Sardis and engaged in bitter altercations. It is probable that they might have come to an open rupture, had not the preparations of the triumvirs waked them to a sense of their danger. It was as he was about passing over into Europe, that Brutus, who continued his studious habits amid all disquietudes, and limited his time of sleep to a period too small for the requirements of health, saw the vision which Shakspeare, after Plutarch, has made famous. It was no doubt the result of a diseased frame, though it was believed to be a divine visitation. As he sat in his tent in the dead of night, he thought a huge and shadowy form stood by him; and when he calmly asked: "What and whence art thou?" it answered, or seemed to answer: "I am thine evil genius, Brutus: we shall meet again at Philippi."

Meantime the lieutenants of the triumvirs had crossed the Ionian Sea, and made their way without opposition through Macedonia. The Republican leaders found them *The armies at Philippi.* in possession of the roads to the eastward of Philippi. The army of Brutus and Cassius amounted to 80,000 infantry, supported by 20,000 horse; but they were ill supplied with experienced officers. For M. Valerius Messalla, a young man of twenty-eight or less,<sup>1</sup> held the chief command after Brutus and Cassius; and Horace, who was not yet three-and-twenty, the son of a freedman, and a youth of feeble constitution, was appointed a legionary tribune.<sup>2</sup> The triumviral forces were so inferior, that they retired to Amphipolis, and there intrenched themselves. Here they were opportunely joined by Antony himself with the second corps of the army. Octavian was attacked by illness at Dyrrhachium, but he ordered himself to be carried on a litter after his legions. The army of the triumvirs was now superior to the enemy; but their cavalry, counting only 13,000, was considerably weaker than the force opposed to it. The Republicans were strongly posted upon two hills, with intrenchments between: the camp of Cassius upon the left next the sea, that of Brutus inland on the right. The

<sup>1</sup> Teuffel, i. 421.

<sup>2</sup> "Quem rodunt omnes libertino patre natum,  
Nunc, quia sum tibi, Maecenas, convictor, at olim,  
Quod mihi pareret legio Romana tribuno."<sup>1</sup>—Hor., *Sat.*, i. 6. 46.

Every one knows his allusion to the loss of his shield at Philippi: *Od.*, ii. 7. 9.

triumviral army lay encamped upon the open plain before them. They were ill supplied with provisions, and anxious for a decisive battle. The Republicans, however, kept close to their intrenchments.

Determined to bring on an action, Antony began works for the purpose of cutting off Cassius from the sea. Even then  
*First battle at Philippi.* Cassius appears to have opposed a general action, but the soldiers of Brutus could not be controlled, and a battle was inevitable. The decisive day was probably in October. Brutus attacked Octavian, while Cassius assaulted the working parties of Antony. Not only was Cassius' assault beaten back, but he was forced to retire from his own camp to an eminence near Philippi. Meanwhile, Messalla, who commanded the extreme right of Brutus' army, attacked in flank the host of Octavian, who was still too ill to appear on the field, and penetrated into his camp. Octavian himself escaped with difficulty, leaving his empty litter in the hands of the soldiery. But Brutus, not receiving any tidings of the movements of Cassius, became so anxious for his fate that he sent off a party of horse to make inquiries, and neglected to avail himself of the advantage gained by Messalla.

Cassius on his part, discouraged by defeat, was unable to ascertain the progress of Brutus. When he saw the party of  
*Death of Cassius.* horse advancing, he hastily concluded that they belonged to the enemy, and withdrew from sight, attended only by his freedman Pindarus. What passed we know not for certain. Cassius was found dead, with his head severed from the body. Pindarus was never seen again. It was generally believed that Pindarus slew his master in obedience to orders; but some thought that he had dealt a felon blow. The intelligence of Cassius' death was a heavy blow to Brutus. He forgot his own success, and pronounced the elegy of Cassius in the well-known words: "There lies the last of the Romans." The praise was ill-deserved. Except in his conduct of the war against the Parthians, Cassius had never played a worthy part.

After the first battle of Philippi, it would have been the policy of Brutus to abstain from renewing the conflict. The  
*Second battle.* triumviral armies were in great distress, and every day must increase their losses. Reinforcements coming to their aid by sea were intercepted by the Republican fleet—a piece of success which never reached the ears of Brutus. He was ill fitted for the life of the camp, and after the death of Cassius he only kept his men together by largesses and promises of plunder. He thus found himself



obliged to fight. About a month after the first battle he led his troops out again. Both armies faced one another. There was little manœuvring. The second battle was decided by numbers and force, not by skill ; and it was decided in favour of the triumvirs. Brutus himself retreated with four legions to a strong position in the rear, while the rest of the broken army sought refuge in the camp. Octavian remained to watch them, while Antony pursued the Republican chief. Next day, Brutus wished to rouse his men to another effort ; but they sullenly refused to fight ; and Brutus withdrew with two or three trusty friends and servants into a woody dell. There he seated himself on a rock and spoke with feeling about his friends and their fortunes. In the course of the night, he prayed each of his followers to do him the last service that a Roman could render to his friend or master. All refused with horror, till a Greek named Strato, formerly his *Death of Brutus.* preceptor, held the sword, and Brutus threw himself upon it. Most of his friends and officers followed the sad example. The ashes of Brutus were sent to his mother. His wife Porcia, the daughter of Cato, refused all comfort ; and, being too closely watched to be able to slay herself by ordinary means, she is said to have suffocated herself by thrusting burning charcoal into her mouth. Messalla, with a number of other fugitives, soon after made submission to Antony.

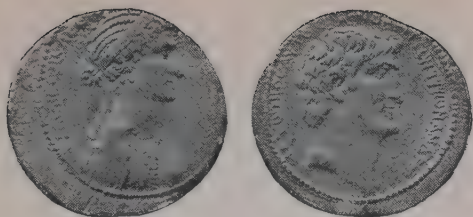
The name of Brutus has, by Plutarch's beautiful narrative sublimed by Shakspeare, become a by-word for self-devoted patriotism. This exalted opinion is now generally *Character of Brutus.* confessed to be unjust. Brutus was not a patriot, unless devotion to the party of the Senate be patriotism. Towards the provincials he was a true Roman, harsh and oppressive. He was free from the sensuality and profligacy of his age, but for public life he was unfit. His habits were those of a student. His application was great, his memory remarkable. But he possessed little power of turning his acquirements to account ; and to the last he was rather a learned man than a man improved by learning. In comparison with Cassius, he was humane and generous. But in almost every respect his character is contrasted for the worse with that of the great man, from whom he accepted favours and then became his murderer.

**AUTHORITIES.**—Cicero's *Philippics* and his letters are the most important down to Cicero's death : see the Introductions to Tyrrell and Purser, *Correspondence of Cicero*, vols. v., vi. *Cp.* Nicolaus

of Damascus ; Livy (Epit.), cxvii.-cxciv. ; Dio, xlv. *sqq.* ; Plutarch, *Cicero*, *Antonius*, *Brutus* ; Appian, *B. C.*, ii. 118 *sqq.* ; Suetonius, *Julius*, *Augustus* ; Velleius, ii. 58 *sqq.* ; Florus, iv. 6, 7 ; Orosius, vi. 18. The *Monumentum Ancyranum* (see Mommsen's commentary : *Res gestae Divi Augusti*) gives Octavian's version of the events in which he was concerned.



Coins of the triumvirs. (1) Antony and Octavian ;  
(2) Octavian and Lepidus.



Coin of Antony and Cleopatra. (*B.M.C.*, VII. A. 14.)

## CHAPTER LXV

### FROM THE BATTLE OF PHILIPPI TO THE FINAL ESTABLISHMENT OF IMPERIAL MONARCHY. (42-30 B.C.)

THE battle of Philippi was in reality the closing scene of the Republican drama. But the rivalry of the triumvirs prolonged for several years the divided state of the Roman world ; and it was not till after the crowning victory of Actium that the Imperial Government was established in its unity. We shall, therefore, here add a rapid narrative of the events which led to that consummation.

The hopeless state of the Republican or rather the Senatorial party, was such, that almost all hastened to make submission to the conquerors : the few whose sturdy spirit still disdained submission resorted to Sext. Pompeius, who still kept his hold on Sicily. Octavian, still suffering from ill health, was anxious to return to Italy ; but before he parted from Antony, they agreed to a new distribution of the Provinces of the empire ; and in the end it was agreed that Antony should have the eastern world, Octavian the western Provinces ; to Lepidus, who was not consulted in this division, Africa alone was given.

Antony at once went to Greece, whence he proceeded to make a tour through western Asia, in order to exact money from its unfortunate people. About midsummer (41 B.C.) he arrived at Tarsus, and here he received a visit which determined the future course of his life and influenced Roman history for the next ten years.

Antony had visited Alexandria fourteen years before, and had been smitten by the charms of Cleopatra, who was then very young. She afterwards became Caesar's paramour, and from the time of the Dictator's death Antony had never seen her. She now readily obeyed

a summons to meet him at Tarsus in Cilicia. The galley which carried her up the Cydnus was of more than Oriental gorgeousness: the sails were of purple; the oars of silver, moving to the sound of music; the raised poop burnished with gold. There she lay upon a splendid couch, shaded by a spangled canopy; her attire was that of Venus; around her flitted attendant Cupids and Graces. At the news of her approach to Tarsus, the triumvir found his tribunal deserted by the people. She invited him to her ship, and he complied. From that day he was her slave. He followed her to Alexandria, exchanged the Roman garb for the Graeco-Egyptian costume of the court, and lent his power to the queen to execute all her caprices.

Meanwhile, Octavian was not without his difficulties. His illness continued; he became so much worse at Brundisium that his death was reported. When he reached

*Difficulties of Octavian.*

Rome, he was still obliged to keep the house. The veterans, eager for their promised rewards, became insolent and mutinous. When he was sufficiently recovered to show himself, he could find no other means of satisfying

*Confiscation of lands.*

the greedy soldiery than by a confiscation of lands more sweeping than that which followed the proscription of Sulla. Many towns saw nearly all their lands handed over to new possessors. Mantua was among them. The young poet Virgil saw his little patrimony threatened, but the danger was for the present averted. Soon after, however, the confiscation seems actually to have taken place, whereupon Virgil repaired to Rome, and, having recovered his farm by the intercession of Maecenas, he showed his gratitude in his first Eclogue. Other parts of Italy also suffered—Apulia, for example, as we learn from Horace's friend Ofellus, who became the tenant of the estate which had formerly been his own.<sup>1</sup>

But these strong measures deferred rather than obviated the difficulty. The prospect of expulsion from their homes and lands exasperated thousands, and made them ripe for violence. Many of the veterans were ready to join any new leader who promised them booty. Such a leader was at hand.

Fulvia, wife of Antony, was a woman of fierce passions and ambitious spirit. She had not been invited to follow her husband to the East. She saw that in his absence

*Perusine War.*

imperial power would fall into the hands of Octavian. Lucius, brother of Mark Antony, was Consul for the year, and at her instigation he raised his standard at Praenesté. He

<sup>1</sup> Hor., *Sat.*, ii. 2. 133.

entered Rome, and was hailed as a deliverer; but he was obliged to retire on the approach of Octavian. Followed closely by Agrippa, he attempted to make his way northward into Cisalpine Gaul; but he was intercepted by Octavian himself and driven to seek refuge behind the walls of Perusia. But his store of provisions was small, and early in the next year Perusia surrendered, on condition that the lives of the soldiers should be spared. So ended what was called the Perusine War.

While his wife, his brother, and his friends were quitting Italy, the arms of Antony suffered a still heavier blow in the eastern Provinces, which were under his special *Parthian* government. After the battle of Philippi, Quintus, *successes.* son of Caesar's old lieutenant T. Labienus, offered his services to Orodes, king of Parthia. Encouraged by the proffered aid of a Roman officer, Pacorus, the king's son, led a formidable army into Syria. Antony's lieutenant was entirely routed; and while Pacorus with one army poured into Phœnicia and Palestine, Q. Labienus with another broke into Cilicia. Here he found no opposition; and, overrunning Asia Minor even to the Aegæan Sea, he assumed the name of Parthicus, as if he had been a Roman conqueror of the people whom he was serving.

These complicated disasters roused Antony from his lethargy. Early in the year 40 B.C. he left Egypt and sailed to Tyre, intending to take the field against the Parthians; *Antony in-* but letters from his wife induced him to alter his *vades Italy.* purpose. He crossed the Aegæan to Athens, where he found Fulvia, accompanied by Plancus and others, all eager for an attack on Octavian's government. Octavian himself was absent in Gaul, and the present state of Italy encouraged Antony to make another attempt. Late in the year he formed a league with Sext. Pompeius; and while that chief blockaded Thurii and Consentia, Antony assailed Brundisium. A fresh civil war appeared to be imminent. But the soldiery was weary of battle; both armies compelled their leaders to make pacific overtures, and the year closed with a general peace, which was rendered easier by the death of Fulvia. At this *Peace of* peace of Brundisium, the triumvirs made a third *Brundisium.* division of the Provinces, by which Scodra (*Scutari*) in Illyricum was fixed as the boundary of the west and east. Lepidus was still left in possession of Africa. It was further agreed that Octavian was to drive Sext. Pompeius, lately the ally of Antony, out of Sicily; while Antony undertook to recover the standards of Crassus from the Parthians. The new compact

was sealed by the marriage of Antony with Octavia, his colleague's sister, a virtuous and beautiful lady, worthy of a better consort. Antony and Octavian entered Rome together in joint ovation to celebrate the restoration of peace. These auspicious events were celebrated by the lofty verse of Virgil's fourth Eclogue, styled "Pollio."<sup>1</sup>

Sext. Pompeius had reason to complain. By the peace of Brundisium he was abandoned by his late friend to Octavian.

*Sextus Pompeius recognised by the triumvirs.* He was not a man to brook ungenerous treatment. Of late years his possession of Sicily had given him command of the Roman corn-market. During the winter which followed the peace of Brundisium

(40-39 B.C.) Sextus blockaded Italy so closely that Rome was threatened with a positive dearth. Riots arose; the triumvirs were pelted with stones in the Forum; and they deemed it prudent to temporise by inviting Pompey to enter their league. He met them at Misenum, and the two chiefs went on board his ship to settle the terms of alliance. On a subsequent day he entertained them magnificently on board. It is said that one of his chief officers, a Greek named Menas or Menodorus, suggested to him the expediency of putting to sea with the great prize, and then making his own terms. Sextus rejected the advice with the characteristic words: "You should have done it without asking me."<sup>2</sup> It was agreed that Sicily, Sardinia, and Corsica should be given up to his absolute rule, and that Achaia should be added to his portion; so that the Roman world was now partitioned among four—Octavian, Antony, Lepidus, and Sext. Pompeius. On their way to Rome the triumvirs were received with every token of satisfaction.

Before winter, Antony returned to Athens in company with Octavia, who for the time seems to have banished Cleopatra from his thoughts. But he disgusted all true Romans by assuming the attributes of the Grecian Dionysus, and adopting Grecian habits of life.

He found the state of things in the East greatly changed since

<sup>1</sup> C. Asinius Pollio was Consul in the year 40 B.C., and it was probably by him that the young poet was then introduced to Maecenas. The child who was to restore the golden age—"cara Deum soboles, magni Jovis incrementum"—must have been the expected progeny either of Antony and Octavia, or of Octavian and Scribonia. This lady had lately married Octavian, and was connected by affinity with Sext. Pompeius. (But see Conington on Virg., *Ecl.*, 4).

<sup>2</sup> Menas afterwards deserted his leader. It has been supposed by some that he is the person intended in Virg., *Aen.*, vi. 613, and Hor., *Od.*, iii. 16. 15.



his departure. He had commissioned P. Ventidius Bassus, an officer who had taken an active part in the Perusine War, to hold the Parthians in check till his return. Ventidius was son of a Picenian of Asculum, and had been brought to Rome as a captive in the Social War.<sup>1</sup> In his youth he had been a contractor to supply mules for the use of the Roman transport department. But in the civil wars which followed, men of military talent easily rose to command; and such was the lot of Ventidius. By a rapid march he surprised Q. Labienus and drove him into the defiles of Taurus, and here that adventurer was defeated and taken prisoner. The conqueror then advanced into Syria and forced the Parthian commanders also to withdraw to the eastern bank of the Euphrates.

In the following year (38 B.C.) Ventidius repelled a fresh invasion of the Parthians under Pacorus. A great battle was fought on the fifteenth anniversary of the battle of Carrhae, in which Pacorus was defeated and slain. Antony found his lieutenant laying siege to Samosata, and displaced him, only to conclude an unsatisfactory treaty and return to Athens. Ventidius repaired to Rome, where he was honoured with a well-deserved triumph. He had started in life as a mule-jobber: he ascended the Capitol with the laurel round his brows. He was the first, and almost the last, Roman general who could claim such a distinction for victory over the Parthians.

The alliance with Sext. Pompeius was not intended to last, and it did not last. Antony evaded putting him in possession of Achaia; and to avenge himself for this breach of faith Pompeius again began to intercept the Italian corn-fleets. Fresh discontent appeared at Rome; and Octavian equipped a fleet to sail against the naval chief; but after two indecisive battles, the fleet was destroyed by a storm, and Sextus was again left in undisputed mastery of the sea. Octavian, however, was never daunted by reverses, and he recalled his favourite Agrippa from Gaul to conduct the war against Pompeius. This able commander set about his work with the resolution that marked a man determined not to fail. As a harbour for his fleet he cut a passage through the narrow necks of land which separated Lake Lucrinus from the sea and Lake Avernus from Lake Lucrinus, and faced the outer barrier with stone. This

*Victories of  
Ventidius  
Bassus.*

*Sextus  
Pompeius and  
Octavian.*

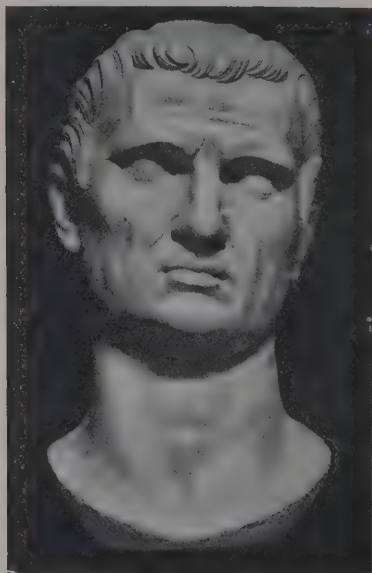
*Preparations  
of Agrippa.*

<sup>1</sup> Page 543.

was the famous Julian Port.<sup>1</sup> The latter part of the year 38 B.C. and the whole of 37 were spent by Agrippa in this work and in preparing a sufficient force of ships. Every dock-yard in Italy was called into requisition. A large body of slaves were set free that they might be trained to serve as rowers.

On the 1st of July, 36 B.C., the fleet put to sea. Octavian himself with one division purposed to attack the northern coast of Sicily, while a second squadron was assembled at Tarentum for the purpose of assailing the eastern side. Lepidus, with a third fleet from Africa, was to assault Lilybaeum. But the winds were again

*Campaign  
against Sextus  
Pompeius.*



Agrippa, from the head in the Capitoline Museum.  
(Bernoulli, *Röm. Ikon.*, i. 261.)

adverse; and, though Lepidus effected a landing on the western coast, Octavian's fleet was driven back to Italy with

<sup>1</sup> "An memorem portus Lucrinoque addita claustra,  
Atque indignatum magnis stridoribus aequor,  
Iulia qua ponto longe sonat unda refuso  
Tyrrhenusque fretis immittitur aestus Avernis?"

—Virg., *Georg.*, ii. 161; *cp.* Hor., *A.P.*, 63.

great damage. But the injured ships were refitted and Agrippa placed in command off northern Sicily, while Octavian himself returned to Italy, intending to re-cross thence and surprise Tauromenium. Off Mylae, a place famous for having witnessed the first naval victory of the Romans, Agrippa encountered the fleet of Sext. Pompeius, and would have gained a complete victory, had not the ships of the enemy, which were of a light draught, escaped into the shoal water. After this, Sextus, with the larger portion of his ships, gave Agrippa the slip, and sailing eastward surprised Octavian's squadron off Tauromenium. A desperate conflict followed, which ended in the complete triumph of Sextus, and Octavian escaped to Italy with the utmost difficulty. But Agrippa was soon upon the traces of the enemy. On the 3rd of September Sextus was obliged, from want of supplies, once more to give battle at Naulochus, a little westward of the straits of Messina. He suffered an irretrievable defeat. His troops on land also were dispersed by an army which had been landed on the northern coast by the indefatigable Octavian; and Sextus sailed off to the East, in the hope that he might find protection with Antony.

Lepidus had assisted in the campaign; but after the departure of Sextus he openly declared himself independent of his brother triumvirs. Octavian, with prudent boldness, entered the camp of Lepidus in person with a few attendants. The soldiers deserted in crowds, and in a few hours Lepidus was fain to sue for pardon where he had hoped to rule. He was treated with contemptuous indifference. Africa was taken from him, and he was deprived of his place in the triumvirate; but he was allowed to live and die in quiet enjoyment of the Chief Pontificate, an office which he had received after the murder of Caesar.

It was fortunate for Octavian that during this campaign Antony was on friendly terms with him. In 37 B.C. the ruler of the East had again visited Italy, and a meeting between the two chiefs took place at Tarentum.<sup>1</sup> The five years for which the triumvirs were originally appointed had now expired; and it was settled that the two remaining chiefs should assume power for a second period of the same duration, without any authority from Senate or People. They parted good friends, and

*Meeting of  
Octavian and  
Antony at  
Tarentum.*

<sup>1</sup> On the date, see Merivale, iii. 250. It is to this occasion that many critics refer the *Iter Brundisium* of Horace (*Sat.*, i. 5). But see Palmer, *Satires of Horace*, 171.

Octavian undertook his great campaign against Sext. Pompeius without cause of fear from Antony. This was proved by the fate of the fugitive. Sextus resorted to Lesbos, where he had found refuge during the campaign of Pharsalia ; but venturing to pass over to Asia, he was taken prisoner by Antony's lieutenants and put to death.

Hitherto Octavia had retained her influence over Antony. But presently, after his last interview with her brother, the fickle triumvir abruptly quitted a wife who was too good for him, and returning to Syria sent for the fascinating Egyptian queen, whom he had not seen for three years. From this time forth he made no attempt to break the silken chain of her enchantments. During the next summer, indeed, he attempted a new Parthian campaign. But his advance was made, like that of Crassus, with reckless indifference to the safety of his troops. Provisions failed ; disease broke out ; and after great suffering, he was forced to seek safety by a precipitate retreat into the Armenian mountains. After this failure he contented himself with a campaign in Armenia, to punish the king of that country for alleged treachery in the campaign. The king fell into his hands ; with this trophy Antony returned to Alexandria, and the Romans were disgusted to hear that the streets of a Graeco-Egyptian town had been honoured by a mimicry of a Roman triumph. After this, Antony surrendered himself absolutely to the will of the enchantress. To this period must belong those tales of luxurious indulgence which are known to every reader. The brave soldier, who in the perils of war could shake off all luxurious habits and could rival the commonest man in the cheerfulness with which he underwent every hardship, was seen no more. He sunk into an indolent voluptuary, pleased by childish amusements. At one time he would lounge in a fishing-boat, and laugh when he drew up pieces of salt-fish, which by the queen's orders had been attached to his hook by divers. At another time she wagered that she would consume ten million sesterces at one meal, and won her wager by dissolving in vinegar a pearl of unknown value. While Cleopatra bore the character of the goddess Isis, her lover appeared as Osiris. Her head was placed with his own on the coins which he issued as a Roman Magistrate. For years before, he had disposed of the kingdoms and principalities of the East by his sole word. By his influence Herod, son of Antipater, the Idumaeen minister of Hyrcanus the late sovereign of Judaea, had been made king to the exclusion of the Asmonean dynasty. Polemo of Laodiceia was invested with the rule, first of Pontus

afterwards of the lesser Armenia. Encouraged by the absolute submission of her lover, Cleopatra fixed her eye upon the Capitol, and dreamed of winning, by means of Antony, that imperial crown which she had vainly sought from Caesar.

While Antony was engaged in voluptuous dalliance, Octavian was resolutely pursuing the work of consolidating his power in the west. His patience, his industry, his attention to business, his affability, were winning golden opinions and rapidly obliterating all memory of the bloody work by which he had risen to power. Personally he had won little glory in war; but so long as the corn-fleets arrived duly from Sicily and Africa, the populace cared little whether the victory was gained by Octavian or by his generals. In Agrippa he possessed a consummate captain, in Maecenas a wise and temperate minister. It is much to his credit that he never showed any jealousy of the men to whom he owed so much. He flattered the people with the hope that he would, when Antony had fulfilled his mission of recovering the standards of Crassus, engage him to join in putting an end to their sovereign power and restoring constitutional liberty. In point of fidelity to his marriage vows Octavian was little better than Antony. He had renounced his marriage with Clodia, the daughter of Fulvia, when her mother attempted to raise Italy against him. He divorced Scribonia, when it no longer suited him to court the favour of her kinsman Pompeius. To replace this second wife, he took away Livia from her husband, Tib. Claudius Nero, though she was at that time pregnant of her second son. In this and other less pardonable immoralities there was nothing to shock the feelings of Romans.

But Octavian never suffered pleasure to divert him from business. If he could not be a successful general, he resolved at least to show that he could be a hardy soldier. While Antony in his luxurious ease was neglecting the Parthian war, his rival led his legions in more than one dangerous campaign against the Dalmatians, who had been for some time infesting the Province of Illyricum; and his lieutenants had carried his standards into Pannonia. In the year 33 B.C. he announced that the limits of the empire had been extended northwards to the banks of the Save.

Octavian now began to feel that any appearance of friendship with Antony was a source of weakness rather than of strength to Rome. Misunderstandings had already broken out. Antony complained that Octavian had given him no share in the Provinces wrested from Sext. Pompeius and Lepidus. Octavian retorted by ac-

*Conduct of  
Octavian.*

*Quarrels be-  
tween Antony  
and Octavian.*

cusing his colleague of appropriating Egypt and Armenia, and of increasing Cleopatra's power at the expense of the Roman Empire. Popular indignation rose to its height when Plancus and Titius, who had been admitted to Antony's confidence, passed over to Octavian and disclosed the contents of their master's will. In that document Antony ordered that his body should be buried at Alexandria, in the mausoleum of Cleopatra. Men began to fancy that Cleopatra had already planted her throne upon the Capitol. These suspicions were sedulously encouraged by Octavian.

Before the close of 32 B.C. Octavian, by the authority of the Senate and People, declared war, nominally against Cleopatra, *Declaration of really against Antony. Antony, who had been to war.* some extent roused from his sleep by reports from Rome, passed over to Athens, issuing orders everywhere to levy men and collect ships for the impending struggle. At Athens he received news of the declaration of war, and replied by divorcing Octavia. After wasting some time more in pleasures, he repaired to Corcyra, with the purpose of carrying the war into Italy. But, hearing that part of the enemy's fleet was already on the coast of Epirus, he again drew back and established his winter-quarters at Patrae on the Corinthian Gulf.

During the winter Antony allowed Agrippa to sweep the Ionian sea, to take possession of Methoné in Messenia, as a *Antony and Agrippa.* station for a flying squadron to intercept Antony's communications with the East, nay, even to occupy Corcyra, which had been destined for his own place of rendezvous. Antony's fleet anchored just within the waters of the Ambracian Gulf, in what is now called the Bay of Prevesa, while his legions encamped on the Acté or promontory which forms the southern side of the entrance to that spacious inlet.<sup>1</sup> But the place chosen for the camp was unhealthy, and his army suffered greatly from disease.

Early in the season, Octavian succeeded in bringing over his legions to Epirus, and stationed himself in the northern horn of the Gulf, where the channel is not more than half a mile wide; and Antony repaired from Patrae to his army. At first he showed something of his old military spirit, and the soldiers, who loved his genial frankness, warmed into something like enthusiasm; but his chief officers, won by Octavian or disgusted by the influence of Cleopatra, deserted him in such

---

<sup>1</sup> The promontory is mostly flat. The Actium or Temple of Apollo Actiacus stood on a slight eminence at some little distance from the point. See *Dict. Geogr.*, "ACTIUM."



numbers that he knew not whom to trust and gave up all thoughts of maintaining the contest with energy. Urged by Cleopatra, he resolved to carry off his fleet to Egypt and abandon the army. All preparations were made in secret, and the great fleet put to sea on the 28th of August. But for that



Bronze figure-head of a Roman galley, found near Actium.  
(British Museum.)

and the three following days so strong a gale blew that neither could Antony escape nor Octavian put to sea *Battle of Actium*, 31 B.C. On the 2nd of September, however, the wind fell, and Octavian's light vessels, by using their oars, easily came up with the unwieldy galleys of the eastern fleet. A battle was now inevitable.

Antony's ships were like impregnable fortresses to the

assault of the slight vessels of Octavian ;<sup>1</sup> and, though they lay nearly motionless in the calm sea, it was long before any impression was made upon them. About noon a sea-breeze sprung up ; and Cleopatra, followed by sixty Egyptian ships, made sail in a southerly direction. Antony immediately sprang from his ship of war into a light galley and followed. Deserted by their commander, the captains of Antony's ships continued to resist desperately ; nor was it till the greater part of them were set on fire that the contest was decided. Before evening closed, the whole fleet was captured or destroyed ; most of the men and all the treasure on board perished. A few days after, when the shameful flight of Antony was made known to his army, all his legions went over to the conqueror.

For eleven months after the battle of Actium, Octavian left the fugitives unmolested in Egypt. He had been employed in the interval in founding the city of Nicopolis, to celebrate his victory, on the northern horn of the Ambracian Gulf, in rewarding his soldiers, and settling the affairs of the Provinces of the East. In the winter he had returned to Italy, and it was midsummer, 30 B.C., before he arrived in Egypt.

When Antony and Cleopatra arrived off Alexandria, they put a bold face upon the matter ; but it soon became plain that Egypt was at the mercy of the conqueror. The queen formed all kinds of wild designs. One was to transport the ships that she had saved across the Isthmus of Suez, and seek refuge in some distant land where the name of Rome was yet unknown. Some ships were actually drawn across, but they were destroyed by the Arabs, and the plan was abandoned. She now flattered herself that her powers of fascination, proved so potent over Caesar and Antony, might subdue Octavian. Secret messages passed between the conqueror and the queen ; nor were Octavian's answers such as to banish hope.

Antony, full of repentance and despair, shut himself up in Pharos, and there remained in gloomy isolation.

It was then in July 30 B.C., Octavian appeared before Pelusium, and the place was surrendered without a blow. Yet, as the conqueror approached Alexandria, Antony put himself at the head of a division of cavalry and put the enemy's horse to flight. Next day he prepared

*Death of Antony and of Cleopatra.*

<sup>1</sup> "Ibis Liburnis inter alta navium,  
Amice, propugnacula."—Hor., *Epod.*, i. 1.

Maecenas, it may be remarked, relinquished the intention, alluded to in these lines, of joining the fleet, and remained at Rome to conduct the government in the absence of Octavian.

to defend the city ; but when he saw the Egyptian fleet pass over to Octavian, he abandoned all thoughts of further opposition and retired into Alexandria. Cleopatra, dreading his anger, had shut herself up in a sort of mausoleum built to receive her body after death, and having barred the doors inside, caused it to be given out that she was dead. All the tenderness of old times revived in Antony's heart. He stabbed himself, and it was not till he was in a dying state that he learned that Cleopatra still lived. He ordered himself to be carried to her place of retreat ; and the queen, touched by pity, ordered her expiring lover to be drawn up by cords through the window, and bathed his temples with her tears. Meantime, Octavian had entered Alexandria and heard that Antony was no more. Cleopatra at length consented to see him. Her penetration soon told her that she had nothing to hope from him. She saw that his fair words were only intended to prevent her from desperate acts and reserve her for the degradation of his triumph. She pretended all submission, and effectually deceived him by entreating him not to deprive her of a few feminine ornaments which she still retained. But no sooner was his back turned than she prepared for death, and wrote to Octavian, praying that she might be buried by the side of Antony. He instantly despatched messengers to learn what had happened. When they arrived they found her lying dead upon her couch, arrayed in royal attire, and her faithful waiting-women, Iras and Charmion, dying beside their mistress. The manner of her death was never ascertained ; popular belief ascribed it to the bite of an asp, which had been conveyed to her in a basket of fruit.

Thus died Antony and Cleopatra. Antony was by nature a genial, open-hearted Roman, a good soldier, quick, resolute, and vigorous, but reckless and self-indulgent, devoid *Their characters.* alike of prudence and of principle. The corruptions of the age, the seductions of power, and the evil influence of Cleopatra, paralysed a nature capable of better things. We know him chiefly through the exaggerated assaults of Cicero in his Philippics, and the narratives of writers devoted to Octavian. But after all deductions for partial representation, enough remains to show that Antony had all the faults of Caesar, with little of his redeeming greatness.

Cleopatra was an extraordinary person. At her death she was but thirty-eight years of age. Her power rested not so much on actual beauty as on her fascinating manners and her extreme readiness of wit. In her follies there was a certain magnificence, which excites even a dull imagination. We may

estimate the real power of her mental qualities by observing the impression her character made upon the Roman poets of the time. No meditated praises could have borne such testimony to her greatness as the lofty strain in which Horace celebrates her fall, and congratulates the Roman world on its escape from the ruin which she was threatening to the Capitol.<sup>1</sup>

Octavian dated the years of his imperial monarchy from the day of the battle of Actium. But it was not till two years after *Rule of Octavian.* (the summer of 29 B.C.) that he established himself in Rome as ruler of the Roman world. Then he celebrated three magnificent triumphs, for his victories in Dalmatia, at Actium, and in Egypt.<sup>2</sup>

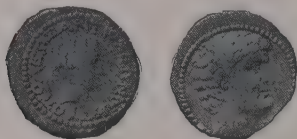
In the same year the Temple of Janus was closed (notwithstanding that border wars still continued in Gaul and Spain) for the first time since the year 235 B.C. All men drew breath more freely, and all except the soldiery looked forward to a time of tranquillity. Liberty and independence were forgotten words. After the terrible disorders of the last century, the general cry was for quiet at any price. Octavian was a person admirably fitted to fulfil these aspirations. His uncle Julius was too fond of active exertion to play such a part well. Octavian never shone in war, while his vigilant and patient mind was well fitted for the discharge of business. He avoided shocking popular feeling by assuming any title savouring of royalty; but he enjoyed by universal consent an authority more than regal.

**AUTHORITIES.** — The *Monumentum Ancyranum* and Nicolaus of Damascus give the only contemporary accounts, but they cannot be trusted to be impartial. Our main sources have to be Livy (Epit.), cxxv.-cxxxiii.; Plutarch, *Antonius*; Dio, xlviii.-li.; Appian, *B.C.*, v.; Suetonius, *Augustus*; Velleius, ii. 74 *sqq.* There are some useful allusions in the Augustan poets (especially Virgil and Horace). Shakspeare's *Antony and Cleopatra* supplies the best commentary on the events of these years.

<sup>1</sup> *Od.*, i. 37.

<sup>2</sup> "At Caesar, triplici invectus Romana triumpho  
Moenia, Dis Italis votum inmortale sacrabat."

—Virg., *Aen.*, viii. 714.



Coin of Antony and Cleopatra,



Medal of Sallust, the historian. (Bernoulli, *Röm. Ikon.*, i. 201.)

## CHAPTER LXVI

### STATE OF THE EMPIRE: LITERATURE, ART, MANNERS, AND RELIGIOUS FEELING.

WE have now traced the progress and decline of the Roman Constitution through its several stages. We have seen it pass from a monarchy into a Patrician oligarchy, from a Patrician oligarchy into a limited republic, from a limited republic into an oligarchy of wealth ; and now, after a century of civil war, in which the state swayed from one extreme to the other, we close with the contemplation of an absolute despotism. Every page of the latter portion of our narrative shows how inevitably events were tending to this issue. The Roman world had long been preparing for it. At no time had such authority been altogether alien from the mind of the people of Rome. Dictatorships were frequent in their earlier history. In later times, the Consuls were, by the will of the Senate, invested with Dictatorial power to meet emergencies, military or civil. The despotic commands conferred upon Sulla and Pompey, the powers seized, first by Caesar and after him by the triumvirate, were all of the same form as the authority conferred upon Octavian ;—that is, all were,

*Acquiescence  
of Rome in  
despotic rule.*

in form at least, temporary and provisional. The disorders of the state required the intervention of one or more persons endowed with absolute authority. And whether power was vested in a Dictator, such as Sulla and Caesar; in a sole Consul, such as Pompey; in a commission of three, such as the triumvirate of Antony, Octavian, and Lepidus; or in an Imperator, such as Octavian alone, the constitutional principle was the same. These despotic powers were in every case, except in the cases of Sulla and Caesar, granted for a definite term; even Caesar's first Dictatorships were conferred for limited periods. The triumvirate was renewed at intervals of five years, the imperial rule of Octavian at intervals of ten or five. In theory, these powers were conferred exceptionally, for a temporary purpose; and when the purpose was served, the exception was to yield to the rule. Even in the reign of Octavian there were some persons credulous enough to expect a restoration of the Republic. It belongs to the history of the Empire to examine in detail the arts of government, by which a provisional and temporary power was, by the adroitness of the new ruler, converted into a despotic monarchy. Here a few brief notes must be sufficient.

It has been shown how long-continued wars threw power more and more into the hands of the Senate and created an oligarchy of wealthy families; how these wars gradually destroyed the free Italian yeomen and supplied their place by hosts of slaves; how the Gracchi and their successors endeavoured to stay these evils with more or less of violence; and how the result of this agitation was the elevation of all Italian freemen to the rank of citizens of Rome. From that time it became plain that the Constitution of Rome, which was only suited for a civic population, living within easy reach of the Forum, must undergo some great alteration; and the general tendency of events was to throw power into the hands of successful generals. Marius seems first to have entertained thoughts of a perpetual Consulship; but the confidence reposed in him as a leader in war neither could nor did avail to gain him a similar confidence in peace. Circumstances rather than set purpose placed Sulla at the head of the state; and he endeavoured to solve the political problem of the day by placing all authority in the hands of the Senatorial oligarchy. His death was followed by an explosion; and the remainder of the history of the Republic is merely a personal conflict for supreme power. Every man was for himself. Pompey never assumed the character of champion of the Senate till he became jealous

*Events leading  
to the rule of  
Octavian.*



of Caesar. Caesar, from the first, had a clear determination to establish himself as the ruler of the future fortunes of Rome, and he succeeded. But he disclosed his wish to assume sovereign power, and he fell by the hands of men, who had accepted his favours but in heart were jealous of his greatness—men who professed to be Republicans, but who were in fact the agents of the Senatorial oligarchy. Then came Antony and the triumvirate, who prepared the way for acquiescence in the sole dominion of Octavian.

Octavian's adroitness has often been commended. But he had many examples to warn and to guide him. Above all, the precedent of his uncle, the great Dictator, proved that the Romans were not prepared to accept even order and good government at the price of royalty; and he dexterously avoided the danger. The cruelties of the triumviral proscription he was able to throw chiefly upon Antony. But these very cruelties stood him in stead, for they induced men to estimate at more than its real worth the clemency which distinguished his sole government. He avoided jealousy by assuming a power professedly only temporary. The title by which he liked to be known was that of *Princeps* or "first citizen."<sup>1</sup> But in fact he absorbed all the powers of the state. As *Imperator* he exercised absolute control over the lives of all Roman citizens not within the limits of the city. As *Pontifex Maximus*, an office for which he waited patiently till the death of Lepidus, he controlled the religion of the state. In the year 8 B.C. he assumed the Censorial power without a colleague to impede his action; and thus he was able to revise at pleasure the register of the citizens and the list of the Senate, promoting or degrading whom he pleased. He appropriated also the *Tribunician* power; and thus the *Plebeian Assembly* was by a side-blow deprived of vitality; for without its *Tribunes* it was naught.<sup>2</sup> *Consuls* were still elected to give name to the year; and the *Assembly of the People* still met for the purpose of electing magistrates, but the *Princeps* could secure by various means that such candidates were elected as he himself desired. Sometimes several pairs

<sup>1</sup> "Non regno . . . neque dictatura, sed *principis* nomine constitutam rem publicam." (Tac., *Ann.*, i. 9. 6.) He also revived in his own person the title *princeps senatus*, which had slept since the time of Catulus (page 597). On the relation between these titles, see Pelham in *Jour. Phil.*, viii. 323; Herzog, ii. 134.

<sup>2</sup> Page 330. He was not actually *Tribune*, for then he would have been hampered by his nine colleagues, but was invested with the *tribunicia potestas*.

were elected for one year, after a practice begun by the great Dictator.

The name of Italy had now assumed the significance which it still bears, and all free inhabitants of Cisalpine Gaul had obtained the rights of Roman citizens. But little *Condition of Italy.* was done to repair the losses and decays of which we have spoken in former chapters. The military Colonies planted by Sulla and Octavian, had lowered its condition even beyond its former misery. Ancient and respectable citizens made way for reckless and profligate soldiery,—such as the centurion who would have slain the poet Virgil. Our pity for the ejected inhabitants is somewhat lessened by the thought that all the civilised world was open to them, for all the world was Roman. Gaul, and Spain, and Sicily, and the Provinces of the East, depopulated by long wars, gratefully received families of Italian citizens, who brought them their habits of civilised life, their industry, and such property as they had saved from the ruin of their homes. Great as was the injustice of expelling these persons, the actual loss and suffering, after the pain of leaving home was over, must have been incalculably less than we, in the present condition of Europe, are apt to imagine. After the settlement of these Colonies, it is probable that what could be done for the welfare of Italy was done by Augustus and his able ministers, Agrippa and Maecenas. But the evils were too great and too recent to admit of palliation; and Italy probably never recovered from the effects of the Roman wars of conquest, till she received a new population from the north.

The Provinces were gainers by the transference of power from the Senate to a single man. The most important Provinces were governed by deputies appointed by the *The Provinces.* Princeps himself (*legati Caesaris*); the rest were left to the rule of Senatorial Proconsuls. The condition of the Imperial Provinces was preferred; for the taxes exacted were lighter, and the government under severer control. Instances occur of Senatorial Provinces requesting as a favour to be transferred to the rule of the Emperor.<sup>1</sup> But even the Senatorial government was more equitable than of old. The salaries of the Provincial governors were fixed, and greedy men were no longer left to pay themselves by extortion. The examples of Pilate and Felix show, indeed, that even in Imperial Provinces glaring injustice was still perpetrated; but

<sup>1</sup> As Achaia and Macedonia in the time of Tiberius. Tac., *Ann.*, i. 76. 4.

these very cases show that the governors stood in awe of those when they governed,—for in both cases the iniquity was committed through fear of the Jews, whom these men had misgoverned, and whose accusations they feared. It may be added that Pilate died in exile for his misgovernment, and Felix escaped only by the exertion of extraordinary influence.

The world, therefore, on the whole, was a gainer by the substitution of the Imperial rule for the constitution falsely named Republican. For nearly two centuries the government was, with two intervals, administered by rulers of great abilities and great energy; and though, no doubt, there was enough of oppression and to spare, yet there was much less than had been common in the times of Senatorial dominion.

But if the Provinces—that is the Empire at large—continued to be content with a central despotism, in comparison with the old Senatorial rule of “every man for himself,” this was not the case at Rome. The educated classes *Rome.* at least, and the Senatorial Nobility, soon began to regret even the turbulent days of Marius and Pompey. The practice of oratory, in which Romans excelled and took chief delight, was confined to mere forensic pleadings, and lost all that excitement which attached to it when an orator could sway the will of the Senate and calm or rouse the seething passions of the Forum. We cannot wonder at Cicero, notwithstanding his hatred for commotion, throwing himself into the conflict against Antony with the fervid energy which is revealed in the *Philippics*. He felt that this was the last chance of supporting the old freedom of the Forum,—which, with all its turbulence, he loved, partly as the scene of his own glories, partly as a barrier against the crushing force of military despotism. And though the slaughter of the proscription and of the civil wars removed many of the leading Senators, men of independent will revolted against the deadening weight of despotic government, as is revealed in the pages of Tacitus. For a time, however, there was a general disposition, even at Rome, to welcome the tranquillity ensured by the rule of *The new literature.* Octavian, and nothing can more strongly show the security that men experienced, even before the battle of Actium, than the sudden burst with which literature and the polite arts rose from their slumbers.

This leads us to give a brief account of the state of literature at Rome, since we last took notice of the subject, at the beginning of the civil wars.

Since that epoch literary pursuits had languished,—the natural effect of political excitement and perilous times.

Oratory indeed had flourished, as every page of our history indicates ; and oratory may be called the popular literature of Rome, as truly as journalism may be called the popular literature of England. Cicero, a master of his art both in theory and practice, has left us an account of a host of orators whom he thought worthy of being placed in a national catalogue. Of the Gracchi, of Antonius, of Crassus, of Sulpicius, we have spoken. After their time Cotta was the chief favourite, and then Hortensius rose to be "King of the Courts." He was what we may call an advocate by profession, taking little part in politics till he had made a large fortune by the presents which at that time stood in the place of regular fees ; and even in the hot conflicts that distinguished the rise of Pompey's popularity he took but a languid part. His style of speaking was what Cicero styles Asiatic,—that is, florid and decorated beyond what even the liberal judgment of his critic could approve. Cicero considered his own youthful manner to partake of this character, and refers to the brave speech in which he defended Sext. Roscius of Ameria as an example of this style. But that elaborate phraseology and copious flow of language remained with Cicero to the last. It was only when his feelings were strongly excited, or when his time was limited, as when he defended old Rabirius or assailed Catiline in the Senate, that he displayed anything of that terrible concentration of speech with which Demosthenes smote his antagonists. So far as we can judge from the scanty remnants preserved, C. Gracchus, more than any other Roman, possessed this fierce earnestness. The example and criticism of Cicero lead to the conclusion that Roman oratory generally had a tendency to be redundant, if not wordy. This tendency may be ascribed to the prevailing mode in which the young orators of the day sought to acquire skill in speaking. The schools of the rhetorical teachers were thronged by them ; and here they were taught to declaim fluently on any subject, without reference to passion or feeling or earnestness of purpose. The Romans of a former generation endeavoured to crush such schools ; and it was not at Rome that the most celebrated teachers were to be found. Athens and Rhodes were the fashionable Universities, as we may call them, to which the young Romans resorted, when they had finished their schooling at Rome.<sup>1</sup> After learning grammar, and reading Latin and

<sup>1</sup> We know this of the younger Cicero, and of Horace. The age at which they went seems to have been much the same as that at which young men in the present day go to the Universities. Cicero himself, his brother Quintus and his friend Atticus, studied there at somewhat more advanced ages.

Greek poets in their boyhood, they repaired to the more famous haunts of Grecian learning to study a little geometry and a little philosophy ;<sup>1</sup> but it was to rhetoric or the acquirement of a facile power of speaking on any given subject that the ambitious youth devoted their chief efforts.

Education in Greek literature led many persons in this period to compose Greek memoirs of the stirring scenes in which they had lived or acted. Examples of this *Historical* kind had been set as early as the Second Punic *works.* War by Cincius and Fabius. It now became very common ; but many began to employ the vernacular language. C. Fannius Strabo, who mounted the walls of Carthage by the side of Tib. Gracchus, and his contemporary L. Caelius Antipater, wrote Latin histories famous in their time. Both were thought worthy of abridgment by Brutus. The former is commended by Sallust, the latter was preferred to Sallust by the Emperor Hadrian. Even Cicero commended Antipater as an improver of Latin composition ; his follower Asellio, says the orator, returned to the dulness of the ancient annalists. Then came L. Cornelius Sisenna, who witnessed the bloody scenes of the Social and First Civil Wars, and wrote their history. Cicero commends his style ; Sallust speaks with praise of his diligence, but hints at his subserviency to Sulla and the Senate. But the great men who made history at this epoch also took up the pen to write history. Q. Lutatius Catulus, the colleague of Marius, left an account of the Cimbric War. The good Rutilius Rufus employed his leisure in penning an historical work in Greek. Sulla composed a memoir of his own political life, to which Plutarch often refers ; but from the specimens which he gives, the Dictator seems not to have been scrupulously impartial in his narrative. Lucullus composed Greek memoirs of the Marsic War. Cicero drew up a Greek notice of his Consulship with his own ready pen, and endeavoured to persuade L. Luceius to undertake a similar task. Even the grim Marius wished to have his deeds commemorated by a worthy hand.<sup>2</sup> The Commentaries of Caesar have been already mentioned. His pen was taken up by several of his officers,—A. Hirtius, who completed the narrative of the Gallic War, C.

<sup>1</sup> So at least Horace represents the matter :

"Adiecere bonae paullo plus artis Athenae,—  
Scilicet ut possem curvo dignoscere rectum,  
Atque inter silvas Academi quaerere verum."

—*Epist.*, ii. 2. 43.

<sup>2</sup> By L. Plotius, a rhetorician, of whom little is known ; Cic., *pro Archia*, 9, 20 ; *cp.* Suet., *de clar. Rhet.*, 2.

Oppius, to whom the memoirs of the Dictator's war in Egypt are often attributed, L. Cornelius Balbus, and others. But the most remarkable prose-writer of the late Republican era is C. Sallustius Crispus, familiarly known to us as Sallust.

*Sallust.* The two works that remain to us from the pen of this vigorous writer, the account of the Catilinarian Conspiracy and the Jugurthan War, are rather to be styled political pamphlets than histories. Sallust was, as we have mentioned, an ardent partisan of the Marian and Caesarian party. He had been expelled from the Senate. Dislike of the reigning oligarchy appears at every turn, notwithstanding the semblance of impartiality assumed by a man who practised the profligacy which he indignantly denounces. But Sallust's writings are valuable in a literary point of view, because they disclose the terse and concentrated energy of which the Latin language was capable, qualities little favoured by the oratorical tendencies of the day, but used with marvellous effect in a later age by Tacitus.

Other writers now first endeavoured to hand down in Latin a history of Rome from her foundation, or from early periods of her existence. Such were C. Licinius Macer, Q. Claudius Quadrigarius, and Q. Valerius Antias, all born near the close of the second century before the Christian era. The works of these and other annalists were used and swallowed up by the history of Livy, who was born, probably at Padua, in the year 59 B.C., and belongs to the Imperial era of Augustus, of which we speak not here.

Some few writers in this same period began to cultivate grammatical and philological studies. The founder of these pursuits at Rome is reputed to be L. Aelius Stilo, the friend of Q. Metellus Numidicus, and his companion in exile. He was closely followed by Aurelius Opilius, a freedman, who attended Rutilius Rufus into exile, as Stilo had attended Metellus. But the man whose name is in this department most conspicuous is M. Terentius Varro of Reaté.<sup>1</sup> He was born in 116 B.C., ten years earlier than Cicero, whose friendship he cultivated to the close of the great orator's life.

*Varro.* Varro was a laborious student, and earned by his successful pursuit of all kinds of knowledge a reputation not deserved by his public life. From the first he adhered to the cause of Pompey. After Pharsalia, Caesar received him with the same clemency that he had shown to all

<sup>1</sup> To distinguish him from P. Varro Atacinus, a poet from the banks of the Atax (*Aude*) in Narbonese Gaul. See Horace, *Sat.*, i. 10. 46.



his foes, and employed him in promoting the plans which he had formed of establishing a public library at Rome. After the death of Caesar he retired to the country, and confined himself to literary pursuits; but this did not save him from being placed on the proscription-list. He escaped, however, to be received into favour by Octavian, and continued his studies in grammar, philology, and agriculture, till he reached the great age of eighty-eight, when he died in peace. Of his great work on the Latin language, originally consisting of twenty-five books, six remain to attest the industry of the man and the infantine state of philological science at the time.<sup>1</sup> His work on agriculture in three books, written when he was eighty years old, is still in our hands, and forms the most accurate account we possess from the Romans of the subject. Fragments and notices of many other writings on various topics have been handed down to justify the title given by the ancients to Varro—"the most learned of the Romans."

We will close this sketch of the prose literature of the last age of the Republic with a notice of Cicero's writings. Of his oratory and of his epistles something has been said in former pages; and it is to these productions *Cicero.* that we must attribute the great orator's place in the common-wealth of letters. Of his poems it were better to say nothing.<sup>2</sup> Of his memoirs and historical writings little is known, unless we count the fragments of "The Republic" in this class. But his rhetorical and philosophical essays each fill a goodly volume, and these writings have been the themes of warm admiration for ages past. Yet it is to be doubted whether the praises lavished upon them are not chiefly due to the magic influence of the language in which they are expressed. The "Brutus" doubtless is extremely interesting as containing the judgment of Rome's greatest orator on all the great speakers who preceded his own time. The dialogues on "The Orator" are yet more interesting as furnishing many records of his own professional experience. But the philosophical works of Cicero are of little philosophical value. They were written not so much to teach mankind as to employ his time at moments when he was shut out from public life. Their highest merits consist in that lucid and graceful style, which seduced the great Italian Latinists at the end of the fifteenth century to abjure

<sup>1</sup> For instance: *Ocrea*, quod opponebatur *ob crus*: *Anus*, a *nando*: *Lusciniola*, quia *luctuose canere* existimatur: *Ignis*, a *nascendo*, quod hic nascitur et omne quod nascitur ignis scindit: *Luna*, quod *lucet noctu*. *Sol*, quod *solum ita lucet* ut ex eo dies sit.

<sup>2</sup> Professor Tyrrell dissents from this opinion (*Latin Poetry*, 14-19).

all words and phrases which did not rest on Ciceronian authority, and which led Erasmus himself, who resisted this pedantry, to "spend ten years in reading Cicero."

The dramatic art fell more and more into dishonour. We hear, indeed, of two illustrious actors, Aesopus and Roscius, who were highly honoured at Rome and died in possession of large fortunes. But it was from the great families that their honours and the means of making money came. The theatres, as we have before observed, remained mere temporary buildings till the second Consulship of Pompey, when the first stone theatre was erected at Rome. The pieces represented were more of the nature of spectacles. Those in which Roscius and Aesopus acted must have been old plays revived. In this period hardly one name of a dramatic author occurs.<sup>1</sup> It was not in theatres, but in amphitheatres, that Rome and Roman towns sought amusement. Not only is the Flavian amphitheatre the most gorgeous of the remains of Imperial Rome, but at all places where Roman remains are preserved, at Verona in Transpadane Gaul, at Arles and Nismes in "the Province," at Trèves on the distant Moselle, it is the amphitheatre that characterises the Roman city, as it is the theatre that marks the Greek.

During this period, indeed, a new kind of dramatic representation was introduced, which enjoyed a short-lived popularity.

This was the Mime. The name at least was borrowed from the Greeks in Sicily. The Greek Mime was a kind of comic dialogue in prose, adapted to the purposes afterwards pursued by the Roman Satire. But while the Greek Mime in the hands of Sophron assumed a grave and dignified character, so that Aristotle classes him among poets though he wrote in prose, the Roman Mime was generally coarse and licentious. Sulla was particularly fond of these productions and their authors. After his time, D. Laberius, a Knight, strove to give them greater dignity. His Mimes, as the fragments show, were in iambic verse, and differed from comedy chiefly in their absence of plot and their relation to the topics of the day. The fame of Laberius was rivalled by Publilius Syrus, a freedman, who acted in his own Mimes, whereas the Knighthood of Laberius forbade this degradation. Caesar, however, on the occasion of his triumph, thought fit to order Laberius to enter into a contest with Syrus; and the Knight, though a man of sixty years, dared not refuse. His

<sup>1</sup> T. Quinctius Atta is almost the only one known to us. He died in 77 B.C., and it is evident from Horace (*Epist.*, ii. 1. 79) that his plays were the most popular dramas of the day.

sense of the indignity was strongly marked by a fine passage in the Prologue, still preserved :

"The Gods themselves cannot gainsay his might ;  
And how can I, a man, think to gainsay it ?  
So then, albeit I've lived twice thirty years  
Free from all taint of blame, I left my house  
At morn a Roman Knight and shall return  
At eve a sorry player. 'Faith, my life  
Is one day longer than it should have been." <sup>1</sup>

and in the course of the dialogue he expressed himself with freedom against the arbitrary power of the great Dictator :

"And then, good people, we've outliv'd our freedom." <sup>2</sup>

and in another line almost ventured to threaten :

———"It needs must be  
That he fears many, whom so many fear." <sup>3</sup>

Caesar, however, took no further notice of these caustic sallies than to assign the prize to Syrus.

In poetry, the long period from the death of Lucilius to the appearance of Virgil and Horace—a period of about sixty years—is broken only by two names worthy of mention. But it must be admitted that these names take a place in the first ranks of Roman literature. It is sufficient to mention Lucretius and Catullus.

We know very little about the personal history of T. Lucretius Carus. He seems to have been born about 96 B.C., and to have died by his own hand before 54 B.C. But if little is related of his life, his great poem on the nature *Lucretius.* of the universe is known by name at least to all. It is dedicated to C. Memmius, who, as Praetor in 58 B.C., took part against Clodius, and to this the poet probably alludes in the introduction to the first book, where he regrets the necessity which involved his friend in political struggles. <sup>4</sup>

Memmius was a profligate man and an unscrupulous politician, who sided now with the Senatorial party, now with Caesar, and ended his days in exile ; but he had a fine sense for literature, as is evinced by his patronage of Lucretius and of Catullus.

<sup>1</sup> "Etenim ipsi Di negare cui nil potuerunt,  
Hominem me denegare quis posset pati ?  
Ergo bis tricenis actis annis sine nota  
Eques Romanus are degressus meo  
Domum revertar Mimus. Nimirum hoc die  
Uno plus vixi mihi quam vivendum fuit."

<sup>2</sup> "Porro, Quirites, libertatem perdimus."

<sup>3</sup> "Necesse est multos timeat, quem multi timent."

<sup>4</sup> "Nam neque nos agere hoc patriæ tempore iniquo  
Possumus aequo animo, nec Memmi clara propago  
Talibus in rebus communi desse saluti."—i. 42.

The attempt of Lucretius in his great poem is to show that all creation took place and that all nature is sustained, without the agency of a creating and sustaining God, by the self-operation of the elemental atoms of which all matter is composed and into which all matter may be resolved.<sup>1</sup> The doctrine is the doctrine of Epicurus; and his arguments are in great part borrowed from the early Greek philosophers, who delivered their doctrines in heroic verse of the same majestic kind that extorts admiration from the reader of Lucretius. He professes unbounded reverence for the name of Empedocles; and doubtless, if the works of this philosopher, of Anaxagoras, and others were in our hands, we should see, what their fragments indicate, the sources from which Lucretius drew. Mingled with the philosophic argument are passages of noble verse; but here also it may be doubted how far we can believe in his originality. One of the most magnificent passages—the sacrifice of Iphigenia—is taken in every detail from the famous chorus in the *Agamemnon* of Aeschylus. When we see this and know that the almost universal habit of Latin poets was not to create, but to adapt and borrow, we must pause before we give Lucretius full credit for originality.

Yet none can rise from the perusal of Lucretius without feeling that he was a true poet. The ingenuity with which he employs Latin, a language unused to philosophical speculation, to express in the trammels of metre the most technical details of natural phenomena, is itself admirable. But more admirable are those majestic outbursts of song with which the philosophical speculations are diversified. The indignant and melancholy passion with which he attacks the superstitious religion of his time cannot but touch us, though we feel that his censure falls not upon superstition only but upon the sacred form of religion herself. But he was little appreciated at Rome. Cicero, who is said to have edited his poem, speaks of him with praise, but without enthusiasm.<sup>2</sup> Horace never makes mention of his name. Virgil alone showed the true feeling of a poet by his value for Lucretius. He scrupled not to borrow freely from his poem; many passages in the *Georgics* bear witness to the faithful study which he had bestowed on the works of his great predecessor,<sup>3</sup> and in one

<sup>1</sup> See Tennyson's *Lucretius*, which is valuable, both as criticism and as poetry.

<sup>2</sup> "Lucretii poemata, ut scribis, ita sunt: multis luminibus ingenii, multae tamen artis."—*Ad Q. fr.*, ii. 9 (11). 4; see Tyrrell *in loc.*

<sup>3</sup> Compare, for instance, *Georg.*, i. 121 *sqq.* with *Lucret.*, v. 931 *sqq.*

often quoted place he confesses his inferiority to one who (as it can hardly be doubted) was the great didactic poet of the Latins.<sup>1</sup> On the whole, it may be affirmed that Lucretius possessed the greatest genius of all Roman poets.

In striking contrast to the majestic gravity of Lucretius appears the second poet whom we have named. C. Valerius Catullus was a native of Verona or its neighbourhood. He was born in 87 B.C., and probably died about 54 B.C.<sup>2</sup> His father was a friend of Caesar and left his son in the possession of some property. He had a house on the lovely peninsula of Sirmio, at the foot of Lake Benacus, well known from his own description;<sup>3</sup> he had a villa near Tibur, and many of his poems indicate the licentiousness of the life which he led at Rome. He endeavoured to mend his broken fortunes by attending Memmius, the friend of Lucretius, when he went as Praetor into Bithynia, but was little satisfied with the result, and bitterly complained of the stinginess of his patron.<sup>4</sup> On the death of his brother, he addressed to Hortalus, probably a son of the orator Hortensius, that beautiful and affecting elegy which alone would entitle him to a foremost place among Roman poets.<sup>5</sup> Fearless of consequences, he libelled Caesar in language too coarse for modern ears. The great man laughed when he heard the libel, and asked the poet to dinner the same day.

The poems of Catullus range from gross impurity to lofty flights of inspiration. The fine poem called *Atys* is the only Latin specimen which we possess of that dithyrambic spirit which Horace repudiated for himself.<sup>6</sup> The elegy to Hortalus is perhaps the most touching piece of poetry that has been left us by the ancients. The imitation of Callimachus is a masterpiece in its way. The little poems on passing events—*pièces de circonstance* as the French call them—are the

---

*Georg.*, ii. 461 with *Lucret.*, ii. 24; *Georg.*, iii. 289 with *Lucret.*, i. 922; *Georg.*, iii. 478 *sqq.* with the description of the plague in *Lucret.*, vi. ; etc.

<sup>1</sup> "Sin, has ne possim naturae accedere partis,  
Frigidus obstiterit circum praecordia sanguis;  
Flumina amem silvasque inglorius! etc.

Felix qui potuit rerum cognoscere causas  
Atque metus omnis et inexorabile fatum  
Subiecit pedibus strepitumque Acherontis avari!"

*Georg.*, ii., 483 *sqq.*; *cp.* *Lucret.*, i. 62 *sqq.*, iii. 371, etc.

<sup>2</sup> On the theory that he lived till the Consulship of Vatinius (47 B.C.), which rests on *Cat.*, lii. 3, see Teuffel, i. 392.

<sup>3</sup> *Ad Sirmionem peninsulam*, xxxi.

<sup>4</sup> xxviii. 6, xlvii. 2.

<sup>5</sup> lxx. *Cp.* ci.

<sup>6</sup> *Hor.*, *Od.* iv. 2. 1.

most lively, natural, and graceful products of the Latin Muse. To those who agree in this estimate it seems strange that Horace should only notice Catullus in a passing sneer.<sup>1</sup> It is difficult to acquit the judge of jealousy. For Catullus cannot be ranked with the old poets, such as Livius, Ennius, and others, against the extravagant admiration of whom Horace not unjustly protested. His lyric compositions are as finished and perfect as the productions of Horace himself, who never wrote anything so touching as the elegy to Hortalus, or so full of poetic fire as the *Atys*.

With Catullus may be mentioned his friend C. Licinius Macer, commonly called Calvus, whom Horace honours by comprehending him in the same condemnation. He was  
*Licinius*  
*Calvus.* some five years younger, and was probably son of Licinius Macer, the historian. He was a good speaker, and a poet (if we believe other authors rather than Horace) not unworthy to be coupled with Catullus. He died at the early age of thirty-five.

Another poet highly praised by Catullus<sup>2</sup> was C. Helvius Cinna, supposed to be the unlucky man torn to pieces by the rabble after Caesar's funeral, by mistake for L. Cornelius Cinna.

At the time that the battles of Philippi secured to Italy somewhat of tranquillity, many others began to devote themselves to poetry. Among these were L. Varius Rufus, celebrated by Horace as the epic poet of his time;<sup>3</sup>  
*Epic poets.*  
*Varius.* and the few fragments from his pen which remain do much to justify the praise. He was the intimate friend both of Horace and Virgil.

Furius Bibaculus also may be mentioned here as an epic poet who attempted to commit to verse the campaign of  
*Furius Bibac-*  
*ulus.* Caesar in Gaul. Horace ridicules his pretensions in two well-known passages;<sup>4</sup> but there is reason to think that in the case of Furius also the satirist was influenced by some personal feeling.

But the fame of all other poets was obscured by the brightness which encircled the names of Virgil and Horace. Properly their history belongs to the Augustan or Imperial era. But as

---

<sup>1</sup> ———<sup>1</sup> Quos neque pulcher  
 Hermogenes unquam legit, neque simius iste,  
 Nil praeter Calvum et doctus cantare Catullum."—*Sat.*, i. 10. 17.

This was written indeed before Horace published any of his Odes, but not necessarily before he had partly executed his design of writing Latin lyrics.

<sup>2</sup> *Cat.* xiv., xcv.

<sup>3</sup> *Od.*, i. 6. 1; *Sat.*, i. 10. 44.

<sup>4</sup> *Sat.*, i. 10. 36; ii. 5. 41.



they both published some of their best works before the battle of Actium, a slight notice of them may be permitted here.

P. Virgilius (or Vergilius) Maro was born at Andes, a village near Mantua, in the famous year 70 B.C., so that he was entering manhood about the time when Lucretius put an end to his own life. From his father he in- *Virgil.*

herited a small estate. After the battle of Philippi, he was among those whose lands were handed over to the soldiery of the victorious triumvirs. But what seemed his ruin brought him into earlier notice than otherwise might have been his lot. He was probably introduced to Maecenas by Asinius Pollio, himself a poet, who had been made governor of Cisalpine Gaul; and at the intercession of Maecenas, was reinstated in his property.<sup>1</sup> This happy event, as every one knows, he celebrates in his first Eclogue. But it appears that when he tried to resume possession he was nearly slain by the rude soldier who had received a grant of the land, and it was some months before he was securely restored.<sup>2</sup> In company with Horace, Varius, and others, he attended Maecenas in the famous journey to Brundisium (in 38 or 37 B.C.). He had already (in the year 40 B.C.) written the famous Eclogue on the Consulship of Pollio, of which we have before spoken; and soon after this he began the Georgics, at the special desire of Maecenas. They seem to have been published in their complete form soon after the battle of Actium. For the rest of his life, which he closed at Brundisium in the fifty-first year of his age (B.C. 19), he was occupied with his Aeneid, which with modest self-depreciation he ordered to be destroyed. But it was revised by his friends, Varius and Plotius, and published by order of the Emperor, whom he had accompanied in a tour through Greece just before his death.

The character of Virgil was gentle and amiable, his manners simple and unobtrusive, and we hear little from himself of the great men with whom he was associated in friendship. His health was feeble, and his life passed away in uneventful study, of which his poems were the fruit and are the evidence. Nothing can be more finished than the style and versification of Virgil. His phraseology is so idiomatic as often to defy translation; his learning so great that each page requires a commentary. He bestowed the greatest labour in polishing his writings; his habit being, as is said, to pour forth a vast

<sup>1</sup> Page 702.

<sup>2</sup> To this he is supposed to refer in his ninth Eclogue. But see Prof. H. Nettleship's Excursus on Ecl. ix. in Conington's *Virgil*.

quantity of verses in the morning, which he reduced to a small number by continual elaboration, after the manner (as he said) of a bear licking her cubs into shape. It may be said that Cicero, Horace, and Virgil himself, completed the Hellenising tendency which had begun with Ennius. Lucretius, though he borrowed his matter from the old Greek philosophers, is much more Roman in his style. Catullus is more Roman still. But Virgil, except in idiom, is Greek everywhere. His Eclogues are feeble echoes of the Doric grace of Theocritus. His Georgics are elaborately constructed from the works of Hellenic writers, tempered in some of the noblest poetic passages with the grave majesty of Lucretius. In his Aeneid almost every comparison and description is borrowed from Homer, Apollonius, and other Greek poets. In strength of character his epic fails entirely. No one person in the Aeneid excites awe, love, sympathy, or any other strong feeling, unless we except the untimely end of Nisus and Euryalus, the fates of young Lausus and young Pallas, and the death of the heroine Camilla. But notwithstanding all this, such is the tender grace of his style, such the elaborate beauty of his descriptions, that we read again and yet again with renewed delight.

To give any adequate account of the gay Horace in a page is impossible. Q. Horatius Flaccus was born in the Colony of

*Horace.*

Venusia in the year 65 B.C., two years before the Consulship of Cicero. He was therefore about five years younger than Virgil, and two years older than Octavian. His death took place in the fifty-seventh year of his age (8 B.C.), following his friend and patron Maecenas, who had died in the earlier part of the same year, according to his own prophetic promise.<sup>1</sup> His father was a freedman by birth, and by profession a tax-collector, a good and tender parent, caring above all things for the education of his son. He was at the expense of taking the promising boy to Rome, probably when he was about twelve years old, where he attended the school of Orbilius, a man known to others besides Horace for his belief in the maxim that the "sparing of the rod spoils the child."<sup>2</sup> There he learnt Greek as well as Latin, by reading Homer and the old Roman poets. About the age of eighteen he went to complete his education at Athens, where M. Cicero, the younger, was his fellow-student. He was at Athens when

<sup>1</sup> *Od.*, ii. 17. 8.

<sup>2</sup> A line is quoted from Domitius Marsus, a brother poet, who was educated at the school of Orbilius :

"Si quos Orbilius ferula scuticaque cecidit."

Caesar was murdered, and became an officer in the army of Brutus. After the battle of Philippi he returned to Rome and was thrown entirely upon the world. He obtained, we know not how, a clerkship in the treasury, on the proceeds of which he contrived to live in the most frugal manner: vegetables and water formed his truly poetic diet.<sup>1</sup> But he was not left to languish in poverty. He became acquainted with Varius and Virgil, and was by them introduced to Maecenas; and we have from his own pen a pleasing narrative of the introduction.<sup>2</sup> For several months, however, he received no sign of the great man's favour; but before the journey to Brundisium he was evidently established in intimacy as great as Virgil's. Soon after this he published the first book of the Satires. The second book and the Epodes followed; but in the interval he had received a substantial reward from his patron in the present of the Sabine farm, so prettily described by himself.<sup>3</sup> But it must be said that, notwithstanding his dependence upon patrons, Horace always maintained a steady determination not to be subservient to any one, Emperor or Minister. The Epistle to Maecenas deserves especial notice; for it is written in a tone equally creditable to the poet who would not condescend to flatter the patron and to the patron who tolerated such freedom in the poet.<sup>4</sup> Hitherto, indeed, he had declined the name of poet. But the publication of the three books of his Odes indicated his title to this name, though still he declined to approach subjects of epic grandeur. Before this he had become known to Agrippa, and had been introduced, somewhat later, to Octavian. The first book of his Epistles seems to have been completed not later than 19 B.C., when the poet was about forty-five years of age.<sup>5</sup> Then followed the *Carmen Seculare*, which may be fixed, by the occasion to which it belongs, to the year 17 B.C. After this came the fourth book of Odes and the second book of Epistles with the Epistle to the Pisos (commonly called the *Ars Poëtica*), works in great part due to the express request of Augustus.

The popularity of the Odes of Horace has ever been great. He disclaims the title of poet for his other writings; and such of his works as might claim the rank of poems were written, he

<sup>1</sup> See the description of his day, which (it must be added) was written at a later date, in *Sat.*, i. 6. 110.

<sup>2</sup> *Sat.*, i. 6. 55.

<sup>3</sup> *Epist.*, i. 16. 4.

<sup>4</sup> *Epist.*, i. 7.

<sup>5</sup> It is impossible here to enter minutely into the time of the publication of Horace's works. Their *order* is pretty well ascertained, as given in the text. The date of none, except perhaps, the first book of the Epistles and the *Carmen Seculare*, can be settled *exactly*.

tells us, only under the sharp compulsion of poverty.<sup>1</sup> Much is borrowed from the Greek, as we know ; and if the works of the Greek lyric poets remained to us in a less fragmentary form, we should doubtless find far more numerous examples of imitation. But the style of Horace is so finished, his sentiments expressed with so much lively precision and in words so happily chosen, that he deserves the title which he claims of "Rome's lyric minstrel." No doubt his poetry was the result of great labour, and every perusal of his Odes strengthens the belief that he spoke literally when he compared himself to "the Matinee bee," rifling the sweets of many flowers and finishing his work with assiduous labour. It is in the first book of the Epistles that we must seek the true genius of Horace—the easy man of the world, popular with his great patrons, the sworn friend of his brother poets, good-natured to every one except the old poets of Rome, whom he undervalued partly (as in the case of Livius) from dislike for a rude and imperfect style, partly (as we must suspect in the case of Catullus and Calvus) from an irrepressible emotion of jealousy.

The elegiac poets, Tibullus and Propertius, with their younger and more famous compeer Ovid, and many writers of lesser note, belong to the Imperial era of Augustus.

A few words may be added on the subject of art generally. With the great fortunes that had been amassed, first by Senatorial rulers and afterwards by the favourites of the triumvirs, it was natural that art in some shape should be cultivated. But Greek masters still ruled at Rome ; and a taste began for collecting ancient works, such as resembles the eagerness with which the pictures of the Old Masters are sought in modern Europe. In the orations of Cicero against Verres we have an elaborate exposure of the base and greedy arts by which that wholesale plunderer robbed the Sicilians of their finest works of art. It was, no doubt, an extreme case ; but Verres would not have dared to proceed to extremities so audacious, unless he had been encouraged by precedents.

The arts also of the builder and engineer grew with the growing wealth of Rome. It was one of the chief and favourite occupations of C. Gracchus, during his brief reign, to improve the roads and bridges. The great Dictator Caesar had many projects in view when he was cut off—as, for instance, the draining of the Fucine lake by tunnel and

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.*, ii. 2. 50.

# ROME

in the time of Augustus.

Scale of Roman Feet

0 500 1000 2000 3000

Scale of Yards

0 100 500 1000

The fourteen Regions of Augustus are marked thus: I, II



1. Ara Maxima Herculis
2. Templum Vestae
3. Regia
4. Templum Jani
5. Templum Jovis Statoris
6. Carcer
7. Templum Jovis
8. Templum Matris Matutae
9. Templum Fortunae
10. Templum Saturni
11. Templum Cereris
12. Temp. Castoris et Pollucis
13. Curia Julia
14. Basilica Porcia
15. Rostra Vetera
16. Templum Junonis Reginae
17. Templum Concordiae
18. Templum Jovis Victoris
19. Templum Aesculapii
20. Basilica Aemilia
21. Porticus Minucia Vetis
22. Tabularium
23. Templum Minervae
24. Forum Julium
25. Basilica Julia
26. Postra Julia
27. N.B. The Walls of Servius had in the time of Augustus, in many places almost disappeared.
28. Templum Jovis Libertatis
29. Domus Augustarum
30. Templum Apollinis
31. Aedes Vestae





of the Pontine marshes by a great cutting, an alteration in the outfall of the Tiber, a canal through the Isthmus of Corinth. Part of these works was afterwards executed by Agrippa, who also (as we have said) constructed the Julian harbour, by uniting the Lucrine and Avernian lakes with the sea. In the year 33 B.C. Agrippa condescended to act as Aedile, and signalised his magistracy by a complete repair of the aqueducts and sewers.

Before this time, also, had begun the adornment of the city with noble buildings of public use. A fine Basilica<sup>1</sup> had been built by L. Aemilius Paullus, Consul in 50 B.C., with *Public build-* money received (so it was said) from Caesar, as the *ings.* price of the Consul's good service.<sup>2</sup> But the Basilica Aemilia was eclipsed by the splendid plans of the great Dictator. Many buildings had been cleared away by fires; others were pulled down; and the Basilica Julia rose on the south of the Forum along the frontage formerly occupied by the Tabernae Veteres. This fine work was completed by Octavian. In the Campus Martius, the enclosures for voting commenced by Julius Caesar (Septa Julia) were completed by Agrippa, and he also commenced the Diribitorium for distributing voting tickets, which Augustus finished and dedicated. A still more magnificent edifice were the Thermae or Hot-baths of Agrippa, and the noble Temple erected by the same great builder, which, as reconstructed by Hadrian, still remains under the name of the Pantheon. By these and many other works—*politic* because they both increased the magnificence and the health of the capital, and also gave constant employment to workmen who might otherwise have been turbulent—the Emperor Augustus was enabled to boast that he had “found Rome of brick, and left it of marble.”<sup>3</sup>

But it was not to Rome alone that Augustus, Agrippa, and others confined their labours. Nothing more excites our wonder than to stumble upon costly works, built with a solidity that seems to imply immortality, in the mountain districts of Italy, or in remote valleys of Gaul or Asia Minor or Africa. Wherever the Roman went he carried with him his art of building. The

<sup>1</sup> The Basilica was a hall of greater length than breadth, divided into a central nave, flanked on each side by aisles. Portions of these buildings were set apart for the use of the law-courts, and for the transaction of other kinds of business. The first Basilica was the Porcia, B.C. 184; the second the Fulvia, B.C. 179. The Basilica of Paullus, also called the Basilica Aemilia, was a restoration of the latter; it stood on the north side of the Forum, opposite to the Julian Basilica.

<sup>2</sup> Page 649.

<sup>3</sup> “Ut iure sit gloriatus, marmoream se relinquere quam latericium accepisset.”—Suet., *Aug.*, 28.

aqueduct which was constructed by Agrippa to supply Nemausus (*Nîmes*), a Colony of no great note, with water, is a proof of this assertion. The largest modern cities can hardly show a work of public utility so magnificent as the structure which is known to thousands of modern travellers under the name of the *Pont du Gard*.

It is needless here to repeat the dismal tale of corruption and vice which was presented in the life of most of the eminent Romans of the time. Even the rich who were not vicious in their pleasures, such as Lucullus and Hortensius, showed less of taste and good sense in their expenditures than a desire of astonishing by display. The old religion had lost its hold upon the public mind, though superstitious practices lingered among the uneducated classes. Philosophy did little to supply the void. The practical tendencies of the Roman mind attached it to the most practical doctrines of the Hellenic teachers. The moral philosophy of Zeno and Epicurus divided the Roman world ; for here were to be found broad and positive principles of action, comprehensible by all. The finer speculations of the Academic and Peripatetic Schools found few votaries among men who were equally downright in their purposes of virtuous or vicious living. In earlier times the Stoic doctrines had found a response in the hearts of men who revived the stern simplicity of the old Roman life. Some of the best men, in the times that followed the Punic Wars, were Stoics by practice as well as in profession. Such were the great Aemilius Paullus and his son, the younger Scipio. Notwithstanding the pride and self-sufficiency which was the common result of Zeno's discipline, there was something ennobling in the principle that a man's business in life is to do his duty, regardless of pleasure or pain, riches or poverty, honour or disgrace. But nature is too strong for such a system to prevail for many years or over many men. The popular philosophy of the later times was borrowed from the School of Epicurus, but it was an easy and fashionable modification of the morality of that philosopher. Epicurus taught that human happiness could not exist without pleasure, but he added that without the practice of virtue real pleasure could not exist. The former precept was adopted by the sensualists of Rome ; the latter was set aside.

Nothing more strongly proves the vicious state of society than the neglect of the marriage tie and the unblushing immorality of the female sex. Caesar and Octavian, though their own practice was not such as to set an example to society, both saw the danger of this state of things,

and both exerted themselves to restore at least outward decency. Lawful marriage they endeavoured to encourage or even to enforce by law.

But if religion had given way, superstition was busy at work. Men in general cannot entirely throw aside those sentiments which are unfolded with more or less of strength in every mind and in every state of social existence. *Superstition.*

There will still be cravings after spiritual things and the invisible world. The ancient Oracles had fallen into disrepute, and soon after the fall of the Republic (as is well known to Christian students) shrank into ignoble silence.<sup>1</sup> But behind the Hellenic, a new world was now opened to Rome. She became familiar with the mystic speculations and the more spiritual creeds of the East. The fanatical worship of the Egyptian Divinities, Isis and Serapis, became common even in Rome, notwithstanding the old feeling against Cleopatra, and notwithstanding many attempts to crush this worship. It became a common practice to seek for revelations of the future by means of the stars. The grim Marius carried about with him a Syrian soothsayer. To consult Babylonian star-readers was familiar to the friends of Horace. Magi were the companions of Roman magistrates. One of Juvenal's most striking pictures is that of the gloomy voluptuary Tiberius sitting in his island palace surrounded by a host of Chaldaean astrologers. Nor could the purer and sublimer images of the Hebrew Scriptures be unknown. Jews abounded in every populous city of the empire long before they were scattered by the fall of their Holy City. It can hardly be doubted that Virgil drew one of his noblest bursts of poetry from the inspiration of Isaiah's prophetic visions. Others sought the presence of God in nature and confounded the Divinity with his works. Man seemed to them such a mass of contradictory meannesses that they tried to solve the riddle of evil by supposing that he, like the animals and the whole creation, was but a machine animated by the universal and pervading spirit of the Deity. Such was the elder Pliny<sup>2</sup> who forfeited a life spent in the study of nature to the curiosity which led him to brave the fires of Vesuvius.

Out of this seething mass of doubts and fears, uncertain belief and troubling disbelief, rose an eagerness to find and a readiness to receive the principles of that religion *Preparation for Christianity.* which took root a few years later in Galilee and

<sup>1</sup> See F. W. H. Myers in *Hellenica*, p. 483.

<sup>2</sup> See his *Natural History* (ii. 5)—a very striking and interesting passage.

Judaea, and which extended itself with marvellous rapidity over every Province of the Empire. The purity of its morality attracted those whose hearts were still craving for something better than could be found in the religions or philosophies of the day. Its divine aspirations and the light it threw upon the baffling uncertainties of life beyond the grave, offered great attractions to those who were looking with doubt and fear upon all that lay before and behind. The breaking up of national distinctions, the union of all the Mediterranean shore under one strong and central government, the roads and canals which connected countries and Provinces under the magnificent rule of the first Caesars, were potent instruments in assisting the rapid march of the new religion. All things, moral and physical, internal and external, concurred to promote the greatest but most silent revolution that has ever passed over the mind of the civilised portion of the world.

**AUTHORITIES.** — For a fuller account of the reign of Augustus, see Bury's *Student's Roman Empire*, i.-vii.: the authorities are given in Furneaux' *Annals of Tacitus*, vol. i., Introd. vi., vii.

For Roman education, see Boissier, *Fin du Paganisme*, i. 171; for the University life of the time, Capes, *University Life in Ancient Athens*. On literature, see the general works cited in the note to ch. xxxii: also Sellar, *Roman Poets of the Republic*, *Virgil*, *Horace*.

On Roman philosophy, see the literature cited in Ueberweg's *History of Philosophy*, § 61 (Eng. tr.); on morals and religion, Boissier, *Religion Romaine*. Other subjects mentioned in this chapter are discussed in *Dict. Ant.*, "ARCHITECTURA," "BASILICA," "EMISSARIUM," "STATUARIA ARS," "VIAE," etc.



Gold coin of Augustus, bearing the words "Civibus servateis."



Coin of Agrippa, with head of Augustus.

## INDEX

### A.

- ABORIGINES of Latium, 18.  
*Accensi*, 166.  
*Accius* (Attius), 470.  
 Achaean League, 361-6; joins Rome, 371, 376; weakness, 383; Achaeans imprisoned, 419, set free, 428; independent, 430.  
 Actium, battle, 711.  
*Addicti*, 81, 84.  
 Aediles, Curule, 147, 322, 324, 582.  
 Aediles, Plebeian, 85.  
 Aegatian Isles, 242.  
 Aemilian Road, 389.  
 Aemilius, Mamercus, 120.  
 Aemilius Paullus, L., in Illyria, 251; consul, 270; death, 273.  
 Aemilius Paullus, L. (son of last), 389; consul, 412-6; death, 422.  
 Aenēas, 18.  
 Aequians, 12, 77, 92, 96.  
 Aesculapius, temples, 198, 443.  
 Aesernia, 157.  
 Aetolian League, 362, 365; at Cynoscephalae, 374; Syrian War, 380, 383.  
 Afranius, L., 624; in Spain, 653; Africa, 665; death, 668.  
 Afranius, L., poet, 470.  
 Africa, province, 444.  
 Agathocles, 200, 228.  
*Ager publicus*, 88, 124, 339; under Gracchus, 479, *sqq.*  
 Agis IV., of Sparta, 361.  
 Agrarian law, 88; of Licinius, 144; of M'. Curius, 197; of Tib. Gracchus, 479; of C. Gracchus, 497; of Saturninus, 531; of Brutus, 569; of Rullus, 615; of Caesar, 626.  
 Agriculture, 353, 452, 462; treatises, 723.  
 Agrigentum, 232, 287.  
 Agrippa, M. Vips., 686, 703; Julian Harbour, 705; Minister of Octavian, 709; works, 735, *sqq.*  
 Ahala, C. Servilius, 122.  
*Ala*, of Cavalry, 166.  
*Alaudae*, 672.  
 Alba Fuentia, 181.  
 Alba Longa, 19, 30-2.  
 Alban Hills, 77.  
 Alban Lake, 127.  
 Albinus, Aulus, 510.  
 Albinus, Spurius, 510.  
 Alexander of Epirus, 172, 201.  
 Alexander of Macedon, 225, 357.  
 Alexander, son of Perseus, 417.  
 Allobroges, 261, 507, 618.  
 Allia, battle, 135.  
 Alps, passage of Hannibal, 260.  
*Ambitus*, 396.  
 Ambracia, 207, 362, 386.  
 Ambustus, M. Fabius, 143-5.  
 Amiternum, 77, 156.  
 Amphitheatres, 724.  
 Amulius, 19, 20.  
 Amynder, 372.  
 Anagnia, 181, 211.  
*Ancile*, 27.  
 Ancus Marcius, 33-4.  
 Andiscus (Pseudo-Philip), 429.  
 Anicius, L., 412.  
 Annii, L., 164.  
 Annii, T., accuses Gracchus, 482.  
 Antemnae, 22.  
*Ante-signani*, 166.  
 Antigönus, 357.  
 Antigonus Döson, 360.  
 Antigonus Gonatas, 360.  
 Antiöchus, the Great, 359, 367, 375; crosses Hellespont, 379;

Antiochus, the Great—*continued*—  
 at Thermopylae, 382; at Mag-  
 nesia, 385.  
 Antiochus Epiphānes, 418-20.  
 Antonius, C. (cons. 63), 614, 618,  
 621; impeached, 630.  
 Antonius, M. (orator), 529, 535;  
 impeached, 537; death, 556.  
 Antonius, M. (Creticus), son of last,  
 604.  
 Antonius, M. (Mark Antony), 650;  
 joins Caesar, 652, 657; after  
 Pharsalia, 666, 676; conduct at  
 Caesar's murder, 684-93; at  
 Philippi, 697-8; Actium, 708-12.  
 Anxur, 173.  
 Apēga, 376.  
 Apollonia, 248.  
 Appeal (laws of), 114.  
 Appian Road, 194.  
 Apulians, 12, 157, 275.  
 Aquae Sextiae, 507; battle, 520.  
 Aquileia, 393.  
 Aquillius, M., 525; impeached,  
 535; death, 561.  
 Arātus, 361-5.  
 Arch, use of, 354.  
 Archelāus, 560-4.  
 Archimēdes, 285-6.  
 Architecture, 354, 735.  
 Arimīnum, 251.  
 Aristobūlus, 607.  
 Aristion of Athens, 561.  
 Aristonicus, 488.  
 Army, 165, 250; officers, 324-5;  
 changes, 394, 461.  
 Aruns, 49.  
 Arpinum, 510.  
 Arretium, 183.  
 Artists, 347.  
 Arts (design), 347.  
 Arts (useful), 353.  
 Ascanius, 19.  
 Ascūlum (Apulia), battle, 212.  
 Ascūlum (Picenum), 217, 538.  
 Asia, province, 488, 542, 558;  
 receives Mithridates, 561; fined,  
 565; fleeced by Scipio, 667; by  
 Cassius, 697.  
*Assidui*, 42.  
*Asylum*, 22.  
 Atellan Fables, 344.  
 Athenio, 525.  
 Athens, 360, 368, 369, 561-2.

Attalus I., 359, 365, *sqq.*, 372.  
 Attalus II., 420.  
 Attus Clausus, 76.  
 Attus Navius, 39.  
 Aventine Hill, 34, 104.  
 Augurs, 28, 190.  
 Auruncans (Ausonians), 12, 179.

## B.

BACCHANALIAN rites, 396.  
 Balbus, L. Cornelius, 722.  
 Balearic Isles, 227, 507.  
 Ballot, 448.  
 Basilicas, 735.  
 Bastarnians, 407.  
 Beneventum, 157, 177, 214, 267.  
 Bibulus, M. Calp., 612; consul,  
 626; admiral, 656; death, 657.  
 Blossius, 478, 486.  
 Bocchus, 512-5.  
 Boian Gauls, 203, 258, 388.  
 Bonōnia, 389.  
 Boviānum, 157.  
 Brennus, 134.  
 Brundisium, 217.  
 Bruttians, 158, 216; join Hannibal,  
 275, 290.  
 Brutulus Papius, 176.  
 Brutus, Dec. Junius, 447, 471;  
 attacks Gracchus, 503.  
 Brutus, Dec. Junius, 653; conspira-  
 tor, 679, 684; in Gaul, 688; at  
 Mutina, 690; death, 692.  
 Brutus, L. Junius, 53, 55, 57.  
 Brutus, L. Junius (one of first  
 Tribunes), 83.  
 Brutus, M. Junius (Marian leader),  
 569, 590.  
 Brutus M. Junius (son of last), 661;  
 conspirator, 677, 684, 688, 699,  
*sqq.*  
 Building, 353, 732.  
 Burial, 355.  
 Burning alive, 110.  
 Byrsa of Carthage, 227.

## C.

CAECILIUS, comic poet, 470.  
 Caeles Vibenna, 24, 36.  
 Caelian Hill, 24, 33.  
 Caelius Rufus, M., 650, 666.  
 Caenina, 22.



- Caepio, Q. Servilius, in Spain, 446.  
 Caepio, Q. Servilius, 518; condemned, 527.  
 Caepio, Q. Servilius, opposed Saturninus, 532.  
 Caeré, 154, 219.  
 Caesar, C. Julius, 583; early life, 610, *sqq.*, 616, 620, 625; in Gaul, 633, *sqq.*, 643; 2nd Civil War, 649, *sqq.*; dictator, 666, 670; reforms, 671; death, 680; funeral, 684-5.  
 Caesar, Lucius, 539-44.  
 Caesar, Sextus Julius, 430.  
 Calatinus, A. Atilius, 240.  
 Calendar, 19; of Flavius, 193; Caesar, 674.  
 Cales, 173.  
 Callicrates, 419, 428, 429.  
 Calpurnian Law, 497.  
 Calvus, C. Licinius Macer, 728.  
*Camēna*, 27.  
 Camillus, Lucius, 139.  
 Camillus, M. Furius (dictator), 128-30; 138, 147.  
 Campagna, 77.  
 Campanians, 12, 157, 168, 275.  
 Cannae, 270.  
 Cantabrians, 390.  
 Canuleius (law), 118.  
 Canusium, 14.  
 Capitol, 48, 52, 59, 572.  
 Capua, 157-8, 170; Prefecture, 220, 290; (Hannibal), 275, 288, 29c.  
 Carbo C. Papirius, 487-90, 505.  
 Carbo, Cn. Papirius, 553; consul, 567-8, 571, 573-4; death, 578.  
 Carneades, 423.  
 Carseöli, 181.  
 Carthage (see table of Contents), *cp.* 444, 501.  
 Carthaginians, 74, 228. See *Punic Wars*.  
 Carthago Nova, 252, 307.  
 Carvilius, Sp., 186, 348.  
 Carvilius, Sp. (proposal), 277.  
 Casca, P. Servilius, 679.  
 Casinum, 180.  
 Casilinum, 268, 276.  
 Cassius Longinus, C., 643, 664; conspirator, 679, 688; in Syria, 696; death, 698.  
 Cassius Longinus, Q., 651, 654.  
 Cassius, Sp., 87, 100.  
 Castor and Pollux, 63.  
 Catilina, L. Sergius, 576, 613-22.  
 Cato, M. Porcius ("The Censor"), early life, 399; Tribune, 314, 390; legate of Glabrio, 382; consul, 390; attacks Hellenic fashions, 400; assails Scipio, 401; Censor, 403; less rigorous, 422; dismisses Greeks, 423; defends Spaniards, 424; intercedes for Achaeans, 428; Carthage, 434; death, 441.  
 Cato, M. Porcius (of Utica), 605, 620, 624; Cyprus, 631; 639, 644; Corcyra, 665; Utica, 666, 668.  
 Catullus, 727.  
 Catulus, Q. Lutatius (first Punic War), 242.  
 Catulus, Q. Lutatius (Cimbri), 519-24, 556.  
 Catulus, Q. Lutatius (son of last), 589, 597.  
*Cēlēres*, 26.  
 Celtiberians, 390.  
 Censorinus, L., 436, *sqq.*  
 Censors, 120, 169, 488.  
 Censorship, 404, 582, 597, 717.  
 Census of Servius, 44.  
*Centuriae*, 42.  
*Centuria praerogativa*, 281.  
 Cethēgus, C. Cornelius, 618-9.  
 Chaeroneia, battle, 562.  
 Charops, 370.  
 Charops (grandson of last), 411.  
 Chrysogonus, 580, 584.  
 Cicero, M. Tullius, 542, 584; (Verres), 596; consulship and speeches, 614-29; impeached, 630; exiled, 631; re-called, 638-41; joins Pompey, 655; Pharsalia, 665, 676; at Caesar's murder, 683-4; leaves Rome, 687; returns, 689-90; death, 693; writings, 720-3.  
 Cicero Q. Tullius, 637, 641.  
 Cilician Pirates, 594, 603-5.  
 Cimber, L. Tillius, 679.  
 Cimbrians, 517-24.  
 Ciminian Hills, 78, 180.  
 Cincinnatus, L., 96-8, 122.  
 Cincius Alimentus, L., 347.  
 Cinēas, 210, 213, 353.  
 Cinna, poet, 686.  
 Cinna, L. Cornelius, 552-7, 567-8.  
 Circus Maximus, 40.  
 Cirta, 310, 509, 512.

Cities and civilisation, 338.  
*Civitates liberae et foederatae*, 223, 334.  
 Classes of Servius, 42, 328.  
 Claudius, Appius (I.), 76, 82.  
 Claudius, Ap. (II.), 90, 102.  
 Claudius, Ap. (III.), Decemvir, 105, *sqq.*  
 Claudius, Ap., Caecus, Censor, 184-94, 210.  
 Claudius, Ap., grandson of last, 229.  
 Claudius, P., 240.  
 Cleomènes of Sparta, 361-2.  
 Cleon, slave leader, 455-6.  
 Cleopātra, 662, 664-5; at Rome, 677, 685; with Antony, 708-12; death, 713.  
 Clients, 25.  
 Cloāca Maxima, 40.  
 Clocks, 353.  
 Clodius, Ap., 601.  
 Clodius, P., 602, 613, 629-30; Tribune, 632, 637-8; attacked, 639; death, 646.  
 Cloelia, 60.  
 Clubs, or *Coitiones*, 190.  
 Cluilius, 31.  
 Coinage, 294, 348.  
 Collatinus, 39, 40.  
 Colline Gate, 289, 549; battle, 574.  
 Colonies, 221-2; of Gracchus, 499; of Sulla, 580; of Caesar, 673; of Octavian, 702, 718.  
 Columna Rostrata, 234.  
 Comedy, 467, *sqq.*  
*Comitia Centuriata*, 42-4, 169, 328-31.  
*Comitia Curiata*, 25, 81, 322.  
*Comitia Tributa*, 91, 329.  
*Commerci ius*, 169.  
 Compitalia, 28.  
 Concord, Temples, 147, 504.  
*Confarreatio*, 342.  
*Cōnubium*, 36-7, 115; conceded by Canuleian law, 118; *c. ius*, 169.  
 Consualia, Consus, 22.  
 Consuls, 56, 105, 111, 119; Plebeian, 144, 150-1, 322; re-election, 322, 449; dictatorial power, 328, *cp.* 502, 532, 616, 618, 717.  
*Cōoptatio*, 190.  
 Corcȳra, 248, 251.  
 Corfinium, 538, 652.  
 Corinth, 431.

Coriolanus, C. Marcius, 92, *sqq.*  
 Corn Law, of C. Gracchus, 496; of Saturninus, 531; Clodius, 632; Caesar, 671.  
 Corn, price, 293, 496.  
 Cornelia, 477, 496, 504.  
 Cornelian Laws, 581.  
 Coruncanii, 247.  
 Coruncanus, 190, 211.  
*Corvi*, 233.  
 Cossus, A. Cornelius, 126, 141, 159.  
 Cotta, C. Aurelius (orator), 544.  
 Cotta, L. Aurelius (law), 596.  
 Cotta, M. Aurelius, 599.  
 Crassus, L. Licinius (orator), 505, 529, 536; death, 537.  
 Crassus, P. Licinius, 409-10.  
 Crassus, P. Licinius (Mucianus), 486-8.  
 Crassus, P. Licinius (Dives), 570, 575; Praetor, 593; Consul, 594, 597-8; relations with Caesar, 621, 624, 637; pro-consul, 640; death, 642.  
 Crassus, P. Licinius, son of last, 634; death in Parthia, 642.  
 Cremōna, 251.  
 Crispīnus, 297-8.  
 Crōton, 14, 213.  
 Crustumium, 22; *cp.* 46.  
 Cures, 22-3.  
*Curiae*, 25.  
 Curia Hostilia, 33.  
 Curiatii, 31.  
 Curio, C. Scribonius, 650, 655.  
 Curius Dentatus, M., 196, 214.  
 Curtius, M., 149.  
 Curule Magistrates, 143.  
 Cynoscephalae, 373.  
 Cyzicus, siege, 600.

## D.

DALMATIANS conquered, 422.  
 Debtor and Creditor, 81.  
 Decemvirate, 105-116.  
 Decius Jubellius, 208, 213, 217.  
 Decius Magius, 275.  
 Decius Mus, P. (I.), 159, 165-7.  
 Decius Mus, P. (II.), 184-6.  
 Decius Mus, P. (III.), 212.  
*Decuriae*, 26.  
 Delos, 420, 453.

Delphic oracle, 53, 127, 274.  
 Demetrius of Pharos, 248, 251, 364, 367.  
 Demetrius Poliorcètes, 358-9.  
 Demetrius, son of Philip, 406-8.  
 Demetrius, son of Seleucus, 421.  
 Dentātus, Siccius, 107.  
 Dictator, 61, 150.  
 Diaeus, 429 31.  
*Diminutio capitis*, 115.  
 Dionysius of Syracuse, 200, 228.  
 Diophānes, 478, 487.  
 Dolabella, P. Cornelius, 655, 666;  
   consul, 684; death, 696.  
 Domitius Ahenobarbus, 640, 652,  
   656, 659, 661.  
 Drama, 344, 471, 724.  
 Drepana, 240.  
 Drusus, M. Livius, 499.  
 Drusus, M. Livius (son of last),  
   535-7.  
 Duillius, C., 233.  
 Duillius, M., 110, 113.  
*Duumviri perduellionis*, 30-2.  
 Dyrrhachium, 658.

## E.

EBRO, 253.  
 Eclipse at Pydna, 413.  
 Ecnōmus, 234.  
 Education, 591, 720, 730.  
 Egeria, 27.  
 Egypt, 358.  
*Emeriti*, 325.  
*Emissarium*, 127-8, 355.  
 Emporiae, 276, 307, 391.  
 Engineering, 355, 732.  
 Enna in Sicily, 285, 454, 456.  
 Ennius, Q., 346, 466.  
 Epaphroditus, 576.  
 Epicycles, 283-4, 286-7.  
 Epidaurus, 198.  
 Epirus, 410, 415, 432.  
*Equites*, 26, 39, 42, 460.  
*Ergastula*, 83, 454.  
 Etruria, 78, 180.  
 Etruscan Art, 347-8.  
 Etruscans, 12; help Tarquin, 59,  
   75; threaten Rome, 92, 208;  
   under Marius, 553; Sulla, 572.  
 Eumēnes, 409-10, 420.  
 Eunus, 454-6.  
 Evander, 18, 21.  
*Exercitus*, 42.

## F.

FABII, 99, 347-8.  
 Fabius Buteo, M., Dictator, 277.  
 Fabius Dorso, 137.  
 Fabius Gurgēs, 187, 218.  
 Fabius Maximus, Q. (Rullianus),  
   175-6, 180, 183-4; reforms, 195.  
 Fabius Maximus, Q. (cunctator),  
   267-9, 279-81; at Tarentum,  
   296; death, 317.  
 Fabius Maximus (son of last), 282.  
 Fabius Maximus, Q. (Allobrogicus),  
   507.  
 Fabius Pictor, C. (painter), 348.  
 Fabius Pictor, Q. (writer), 274,  
   347.  
 Fabrateria, 173.  
 Fabricius Luscinius, C., 204, 211.  
 Families at Rome, 37.  
 Fannius Strabo, 499, 501.  
*Fasces*, 25, 58, 61, 106.  
 Father, power of, 342.  
 Favonius, 659, 661.  
 Fescennine verses, 344.  
*Fētiāles*, 33.  
 Fidēnae, 126.  
 Fimbria, C. Flavius, 563-5.  
 Financial measures, 2nd Punic War,  
   293, 313.  
 Flamens, 28.  
 Flamininus, T. Quinctius, 370-8,  
   381-3, 386, 402.  
 Flamininus, L., 368, 370-1; his  
   cruelty, 396, 403.  
 Flaminius, C., 249-50, 264-6.  
 Flavius, Cn., 193.  
 Foreigners' Rights, 343.  
*Fortuna Muliebris, et Virilis*,  
   Temples, 96.  
*Fratres Arvāles*, 344.  
 Freedmen, 191-5, 341.  
 Fregellae, 173, 180; taken by  
   Pyrrhus, 211; revolts, 494.  
 Frentanians, 157, 181.  
 Fucine Lake, 77, 672.  
 Fulvia, 694, 702-3.  
 Fulvius Flaccus, M., 484; Consul,  
   493-4; Tribune, 499-503.  
 Fulvius Flaccus, Q. (Second Punic  
   War), 280, 288-90, 295-9.  
 Fulvius Nobilior, M., 386, 424.  
 Furculae Caudinae, 177.  
 Furius Bibaculus, 728.

## G.

- GABINIUS, A., his law, 604; Egypt, 639; Syria, 642; death, 666.  
 Galatians, 359, 386-7.  
 Galba, P. Sulpicius, 366, 368-70.  
 Galba, Serv. Sulpicius, 425, 474.  
 Gallaeans, 390.  
*Gallia Braccata et Togata*, 249.  
 Gaul, Cisalpine (Lombardy), 7.  
 Gaul, 421; Caesar in Gaul, 633-7, 643-5; enfranchised, 672.  
 Gauls, 132-9; (Senonians), 183, 185-6; (and Boians), 203, 248-50; in Greece, 360.  
 Gaurus, Mount, battle, 159.  
 Gellius Egnatius, 184-5.  
 Gēlon of Syracuse, 93.  
*Gentes*, 37, 100, 137.  
 Genthius, 412.  
 Genucius, 89.  
 Glabrio, M<sup>r</sup>. Acilius, 382-3.  
 Gladiators, 592, *sqq.*  
*Gladius Hispanus*, 165.  
 Glaucia, C. Servilius, 528, 530-3.  
 Golossa, 440.  
 Gracchus, C. Sempronius, 481, 484, 488-9, 492-504.  
 Gracchus, Tib. Sempronius (Second Punic War), 277, 280, 281, 288.  
 Gracchus, Tib. Sempronius, son of last, 392, 401, 477.  
 Gracchus, Tib. Sempronius (Tribune), 442, 445, 447-85.  
 Greece, laws, 104; Greece and Rome, 198-202; Isthmian games, 248; submits to Rome, 371-5; province, 431-2.  
 Graecia, Magna, 13, 210, 291.

## H.

- HAEMUS, 408.  
 Hamilcar Barca, 241-4, 246, 251-2.  
 Hannibal in Spain, 251-5; war with Rome, 256-320; in Africa, 317-9; reforms, 379; in Syria, 380-1, 383; death, 402.  
 Hasdrūbal in Spain, 252.  
 Hasdrubal (brother of Hannibal), 257, 276, 298-302.  
 Hasdrubal (son of Gisgo), 310, 314-5.  
 Hasdrubal (Third Punic War), 435-43.

- Hastati*, 166.  
 Helmanticé, 253.  
 Heraclea, battle, 209.  
 Heraclides, 367.  
 Heralds, 33.  
 Herdonius, 97.  
 Hermæan Promontory, 235.  
 Hernici, 77, 100, 181.  
 Hiero, 200, 228-9, 231, 283.  
 Hieronŷmus, 283.  
 Hills of Rome, 24.  
 Himilco Phameas, 440.  
 Hippocrates, 283-4, 286.  
 Hirtius, A., 689-91.  
 Historians, Roman, 347, 473, 721.  
 Horatii, 31, 32.  
 Horatius Barbatus, M., 110, 112.  
 Horatius Cocles, 59.  
 Horatius Flaccus, Q., 697, 730.  
 Hortensius, Q. (dictator), laws, 197.  
 Hortensius, Q. (orator), 596, 637, 720.  
 Husband and Wife, 342.  
 Hycānus, 608.

## I.

- IAPŶDES, 490.  
 Iapygians, 11.  
 Icilius, L., 104, 108, 111.  
 Ilia, 19.  
 Illyrians, 247-8, 251, 412.  
*Imperium*, 25, 56.  
 Insubrian Gauls, 250, 262, 388.  
*Insula*, 105.  
 Interamna, 180.  
 Intercession of Tribunes, 85, 90, 329.  
 Interest, 114, 149, 161, 546.  
*Interrēges*, 26, 103.  
 Ipsus, battle, 358.  
 Isthmian Games, 248.  
 Istrians, 393.  
 Italian allies, 223; taxation, 336; Scipio, 489; Flaccus, 493; C. Gracchus, 500; Marius, 531; Drusus, 537; social war, 538, *sqq.*; Sulla, 547; Cinna, 552; after civil wars, 718.  
 Italy, geography, 2-9; name, 10; subject to Rome, 216, *sqq.*

## J.

- JANICULUM, 34.  
 Janus, 28, 99, 247, 714.

Jews, 420-1, 666, 708.  
 Juba, 655, 669.  
 Judacilius, 539, 542.  
*Judices*, or Jurymen, 497; Caepio, 528; Drusus, 534, 536; Sulla, 582; Pompey, 595; Caesar, 673.  
 Jugurtha, 508-16.  
 July, Quintilis, 688.  
*Jupiter Latiāris*, 19, 77; *Feretrius*, 22; *Stator*, 23.  
*Jura*, 169; *Jus Latii*, 222, 543.  
*Justitium*, 547.

## K.

KINGS, 67.  
 Knights, see *Equites*.

## L.

LABĒRIUS, Dec., 724.  
 Labiēnus, T., 651, 665, 668, 670.  
 Labienus, Q. (Parthicus), 703, 705.  
 Laelius, C., 306-7, 314, 384, 389.  
 Laelius, C., son of last, 441-2, 486-7.  
 Laenas, M. Popilius, 151, 154.  
 Laetorius, C., 90.  
 Laevinus, M. Valerius, 282, 287, 293-8; in Greece, 365, 368.  
 Laevinus, P. Valerius, 208-9.  
 Language, Latin, 14-5, 343, *sqq.*  
 Latin Colonies, 221, 296, 313.  
 Latins, origin, 14; of Alba, 32; of sea coast, 34, 169.  
 Latin League, 100, 153, 163-9.  
 Lautūlae, Pass, 160, 179.  
 Law, study, 473.  
*Legati Caesaris*, 718.  
 Legends, 66, *sqq.*  
 Legion of Romulus, 26.  
 Lentulus, P. Cornelius (Spinther), 638-9; at Pharsalia, 661.  
 Lentulus, P. Sura, 618, 619.  
 Leontini, 284.  
 Lepidus, M. Aemilius, 368, 389.  
 Lepidus, M. Aemilius (cons. 78), 589, 590.  
 Lepidus, M. Aemilius (son of last), 684, 691-3, 701-3, 706-7.  
*Lex Annālis*, 322.  
*Libertīni*, *Liberti*, 191.  
 Library, first public, 674.  
 Licinian Rogations, 143-6, 150, 479.

Licinius Macer, C., 722.  
 Licinius Stolo, 143, *sqq.*  
 Ligarius, Q., 679.  
 Ligurians, 388-9, 422.  
 Lilybaeum, 213, 240-4.  
 Livius Andronicus, M., 345.  
 Livius Salinātor, M., 251, 299-303, 335.  
 Locri, 210, 213-4.  
*Locuplēs*, 42.  
 Luca (Lucca), 389, 637.  
 Lucanians, 12, 158, 172-4, 216, 275.  
 Lucēres, 25-6, 39.  
 Lucilius, C., 473.  
 Lucretia, 54.  
 Lucretius Carus, T., 725.  
 Lucullus, in Spain, 424-5.  
 Lucullus, L. Licinius (grandson of last), 562-5; third Mithridatic War, 600-5; death, 641.  
 Lucullus, M. (brother of last), 594.  
*Lucumo*, 25, 36.  
 Lusitanians, 390.  
*Lustrum*, 120.  
 Lycortas, 419.

## M.

MACCABAEUS, Judas, 421.  
 Macedon, 359, 414; province, 432.  
 Macedonian Wars, 365, *sqq.*, 368, *sqq.*, 406, *sqq.*, 428.  
 Maecēnas, 183, 702, 709.  
 Maelius, Sp., 122.  
 Maenius, C., 169, 179, 190.  
 Maenius, Tribune, 89.  
 Mago, 258, 276, 311, 316.  
 Maharbal, 257, 273.  
 Mamercus Aemilius, 120.  
 Mamers (Mars), 156.  
 Mamertines, 200, 229.  
 Mancinus, A. Hostilius, 411.  
 Mancinus, C. Hostilius, 445-7.  
*Mancīpes*, 337.  
 Manilian Law, 605.  
 Manlius Capitolinus, M., 137, 141.  
 Manlius Torquatus, T., 138, 164.  
 Manlius Torquatus, T., 273, 283.  
 Manlius Vulso, Cn., 386-7.  
 Mantua, 13.  
 Marcellus, C. (cons. 50), 649.  
 Marcellus, C. (cons. 49), 651.  
 Marcellus, M. Claudius, 250, 274-80, 284-7, 292-7.  
 Marcus Rutilus, C., 151, 154, 175.

Marius, C., 487, 510-15; Consulships, 519-24, 529-30; Social War, 539; Civil War, 546-57.  
 Marius, C., son of last, 550, 572, 575.  
 Maroneia, 406.  
 Marriage, 342, 736. See *Conubium*.  
 Marrucinians, 12, 157, 181.  
 Mars Gradivus, 27.  
 Marsians, 12, 157, 181, 539.  
 Marsian War, 539.  
 Massilia, 259, 494, 653-4.  
 Massinissa, 309-11, 315-7; 3rd Punic War, 434-40.  
 Mastarna, 41, 69.  
 Matésé, Mt., 157.  
 Matho, 245-6.  
 Matronalia, 23.  
 Memmius, C., 509, 532.  
 Mēnas, 704.  
 Menenius Agrippa, 84.  
 Menenius, son of last, 89.  
 Mercenary War, 245-6.  
 Messalla, M. Valerius, 697-8.  
 Messāna, 200, 228.  
 Messapians, 11, 217.  
 Metapontum, 288.  
 Metaurus, battle, 302.  
 Métayers, 462.  
 Metelli, 346, 506.  
 Metellus, L. Caecilius, 237-8.  
 Metellus, L. (Tribune), 653.  
 Metellus, Q. Caecilius (Celer), 625.  
 Metellus, Q. Caecilius (Creticus), 604-5, 625.  
 Metellus, Q. Caecilius (Macedonicus), 429-32, 445, 506.  
 Metellus, Q. Caecilius (Nepos), 623, 638.  
 Metellus, Q. (Numidicus), 510-13, 528; banished, 531-3.  
 Metellus, Q. Caecilius (Pius), 533; and Sulla, 554, 570, 583; in Spain, 585, 590; death, 617.  
 Metellus Scipio, 647, 659-60, 667-8.  
 Mettus Curtius, 23.  
 Mettus Fuffetius, 31, 32.  
 Micipsa, 440, 508.  
 Milo, 205, 213, 215, 216.  
 Milo, T. Annius, 638, 646, 666.  
 Mimes, 724.  
 Minucius, L., 122.  
 Minucius Rufus, M., 267, 269.

Mithridātes, 534, 541-2; Wars, 558-65, 591, 599-608.  
 Monarchy of Augustus, 715, *sqq.*  
 Money, 348-53.  
 Mons Sacer, 85.  
 Mucius, 59.  
 Mummius, L., 431-3.  
 Munda, battle, 670.  
 Municipal towns, 220.  
 Murēna, L. Licinius, 565, 583-4, 599.  
 Murena, L. Licinius (son of last), 617, 620.  
 Mutīnes, 287.  
 Mutina, 389, 690-1.  
 Mylae, 233.

## N.

NABIS, 372, 376, 380.  
 Naevius, 115, 345.  
 Names of Romans, 37, 46, 142.  
 Narbo Martius, 501.  
 Narnia, 183.  
 Neapolis, 14, 173.  
 Nero, C. Claudius, 288, 299-304.  
*Nexi*, 81.  
 Nicopolis at Actium, 712.  
 Nicopolis in Pontus, 606.  
 Niebuhr, 67.  
 Nola, 173, 180, 275; Social War, 543, 577.  
 Norbānus, C., 568-70.  
 Nuceria, 275.  
 Numa Pompilius, 26-9.  
 Numantia, 425, 449.  
 Numidia, 310, 440, 669.  
 Numitor, 19, 20.

## O.

OCTAVIA, 704, 708.  
 Octavius (C. Julius Caesar Octavianus), 617, 677; Caesar's heir, 685-6, 689-91; Triumvir, 692-3, 701-14; at Rhēgium, 696; at Philippi, 697-8; Monarchy, 715, *sqq.*  
 Octavius, Cn., 552-5.  
 Octavius, M., 480-1.  
 Ofella, Q. Lucretius, 575-8.  
 Ogulnian Law, 190.  
 Opālia, 33.  
 Opimius, L., 494, 499; consul, 501-5; exile, 510.



Oppian law, 278, 403.  
Oratory, 473, 720.  
Orestes, L. Aurelius, 430, 493.  
Oscans, 16.  
Ostia, 34.  
Otacilius Crassus, T., 281, 292.

## P.

PACORUS, 703, 705.  
Pacuvius Calavius, 275.  
Pacuvius, M., poet, 470.  
Pāgānalia, 28.  
*Pagi*, 28, 45.  
Palaepolis, 173.  
Painting, 347.  
Pangaeus, mines, 406.  
Panormus, 237.  
Pansa, C. Vibius, 689-91.  
Papirius Cursor, L., 175, 176.  
Papirius Cursor, L., 186, 353.  
Parthians, 642-3, 677, 703, 705.  
*Patres Conscripti*, 56; *Patres Minorum Gentium*, 39.  
Patricians, 36-9, 80-1, 321, 338.  
Patrons and Clients, 25, 36.  
*Peculium*, 340.  
Peditus, Q., 692-3.  
Pelignians, 12, 157, 181.  
Pennus, M. Junius, 493.  
Pentrians, 157.  
"People" of the city, 463.  
Pergamus, 359, 507, 558.  
Perperna, M., 590-2.  
Perseus, 407-17.  
Perusine War, 702.  
Petreius, M., 621, 653, 668.  
Phalanx v. Legion, 209, 373, 413.  
Pharnāces, 609, 666.  
Pharsālia, battle, 660.  
Philip V. of Macedon, 278, 282-3, 363; 1st and 2nd Macedonian Wars, 365-76; Syrian War, 381-6; last years, 406-8.  
Philippi, battles, 697-9.  
Philippus, L. Marcius, 536.  
Philippus, Q. Marcius, 409-12.  
Philopoemen, 366, 371, 419.  
Philosophers, Greek, 423.  
Philosophy, 736.  
Picenians, 12, 157, 217.  
*Pietas*, 18, 342.  
Pirates, 594, 603-5.  
Piso, Cn., 613.

Piso, L. Calpurnius (Caesoninus), 440, 455.  
Piso, L. Calpurnius (Frūgi), 440.  
Piso, L. Calpurnius (father-in-law of Caesar), 630.  
Placentia, 251, 258, 389.  
Plancus, L. Munatius, 691, 703.  
Plautus, T. Maccius, 468-9.  
Plebeians, 37, 38, 41; Tribunes, 85, 90; Decemvirs, 106; inter-mariage, 118, 122; Consulate, 143, 147; Dictatorship, 151; Pontificate, 190; increase, 338.  
*Plebiscita*, 112, 116, 169.  
Pleminius, Q., 312.  
Pollio, C. Asinius, 674, 691, 704.  
Polybius, 419, 426, 431-2.  
*Pomērium*, 21, 46.  
Pompeius, Cn., 665, 670.  
Pompeius Magnus, Cn., 570-2, 584, 591-2; Consul, 594-8; successes, 604-9; at Rome, 623-30; Triumvir, 637-42; supremacy, 645-8; Civil War, 653-63.  
Pompeius, Q., 445.  
Pompeius, Sextus, 661, 670, 695-6, 703-8.  
Pompeius Strabo, Cn., 540, 542, 543, 552, 554.  
Pons Sublicius, 34, 59.  
*Pontifices*, 27, 190.  
Pontius, C., 177-9, 187-8.  
Pontius, C., of Telesia, 573-4.  
Popillius Laenas, 418, 420.  
*Populus*, 25, 36, 41, 44, 116.  
Porcius Laeca, P., 114.  
Porsēna, 59, 75.  
*Possessōres*, 479.  
*Postliminium*, 447.  
Postumius, L., 204-5.  
Postumius Regillensis, M., 123.  
Postumius, Sp., 177-8.  
Postumius Tubertus, A., 123.  
*Praefectura annonae*, 122.  
Praenestē, 77, 153, 170; Civil Wars, 572-5, 577.  
Praetor, 56, 147, 323.  
*Praevindicatio*, 614.  
Prefectures, 219-20.  
*Princeps Senatus*, 597, 717.  
*Principes*, 166.  
Privernum, 172.  
*Privilegium*, 114.  
Proconsulship, 174, 325.

*Prōlētarij*, 43.  
 Proscription, 577, 693.  
 Provinces, 333-7, 498, 501, 718.  
*Prōvocatio*, 114.  
 Prusias, 402, 420.  
 Ptolemy Aulētes, 639, 647, 662.  
 Ptolemy Ceraunus, 208, 213, 360.  
 Ptolemy Epiphānes, 358.  
 Ptolemy Philadelphus, 217.  
 Ptolemy Philopātor, 358.  
 Ptolemy Sōter, 207, 357, 359.  
*Publicāni*, 337.  
 Public opinion, 466.  
 Publilian Laws, 90-1, 169.  
 Publilius Philo, Q., 168, 175, 178.  
*Pudicitia Patricia, Plebeia*, 189.  
*Pullarij*, 186, 240.  
 Punic Wars, origin, 229; 1st, 231-44; 2nd, 256-320; 3rd, 434-44.  
 Pydna, battle, 413.  
 Pyrrhus, 202, 205, 207-15.

## Q.

QUADRIGARIUS, Q. Claudius, 722.  
 Quaestors, 30, 89, 121, 323.  
 Quinctius Cincinnatus, L., 96, *sqq.*  
 Quinctius, Kaeso, 97.  
*Quinqueviri mensarii*, 149.  
 Quirinal Hill, 23.  
 Quirinus, 23-4.  
 Quirites, 23; *cp.* 667.

## R.

RABIRIUS, C., 616.  
*Ramnes*, 25, 39.  
 Rhea Silvia, 19.  
 Reātē, 156.  
*Regifugium*, 56.  
 Regillus, 62.  
 Regulus, M. Atilius, 234-9.  
 Religion, 342, 736-8.  
 Rēmus, 19-21.  
 Revenues of Rome, 334-5.  
*Rex Sacrorum*, 57.  
 Rhegium, 210, 213, 291.  
 Rhodes, 359, 367-8, 420.  
 Rhone, passage of Hannibal, 259.  
 Rights, 169.  
 Roads, 354; Appian, 194; Flaminian, 264; Aemilian, 389.  
 Rome, 46-8; power, 75-6; rebuilt, 140; relation to Italy, 218, 544.

Rōmulus, 20-4.  
*Rorarii*, 166.  
 Rupilius, P., 456.  
 Rural population, 461, 483.  
 Rutilius Rufus, P., 535.  
 Rutilus, C. Marcius, 151, 154, 175.

## S.

SABELLIAN Tribes, 12.  
 Sabines, 12, 22, 77, 112, 156, 196.  
 Sacriportus, battle, 572.  
 Saguntum, 253.  
 Sallentines, 217.  
 Sallustius Crispus, C., 669, 722.  
 Salvius 325.  
 Samnites 156-7; 1st War, 158-9; 2nd, 172-81; 3rd, 182-87, 216; Punic Wars, 275; Social War, 541, 573-5.  
 Sardinia, 246-7, 392.  
 Sarsina, 217, 468.  
 Satire, 472.  
 Saturnalia, 33.  
 Saturnian Hill, 22, 23.  
 Saturnian metre, 344.  
 Saturninus, L. Appuleius, 530-3.  
 Scaevola, C. Mucius 59.  
 Scaevola, P. Mucius, 480.  
 Scaevola, Q. Mucius, 528, 563, 573.  
 Scaurus, M. Aemilius, 506, 510, 535, 537.  
 Scipio, Cn. Cornelius, 260, 276, 291.  
 Scipio, L. Asiaticus, 384-6, 400-2.  
 Scipio, L. Cornelius Barbatus, 183.  
 Scipio Nasica, 313, 388.  
 Scipio Nasica (Corculum), 412, 422, 435.  
 Scipio Nasica (Serapio), 448, 483-4, 486.  
 Scipio, P. Cornelius, 258-60, 262; in Spain, 276, 291.  
 Scipio, P. Cornelius (Africanus), 262; Cannae, 274; in Spain, 305-11; Consul, 312-20; position, 398-9; impeached, 400-2.  
 Scipio, P. Cornelius Africanus (Aemilianus), 422, 424-6; in Africa, 435, 440; Consul, 441-4; Censor, 448-50, 477-8; at Rome, 487-91.  
*Scribae*, 193, 324.  
 Sculpture, 347.

Secessions, 1st, 83; 2nd, 110; 3rd, 119; 4th, 160; 5th, 197.  
 Seleucus Nicātor, 357-8.  
 Sellasia, battle, 362.  
 Sempronian laws, 496-8.  
 Sempronius Longus, Tib., 258, 263.  
 Sēna Gallica, 204.  
 Senate, 26, 36, 121; after Punic Wars, 325-8, 331-3; oligarchical tendencies, 395, 458, 497; under Sulla, 581; Caesar, 672.  
 Sentinum, 185.  
 Septimius, 662.  
 Sertorius, Q., 553, 554, 556; Praetor, 570-1; in Spain, 590-2.  
 Servilian Laws, 528.  
 Servius Tullius, 41-9.  
 Sextius, L., 143, *sqq.*  
 Ships, 232-3, 236-7, 240-3.  
 Sibylline books, 52, 145, 249, 274, 456.  
 Silvii, kings of Alba, 19.  
 Sisenna, L. Cornelius, 721.  
 Slaves, 191, 339-41, 674; 1st War, 452-6; 2nd, 524-5.  
 Social War, 538-43.  
 Sophonisba, 310, 315-6.  
 Sōra, 181.  
 Spain—Hamilcar, 246-7, 252-3; the Scipios, 276, 291, 305-9; two provinces, 390-2, 423-5.  
 Sparta, 361, 381.  
 Spartacus, 592-4.  
*Spārus*, 391.  
 Spendius, 245-6.  
*Spolia opima*, Romulus, 22; Cossus, 126; Marcellus, 250.  
 Statuary, 347.  
 Stoic Philosophy, 736.  
 Suessa, 52, 180.  
 Suffets, 227.  
 Sulla, L. Cornelius (Felix), 513-5, Cimbric War, 519, 522; Praetor, 534; Social War, 541; Civil War, 546-52; in Greece, 561-6; at Rome, 567-86.  
 Sulpicius Rufus, P., 547, 550.  
 Superstition, 737.  
 Sybāris, 13.  
 Syphax, 291, 310, 315.  
 Syracuse, 200, 283-6.  
 Syria, 358.  
 Syrian War, 379-85.  
 Syrus, Publilius, 724.

## T.

TANAQUIL, 36.  
 Tarentum, 174, 201-2; Postumius, 204-5; Pyrrhus, 205-16; Hannibal, 287-96.  
 Tarpeia, 22.  
 Tarquinius, 35, 154.  
 Tarquinius Priscus, 35-41.  
 Tarquinius, Sextus, 53-4, 58.  
 Tarquinius Superbus, 49-63.  
 Taurini, 262.  
 Tauromenium, 456.  
 Taxation, 334-7.  
 Teānum, 158, 570.  
 Telāmon, 250.  
 Terentilius Harsa, C., 103.  
 Terentius Afer, P., 422, 468.  
 Terminalia, 28.  
 Terni, 355.  
 Teuta, 247-8.  
 Teutōni, 517, 520-1.  
 Thapsus, 668.  
 Thermon, 363, 366.  
 Thermopylae, 382.  
 Thessalonica, 414, 631.  
 Thoas, 380-1.  
 Thurii, 199, 202, 204, 288.  
 Tibur, 153, 170.  
 Ticinus, battle, 262.  
 Tifāta, 158, 280.  
 Tigrānes, 601-2, 607.  
*Tities*, 25, 39.  
 Titus Tatius, 22-3.  
 Tragedy, 470-1.  
 Trasimene, battle, 265.  
 Treasury, 335.  
 Trēbia, battle, 263.  
 Trebonius, 640, 653, 679, 696.  
*Triārii*, 166.  
 Tribes of Romulus, 25, 37.  
 Tribes of Servius, 45-6;  
     increased to 21, p. 76.  
     ,, 25, p. 142.  
     ,, 27, p. 152.  
     ,, 29, p. 170.  
     ,, 31, p. 172.  
     ,, 33, p. 181.  
     ,, 35, p. 247.  
     proposal for 10 more, 544;  
     settlement of, 218.  
*Tribūni aerarii*, 336, 596.  
*Tribuni militares cons. pot.*, 119-20.  
*Tribuni militum*, 26, 161.

*Tribuni plebis*, 85, 90, 104, 581,  
595, 717.  
*Tributum*, 44, 336, 416, 690.  
Tubĕro, Q. Aelius, 491.  
Tulliānum, 33.  
Tullus Hostilius, 30-3.  
Tullia, 49, 50.  
Tunis, 235.  
Tunnels, 355.  
Turnus, 18.  
Tusculum, 77.  
Twelve Tables, 114-6.  
Tyrants, 199.

## U.

UMBRIANS, 11, 183, 217.  
Usury, 404. See *Interest*.  
Utica, 437, 441, 668.

## V.

VADĪMO, battle, 203.  
Valerio-Horatian Laws, 112.  
Valerius Antias, Q., 722.  
Valerius Corvus, 139, 159-60, 175.  
Valerius Flaccus, L., (and Cato,) 399.  
Valerius Flaccus, L., (cons. 86,) 563, 567.  
Valerius Flaccus, L., (Pr. Sen.,) 567, 578.  
Valerius, M<sup>r</sup>., 83.  
Valerius Poplicola, P., 58.  
Valerius Potitus, L., 110, 112.  
Varius, law, 537.  
Varius Rufus, 728.  
Varro, C. Terentius, 269-74, 278.  
Varro, M. Terentius, 653-4, 722.  
Varus, 665, 668, 670.  
Veii, 78, 99, 126-9, 140.

Ventidius Bassus, P., 543, 705.  
Venŭsia, 187.  
Vercellae, 523.  
Verres, C. Cornelius, 574, 596.  
*Ver sacrum*, 156.  
Vestal Virgins, 28, 36.  
Vestinians, 12, 157, 181.  
Vesuvius, 167.  
Veto, 85. See *Intercession*.  
*Vici*, 28.  
*Villicus*, 340.  
Villius Tappulus, P., 370.  
*Vindicias dare*, 109.  
Virgilius Maro, P., 702, 729.  
Virginia, 108.  
Virginus, 108, 113.  
Viriāthus, 445-6.  
Viridomarus, 250.  
Volĕro, Publius, 89-91.  
*Volōnes*, 280.  
Volumnius, L., 184-5.  
Volscians, 11, 12, 77, 92-6.  
Vulsinii, 129, 217-8.  
Vulturnus, 157.

## W.

WALL of Servius, 46.

## X.

XANTHIPPOS, 236.  
Xanthus, 696.

## Y.

YEAR, Roman, 29, 674-5.

## Z.

ZAMA, battle, 318.

Dravus

Sarnus

Nauportus

# ITALY

IN THE FIRST CENTURY B. C.  
AFTER THE SOCIAL WAR (91-88) AND  
BEFORE THE BATTLE OF ACTIUM (31).

46

6 Coloniz civium Rom. }





# MURRAY'S STUDENT'S MANUALS

## ENGLISH HISTORY AND LITERATURE

**The Student's Hume.** A History of England from the Earliest Times to the Revolution in 1688. By DAVID HUME. Incorporating the Researches of recent Historians. Revised, corrected, and continued to the Treaty of Berlin in 1878, by J. S. BREWER, M.A. Thirty-second Edition. With Notes, Illustrations, and 7 Coloured Maps and Woodcuts. Crown 8vo., 7s. 6d.

**Student's Constitutional History of England.** From the Accession of Henry VII. to the Death of George II. By HENRY HALLAM, LL.D. Crown 8vo., 7s. 6d.

**Student's Manual of English Literature.** A History of English Literature and of the chief English Writers. A New and thoroughly Revised Edition, founded upon the Manual of THOMAS B. SHAW. By A. HAMILTON THOMPSON, B.A., late Minor Scholar of St John's College, Cambridge, and University Extension Lecturer in English Literature. With Notes, etc., etc. Crown 8vo., 7s. 6d.

**Student's Specimens of English Literature.** Selected from the Best Writers, and arranged Chronologically. By T. B. SHAW, M.A. Crown 8vo., 5s.

## SCRIPTURE AND CHURCH HISTORY

**Student's Old Testament History.** From the Creation of the World to the Return of the Jews from Captivity. With an Introduction to the Books of the Old Testament. By PHILIP SMITH, B.A. With 40 Maps and Woodcuts. Crown 8vo., 7s. 6d.

**Student's New Testament History.** With an Introduction, containing the Connection of the Old and New Testaments. By PHILIP SMITH, B.A. With 30 Maps and Woodcuts. Crown 8vo., 7s. 6d.

**Student's Manual of Ecclesiastical History.** A History of the Christian Church to the Reformation. By PHILIP SMITH, B.A. Two Vols. Crown 8vo., 7s. 6d. each.

PART I.—A.D. 30-1003. With Woodcuts.

PART II.—A.D. 1003-1614. With Woodcuts.

**Student's Manual of English Church History.** By G. G. PERRY, M.A., Canon of Lincoln. Three Vols. 7s. 6d. each.

1ST PERIOD.—From the Planting of the Church in Britain to the Accession of Henry VIII., A.D. 596-1509.

2ND PERIOD.—From the Accession of Henry VIII. to the Silencing of Convocation in the Eighteenth Century, A.D. 1509-1717.

3RD PERIOD.—From the Accession of the House of Hanover to the Present Time, A.D. 1717-1884

## ANCIENT HISTORY

**Student's Ancient History of the East.** From the Earliest Times to the Conquests of Alexander the Great, including Egypt, Assyria, Babylonia, Media, Persia, Asia Minor, and Phœnicia. By PHILIP SMITH, B.A. With 70 Woodcuts. Crown 8vo., 7s. 6d.

**Student's Greece.** A History of Greece from the Earliest Times to the Roman Conquest. With Supplementary Chapters on the History of Literature and Art. A New Edition, thoroughly Revised, and in part Re-written. By G. E. MARINDIN, M.A. With many new Maps and Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**ANCIENT HISTORY**—*continued*

**Student's History of Rome.** From the Earliest Times to the Establishment of the Empire. With Chronological Tables and Chapters on the History of Literature and Art. By H. G. LIDDELL, D.D., sometime Dean of Christ Church, Oxford. Revised, and in part Re-written, by P. V. M. BENECKE, M.A., Fellow of Magdalen College, Oxford. With Coloured and other Maps and numerous Illustrations, nearly all prepared for this Edition. Crown 8vo., 7s. 6d.

**Student's History of the Roman Empire.** From the Establishment of the Empire to the Accession of Commodus, A.D. 180. With Coloured Maps and numerous Illustrations. By J. B. BURY, Fellow of Trinity College, Dublin. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**Student's Gibbon.** Abridged from the Original Work by Sir WM. SMITH, D.C.L., LL.D. A New and Revised Edition in Two Parts. Crown 8vo., 5s. each.

PART I.—From the Accession of Commodus to the Death of Justinian. By A. H. J. GREENIDGE, M.A., Lecturer and late Fellow of Hertford College, Lecturer in Ancient History at Brasenose College, Oxford.

PART II.—From A.D. 565 to the Capture of Constantinople by the Turks. By J. G. C. ANDERSON, M.A., late Fellow of Lincoln College, Student and Tutor of Christ Church, Oxford. With Maps and Illustrations.

**EUROPE**

**Student's History of Modern Europe.** From the Capture of Constantinople by the Turks, 1453, to the Treaty of Berlin, 1878. By RICHARD LODGE, M.A., Fellow and Tutor of Brasenose College, Oxford. Fourth Edition, thoroughly Revised. Crown 8vo., 7s. 6d.

**Student's History of Europe during the Middle Ages.** By HENRY HALLAM, LL.D. Crown 8vo., 7s. 6d.

**FRANCE**

**Student's History of France.** From the Earliest Times to the Fall of the Second Empire. By W. H. JERVIS, M.A. A New Edition, thoroughly Revised, and in great part Re-written, by ARTHUR HASSALL, M.A., Censor of Christ Church, Oxford, with a Chapter on Ancient Gaul, by F. HAVERFIELD, M.A., Student of Christ Church Oxford. Coloured Maps and many New Woodcuts. Crown 8vo., 7s. 6d.

---

**LAW AND PHILOSOPHY**

**Student's Edition of Austin's Jurisprudence.** Compiled from the larger work. By ROBERT CAMPBELL. Crown 8vo., 12s.

**An Analysis of Austin's Jurisprudence.** By GORDON CAMPBELL. Crown 8vo., 6s.

**GEOLOGY.**

**Student's Elements of Geology.** By Sir CHARLES LYELL. Thoroughly Revised by Professor J. W. JUDD. Crown 8vo. With 600 Woodcuts. 9s.

---

LONDON: JOHN MURRAY, ALBEMARLE STREET, W









